

**ACPL ITEM  
DISCARDED**

Stephen v.3  
History of the 1874081  
Church of Scotland STORAGE

DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS FROM POCKET

**PUBLIC LIBRARY**  
FORT WAYNE AND ALLEN COUNTY, IND.




070

ACPL ITEM  
DISCARDED







Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2022 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation





*George Smith*

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
CHURCH OF SCOTLAND,

FROM THE  
Reformation to the Present Time.

BY  
THOMAS STEPHEN,

AUTHOR OF "THE BOOK OF THE CONSTITUTION;"  
"THE GUIDE TO THE MORNING AND EVENING SERVICE OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,"  
ETC. ETC.

IN FOUR VOLUMES;  
WITH TWENTY-FOUR PORTRAITS ENGRAVED ON STEEL.

V. 3  
VOL. III.

NEWBERRY  
LIBRARY  
LONDON:

PRINTED FOR  
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS,  
PATERNOSTER ROW.

1848.

*George Smith*





## CONTENTS.

	Page
CHAPTER XXXIV.	
Episcopacy of Archbishop Sharp—1674 .....	1
CHAPTER XXXV.	
Archbishop Sharp—From 1674 to 1677 .....	20
CHAPTER XXXVI.	
Archbishop Sharp—1677 .....	77
CHAPTER XXXVII.	
Archbishop Sharp—1677 .....	106
CHAPTER XXXVIII.	
Archbishop Sharp—1677 .....	120
CHAPTER XXXIX.	
Archbishop Sharp—Murder of the Archbishop of St. Andrew—1679 .....	17
CHAPTER XL.	
Archbishop Sharp—1679 .....	186
CHAPTER XLI.	
Archbishop Sharp—1679 .....	186
CHAPTER XLII.	
Archbishop Sharp—1679 .....	200
CHAPTER XLIII.	
Archbishop Sharp—1679 .....	231
CHAPTER XLIV.	
Archbishop Sharp—1679 .....	231
CHAPTER XLV.	
Archbishop Sharp—1679 .....	231

LONDON:  
WILSON AND OGILVY, 57, SKINNER STREET, SNOWHILL.





# CONTENTS.

---

	Page
CHAPTER XXXIV.	
Primacy of Archbishop Sharp—1674 .....	1
CHAPTER XXXV.	
———— Archbishop Sharp—from 1675 to 1677 .....	20
CHAPTER XXXVI.	
———— Archbishop Sharp—1678.....	77
CHAPTER XXXVII.	
———— Archbishop Sharp—1678.....	106
CHAPTER XXXVIII.	
———— Archbishop Sharp—1679.....	125
CHAPTER XXXIX.	
———— Archbishop Sharp—Murder of the Archbishop of St. Andrews—1679.....	147
CHAPTER XL.	
———— Archbishop Burnet—1679 .....	166
CHAPTER XLII.	
———— Archbishop Burnet—1679 to 1680 .....	185
CHAPTER XLIII.	
———— Archbishop Burnet—1680 to 1681 .....	209
CHAPTER XLIV.	
———— Archbishop Burnet—1681 to 1683 .....	231
CHAPTER XLV.	
———— Archbishop Ross--1684 to 1685:.....	253



	Page
CHAPTER XLVI.	
Primacy of Archbishop Ross—1635 .....	275
CHAPTER XLVII.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1686 to 1687 .....	293
CHAPTER LXVIII.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1687 to 1688 .....	325
CHAPTER XLIX.	
——— Archbishop Ross—The Rabbling and Persecution of the Clergy .....	35
CHAPTER L.	
——— Archbishop Ross—Continued Rabbling and Perse- cution of the Clergy—1689 .....	392
CHAPTER LI.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1689 .....	426
CHAPTER LII.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1689 to 1690 .....	457
CHAPTER LIII.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1690 .....	481
CHAPTER LIV.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1690 .....	496
CHAPTER LV.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1690 .....	513
CHAPTER LVI.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1691 to 1692 .....	543
CHAPTER LVII.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1692 to 1699 .....	580
CHAPTER LVIII.	
——— Archbishop Ross—1700 to 1704—Conclusion .....	621





THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
CHURCH OF SCOTLAND.

---

CHAPTER XXXIV.

PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP

1674.—Letter from Lauderdale to the primate.—The English Commons address the king against the duke of Lauderdale.—Whigs deprived of office in Scotland.—Death of Clarendon and Milton.—Interment of the bones of Edward V.—Bishop Leighton's resignation—reasons for accepting it.—King's letter and act of council.—Notices of bishop Ramsay.—Death of bishop Hamilton of Galloway.—Dr. Patterson consecrated to the see of Galloway.—Agitation for a General Assembly.—The primate's letter to the archbishop of Canterbury.—The king's displeasure at the proposed Assembly.—The lord bishop of Dunkeld and four clergymen suspended.—Remarks.—Presbyterian admissions.—Power of ordination—some of their doctrines incidentally noticed.—Object in desiring a General Assembly.—Mr. Skinner's remarks on synods.—Calamities incident to the church.—Christ's kingdom and the kingdoms of this world like parallel lines—princes in that kingdom.—Toleration.—Sin of schism.—Conclusion.

1674.—THE LETTERS of those prelates that have survived the storms of the Revolution, speak of both the duke of Lauderdale and of his brother, lord Hatton, as having been sincere and unflinching supporters of the church. Both the prelates and the king's government had the horrors of the grand rebellion ever before their eyes; and they were justly apprehensive that men who still pertinaciously held the same religious



and political sentiments would re-enact the same scenes of rebellion and bloodshed whenever an opportunity should occur. The conduct of the ministers and of the people under their influence gave but too certain a note that they had the will, and therefore it became necessary to prevent their finding the way to rebel; which occasioned government to take severe measures to curb their insolence and to suppress the spirit of insubordination by which they were influenced. Lauderdale's measures were frequently thwarted by the political divisions of the privy council and the patriarchal power of the nobility; from this cause the seditious practices of the ministers were covertly instigated by some and connived at by others, in order to embarrass and ultimately to remove the duke and his friends from power; and with the same view, some of the clergy had been tampered with to petition for the meeting of a General Assembly; the motion for which to the king, occasioned the duke to write the following letter to the archbishop of St. Andrews, dated Windsor, June 13th, 1674:—

“MY LORD,—I have not been able to write to your grace since I received your letter; but I hope the despatches which the king sent down by my brother will please you better than any thing that I could have written, seeing you will see, that notwithstanding of all the lies with which the faction was entertained in Scotland, his majesty has made it appear to all the kingdom, that he will not countenance such who did so openly attempt against his authority and against the Articles<sup>1</sup>, which is one of the best flowers in his crown of Scotland. You will also have seen how that after the settling of the new commission of council, his first commands were to suppress those scandalous and seditious conventicles, which were (I am sure) too much countenanced by some whose duty should have obliged them to suppress them. And I hope the privy council, as now it is constitute, will vigorously obey the king's commands, and not make remonstrances against them, nor neglect the king's orders, which are so much in pursuance of the law, and so necessary for the peace and honour of the kingdom. Great endeavours have been used of late to alarm all England with the fears of a present rebellion in Scotland; but I hope, when those in authority shall do their duty, those seditious practices will quickly vanish; and whoever will be slack in that duty, the king will let him know how much he re-sents it.

“I did inform the king, soon after the last council-day, what

<sup>1</sup> That constitution of the Scottish parliament, called the Lords of the Articles.





endeavours were used to have engaged *synods to petition for a national assembly*, and now it is apparent, the *design was more against episcopacy* than against conventicles, as you will see clearly by a motion that was made to the king, with which I desired my brother to acquaint your grace in my last letter to him; and, I am sorry to see, by my last letters of the 14th instant, that that design is still carried on, and that some that I took to be more orthodox have had too great a hand in carrying on that plot. I had a general account of the address of the presbytery of Glasgow to that of Edinburgh for a meeting forsooth, which would have looked too like the late commission of the kirk, and of an address made by some ministers about Edinburgh for that effect. This looks too like the petitions of ministers before the late rebellion in the years 1637 and 1638; and I am sorry that some, whom I thought to have been more orthodox, should have had so great a hand in it. Always I did show that letter, which I received from an honest friend of yours and mine, and did read it every word to the king, whom I found very sensible of the danger of such practices, if they should go unpunished; and I am commanded by his majesty to desire your grace to confer with some of the clergy, of whom you are confident, and to send me your free advice what you think fit for the king to command upon this occasion; by which you will see, that the king will be very careful that the honour and authority of the bishops may be preserved, and all contrivances against them suppressed and punished. I hope you will be able to inform who have been most guilty, to the end they may know it is not safe to meddle with such edged tools, and then such as have been innocently drawn in, may be passed over. The king goes towards Portsmouth on Monday morning, and is to return hither this day seven-night, against which time I hope to see a return from the Committee of Council, concerning their endeavours against the conventicles; and I desire to have as speedy an answer to this letter as may be. And though I am no more commissioner, yet in all stations I shall be found zealous and active for the government of the church, as it is now by law settled, and for its peace and happiness. And that I am, in a true sense of your kindness and friendship,

“My Lord,

“Your grace’s most humble servant,

“LAUDERDALE<sup>1</sup>.”

ABOUT this time the English House of Commons exhibited much zeal against popery and arbitrary power; and voted an

<sup>1</sup> MSS. Episcopal Chest, Aberdeen, No. A. 10.



address to his majesty to remove the duke of Lauderdale from all his employments, and from his majesty's presence and councils for ever, as being a person obnoxious and dangerous to the government. Some of his embarrassments at this time were owing to the ingratitude and treachery of bishop Burnet, who abused and calumniated the duke, betrayed his most important secrets, and drew on him an impeachment for high treason. But so far from removing him from his councils, the king created him baron of Petersham and earl of Guildford, and of course an English peer<sup>1</sup>; and on the 25th of June, he reconstructed the Scottish privy council by removing the whig party, Tweeddale, Queensberry, Yester, Dumfries, and Roxburgh, and admitting the earls Kinghorn, Mar, and Wigton, with the lairds of Collington, Craigy, and Ross, in their places. The duke of Hamilton was allowed to remain; but, his chief supporters having been removed, he seldom attended on council days. In December this year, Edward Hyde, earl of Clarendon, died at the city of Rouen, in France, after an exile of some years from his native country, whence he had been driven by the intrigues of his political enemies. Here he chiefly occupied his time in composing his admirable History of the Grand Rebellion; but his lordship in all that time never communicated with the French protestants, because they were schismatics and had no lawful ministry. About the same time, John Milton died; he was the author of that sublime poem entitled *Paradise Lost*, and of several most vile and unchristian pieces, which embodied and concentrated all the false and malignant aspersions on the church of England, and the royal martyr. He wrote also a treatise "On the reasonableness of a man divorcing his wife, *if he did not like her*." But, indeed, says Salmon, "little better could be expected from one who had been secretary to the late usurpers." He was in the sixty-seventh year of his age at his death, and had been blind several years before. Under a pair of stairs in the Tower were found two bodies, supposed to be those of Edward V. and his brother Richard, murdered by their uncle, Richard III. anno 1483. They were solemnly interred in Westminster Abbey<sup>2</sup>.

WHEN THE duke of Lauderdale found himself surrounded with difficulties, both in England and at home, it became a matter of prudence to attempt the recovery of the church's favour, which had been alienated from him ever since the passing of the Assertory act. He now, therefore, informed bishop Leighton

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 203.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. i. 203-204.



that his majesty accepted his resignation of the two dioceses under his charge ; but, in fact, he was forced to do this act of justice by the importunities of the archbishops of Canterbury and St. Andrews, "and other bishops of England, who, considering such precedents might extend," of the minister of the day removing one bishop, or of suppressing ten bishopricks, as has since been done, "interposed with their whole might ; nor did they leave it, till they had the archbishop of Glasgow restored<sup>1</sup>." Lauderdale had made the whole of the episcopal bench in both kingdoms his enemies, by the deprivation of archbishop Burnet ; for there is but one episcopate in the whole earth, of which every bishop holds a share for the benefit of the whole, and the English branch of it felt as much endangered by the precedent at Glasgow as if York or any other see had been struck at in England. Archbishop Sheldon represented to his majesty the danger which the church at large incurred by such an unparalleled stretch of power, and shewed him that the example in Scotland might be followed in England, when a hostile monarch and a flagitious minister might thus *extirpate* the church. This is attested by a contemporary author, who says, "while these confusions continued and were fomented in Scotland, the church and parliament of England became mightily incensed against the duke of Lauderdale, who, finding himself in danger, laid aside his ordinary haughtiness, and lowered his sails ; and in 1674, reconciled himself to archbishop Sharp, who was then at London ; by whose means not only archbishop Burnet was returned to his see, but the duke was readmitted to the favour of old Dr. Sheldon, archbishop of Canterbury ; he giving all the signs of a sincere and humbled penitent, after which he never gave ground to be suspected by the clergy<sup>2</sup>." A letter from the king, dated the 7th of September, restored archbishop Burnet to the jurisdiction of his see, and the following act of privy council proceeding from it is dated the 29th of the same month :—

"FORSAMICKLE as the king's majesty, by a letter under his hand to the privy council of the date of the 7th instant, has signified that upon the dimission of Alexander, archbishop of Glasgow, 1669, his majesty did commend to Robert, bishop of Dunblane, the care of the diocese of Glasgow, and afterwards did nominate and present the said Robert to the archiepiscopal see of Glasgow, unto which, as his majesty is in-

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Regale, 233. Edition 1711.

<sup>2</sup> True and Impartial Account of Archbishop Sharp. p. 69.





formed, he was not formally translated; and that now by the dimission of the said Robert, the said archbishoprick of Glasgow is become at his majesty's gift and presentation, his majesty has thought fit, on just and important considerations, and for the good of his service in the church, to restore, and doth restore the said Alexander to the possession and enjoyment of the archbishoprick of Glasgow, and all the rents, privileges, benefits and immunities, superiorities, casualties, and profits whatsoever, thereunto belonging, in as full and ample a manner as the same are expressed and contained in his majesty's first gift unto him under the great seal of the kingdom; willing and declaring the said gift and disposition to be in as much force in all time coming during his life, to all intents and purposes as if he had never made a dimission; and ordains this letter to be recorded in the books of privy council, and then to pass an act thereupon, that all concerned may yield ready obedience. The lords of his majesty's privy council ordain accordingly in all points<sup>1</sup>."

ON HIS RESIGNATION bishop Leighton retired to the college of Edinburgh for a short time, and afterwards to his sister's, Mrs. Lightmaker, in Sussex, where he followed a life of contemplation and piety, for which he seems to have been more fitted than for the active duties of his sacred office<sup>2</sup>. James Ramsay, vicar of Hamilton and dean of Glasgow, was elected bishop of Dunblane by the king's *congé d'elire*. He was ordained by the resolutioner party, in the presbytery of Glasgow, to one of the Leinzies, of which there are two, the Easter and the Wester, in the county of Dumbarton, in the year 1653; but the remonstrators procured an order from Cromwell to prevent his preaching there, and the people not to attend his ministry, and, moreover, they prosecuted him for scandal, and when they had tried him to the uttermost, all they could find against him was "but two vain words." Baillie speaks of him in terms of high commendation, and says, after every effort of the remonstrators to convict him, nothing could be found against him, which not one of the resolutioners thought deserved any more than a presbyterial rebuke. This was the reign of faction; and he was unable to take possession of his kirk, and Baillie calls his affair "a strong case;" and in 1655, the remonstrator faction annulled his "most regular plantation." Baillie says he was "a very able and sufficient youth, and was

Keith's Catalogue of Scottish Bishops, p. 263.—Wedrow, ii. 271-72.

<sup>2</sup> Pearson's Life of Leighton.



planted in Leinzie to the great satisfaction of all, except a very few who chose an English sectary, to whom they promised the stipend." As he could neither get possession of his kirk nor receive his stipend, he was removed to Linlithgow in the year 1656, "where he was much better than where he was." At the Restoration he was appointed one of the visitors of the University of Glasgow; and in 1662 he was appointed rector of Hamilton and dean of Glasgow. His consecrators are not mentioned <sup>1</sup>.

IN AUGUST of this year, James Hamilton, bishop of Galloway, died, after a few days' sickness. "He was a man of a sprightly but ordinary stature, well seen in divinity, especially in polemics and the languages, with a good memory, accurate in the fathers and church history, yet to be seen by the remarks upon his books. He was very pious and charitable, strictly pure in his morals, most kind to his friends, and most affable and courteous to strangers. He was a *Boanerges* in the pulpit, and every way worthy of the sacred character he bore.

"I find by the several letters I have, that there had been a very great intimacy betwixt that eminent prelate and martyr, Dr. Sharp, archbishop of St. Andrews, and him, but mostly with respect to their respective affairs in the church.

"The bishop was very happy in a pious, fond, and virtuous wife. She knew his constitution, and did, under God, as abstemious as he was, keep him in a good state of health during her life; but for the seven years he lived after, his daughters being very young, and when come to any maturity, married from him, he took the liberty to manage his diet as he pleased, which generally was one roasted egg in the morning; a little broth, and perhaps nothing (else) about four; at night a glass of small ale to his pipe in the winter, and for the most part water in the summer. This, with his book, was most of the good bishop's food during the last seven years of his life.<sup>2</sup>"

JOHN PATERSON, son of the lord bishop of Ross, and incumbent of the Tron church of Edinburgh, and dean of that diocese, was recommended to the crown by the duke of Lauderdale, and was elected to the see of Galloway on the 23d of October; but Keith again omits to mention the time or place or by whom he was consecrated. And now the church presented the unusual circumstance of a father and a son sitting bishops at the same time.

<sup>1</sup> Baillie's Letters, ii. 216, 220, 222, 278, 313, 456, 487.—Keith, 183.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the Familie of Broomhill, pp. 61, 62.



THE CHURCH in Scotland has always had to struggle against the most untoward circumstances. The bishops had to combat the influence and effects of the Assertory act, as well as to suffer from the Indulgence and the turbulent insolence of the Covenanters. Even some of the conforming clergy still retained much of the leaven of the Covenant, and in particular their peculiar attachment to the strife and agitation of the general assemblies, where, from their numbers, they might easily overpower the votes and authority of the bishops; for, like the parliament, they all sat in one house. They were therefore "ready enough to recommend the propriety of these promiscuous conventions, which tended so much to humour the pride of the second order at the expense of the radical privileges of the first<sup>1</sup>." The bishops of Brechin and Dunblane encouraged this desire, although the former yielded his opinion to the solicitation of his friends; but the latter persisted in urging the necessity of an assembly. Among the inferior clergy, Messrs. Turner, Cant, Robertson, and Hamilton, in the diocese of Edinburgh, were the chief agitators, and they drew up a petition to Dr. Young, their own bishop, who was opposed to their design, requesting him to move the primate and the other bishops "to represent the sad and deplorable condition of this kirk to his most sacred majesty; and that since in all ages synods and assemblies have been judged the best ecclesiastical remedies of such evils, they would interpose that a national synod may be indicted by his majesty's authority; and so the schisms and abounding disorders, whereby truth and peace are in so much danger, with all the bad effects thereof, may be removed, and some speedy solid course fallen upon for advancing the purity and power of religion and good discipline; that so his majesty's subjects agreeing in the truth of God's most holy word, may live quietly and peaceably, in all godliness and honesty, under his government<sup>2</sup>."

BISHOP RAMSAY and these clergymen pleaded that there was law in their favour, and so there surely was; but Lauderdale considered this agitation as an evidence of disaffection to his government; and the historian of the presbyterian sufferings seizes this opportunity with avidity to show his malice against the primate. He says accordingly, "Bishop Sharp and his party resolved to oppress and bear down some who set up themselves for some further advances in reformation, as they took what they pressed for to be. And the primate's carriage in this affair will be a new instance of that *antichristian spirit*

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 477.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 301.





of persecution and pride he was possessed with in so great measures, not only towards presbyterians, whom he had deserted, and resolved by all methods to ruin, but also to those of his own kidney, when they came not up to every thing that was his pleasure, as if he had been an infallible and visible head of the church and vicar of Christ, or another *antichrist* in Scotland<sup>1</sup>." The clergy before mentioned had spoken very freely of the primate; and Cant especially had given utterance to sentiments, at a meeting of presbytery, very similar to those quoted above; and when the feeling of the party who now moved for an assembly, and the experience of the disastrous effects of former convocations, are considered, it is not surprising that the primate should be alarmed at the commencement of an agitation that threatened to break up the peace of the church. When the design was first broached, it had a more alarming aspect than it afterwards assumed; yet the primate thought it prudent to write to archbishop Sheldon to intercede with the king that he would refuse his assent to the meeting of a national synod at this time. The following is a copy of his letter from the doubtful authority of Wodrow's *Analecta*; but which had the desired effect:—

"MAY IT PLEASE YOUR GRACE,—Albeit, I have kept long silent, and my correspondence with your grace hath not been so frequent as formerly; yet, like the son of Cresus, I must cry out, when my mother the church is in hazard, and I believe if I should hold my peace, the very stones would speak, for the gospel is now at stake. We are assaulted not only by foreigners, our old enemies the fanatics, who were never of us, but also, alas, my lord, there is a fire in our bed-straw, by sons of our own bowels, who, viper-like, seek to eat that which produced them. They are all crying for a national convocation of the clergy, upon no other account but to shake off our yoke, and to break our bands asunder. I hope your grace will consider your own hazard, if disorders followed in England upon our distempers in Scotland; when our neighbour's house is on fire, it is time to look to our own. Their great aim and design is against me, who, God knows, like Paul, have spent myself in the service of the church, and am yet willing to spend what remains. I believe no man can say I have run in vain. If I be not supported by his majesty's special favour, through your grace's recommendation, I shall inevitably suffer shipwreck, and that upon no evil or upon mine own account;

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 300.



but I see, that through my sides the church will be wounded. The only remedy is, to procure his majesty to discharge the convocation, which will calm the storm, and quench all those malicious designs which are now on foot to disturb the peace of the church. They are already come to that height, that one Mr. Cant, a presbyter, has shaken off all fear of God, and regard for his canonical oath, in calling me a great grievance to this church. My dear lord and brother, bestir yourself in this affair, and remember the words pronounced against those who are at ease, while their brother is in distress. So, recommending this to your care,

“ I am, my lord, your grace’s affectionate brother,

“ And faithful servant,

(Signed)

“ ST. ANDREWS.

“ For his Grace the Archbishop of Canterbury.”

THE PRIMATE thought there might be danger of this agitation spreading, and as even the presbyterians admitted that it was the king’s prerogative to convoke assemblies, it was necessary to inform the privy council that proposals for holding a general council had been made. The council then appointed several of the members to inquire into this affair, and their report was transmitted to Lauderdale, who despatched a royal letter, which the Assertery act only could have enabled him to do. After greeting, he signified the king’s displeasure against all factious and divisive ways in the church, unbecoming that orderly subordination and dependence which is owned by the canons of the christian church and the laws of the kingdom; and from his princely zeal and care that the authority and honour of bishops in their due subordination be preserved, and all contrivances against them suppressed and punished, “ We have thought fit to write to the archbishop of St. Andrews, that it is our royal pleasure, that forthwith there be a translation of the bishop of Dunblane to that of the Isles; and that the bishop of Brechin be appointed ordinarily to preach at the College kirk of Edinburgh; that the bishop of Edinburgh remove Mr. Turner, Mr. Robertson, and Mr. Cant, from the exercise of the ministry in Edinburgh, or any place in his diocese, without license; and that Mr. Hamilton be removed from Leith . . . at this time, especially, we judge it necessary, when their authority is not only assaulted by schismatics, but contemned and violated by those who are solemnly engaged to pay them canonical obedience, to require you to employ your authority for that effect: and in particular we do positively require you to cause the bishop of Dunblane, within



two weeks, to remove from residence in any place of the diocese of Glasgow, and forbear meddling with matters relative to the church, save in his diocese of the Isles, but as his ordinary the archbishop of Glasgow, or by the archbishop of St. Andrews upon occasion, as primate: that ye cause, within ten days, Mr. Turner to remove from Edinburgh to Glasgow; Mr. Robertson to the minister's manse at Auchterless, in the diocese of Aberdeen; Mr. Cant to Libberton; and Mr. Hamilton to the manse of Cramond, to abide at these several places till our further pleasure<sup>1</sup>."

WODROW justly observes, "here, indeed, is summar justice, and the full exercise of the royal supremacy;" it is, indeed, another confirmation of the dangerous tendency of the Assertory act, which, in fact, made the king, or rather, perhaps, his minister, A POPE in the church, and laid *it prostrate at his feet*. No stronger evidence could be produced of the truth of Leslie's remark, that *erastianism ran down like a torrent from the Reformation*, than the deposition and translation of those bishops that had incurred the displeasure of Lauderdale since the Assertory act became law. This last violent translation had never been acknowledged by the church; for bishop Ramsay continued in the catalogue of the bishops of Dunblane till the year 1684, when he was canonically translated to Ross, and bishop Wallace, of the Isles, died in 1675, and his successor was Dr. Andrew Wood. Bishop Ramsay likewise always signed Dunblane, and never assumed the title of bishop of the Isles: under the former signature he petitioned the council, which thought fit not to meddle with his petition, but transmitted it to Lauderdale.

BOTH the itinerant and the indulged presbyterian ministers had frequent and secret meetings for preserving a supply of their ministry: although they ridiculed an apostolic succession, yet they licensed all the young men whom they could persuade to take their admissions. Whenever any congregations gave these youths a call, they ordained them. Several attempts were made to convene a general synod, but which could not conveniently be accomplished, as any such gathering was contrary to law; and besides, the indulged ministers were circumscribed to the boundaries of their own parishes—a severe restriction, that was rendered necessary by their own turbulent and intermeddling disposition. Of course they loudly claimed the merit of reforming the morals of the people, which they had the unblushing assurance to affirm were debauched by the

<sup>1</sup> King's Letter, cited in Wodrow, ii. 304.





established clergy<sup>1</sup>. They themselves were, however, the greatest demoralisers of the people; for, besides those sins of hypocrisy and of the flesh, to which presbytery is heir, they taught them constantly and systematically to disobey and to act in direct opposition to the laws of the kingdom, by collecting them into what were called field conventicles, not only for the "supply of sermon," but for the express purpose of cherishing sedition, privy conspiracy, and rebellion. I will not say that at these ordinations which they began to practise at this time, the advice of Welsh to Cameron was universally given, to "*set the fire of hell to the tails*" of those who heard them, but certainly the effect followed.

BUT as presbyterians decline ecclesiastical tradition, let us appeal to Scripture; and I protest there is not, in all the New Testament, an instance to be found of ordination by mere presbyters. The first commissions given by our Lord to the twelve and to the seventy<sup>2</sup> were temporary, and certainly ordination was not included in either of them; and neither of the parties were then constituted the governors of the christian church, which was not founded till *after* Our Lord's resurrection, when He sent the eleven, as His Father had sent Him<sup>3</sup>, with plenary power, as *supreme* governors of the visible church. Thus invested with episcopal power, the apostles ordained the deacons; and all the elders, presbyters, or priests, of which we read in Scripture, had apostolic or episcopal ordination. And in point of fact, all the presbyterian ministers who revolted at and after the Glasgow assembly, had episcopal ordination before they perjured themselves, and then absolved each other from their canonical oaths to their several bishops. The first ordination of priests or presbyters that we read of, was performed by two apostles, Paul and Barnabas<sup>4</sup>; both Timothy and Titus are commanded to ordain priests in every city; but which would not have been restricted to them had ordination been the work of a republic of presbyters and lay-elders. The angels or bishops of the seven Asiatic churches were charged with the maladministration of their supreme office, particularly in having suffered false prophets, or a sect, to arise within them, figuratively described as Jezebel; but which would not have been consistent, had the government of the church been vested in presbytery.

THE COVENANTERS chiefly relied for authority, on that text, where we are informed that the hands of the presbytery were

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, ii. 275-78.

<sup>2</sup> St. Matthew, x. *passim*.—St. Luke, x. 1-17.

<sup>3</sup> St. John, xx. 21.

<sup>4</sup> Acts, xiv. 23.





laid on the apostle Timothy<sup>1</sup>; but he was assured that the apostolic grace was given to him by the laying on of St. Paul's hands<sup>2</sup>. The presbytery spoken of by the apostle of the Gentiles was not similar to a Scottish assembly of that name; there were neither presbyters nor lay-elders in it; for although lay-elders in Scotland are by *custom* excluded from the laying on of hands, yet upon presbyterian principles they are *as well entitled* to do so as the ministers themselves, for they have the power of government conceded to them in equal parity with the ministers. But St. Chrysostom and other fathers positively assert, that the presbytery that imposed hands on Timothy were not ordinary priests, or presbyters, but bishops, and it would be an utter absurdity for inferior men to ordain and constitute a superior. Even upon the supposition that he was an evangelist, or extraordinary officer, how could any inferior officer confer an extraordinary commission? None but God himself, or one having authority from Him, could give an extraordinary office to represent Him.

IN SHORT, the whole system was a total departure from the faith, and a giving heed to seducing spirits. For this cause there was a strong delusion sent upon them to believe the grand imposture of all the false doctrine which their unsent prophets preached, and to make those powerful attempts which we have seen developed to sit in the temple of God as gods, to overtop and govern the gods or powers that be; a *mark* of corruption and apostacy from the faith, that is not more applicable to their parent popery than to them. No toleration would satisfy them; nothing short of *supremacy*, both temporal and spiritual, would gratify their carnal ambition. One of their famous preachers, Donald Cargill, in one of his letters speaking of the king's ministers, calls them "bloody tyrants and vile apostates;" and he says, yet "these by our divines must be acknowledged as magistrates, which very heathens, endued with the *light of nature*, would abominate, and would think it inconsistent with *reason* to admit to or continue in magistracy such perjured, bloody, dissolute, and flagitious men as to make a wolf the feeder and keeper of the flock<sup>3</sup>." The *light of revelation* teaches christian men differently; but it is hardly possible to conceive that any one not under delusion could have used the blasphemy that John Livingstone did use on his death-bed, and which is approvingly repeated by his biographer,—when he said, "*Carry my commendation to*

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. iv. 14.<sup>2</sup> 2 Tim. i. 6.<sup>3</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, p. 6.



*Jesus Christ, till I come there myself!*"<sup>1</sup> In pressing his fellow prisoners to "see well to their *own* regeneration," Cargill assured them that "God can perfect great works in the twinkling of an eye," which is a truism; that "he put the thief on the cross through all his desires, convictions, conversion, justification, sanctification, &c. in short time, and left nothing to be-moan, but that there did not remain time enough to glorify Him upon earth that had done all these things for him<sup>2</sup>." And again, the same writer says, "ye will [ought to] join with none in public worship but those who have infallible signs of regeneration." But a man can no more regenerate and justify himself than he can forgive his own sins, or physically beget himself.

THE AGITATION begun by some of the established clergy, and countenanced by the lord bishop of Dunblane, for a General Assembly, was only another scene in the drama contemplated by his predecessor, bishop Leighton, to *presbyterianise* the church, and gradually to ascend to that dictatorial supremacy over the civil government which the assemblies had exercised during the dictatorship of Argyle. Neither the king nor his ministers had any desire to encourage such pranks as had formerly led to such great calamities, more especially as the bishops governed the church in all godly quietness in those dioceses where she was not afflicted with the presence of the ministers of the covenant and their followers. On the subject of General Assemblies, Mr. Skinner has the following judicious remarks:—"No doubt, in the primitive church of the first three centuries, the neighbouring bishops often met together and consulted among themselves about the common interests of religion, by virtue of the purely spiritual powers committed to them. But between the old ecclesiastical constitution and the times we are speaking of, there could not but be a considerable difference in point of external polity, as it will be acknowledged that the protection and encouragement given by the civil rulers to the church has a title to such degrees of submission from the church as she may grant, without materially hurting her radical powers or departing from her original foundation. Such was the situation of the church in general when established under the Roman empire while it stood, and of the particular churches in the various kingdoms which progressively broke off from it, before the papal preten-

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies, 297. Ed. 1824.

<sup>2</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, p. 15.



sions had risen to the height of modern encroachment ; and such was the situation of the church here, when she emerged from beneath the deluge which the torrent of the covenant had brought upon her. The king claimed the privilege of convocating a General Assembly or council of the church in his narrow kingdom of Scotland, as the christian emperors had done of calling general councils in their extensive dominions ; a privilege which all protestant writers agree in yielding to the sovereign, as belonging, not to his christianity, but to his crown.

“ WHAT reasons the king might have had for not calling such an assembly in all his reign, needs not to be inquired into at present. It may be presumed that the bishops saw no immediate necessity for such national conventions, since they were allowed full freedom in their inferior judicatories [synods and presbyteries], and had standing regulations, both ecclesiastical and civil, whereby to direct their government of the church. Besides, they had frequent meetings among themselves about church matters, according to the practice of the early ages, when it is certain the bishops met here and there, as was convenient, without these tumultuous conventions of presbyters, which the reformed system, especially in Scotland, brought along with it. And the king himself, with all his claims of supremacy, whether just or not, was still inclined to countenance the bishops, and to preserve to them their due superiority over the presbyters, with all such immunities and privileges belonging to their order as were consistent with their constitutional incorporation into the state. For there are extant sundry letters of different dates from the earl of Lauderdale, the king's great favourite, to archbishop Sharp, assuring him of the king's resolution to name no bishops to vacant sees but such as should be recommended by the two archbishops in their respective provinces, and therefore warning his grace to be very diligent and cautious in his recommendations. How far Lauderdale, who had been once a violent covenanter, and is variously spoken of by the historians of those times, was sincere in his professions of kindness to episcopacy, may still be a matter of doubt : but so it was in fact, that for a while he did make such professions, and by these means of condescension on the king's side, and attention to duty on the part of the bishops, matters were kept tolerably quiet for some years after the restoration. But the flame of the covenant was only smothered a little, not quite extinguished. There was still a remnant of the furious *Remonstrator* faction, whom no laws could restrain and no gentle-





ness mollify. And though the terms of communion with episcopacy were made so easy (. . . .) that Mr. Calamy, one of the most sensible presbyterians in England, said when he read it, 'What would our brethren in Scotland be at, or what would they have?—would to God we had these offers!' yet his Scottish brethren made light of these offers, *and were resolved never to be satisfied*<sup>1</sup>."

THE CHURCH was then miserably oppressed and persecuted, betwixt the upper millstone of erastianism in the state and the under millstone of the avowed animosity and persecution of the presbyterians, who were established by the council. Indeed the civil government acted too much on the principle of Erastus, both with the church and with the covenanters; as is evident from the Assertory act and its effects, and the Indulgence and its consequences. The erastian principle is destructive of religion; and it is not for a moment to be supposed that Christ would have committed the government of his kingdom to the civil governments of the world, which at that time were altogether heathen. He constituted princes in His own spiritual kingdom for its government, with a regular succession of princes who should be the best supporters of Cæsar's throne. During their lifetime, the divinely inspired apostles followed Christ's pattern and example in the government of the church; and, like Him, they kept the power of ordination and mission in their own hands. Whenever they added converts to the church by baptism, they ordained elders—that is, presbyters or priests—in every city. They followed the practice of their Lord and chief bishop with respect to themselves until He was about to take his departure from them; and before they were called to their blessed rest in Abraham's bosom they provided for succession from themselves in all parts of the world, by elevating some of those elders or priests whom they had ordained in every city to succeed them in their apostolic office, as Christ had at his ascension raised them into His Apostleship. These at first were called apostles, but after the death of those apostles who had "*seen the Lord*," the last of whom was St. John, in great humility they reserved the title of *apostle* to those whom Christ himself had ordained, and took the name of *bishop*, which previously to that

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 469-70.—There is an original letter from the earl of Lauderdale, in the Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, dated October 1st, 1667, addressed to his grace the archbishop of St. Andrews, from which it appears that the Scottish bishops met in synods frequently, but without the presence of their clergy, to treat and deliberate about the affairs of the church.—MSS. Ep. Chest, No. A. 6.



time had been given to the elders or priests, as we see the salutations in some of St. Paul's epistles—"the bishops," that is, the priests "and deacons." These two kingdoms, that which is, and that which is not of this world, are like two parallel lines; they may proceed harmoniously together, without ever interfering one with the other; and men who are alike the subjects of both may be punished by the one and at the same time absolved by the other, without either annulling the other's sentence, or preventing their temporal or spiritual punishment. It is when either of the kingdoms encroaches upon the just rights of the other, as the presbyterians did during the grand rebellion, and impedes the lawful exercise of its government, that any mischief can arise from the union of church and state; and as by a consequential retribution, Charles's government was now compelled by their own folly, to visit on them, and in which the established church was unhappily involved.

The great difference which exists betwixt the church and the kirk was conspicuous in their endurance of that erastianism under which they both suffered; the former submitted patiently to an evil that she could not cure, whereas the latter, to use their own language, first homologated it, by accepting that from the state which they had refused from the church, and afterwards by rebelling against their benefactors, and breaking systematically those conditions on which the state had not only granted them an indulgence, but had broken down the hedge of the established church, and placed the presbyterian ministers in it in an irresponsible position. Preaching, or "*supply of sermon*," has always been considered the chief object of the presbyterian ministry; preaching, however, is not named in the original commission granted to the apostles<sup>1</sup>, but was afterwards commanded at the ascension<sup>2</sup>. The commission to preach did not annul that to remit sins, but was an explanation of it, and an authority superadded to preach baptismal justification, or the washing away of sin original in that sacrament to all the earth. Mere preaching, or declamation upon a text of scripture, is what the meanest of the people, without any divine commission, have always undertaken, and so have brought the christian ministry into undeserved contempt; so much so, that in Holland, where erastianism is rampant, the presbyterian ministers are deprived of their meeting-houses and power of preaching without any trial, but simply by the significant ceremony of leaving a staff and a pair of shoes at their doors by the magistrate. The minister requires to ask

<sup>1</sup> St. John, xx. 19-23.

<sup>2</sup> St. Matthew, xxviii. 16-20.—St. Mark, xvi. 15.



no questions; the will and the pleasure of the magistrate thus expressed are sufficient, and to this state of infamy erastianism was fast verging in the disaffected districts in Scotland.

THE PRESBYTERIANS were not merely *tolerated*, but they were *established* by law. Many things may be allowed to exist upon sufferance, that ought not to be legally tolerated or established. Christ suffered the buyers and sellers in the outer court of the temple, but He gave them no license to profane the house of God. He also suffers, and has long suffering with, all the sins in the world; but he neither tolerates sin nor promises it impunity, whether in the high places of the earth or among the most ignorant of the people. When the sins of heresy and schism have extensively spread, and have taken deep root in "the inclinations of the people," there may be reasons of expediency for temporarily suffering such sins till the christian methods of argument and persuasion have been tried and failed; but there ought to be no authoritative license given for the propagation of these sins; because those who tolerate sin become partakers of it. The government that pays and establishes a schismatical and heretical ministry and an idolatrous priesthood, practically says God speed to the enormous sins of tearing the body of Christ, of the teaching and propagation of errors in religion, and of the worship of false gods and mediatory saints. It is not so easy to undo that which has already been yielded to clamour and sedition, but it may well become the rulers of a moral and christian nation to consider whether or not the divine blessing will follow a *regium donum* to heretical and idolatrous sects, and annual grants to public seminaries for the teaching of idolatrous principles, and which, by a sort of retribution also, most extensively and authoritatively teaches sedition and hatred against the government that nourishes and tolerates them.

THE MISFORTUNE is, that statesmen in all ages have been more inclined to consider the church as a machine for them to use for political purposes, and subservient to their ideas of expediency; whereas it is a society made by Christ for man, and in which an apostle commands there shall be no schism. However indifferent to, and wilfully ignorant, the "religious world" now is of the sin of schism, yet Christ earnestly prayed, and the apostle of the Gentiles frequently and fervently wrote, against it. Perhaps the emphatic words of Dr. Hickes, a bright ornament of the church of England, and who had witnessed the sins of schism and strife in Scotland, may produce some good reflections in well-disposed minds:—





“ I would not,” says he, “ be an heretic or a schismatic in the church, to have the wisdom of Solomon, the tongues of St. Paul, and the eloquence of Apollos; no, not to be caught up into Paradise, and hear those unutterable things. I would not be the best preacher that ever was, and speak in the pulpit by inspiration, to have that accusation lie against me which St. Paul drew up against the Corinthians—of ENVY, STRIFE, SCHISM.” And speaking of those spiritual gifts, which, through vain-glory, broke the peace of the church of Corinth, he says, “ gifts, whether *real* or *pretended*, whether natural, acquired, or inspired, are temptations to pride and apostacy, rather than security from them: witness Lucifer in heaven; Adam in Paradise; and Solomon, who, for his exceeding wisdom, was styled the wise. So that no comparison ought to be made betwixt the excellency of knowledge and grace, and betwixt the intellectual and saving gifts of the Spirit; or between the gifts of the Spirit, that make us wise and learned, and fluent talkers, and those which make us good. It is better to be humble than to be a prophet; it is better to be righteous than to have the faith of miracles; and it is better to be holy than to have the gift of tongues. But to be peaceable, and love union, is as great a grace as to be humble, righteous, and holy; nay, as to be pure and temperate. For it is equalled with all those, and many other prime graces of the New Testament; it is reckoned with many of them among the fruits of the Spirit; and the fruits of the Spirit are better and more desirable than the gifts of it. The gifts of it may improve the conformity of my soul after the *metaphysical* image of God, in knowledge and wisdom, which the apostate Spirits retain. But these are the *fruits* of it; as love, joy, peaceableness, &c., which conform my soul after His moral image, and make me partaker of His moral excellencies and perfections, and which alone can qualify my Spirit for His presence and acceptance; when many inspired men, and many more enthusiasts who think themselves inspired, shall be shut out of the kingdom of God: as for other sins, so especially for disturbing the peace, and rending the unity of the church.”





## CHAPTER XXXV.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP.

1675.—INCREASE of conventicles—coming to them in arms.—John King arrested.—Lord Cardross committed to the Castle.—Some gentlemen's houses garrisoned.—Letters of intercommuning—their effects.—Bishop Burnet—gives evidence against the duke of Lauderdale.—Some notices of bishop Burnet.—Lord bishop of Galloway's letter to the primate, respecting bishops Ramsay and Burnet.—An episcopal synod.—Bishop Ramsay—his letter to the primate—his grace's answer.—A court of inquiry on bishop Ramsay—two questions put to him—his answers.—An assembly inexpedient.—Two more questions put to bishop Ramsay—his answers—bishop Young implicated.—Bishop Ramsay submits.—Two of the clergymen restored.—Assault on a clergyman.—Death of the bishop of the Isles—is succeeded by bishop Wood.—1676.—Persecution of the clergy.—Opposition to Lauderdale.—The bishop of Dunblane and the other clergy restored.—Death of bishop Honyman.—Increase of conventicles.—Communions.—A proclamation against intercommuners.—Remarks.—A visitation of the universities.—Kirkton's arrest and rescue.—Conventicles.—An Indulgence.—Bishop of Galloway's opinion.—1677.—Duke of Hamilton deprived of his employments.—An assembly of presbyterian ministers.—Welsh's proceedings—his ordinations—his guards. Cameron, "a vagrant minister," takes possession of a church.—Another Indulgence.—A schism—and negotiations with Lauderdale.—Articles agreed on by the council.—A meeting of the ministers.—Clergy driven from their cures.—Preparations for rebellion—and for its suppression—by the heritors.—Measures of the privy council.—A county meeting—militia and clans called out.—A committee of the council sent into the army.—A bond exacted.—Dr. Hickey.—Deaths of bishops Guthrie and Laurie.—Consecrations.—Reflections.—Wherein martyrdom consists.—Unity.—The Catholic church.—Members of the church.—No communion among the presbyterians.—Privileges of the nobility.—Mode of worship.—Confessions of Faith.

1675.—CONVENTICLES now became more frequent than they had ever before been. Notwithstanding, says Wodrow, "of the vigorous and unprecedented laws made in the former years against preaching and hearing the gospel in houses and fields, yet this year, meetings to hear presbyterian ministers were very numerous, especially in the fields; and unless in Edinburgh, and some other towns, there were but few sermons in



houses. In most places, up and down the country, there were not houses capacious enough for the number that now came to hear; though I shall not say but in some places *there might be a kind of affectation to be in the fields* where there was not an absolute necessity, people being easier there in the summer time; but, generally speaking, the violence of the soldiers, and the numbers of the hearers, forced them to the open fields.

. . . . . These meetings were so numerous and frequent in many places, that our statesmen could not reach them all, and found it necessary to overlook what they could not help. There were spies at some meetings, and as they found opportunity, essayed to catch them at the next meeting, especially in coming or going. This obliged many to come to *hear the gospel with arms* for their own defence; and *some scuffles ensued in several places*, so that *the country resembled war as much as peace*: and when sudden attempts were made by soldiers and spies, it is little wonder some *indiscretions* fell out among the suffering people<sup>1</sup>. This is a fair confession; and it shews that the government was very unjustly blamed for the severities to which the *affectation* of the indulged ministers for field preaching compelled them to resort. The indulged ministers were under no necessity to conventicle and convocate *armed men* to make *scuffles* with the military, because they had parish churches, to which their head, the privy council, had inducted them, and where they ought to have preached; but affectation of popularity, and the principles of the Covenant, impelled them to break the law. But Wodrow insinuates that this arming of the saints, their scuffles with the troops, and their general disobedience and resistance to government, were taught by the ministers at these conventicles; for, says he, "it was matter of wonder there was no more of this than was, if upon the one hand we reflect upon the violence and injustice of the attackers, and upon the other, that ministers preached without judicatories to overlook them, and might thus be in hazard to deliver their own opinion, in difficult and emergent cases, with somewhat of their *own spirit mixed with it*—at least so as people might mistake them; and no doubt there were mistakes of this kind, and some ran lengths far beyond anything preached to them<sup>2</sup>."

IN THE MONTH of May, a party of soldiers arrested John King, an outlawed minister of the covenant, and domestic chaplain to lord Cardross, who had been keeping conventicles with his lordship's connivance. He had been apprehended

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 279.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. ii. 280.



the previous year for the same offence, and held to bail to appear when called on. King was seized in the night-time, but the domestics collected a number of country people next day, and rescued him from the military guard. Lord Cardross was himself from home, but as soon as he heard of his arrest, he complained to the council of the illegal entry into his house, and narrated the whole of the circumstances; but the report of the officer who had been engaged in the capture of King put the affair in a different light. A committee of the council having made a strict inquiry, found that the rescue was made with lord Cardross's acquiescence and connivance, and therefore the council imposed a fine, and committed his lordship to the castle<sup>1</sup>.

FINDING that all the plans that had hitherto been tried for the suppression of conventicles had failed, the privy council wrote to Lauderdale that they had enforced the act of parliament which ordained the archbishops and bishops to inquire what persons had taken upon them the office of chaplains in families. They proposed, for the suppression of conventicles, that garrisons should be placed in several gentlemen's houses in the disaffected districts, and had ordered the lord advocate to prosecute several itinerant and indulged ministers for assuming the authority of appointing fasts, and for contravening the instructions given to them when they received their indulgence. They further recommended the prolongation of those severe acts against conventicles passed in 1670, but which were to continue only for three years. Lauderdale agreed to proposals for garrisoning mansion-houses, and the council passed an act for placing military parties, consisting of one company of foot and twelve horse, in the houses of two noblemen and ten gentlemen, in those parts of the country where field conventicles were commonly held. The whole were placed under the command of major-general Monro, and part of the instructions to the officers was, "that the officers take special care that no prejudice be done by the soldiers to the houses or planting, but when they shall be appointed to remove, they shall leave them in as good condition as they found the same . . . . that the officers be careful that no disorders be committed by them or any under them, and that they endeavour to keep good intelligence in the country about them, in order to prevent all disorderly meetings; and in case any conventicle be held whereof they shall be informed, ordain them to use their endeavours to apprehend the minister or other per-

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies, 323.—Wodrow, ii. 291, 289-91.





son preaching thereat, and any considerable persons present at the same; and likewise to secure any ministers who by sentence of council are declared fugitives. . . . And upon information of any number of men in arms, if they find they can give no good account of themselves, that they are to disspate them and seize on them."

THUS the government was driven to the adoption of this arbitrary measure by the turbulent and lawless ministers of the covenant, who, although they had parish churches, to which they were legally inducted, yet their characteristic principles would not permit them to preach in them, but they must go to the fields and congregate great multitudes of armed men. It is to them alone that this system of unconstitutional severity was owing, although Wodrow, as usual, accuses the bishops, but who were, in reality, the greatest *sufferers*; "for any thing I can see," he says, "it was purely owing unto the virulence of the bishops, and their party in council," that the garrisons were planted. Such constant insinuations, upon mere party prejudice and malevolent spite, runs through the whole of his History, and has given a bias to his readers' minds that operates very prejudicially against the truth. The non-indulged ministers were so troublesome, and at the same time so well protected by their partizans, that the council found it necessary to revive an old popish, most oppressive, and cruel law, which had become obsolete, called Letters of Intercommuning, which were issued out against about a hundred persons. The object of these terrible letters was to prevent any person from harbouring, entertaining, or conversing with those parties who were denounced rebels, otherwise they were to be considered habit and repute guilty of their crimes, and to be prosecuted accordingly. Several were particularly mentioned who had harboured, resetted, and entertained the notorious John Welsh, "a declared and proclaimed traitor, in their houses, and elsewhere, and conducting and conveying him through several places in Fife in an hostile manner, and threatening those who should apprehend him." An intercommuned person was proclaimed rebel and traitor at the market-crosses of certain towns, when "all and sundry our lieges and subjects are charged and commanded, that they nor none of them presume to take upon hand to reset, supply, or intercommune with any of the aforesaid persons, our rebels, for the causes foresaid, nor furnish them with meat, drink, house, harbour, victual, nor other useful thing, or comfortable to them, nor have intelligence with them by word, writ, or message, or any other manner of way, under the pain to be repute and esteemed art and part



with them in the crimes foresaid." Behold, then, the fruits of the presbyterian principles of lawless insubordination, by which many innocent and loyal churchmen were, from ignorance, or compassion, or relationship, placed in the most painful and embarrassing position. Every means had been tried, and all had failed, and this law, from its very unchristian tyranny, was doomed to fail also, to reclaim the sons and daughters of the covenant, that most diabolical contrivance of the most wicked of men, the jesuits. And to suppress the effects of their contrivance, the government revived the old popish law against excommunicated persons, or those who had been laid under an interdict, with whom no man might "buy or sell."

IT IS NECESSARY to notice bishop Burnet's breach with Lauderdale; for which the bishop himself accounts, by saying that his grace was jealous of Burnet's favour with the king and the duke of York. But Lauderdale appears to have had but too good grounds of jealousy, and for suspecting that Burnet had betrayed many of his secrets to his political enemies. He tells us that he attempted to undeceive the king respecting the state of Scotland and the duke's administration; and his intimacy with the duke of Hamilton, who led the opposition, besides some other matters, clearly indicated to the duke that he had betrayed him, and assisted in the attempt to procure a change of ministry. Burnet says that Lauderdale at this time heartily espoused the cause of the church at the court of England; and this assertion is confirmed by archbishop Sharp. Burnet had been presented to the king, and he pretends to say he reproved his majesty for his vices; but he made the whole conversation, with perhaps many additions, matter of gossip, which got into circulation, and at length reached the king's ears. He was forbid the court, and disgraced, and, says Salmon, "had he not fallen into the hands of the mildest prince in Europe, he would probably have met with another sort of rebuke than only his being forbid the court and commanded twenty miles from London, which order we find he had the impudence to disobey." When he found he was unable to ruin the duke with the king, he next betrayed all the duke's secrets to some members of parliament, under the pretence of ill usage, in order to procure his grace's impeachment. He informs us that the duke of Lauderdale endeavoured to render himself popular in Scotland by conniving at the insolence of the presbyterians, and that thereby he provoked the church party out of measure: and yet immediately after he says that archbishop Sharp, of whom he always speaks maliciously, went up to London and openly asserted that Hamilton and the opposition were the



greatest enemies to the church. It is not to be supposed that the primate would have thus spoken if he had not had good reason for it. Their reconciliation, and the restoration of archbishop Burnet to his see, who had always been one of the church's best defenders, is some corroboration of the primate's assertion of the good disposition of Lauderdale towards the church<sup>1</sup>.

BISHOP BURNET was examined by the House of Commons, and gave evidence against Lauderdale, that his grace had said "he wished the presbyterians in Scotland would rebel, that he might bring over the Irish papists to cut their throats;" and that the duke contemplated the marching of a Scottish army into England, to suppress public spirit, and to make the king absolute. Burnet seems at one time to have possessed in some degree Lauderdale's confidence; but he justly lost it by his ingratitude and treachery in betraying his most important secrets, and which drew down upon the duke an impeachment for high treason. Besides, Burnet had entered into a confidential friendship and political alliance with the earl of Kincardine, who was on bad terms with Lauderdale, and opposed to his government. In speaking of his evidence before the House of Commons, and of his intrigues with the duke's opponents, the author of the *Memoirs of the History of Scotland* says—"For understanding whereof [this intrigue] it is fit to know that this Gilbert Burnet, being nephew to Warriston by his sister, had with her milk drank in that mercury which was inseparable from Warriston's family; and being, whilst he was very young, admitted into a familiarity with Lauderdale, because of the kindness that Lauderdale had ever entertained for old Master Robert Burnet, his worthy and loyal father, the young man arrived very early at as much learning beyond his years, as he wanted the discretion and solidity that was necessary for his profession. But being encouraged by lady Margaret Kennedy into an amour, she, to revenge herself upon Lauderdale, because he did not marry her, engaged him into a plot against Lauderdale; in pursuance of which, Master Burnet finding that the king would not part with Lauderdale upon a naked address, suggested to some of the members of the House of Commons, that he could discover to them Lauderdale's accession to the bringing in of popery; and being examined, he deponed upon some expressions vented by Lauderdale, in a conversation at which the duchess of Hamilton and they two

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's *Impartial Examination of Burnet's Own Times*, ii. 719-20-21.





were only present. But yet, the expressions being so improbable, and so capable of a good construction, even though they had been spoken, and the duchess of Hamilton having, in a letter under her hand, disclaimed her ever having heard such words, and Master Burnet having, in an epistle dedicatory, posterior thereto, magnified the duke of Lauderdale, as the chief pillar of the protestant religion, the odium designed against the duke of Lauderdale returned to the author, whom the best of his friends acknowledged to have betrayed friendship, and all indifferent men to have wronged truth<sup>1</sup>."

At this time archbishop Sharp was in London, to whom there is a copy of a letter from the bishop of Galloway, in which he corroborates the foregoing accounts of bishop Burnet, and of his prevarications, as follows, dated Edinburgh, the 6th of May, 1675:—

"MAY it please your grace,—The privy council being adjourned till the 3d of June, I hope to wait on your grace here about that time. Nothing of great importance hath been done at council at this time. The duke of Hamilton appeared much for Greig, the nonconformist minister, and was well opposed, with calmness and reason, by my lord Hatton, who never fails the king's nor the church's service; it were well with both to have many such true friends. The duke appeared much also for the three fined provosts, whose petition is now transmitted to the king. And it is with some complaints anent the marquis of Douglas's troop hath been all the noise some have been able to make at this time, which is not of any great importance. Sir John Harper came to the town with the duke, whom I spoke with on the street yesterday, and told him the use bishop Ramsay had made of what passed twixt him and me, on his last being here. He said that bishop was to blame to use his name, as giving the rise to his going to court; for he well knew, that before he saw him or spoke to him, he was determined to make that journey; but withal said, it might be, that apprehending he might be tried by your grace, with other bishops, he might the rather be induced to go and prevent it. I said, how could he dream (since he complained of not being heard or tried) to shun being tried by his ordinary and his peers? He said he had no mind to be judged or tried by your grace, and that he might desire to be heard and tried before the council. I said the council was no church judicatory, and a true

<sup>1</sup> Memoirs, pp. 315, 316.





bishop would not desire to appear so much of Erastus his mind, as to think so. He said, he would not say that the bishop did think so, and so our conversation ended.

“MR. GILBERT BURNET hath written to his brother, that it was sore against his inclination that he hath appeared against the duke, but that he was forced into it—which ill agrees with his actings, and what he hath signed, since none could force him, not being upon oath, to disclose such secrets as he pretends to reveal, and most look upon as forgeries and villainous contrivances of his own; and the rather, that the duchess of Hamilton disowns what he says my lord duke said to her, anent bringing over the Irish papists. A nobleman to whom her grace told it, said to me yesterday, that she utterly disowns it as a lie, and said she never heard it; but when Gilbert Burnet asked of her if the duke of Lauderdale had not said so to her, then she absolutely refused that ever his grace had said any such thing to her; and when a person of honour, and malice enough against my lord duke, doth so contradict his testimony in that matter, which Gilbert Burnet says was spoke to her by that duke, is it not reason to believe all the other accusations and informations to be so many villainous and infamous forgeries?

“THOUGH we all long for your grace’s presence here, and stand very much in need of it, yet we cannot but be much satisfied with your being now where you are, and see ane happy divine Providence in it, whereby you have had ane opportunity to do so excellent service to the king, to the churches in both kingdoms, and to so noble and worthy a friend to both as is my lord duke of Lauderdale, and thereby so much right to yourself, even in the eyes of your enemies, who, though they malign your grace for so doing, yet cannot but in their hearts acknowledge your integrity, resolution, and generosity. I can assure your grace of all our prayers for your long and happy preservation amongst us, to be ane eminent instrument of blessing to this poor unhappy church, and of none with more heart and fervour, than the poor prayers of, may it please your grace,

“Your grace’s most humble and faithful

“obedient servant,

“JO. PATERSON.<sup>1</sup>”

THERE was an episcopal synod of the province of St. Andrews held at that city, but there is no account of what was

<sup>1</sup> MSS. Ep. Chest, No. B. 40.



the object for which it met; although it is probable that it related to the recent agitation for a general assembly of the whole church, and to the compilation of canons. Bishop Ramsay seems to have been intemperately urgent for an assembly; and to have an authoritative name given to the present meeting, whether or not it was to be considered as national, provincial, or diocesan; to which the archbishop replied, it was to be called a "consultative" synod. Much of the spirit of the Covenant appears in bishop Ramsay's conduct at this synod, the only account of which is to be found in his own letter, in which he alleges, what is denied by the primate, and which does not appear to have been true, that the archbishop desired him to withdraw from the meeting, for he says in his letter that he "stayed till the meeting was ended." He did not attend at any of the subsequent sittings, but wrote a long letter, addressed to the primate and the other bishops, stating what it may be presumed he had said, or designed to say, in the synod. He protested for his own right and that of his successors, bishops of Dunblane, to be present at synods, and "to be authorised to bring presbyters with him, as well as any other bishops, which hath not been granted to me at this time." He says, there was a motion for canons spoken of at the session at which he was present; for it appears that those authorised in the reign of Charles I. had not survived the storms of the usurpation, and had not been ecclesiastical law since the Restoration. In his letter he states his reasons for the preparation of canons, not in a "consultative" synod, but in a general assembly, composed of the bishops and priests of both provinces. He seemed also desirous of reviving his predecessor's (Dr. Leighton) scheme, of a comprehension of the presbyterians, which, as it had already failed, it is not surprising that the synod should be decidedly opposed to any renewal of so wild and impracticable a scheme. In conclusion, he makes his "humble request, that his grace might interpose for taking off the sentence inflicted upon those loyal and worthy watchmen, the ministers of Edinburgh, lest disorders grow more in that city, and from thence infect other places<sup>1</sup>."

I SEE NO DATE given for the meeting of this synod; but it must have been early in this year, as the primate went to London in April, and was soon after followed by the bishop of Dunblane, who never appears to have obeyed the royal command of going to the Isles. His journey had been under-

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 302, 303.



aken without having asked either the king or the archbishop's permission to leave the kingdom, which, in the circumstances of his case, was incorrect, as he was ordered to confine himself to a certain locality. Under the influence of excited feelings and wounded pride, he addressed the following angry letter to the primate; it is couched in general terms, and brought no specific charge. This letter, and also the archbishop's reply, are among the manuscript papers in the Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, and from which these are copied:—

“ London, 7th June, 1675.

“ MAY IT PLEASE YOUR GRACE,—It is not unknown to your grace what obliged me to come to this place, or occasioned my stay so long in it. I have ground to believe it was you who abused his majesty's ears with that account, which his majesty takes notice of in his letter of the 16th July, 1674; and was the ground of what his majesty was pleased to order concerning me, both in that and in the letter to the privy council of the same date. It was you who not only intimated his majesty's pleasure, contained in your own letter, very surprisingly to me, and in an extra-judicial and unfatherly manner, without any ghostly exhortations, but also influenced the council to intimate their order, without previously calling me to be heard; and when I gave in my petition to the council, containing my purpose to give exact obedience to his majesty's pleasure, but only prayed them to represent my case to his sacred majesty, that, for the justification of my innocence (since I was not called before sentence), I might be put to the strictest trial anent these crimes informed against me, (a desire which, coming from the meanest laic, should for its justice have been kindly entertained by churchmen,) yet you know how vigorously you opposed it; yea, after the council was pleased, notwithstanding your opposition, to transmit my petition to his majesty's consideration, you shortly after came here, where you have stayed since, having no small influence on them who manage public affairs. It might have been reasonably hoped that, as primate, you should have concerned yourself to help forward a favourable answer to the petition of a bishop of your own province, so just in itself, and being so transmitted; or, though your grace had no regard to me, yet the consideration of the good of the church, in that corner where you know disorders are increased since my restraint, together with the danger of the preparation, should have prompted your grace to do somewhat to bear witness that your zeal for the church was stronger than your private pique at me. But since I





came here, I have been amazed to find a person of your character and parts could think it worthy of himself and his pains to make and spread such reports as I am told you have done. May I be so bold as to ask your grace if indeed you believe me to be a fanatic, or upon what shadow of ground you either think or report it to others? Have you any letters under my hand, avouching that presbyterial government, even but for its substantials, is *jure divino*? or that I was thinking *de mutando solo*, when the parliament made the first discoveries of their inclination to restore episcopacy? And your grace may remember, that I was sequester by the usurpers, from the exercise of my charge, till the king's happy restoration; and you know how early I discovered my persuasion towards church government, and how I acted for it in the synod of Lothian, under the eye of the greatest patrons of presbytery; and do you think I am turned fanatic, because a bishop? I beseech your grace to consider how unjustifiable those slanders will be when put to the touch. Wherefore I desire (I shall not say the favour, but the justice of you) that you may either choose an indifferent person, who may consider your allegations, with their evidences, and my answers; or that without more noise (considering my sufferings already are far above the merits of all you can lay to my charge) you will be pleased to interpose and wipe off the dirt by the same hand that threw it on me, whereby I may be restored to his majesty's favour, and my just right: by doing whereof you may cross a lust of malice, but can neither wound conscience nor honour. But, if you please neither of these, nor any thing else than my being a holocaust to your revenge, then let me beseech you to allow me the same freedom in representing you, which you have taken concerning me: and I assure you, though I will have foul things to represent, I will do it in fairer manner than that in which you used me. My lord, if you think strange of the terms and manner of this address, I must be excused; for I would not put what I was obliged to say in fairer or better expressions; nor can I believe you should expect I would come to trouble you myself, after you had often discovered your displeasure when I waited on you, and required me to be gone out of your own house after you had called me to it, and at length pursued me to this height and continuance of suffering, without just grounds. However, my lord, I have a just veneration for your character, and shall be loath to dishonour any that bears it, if you do not constrain me, by continuing to oppress me unjustly, and by continuing to shut up against me all avenues of redress: yet, even when



this force shall be put upon me, I will endeavour to follow such methods as are agreeable to the canons and practice of the church in such cases, so much as unavoidable circumstances will permit me. And herein I desire not to be mistaken, as if I sent this out of any trifling vanity to fret you: I do it not but out of duty to warn you. They are no trifles I have to say; and if you condemn this warning, I will be exonerated before God and men to publish them. But I hope and desire you will prevent me, by taking sober resolutions; for I declare upon my honesty, that no man knows that (much less what I have written), so that it is in your power yet to make it public or keep it quiet. Do which pleases you; but let me assure you (though you would seem not to believe it), that I am a true son of the church, a zealous lover of order, and due subordination in it; and wherein you are truly for these, you shall never find me other than, may it please your grace,

“Your grace’s most faithful servant,

“JA. DUNBLANEN.”

“If your grace return no answer this or the next day, I will conclude you resolve to give me none.”

TO THIS angry and vituperative letter the archbishop returned a calm and dignified answer; in which he denies the charges in the same general terms in which they were made. No further light is thrown upon the cause of their misunderstanding; but the bishop of Dunblane seems to have been irritated by some designing enemy of the primate, and to have unjustly suspected that his grace had rendered him some ill offices. Indeed, the bishop of Dunblane’s letters but too evidently show that he “laboured under the infirmities of impotent rage and exasperation of spirit.” The archbishop’s answer is mild and temperate, and conveys some just reproofs; and although they contradict each other on the point where bishop Ramsay says he was ordered to withdraw, it is probable, that, in his state of irritability, he may have mistaken some of the primate’s remarks, and had misconstrued them into a dismissal from the synod. I should be inclined to think that it was not in the primate’s power to dismiss a prelate so summarily, without a vote of the synod.

“Ax-yard, 8th June, 1675.

“MY LORD,—Yesterday, in the morning, while I was going from the Privy-garden to the Park, a serving-man put a letter in my hand from your lordship; which having read, I shall in gratification of your pressing desire, send this answer. Your



lordship knows best what obliged you to come to this place, or occasioned your so long stay in it, having notified neither to me; and you are mistaken if you think that I came or have stayed in reference to you or your case, or have taken pains to make or spread reports, as you are told I have done: for I declare I have not mentioned your name to the king nor spoke of you to any one, before I received your letter, save to those who told me you had been with them, and spoken of me, and my way, in reference to the church and to you; and what I said was in just defence and vindication against what you had most injuriously laid at my door. Your lordship has charged me with many things of which I am innocent, and for which neither as a privy-councillor nor an archbishop am I obliged to give an account. I have not made it my business to inquire into your persuasions in former or later years, nor into the meritorious actings or sufferings you value yourself so much upon before the king's Restoration; nor am I solicitous whom you mean, who, by letters under his hand, avoucheth that presbytery is *juris divini*, or was thinking *de mutando solo* when the parliament was about to restore episcopacy: for better men than either you or I, have, without any criminous imputation, changed their sentiments about the form of government and public administrations which they have owned by the press and the sword. I do not think, neither have I said to any, that you are 'turned fanatic because become a bishop;' but I think there may be a schismatical and unpeaceable bishop in the church, and have more than once admonished you to take heed of that divisive temper, and giving way to that dictating and assuming humour, by which you have been observed to scandalize your superiors and brethren, both before you was a bishop and since; and I shall moreover fairly tell your lordship, that since your coming to England, I have heard that some, who think you had no small hand in that persecution, have declared that you contributed for promoting the fanatic interest, and have not spared to slander some of your own order, in their absence, which I believe is not unknown to you. I had little opportunity to converse with you in my whole life. I remember when I did you some good offices, but cannot say I had the opportunity to speak with you above twice or thrice, and then overly, and several years before you were made a bishop; and since, I have said nothing but what I said to yourself upon divers occasions, before some bishops and others of the clergy, who have testified I did *not* require you to be gone out of my house at St. Andrews; and after, at Edinburgh, when you was at my lodging, you did meet with no uncivil usage





from me. So that when some told me you made that your excuse for not paying ordinary civilities to me since you came hither, I said I was not to challenge that strangeness which was noticed by others. It was a strange allegation of your lordship, and you are the first clergyman of any degree whom I ever heard complain of my uncivil usage of any of them. And it is no less strange, that you allege my continuance to oppress you, for endeavouring to shut up against 'you all avenues for redress,' as you phrase it, without any evidence or proof; but that you will set me up as the object of your blustering against, on a pretence to the errand, you know best, you came and stayed here for. I shall further add, that the scolding language and menacing warnings you are pleased to treat me with, by your letter, do not fret or discompose me, though you say they are not trifles which you have to bring against me. And as my own heart tells me, I harbour no malice, pique, or revenge, against your lordship, which you so positively charge against me; so I believe I can justify, to all my brethren of our order, (whose judgment I shall not decline, as to all you can accuse me of,) or to any else who shall be appointed by competent authority, that whatever I have done or said against your lordship did proceed from no other motive but from the sense of that duty I owe to the king, to the church, and to the office I bear, which in the judgment of my brethren you have violated. And although I might have expected more deference and regard from your lordship, than hitherto I have found; yet, if that the unavoidable circumstances you write that you are under, will not permit you to follow these methods which are consistent with the great veneration you say you have for my character, but that you must endeavour to dishonour the person who bears it, without transgressing the canons and practices of the church, by representing those foul things you say you have against me, I hope God will arm me with patience under this injustice, and also from your own hand wipe off that dirt that shall be thrown upon my integrity, which I will own against all the methods of expressing that bitter and causeless enmity and spite, you have not stuck to confess against me in Scotland, and since you came hither. You know I have not been a stranger in the lot of being attacked by the barkings of the malicious defamations and the printed libels of the adversaries to that order, for which I may say, without vanity, I have suffered and done more and longer than your lordship can pretend to, or those who malign me. And now, if you should follow that trade as you have begun, others may think, *quamvis ego dignus essem hac contumelia indignus*





*tamen tu qui faceres.* And since you are pleased under your hand to give me warning that you will represent foul things against me, and which you will publish, yet do not mention the particular crimes, but leave it to my choice whether to make it public or to hold it quiet, which is upon the matter to take with the guilt of whatever malice shall suggest or allege against me: this I confess you may declare upon your honesty is a generous offer from a true son of the church, a zealous lover of order and due subordination, to be made to one to whom you swore canonical obedience, and do now sign yourself ever to be a most faithful servant, but on the honourable terms of his lying for ever at your mercy for his reputation. I will not return you the compliment, nor use that candour you have used to me, by giving me warning of all these hideous things you have to boast [threaten] me with; but tell you I live under the protection of a just prince, and the laws, which take notice of public libellers; and I do rejoice in the testimony of my conscience, which charges me with nothing in my administrations, for which I have cause to be ashamed before men. And when you consider the hazard of owning yourself as the author of these foul aspersions you warn me to expect, and shall return to a more sober and sedate recollection of mind, and of your duty, you shall find, through God's grace, that my carriage shall be such as becomes the duty of my station, which forbids my entertaining malice, pique, or revenge against any, and enjoins charity, compassion, and long-suffering towards all, especially towards those who labour under the infirmities of impotent rage and exasperation of spirit. In this sense

"I am your lordship's very humble servant,

"ST. ANDREWS."

"P.S.—I have obeyed the intimation by your postscript, with this caveat, that your lordship henceforth forbear troubling yourself with addresses by letters to me, for I will not further notice them with returns<sup>1</sup>."

BISHOP RAMSAY seems to have been irritated by the unconstitutional exertion of the Assertory Act; and, from morbid sensibility, to have supposed the primate to have been the author of his disgrace. This does not appear to have been the case; but the primate's reply seems to have added to his discontent, rather than to have allayed it. They both returned to Scotland in the course of the summer. "Archbishop Sharp having done all the service he could for the church, took leave

<sup>1</sup> MSS. Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, A. 12.



of the king and the court; and this was the last time he had the honour to kiss his majesty's hand: and returning to Scotland in August 1675, he studied to bring affairs to unity and accommodation, and faithfully discharged the functions of his sacred office<sup>1</sup>."

THE ASSERTORY ACT had given the king such a despotic power in the church, that the bishop of Dunblane had placed himself in a very disagreeable position by going to court without leave during his suspension. A commission, therefore, was sent down to the two archbishops and some of the other bishops, to hold a court of inquiry, and to summon bishop Ramsay before them. It sat down on the 4th of September, and after reading his majesty's commission, the following interrogatories were put to the bishop:—

1. WHETHER the said bishop of Dunblane did obtain leave, either of the king's majesty, or of his metropolitan, to repair to court in April last? 2. Whether the said bishop of Dunblane did abet or assist the motion and petition of a national synod without consent of his superior, and the bishops of this church?

ON ACCOUNT of the personal dispute betwixt the metropolitan and his suffragan, it might perhaps have been as well had the primate been excluded from this commission; but it is much to be lamented that no documents have been left behind by which we could judge more accurately of the proceedings. Bishop Ramsay withdrew, and returned written answers to the above questions. He complained of not having received a formal indictment; but of having been proceeded against by way of inquisition.

TO THE FIRST question he ingenuously acknowledged that he had neither asked nor obtained permission, either from the king or the archbishop; because he found that he had been secretly misrepresented to his majesty, and thereby a sentence procured which lay heavy upon him. Finding also that his petition to the council had been transmitted to the king, and being grieved to lie under the imputation of supposed guilt, he therefore determined to appeal to his majesty in person, so as to clear himself of crimes of which he was accused, and to be exonerated from them. His reasons for not asking the primate's permission were—1, because his grace had been for a considerable time at court; 2, because, having been suspended from the exercise of his office, he thought he was relieved from his canonical obligations; but, 3, more particularly he was not without strong suspicion that he who had injured him by that secret



and groundless account which had been laid before the king, was so nearly related to his metropolitan that he could promise himself little success, if he had asked his grace's permission. In conclusion, he humbly apologised for his fault, and promised that if his majesty would be graciously pleased to restore him to the free exercise of his calling he would be as careful to reside at his charge, and not go abroad without permission, as any bishop in his church. He states that his majesty had admitted him to his presence, and that he had endeavoured to clear himself. He also says that previous to his journey to court he had never been a day's journey from the place of his residence; and yet the whole bench of bishops have been accused by the presbyterians of constantly sitting in council, and instigating that body to all the severities which the covenanters' own rebellious principles had brought upon them.

TO THE SECOND interrogatory he replied by denying that he had ever abetted or assisted the petition for a national synod; but he freely confessed that he thought a national synod was necessary for settling a church which *wanted an established rule of faith, worship, and discipline*, and he saw no ground then to conceal his opinion, in which he was confirmed by ecclesiastical history. But after the act had passed "for the establishment and constitution of a national synod," he never doubted that it was lawful to say, as the act itself said, "that a national synod is necessary and fit for the honour and service of Almighty God, the good and quiet of the church, and the better government thereof in unity and in order." Besides, the act declared and appointed the meeting of a national synod, and who should be its constituent members. It appeared to him that his majesty's inclinations were disposed towards the convoking of a synod, for his majesty had issued his royal warrant and command to the bishops and some of the clergy *to meet and prepare a liturgy, canons, &c.* to be offered for his majesty's approbation, and afterwards, by royal authority, to be presented to a national synod for its confirmation. That such was his majesty's gracious intention is confirmed by his having appointed the earl of Rothes his commissioner and representative in such a synod; and after the expiration of the time mentioned in the warrant, the duke of Lauderdale was appointed commissioner for the same synod, which was continued though never held. During the continuance of both these commissions there was no national synod held; but where the obstacle to it lay he could not infallibly say; but of this he was sure, that it did not lie with his majesty, who had sufficiently manifested his princely zeal to accomplish it. At





the conclusion of the session of parliament in 1672, the duke of Lauderdale intimated his majesty's desire to all the bishops then assembled, that they should speedily consider of those things which were "necessary for settling this church *in its intrinsics*, mentioning particularly *canons, catechism, and form of worship*; wherein his grace assured their lordships of his majesty's royal concurrence, as well as his own service for the establishing these, and for the enacting such law as their lordships had judged necessary." Whence, he continues, "I hope it will be granted, that it was no mistake that, upon these grounds, I did believe so concerning his majesty's inclinations for a national synod; and albeit I shall be found to have mistaken, I am sure there was nothing in that error contrary to profound loyalty and charity, and therefore shall humbly expect pardon from his majesty's transcendent clemency." He then expresses his contrition for having incurred his majesty's displeasure in desiring a synod, "being under the fervours kindled by my consecration but so lately passed, and finding not so much as a catechism appointed in the church, nor a rule by which to try the faith and correct the manners of my diocese; as also that the aforesaid act contains an express prohibition to all archbishops and bishops, 'to observe and keep any act, canon, order, or ordinance, but what shall be considered, consulted, and agreed upon by the said synod;' and yet myself (the most unworthy) advanced to be one of but fourteen persons who are to answer to God Almighty and his Son the Lord Jesus Christ for this poor church, which, though it had frighted me to snatch at remedies which wiser men and more conversant in state affairs may think unseasonable, the transportation is pitiable and the cause of it commendable: yet I affirm, that as it was no new opinion taken up at or nigh that time judged unseasonable, but the prosecution and continuation of an old motion entertained once by the most I conversed with, so I wonder upon what grounds the plain and obvious, and by his majesty and parliament (where my lords the bishops were sitting), an enacted remedy for this church's distempers should have been suggested to his sacred majesty as a contrivance. Nor hath it appeared to me how any evil design against the state could have been effected, among so many loyal churchmen as that meeting must consist of, where nothing can be treated of but what his majesty or his commissioner (who hath also a negative) should deliver or cause to be delivered to the archbishop, the president thereof. Nor is it almost supposeable that his majesty or his commissioner would propose any fanatical design against the order of the



church, or that the archbishops, bishops, deans, &c would entertain it. Nor did I ever think that a national synod could ever be indicted but allenarly by his majesty, who only hath the authority both of calling and dissolving them, and is sole supreme judge on earth of the fittest times when to indict them at his pleasure; nor did I ever hear any of these persons who appeared in that desire, but always spoke their wishes for it with a full submission to his majesty's pleasure<sup>1</sup>."

BISHOP RAMSAY's desires do not appear to have been by any means unreasonable; but he seems to have been of a restless innovating disposition, and his fault in this instance lay more in the manner than in the matter. It is probable that the archbishop was apprehensive that the assertory act, which had already wrought so much mischief in the church, might be made an engine for crushing her still more effectually by means of an assembly; and although a national synod for the purpose named above would have been very desirable, yet, with the powers existing with which the king was invested by that diabolical act, it was *not expedient*. The statesmen of that period seem to have considered the church more in the light of an engine of state than of a divine institution; and the assertory act gave them a plenitude of power which almost annihilated her independence. The bishops and clergy felt this to be a dreadful evil, and among the manuscripts at Aberdeen there is the copy of a memorial which had been prepared, complaining that by that act the king was empowered to depose and replace bishops and clergymen at his own pleasure, which they represented "AS A GRIEVOUS SERVITUDE." The memorial also states that the bishops and clergy were only waiting for a favourable opportunity to move and persuade the king either to repeal or to explain the said act, so that no bishop or presbyter should be removed or turned out without a fair, open, and legal trial, by ecclesiastical judges and judicatories<sup>2</sup>.

ON THE 6TH, other two questions were put to bishop Ramsay, viz. 1. Whether the bishop of Dunblane heard the bishop of Edinburgh reason against the motion for a national synod, in the archbishop of St. Andrews his chamber? 2. Whether the said bishop of Dunblane knew that the motion of a national synod was contrary to the judgment of his superior, the archbishop of St. Andrews his grace?

BISHOP RAMSAY again complains of harsh and unbrotherly

<sup>1</sup> MSS. in the Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, A. 11.—Wodrow, ii. 304-311.

<sup>2</sup> MSS. in the Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, B. 17.



usage, and that the perpetually binding canon—"against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses,"—had not been observed towards him. He does not deny that the bishop of Edinburgh might, at the time mentioned, have spoken against the meeting of a synod; but he repeats that his lordship had previously been amongst the most forward in that cause. Bishop Young certainly advocated the calling of a synod, but had seen cause to adhere to reasons advanced against it; and he does not appear to have acted either an ingenuous or a friendly part towards the bishop of Dunblane. Bishop Ramsay says, "I do distinctly remember that all the winter before [the spring of 1674], he [the bishop of Edinburgh] was for a national synod in the same terms and measure that I was, and gave this for a reason, that the church would never be well so long as my lord St. Andrews was upon the head of it, or at least till there were rules and limits set to his grace, whereby he might be restrained from doing in the common concerns of the church, without the common consent of the rest of the bishops. And his lordship may remember we concluded a meeting of all the bishops to be fittest and ablest both to judge of the expediency of the motion and to carry his grace's consent to it."

"As to the second query," he continues, "I shall not deny that both my lord of Edinburgh and I were not a little jealous of his grace's aversion from that motion; but I do not remember that his grace did ever interpose his authority, or offer reasons against it, much less that ever he intimated any thing of his majesty's dislike to it, before July 1674, after which time I suffered. But I am sure I acted nothing in prosecution thereof; yea, all the time when I expressed my opinion for that motion, I cannot be charged with doing any more than to use humble entreaties that my lord primate might go foremost in it, according to his primacy. When his grace stood, perhaps I used such motives as I could, and renewed my humble desires; so that all [that] was done, argued still a dependence upon his grace. Nor did I doubt but all this accorded well with the laws of the kingdom and the doctrine of the church, whereby I was taught that *omnes episcopi sunt ejusdem potestatis intensivæ*; and that it was no breach of order or canonical obedience to desire him who is superior to him in order and extension of power, according to his place to appear for the good of that church, which the one (though in subordination) was to be accountable for unto the righteous judge, as well as the other; nor could I see ground to expect





exoneration in the day of accounts, if he had not humbly, earnestly, and modestly renewed these his desires to his superior. For if it is not determined to be contrary to the rules of duty and civility for a subject to seek a private favour for himself from his lord, and after refusal to renew his desires and use the mediation of others, that he may obtain a grant; I do not see how it can be a crime in a bishop after the same manner to sue to his metropolitan in a matter concerning the church."

THE BISHOP entered on a long general defence, shewing a great share of morbid sensibility and wounded feelings, not connected with the questions that had been put to him; but we gather from his complaint the mischievous effects of the assertory act in his case. "And now," he says, "having considered every particular whereupon I have been inquired, I rejoin, that not one law or canon has been objected to, or the transgression thereof alleged against me, although there has been time to search very narrowly in all my conversation these *thirteen months*, during which I have been *restrained from the exercise of mine office*, and otherwise, and now the first time called to be heard." This unpleasant affair ended in bishop Ramsay submitting to the sense of the court against the calling of a national assembly, and asking pardon; when there was no more said about the matter. Kirkton says, he "came off upon his knees." He also says, the "four curates who had made most noise, Turner, Cant, Robertson, and Hamilton, were banished from their charges for conscience sake (as they said) for a while, but were afterwards, upon satisfaction, received, and no more harm done." But at this time only Turner and Robertson were restored to the exercise of their ministry upon their signing the following paper:—"We undersubscribing, taking to our serious consideration that his majesty hath manifested his displeasure against us for our motion and petition relating to a national synod, June 1674, do sincerely declare our grief that thereby we did occasion any offence to his majesty or any in authority over us; and we do most heartily beseech that his majesty may graciously pass by whatever hath offended him against us; and that my lord primate his grace, and others entrusted with him, may be pleased to restore us to the exercise of our former ministry, wherein, by the Lord's grace, we shall constantly behave ourselves with all loyalty to the king's most excellent majesty, and with all dutifulness to our ecclesiastical superiors, acting in our station in a due subordination and obedience





unto them, and live in a mutual love and concord with our colleagues and brethren<sup>1</sup>.

(Signed)

“ ARCH. TURNER,  
“ JO. ROBERTSON.”

WODROW lays claim to the thanks of the church for giving the foregoing detail with fairness and candour:—“ I am almost ready,” he says, “ to flatter myself as deserving the thanks of the party for acquainting the public with them, which I have done in a very fair and candid way, and from their own mouths.” He does deserve our thanks, and shall have them; but they would have been more heartily given had his motives been better than he shews they were. He is worthy of thanks also for informing us of the continued persecution that the inferior clergy experienced at the hands of his brethren, in the districts where the ministers of the covenant had been indulged. Several individuals were examined by the council for a “ riot;” that is, an assault on the person of the episcopal clergyman of New Monkland, in the diocese of Glasgow<sup>2</sup>. This is another proof among many of the truth of Burnet’s words, “ that the persecution lies mainly on the conformists’ side.” “ If I should recount the railings, scoffings, and floutings, which the *conformable ministers* met with to their faces, even on streets and public highways, not to mention the contempt that is poured out upon them more privately, I would be looked upon as a forger of extravagant stories<sup>3</sup>.” This persecution was a systematic and designed thing, with the view of rendering all the parish churches vacant, so as to have more indulged presbyterians planted, and thus gradually to get their sect altogether established, and the kingdom presbyterianised by degrees. It is painful to record that four poor old women, who were reputed witches, were strangled and then burnt.

ROBERT WALLACE, lord bishop of the Isles, died this year. He was one of the Resolutioner party, and appears to have been very active in opposing the oppressive measures of the Remonstrators, to whom principal Baillie refers several of his correspondents for his opinion and advice, and also for his active co-operation in the attempts of the resolutioners to counteract the schemes of the remonstrator faction. One of that confederacy, with unhallowed pen, gave that good man the follow-

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow’s History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland, ii. 312-316.  
—Kirkton’s History, 348.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, ii. 316.

<sup>3</sup> Vindication of the Church and State, p. 290.



ing false and malicious character :—" I need tell no man who knoweth the persons, of the brutish sensuality of Mr. Wallace, P [relate] of the Isles, who studieth more the filling of his belly than he was ever fit for the feeding of a flock<sup>1</sup>," &c. Keith leaves the date blank for the succession of this bishoprick, but which we may suppose was filled up this same year. Mr. Andrew Wood, son of Mr. David Wood, who married a sister of John Guthrie of that ilk, bishop of Moray, was consecrated to this see from the parsonage of Dunbar; and afterwards he received a royal dispensation to retain his former living of Dunbar, dated the 2d of June, 1677<sup>2</sup>; sacrilege having made the revenues of the see "*naught*."

THE EFFECTS of the Assertory act and of the presbyterian Indulgence proved "a heavy blow and great discouragement" to the church, notwithstanding the great care and circumspection of the bishops to guard against the pernicious tendency of both. They drew up a modest representation of the divisive consequences that the Indulgence had already produced, without its having answered the end that was expected, and referred it to his majesty's wisdom to provide a better remedy. A declaration by the privy council was therefore published, in which the extraordinary supremacy claimed by the crown over the church was modified, and the intrinsic power, authority, and jurisdiction which the church enjoyed in the three first centuries, was acknowledged and allowed.

1676.—THE FIRST transactions of this year were the continued and inhuman persecution of the episcopal clergy in the province of Glasgow by the presbyterian rabble. Several complaints were presented to the council by the parochial clergy, for assaults on their persons in their pulpits, and during the administration of divine service; and also for breaking open their houses, beating and otherwise maltreating themselves, their wives, and domestics, and robbing them of all their portable articles of furniture. Henry Knox, of Dumscore, near Dumfries, George Baptie, of Abbotsrule, near Jedburgh, both in the diocese of Glasgow, and the minister of Gargunnoch, near Stirling, in the diocese of Edinburgh, were all invaded in their manses, plundered, and beaten; for which the heritors of their several parishes were fined, as the perpetrators could not be discovered<sup>3</sup>. The episcopal clergy in the presbyterian districts lived in a constant state of terror; their

<sup>1</sup> Naphtali, p. 341. Ed. 1680.

<sup>2</sup> Keith's Catalogue, 310.—MSS. Epis. Chest. Aberdeen. A. 39.—Baillie's Letters.

<sup>3</sup> Wodrow, ii. 342.



persons were never safe from the insults and injuries of the fanatics, who were inflamed with hatred, and a spirit of envy, emulation, and wrath, to assault them whenever an opportunity occurred, and they could not lay their heads on their pillows at night but under the apprehension that before morning their houses might be broken into and plundered, themselves and wives beaten and exposed to the brutal insolence of the children of the covenant, and perhaps murdered. The fruits of this most impious covenant have been sacrilege in the highest sense, discord, uncharitableness, envy, malice, hatred, sedition, heresy, schism, rebellion, and bloodshed; and all these works of the flesh have been perpetrated under the fatal delusion that they were actually bringing forth the *fruits of the Spirit*! All these *sins* were committed, as the covenanters always asserted, *under the OBLIGATIONS of the covenant*; therefore such were their *principles*, and as a tree is known by its fruits, so a covenanted presbyterian's principles may be known by his works—works being the life of faith; for men do not gather grapes of thorns, nor figs from thistles.

THE POLITICAL differences betwixt the dukes of Lauderdale and Hamilton had a sensible effect in increasing the audacity of the indulged ministers and their adherents. The latter nobleman went to court, and represented the miserable circumstances of the presbyterians, who, he said, were “cruelly handled for their non-compliance, and fined, confined, banished, and all through ill advice and unjust representations made to the government.” Lauderdale represented the implacable disposition of these presbyterians, whom he said it was impossible to reclaim by all the means which had been tried, owing not only to their own natural propensities, but to the concealed support which they received from some noblemen, who were also privy councillors. “The king heard all, but said little;” but Lauderdale kept his ground<sup>1</sup>. There is a letter in the episcopal chest at Aberdeen, dated the 1st of October, from the duchess of Lauderdale to archbishop Sharp, in which she informs his grace, that notwithstanding the storm which had been raised against him, her husband's interest at court was as good as ever; and that the duke of Hamilton and the earl of Kincardine had entirely failed in their attempts to prejudice the king against Lauderdale<sup>2</sup>.

THE KING wrote to the privy council on the 2d of January, respecting the restoration of the bishop of Dunblane and the Edinburgh clergy, “That by a letter from the archbishop of

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, ii. 342.

<sup>2</sup> MSS. Epis. Chest. A. 38.





St. Andrews, he finds that the bishop of Dunblane, now translated to the Isles, presented an address to the said archbishop of St. Andrews and the other bishops with him, containing a declaration of his former carriage, and an engagement for his future deportment, that he shall live in all becoming duty and faithfulness to his metropolitan and brethren; and that they have made their humble supplication to his majesty for extending his clemency to him, and recalling the former order for his translation to the bishoprick of the Isles. This he declares he is graciously pleased to grant, and orders the council to take all restraints off him: and likewise, upon the account of the dutiful address of Messrs. Turner, Robertson, Cant, and Hamilton, ministers, all restraints are to be taken off them." The council took off the restraints which the assertory act had enabled them to impose on these gentlemen, and thus this unpleasant affair ended.

IN FEBRUARY, Dr. Honyman, lord bishop of Orkney, died at Kirkwall. The wound which he received from the "*pious*" Mitchell never healed, but he suffered from the effects of it till the day of his death. The levity with which presbyterian writers mention his wound, and the attempt to assassinate the archbishop of St. Andrews, is very disgusting, and gives reason to conclude that they only regret the want of success at that time. "Sir James Stuart, one of the authors of *Naphtali*, talks of Honyman 'as *captious* from his *green wound*, which he got *per accedens, because of ill company!*'" and the party circulated a false report, according to their usual tactics, that he experienced great trouble on his death-bed; but the bishop "died with great peace and composure, contrary to what has been asserted by some pamphlet writers, as can be attested by several gentlemen who were witnesses to his death. He was buried in the cathedral church of Kirkwall<sup>1</sup>." This excellent prelate was the author of the "*Survey of Naphtali*," a work of great merit, a small quarto, in which he exposes all the infernal principles of the sect, which were embodied in a small work called "*Naphtali, or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland*," and which was most worthily burnt by the honour-giving bands of the common hangman. The authors of this infamous book say of the deceased prelate, "One instance of Mr. Honyman, prelate of Orkney, I cannot omit; that in the year 1661, when Mr. Sharp had discovered himself, walking in his own garden, he said to a famous person who can bear witness thereof (just as Balaam spake

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue.



truth whether he would or not), 'That Mr. Sharp was as false as Judas,' and I would gladly know to whom this casuist, who since hath embraced a bishoprick, will compare himself for falsehood, except to him who entered into Judas with a sop<sup>1</sup>."

IN DEFIANCE of all the efforts of government to stop or disperse them, conventicles increased in numbers and in the audacity of the preachers. They seized on the Magdalene chapel in Edinburgh, where they preached several times in open defiance of the privy council, and various house conventicles were held in different parts of the town. Wherever the indulged or itinerant ministers found a church vacant, they immediately seized the pulpit, and preached the doctrines of the Covenant. Two of them, named Rogers and Crawford, "preached pretty openly in the sheriff of Argyle's lodgings" in the city of Glasgow. Seeing they had preached so openly and with impunity, a multitude of the ministers of the Covenant determined to make a grand demonstration, both of strength and numbers, and to see how far the government would connive at their lawless behaviour. They began to celebrate their "Occasions," as they called the sacrament of the Lord's supper, at different lonely places, and sometimes in the night season, so as to alarm the peaceably disposed. An instance of that delusion under which they laboured is furnished by Wodrow, who, in enumerating the names of the ministers, says, "Mr. Jamieson did not again drink of the fruit of the vine till he drank it new in his Father's kingdom!" having died shortly after an "Occasion" at the house of the Hags, within two miles of Glasgow. Again, "the Lord very much owned these communions; and these sweet sealing times are not forgot by several yet alive<sup>2</sup>." Presumptuous sins had entirely got the dominion over them, and, like the Corinthians of old, they discerned not the Lord's body. Their unauthorised teachers, like king Uzziah<sup>3</sup>, attempted to burn incense, although it appertained not unto them to offer the commemorative sacrifice unto the Lord, nor to give it in sacrament to the people; but to those only who were called and consecrated, as was Aaron, to offer the christian sacrifice unto the Lord. These ministers had no commission from Christ, the author and the end of the sacrament, to pronounce the authoritative blessing over the elements of bread and wine, so as to sanctify and constitute them the symbols of His body and blood; and therefore both ministers and people were guilty of the body

<sup>1</sup> Naphthali, p. 340, 341.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, ii. 318.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Chron. xxvi. 16-21.



and blood of Christ, because they discerned them not, and therefore they ate and drank unworthily:

IN CONSEQUENCE of the above-named proceedings, the council issued a proclamation on the 1st of March, in which they lament the decay of true religion, and the increase of profaneness and immorality, especially at these "sweet sealing times," which had a wonderful tendency to increase the population. "And we having cause to apprehend that these insolent disorders have flowed from their abusing of our royal clemency and indulgence, and from the slow, remiss, and unsteady execution of our good and wholesome laws; and being desirous that all our good subjects may take notice how serious and resolute we are to assert and maintain the true religion, and the unity and established order of the church, do, with advice of our privy council, require and command all our officers and others entrusted for that effect, to put the laws and proclamations relating to the church to due and vigorous execution, both against papists, and all other schismatical dissenters and disturbers of the peace thereof. And further, we do particularly require the magistrates of the several burghs to seize upon any persons that are or hereafter shall be intercommuned, and remove out of their several towns and jurisdictions the families of such as are intercommuned or declared fugitives or rebels, and all such preachers as, with their families, do not attend the public worship, and that betwixt and the 1st day of June next: And we do require all noblemen, gentlemen, and all other subjects without burgh, and all magistrates and other persons within burgh, that they do not intercommune, under the pains due to intercommuners by law, &c."

THIS WAS a terrible proclamation, and shows to what a dreadful state the ministers of the Covenant had reduced both themselves and others, who might perform any act of mercy or of charity towards any of these intercommuned persons. But in this the council were not acting "at the instigation of the bishops," as has been most maliciously and falsely asserted, but by instructions received from the duke of Lauderdale, the secretary of state at London. The bishops and clergy were themselves equally liable as all others to suffer from this merciless law, by supplying any intercommuned person with either food or shelter, which they might have done either from benevolent motives, or from ignorance or accident. Dr. Cook justifies the lawlessness of the presbyterians, which was the *cause* of this tyrannical law, and says, "conventicles soon multiplied, and as they who attended them were exposed to the most violent interruption, they assembled *with arms*, that





they might repel any wanton attack. They *did not*, however, except merely in meeting, *transgress* the laws of the country; they peaceably dispersed after divine worship was concluded; and had they been left without molestation, there would have been no danger that the tranquillity of the kingdom would be interrupted by any concerted scheme of rebellion<sup>1</sup>. That is, if they had been suffered to overturn the church and extirpate the hierarchy, as they afterwards did, then there would not have been any rebellion, and they would have quietly taken possession of the churches, glebes, and tithes. But in consequence of the government taking these severe measures to repress rebellion, the bishops and clergy have been loaded with execrations, and blamed for what they had no concern with, except, as before said, in suffering the penalties, as other benevolent persons did. They are accused of *profaneness* and immorality gratuitously; and then they are charged with the scandalous vices of the presbyterians. "Every body," says Wodrow, "*almost* at this time knew that the decays of religion were so far from being chargeable upon these meetings, that the gospel preached at them did very much promote religion and righteousness; and the *present profaneness* could never be charged upon them with any colour of reason, but upon the evil practices of the incumbent clergy, and the want of discipline in the established church<sup>2</sup>." It is in this way that the characters of these worthy confessors for the truth have been so blackened and maligned, and the accusation of persecutors has been branded upon them, whilst they themselves were actually suffering persecution at the hands of open and avowed enemies, and of lukewarm and insincere friends.

THE SAME council granted commissions to the lord chancellor and others to execute the laws against conventicles, and to sit in different towns; they accordingly summoned those who had been celebrating "Occasions" in the diocese of Glasgow. None, however, of the ministers or preachers answered their citations, and they were therefore denounced rebels, some were intercommuned, and others absconded. Thus, says Wodrow, "this severe persecution did not hinder them from preaching and hearing the gospel. In houses they were frequently surprised by the soldiers, and therefore they choosed the most retired places—woods, hills, and mosses; and had their watches set, to prevent their being surprised<sup>3</sup>." So it appears that neither mildness, indulgence, nor severity, had any effect upon the stubborn followers of the Covenant, that "*other*

<sup>1</sup> Hist. of the Church of Scotland, iii. 333-34.    <sup>2</sup> History, ii. 320.    <sup>3</sup> Ibid. 322.





*gospel*<sup>1</sup> which was preached to the people, and which was decidedly a perversion of the gospel of Christ, teaching that to be lawful which He has forbidden, and that to be unlawful which He has commanded to be observed till time shall merge into eternity. Their minds being replete with vulgarity and envy, they circulated, through their sermons, the most impudent slanders on the bishops and clergy, a specimen of which just occurs, and shall be transcribed from Wodrow: "And this love unto and following after the gospel in the persecuted [that is, persecuting] ministers' hands, was increased from the observation of *singular judgments* now and then upon the persecutors." All the usual changes and chances of this life which happened to the prelates and clergy were immediately called the judgments of heaven, whereas the ministers of the Covenant gospel seemed to have entirely overlooked our blessed Lord's gracious words, that Our Father in heaven maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, on the prelate and on the covenanter; and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust, on the persecutor and on the persecuted; on the slanderer and on the slandered<sup>2</sup>. "A collection of well-attested accounts of those might be of good use, and instances are not wanting," [I am sure they were wanting, else we should have had them,] "yea, the relations now flying up and down of the scandalous lives and erroneous doctrine of the bishops, and most of their underlings, did not a little recommend the attendance upon field meetings to such who had not opportunity to hear the Indulged. Charity forbids me, without proof, to credit all that was talked upon this head; but so much of it was notour as led too many to atheism and downright contempt of all religion; and many of the better sort much to favour the persecuted party<sup>3</sup>." These innuendos and dark insinuations have raised up an inveterate prejudice against the established clergy, as if they had been worse than heathen, and men of the most immoral characters. These excellent men were tried in the fire of persecution, and had trial "of cruel mockings," personal assaults, and plundering their properties; yet still the voice of the slanderer has hitherto succeeded in abusing the minds of the public with such stories as have been falsely circulated against them.

THE COUNCIL also gave a commission to the archbishop of St. Andrews, with the bishops of Edinburgh and Aberdeen, to visit the universities, and to inquire whether all the professors and masters had taken the oaths of allegiance and supre-

<sup>1</sup> Galatians, i. 7-10.<sup>2</sup> St. Matthew, v. 45.<sup>3</sup> Wodrow, ii. 322.



macy. And at a subsequent council the two archbishops were requested to inform their suffragans that the privy council were desirous of reclaiming all those who had been declared fugitives, for non-appearance when summoned for their attendance at field conventicles, upon their giving satisfaction to the clergy of their respective parishes for their keeping the law for the time to come; upon whose certificate all legal proceedings were to be quashed, and no farther inquiries made for the past. There were some exceptions to this amnesty; but it was declared, that if this offer was not accepted, that the penalties of the law would be enforced. This act of grace was despised and rejected by the ultra-covenanters, merely because the episcopal clergy were burthened with granting certificates of the good behaviour of the covenanters; and with their usual ingratitude, the very thing that was intended to save them the trouble or inconvenience of going to a distant magistrate is construed to be a "paltry trick," and therefore very few took advantage of it<sup>1</sup>.

THE COUNCIL intercommuned Mr. James Kirkton, one of the ejected ministers, and some others; and in June, a captain Carstairs apprehended Kirkton, by inveigling him into a suspicious place; but Baillie (of Jerviswood) and his friends, rescued him. Baillie was fined and imprisoned for this rescue; and Wodrow and others made a handle of this affair against the primate, whom they accuse of having anti-dated Carstairs' warrant; the opposition members of the council also made it the basis of an attack upon the duke of Lauderdale's administration. Soon afterwards the duke of Hamilton, the earls of Kincardine and Dundonald, were struck off the list of privy councillors. Kincardine went to court to show the king that the kingdom was misgoverned; but the king was deaf to his representations, and the enmity betwixt Kincardine and Lauderdale now became irreconcilable. By a proclamation the indulged ministers were still further indulged by an exemption from attending the episcopal synods, and from the payment of fees to the clerk and bursar of the diocese; but even with this important concession the ministers of the Covenant were not satisfied. Mr. Thomas Wylie, the indulged minister of Fenwick, near Kilmarnock, in the diocese of Glasgow, made a representation and petition to the council against the rules prescribed by the council in 1672<sup>2</sup>. And it was alleged that these restrictions were the causes that obliged them to break the law, and go to the fields to preach; but

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, ii. 325.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. chap. xxxiii. p. 369-70.



Burnet alleges that their real inducement was their love of *popularity and notoriety*. The ministers still continued to collect conventicles, and Mess John Welsh, an intercommuned traitor, was particularly industrious in his calling, and so well was he protected by his followers, that the government found it impossible to apprehend him. The council ordered the earl of Hume to suppress the conventicles in his neighbourhood; but, says Wodrow, "some ministers kept at their work, and the soldiers were very busy; *yet several times they were repulsed*. There was at this time a conventicle at Lillie's-Leaf-Moor, where a party of soldiers were *chased* by the country people unarmed." . . . and this same harvest, or winter, a company of foot were obliged to retire, when attacking a conventicle near Dumbarton<sup>1</sup>."

THE EXTENSION of the Indulgence seemed to threaten the church with a second extirpation, and, in consequence, it was strongly opposed by her spiritual governors, who saw that there was to be no end of concessions on political grounds, but that every new surrender of a privilege to the presbyterians was but a prelude to something more, and tended only to widen and continue a causeless schism. The sentiments of the whole bench may be gathered from the following "representation of the evils of a farther indulgence," written by Dr. Patterson, lord bishop of Galloway:—

"BY A GENERAL INDULGENCE, or farther enlargement thereof, a wider and more dangerous breach and schism will be stated in this church, in allowing such persons to exercise their ministry in an independent and not accountable manner, than which no engine can be of more force to subvert religion, and which will in a short time either wear out the present establishment of the church, or once more involve the nation in trouble and confusion, through the unwearied endeavours of the so indulged to obtain their beloved ends of overturning episcopacy the more effectually, and to level monarchy under the feet of presbytery. For, 1st. Most of the ministers already indulged are leavened with the disloyal principles of the western remonstrance, which are no less pernicious to the crown and to monarchy itself than those of the fifth-monarchists be. 2d. All of them judge themselves most strictly obliged, under the sacred ties of their Covenant, and by necessary consequence as strictly bound to justify the late rebellion, to assert the lawfulness of popular reformation and of defensive

<sup>1</sup> History, ii. 342.





arms against the sovereign power of the king, and to endeavour by all means the destruction of the order of bishops; and to bring to condign punishment all the nobility, gentry, or commons, as the greatest malignants, who either voted for its restitution, or since have owned and countenanced it, and think they are now to be valued as good and loyal subjects, only because they did not rise and join in arms to destroy those who are zealous for the service and interest of the crown and church, as the law hath now settled them. 3d. All of them discover a singular and noted disaffection to the king's majesty and his government, so that they cannot be moved to observe the anniversary 29th of May, therein to pay solemn thanks to God for his majesty's happy restoration, who, as formerly, is still considered by them as the head and life of the *malignant* party, and accordingly to be treated, whenever they shall become masters of power and opportunity. 4th. They conceive themselves bound to instruct the people, and confirm them in the belief of all their old disloyal tenets and opinions, and accordingly their hearers can witness the seditious expressions and insinuations they use in their sermons and prayers, by which not only the present but the following generation is in hazard to be debauched and corrupted, and to receive such disloyal and mutinous propositions as may, in the issue, lead remedilessly to reacting of our late fatal hazards. 5th. Those already indulged do not at all observe the rules prescribed unto them for keeping them within due and moderate bounds, and do as resolutely condemn the measures prescribed by the king and his council, as if they were the impositions of the bishops, looking upon the former as an equal if not greater encroachment and invasion made upon the rights of the crown and kingdom of Christ, as the latter; and this appears sufficiently in their assuming the boldness to assemble in classical meetings [synods and presbyteries], wherein, if nothing be advised as to discipline, yet thereby they have opportunity to stiffen and encourage one another in their opposition to the king's authority, and to determine by suffrages not to observe the most innocent and necessary constitutions thereof, and to consult of the most *conducive* means for establishing their idol, presbytery, for overturning episcopacy, and for enervating the king's authority and the force of the laws; therein, also, they proceed to take trials of persons whom they licentiate to preach, giving them testimonies and missions for that work, and if themselves do not ordain them, they send them to Ireland to receive ordination; by which, as they assume to themselves an immunity and exemption from the



orders and laws of the king and council, as well as from those of the church, so they design to perpetuate the schism, and continue a succession of such turbulent preachers as may corrupt the religion and loyalty of the nation.

“FOR ENLARGING the Indulgence, it may be speciously enough pretended that it would prove a very excellent expedient to preserve and secure the peace, by composing the spirits of the people to a dutiful submission to his majesty’s government, and to relieve the kingdom of conventicles. But these ends are so far from being to be compassed thereby, that none with any reason can think they are seriously intended; for those already indulged endeavour nothing so much as to harden the disobedient in their disaffection to the laws and established government, who, so by the constant strain of sedition which runs along their sermons, they cannot but dispose the people, as tinder, to be blown up into flames and commotions, by any who will assume the boldness to put arms into their hands, and conduct them: and as for their influence to secure the peace, and to rid the nation of conventicles, the serious observers of the state of the kingdom, upon a narrow inspection, will find, that since the date of the indulgence already granted, and the general connivance at the humour and ways of the disaffected, the awe of authority, and regard to acts of parliament, and proclamations of council, are much worn out; and the perverseness and distemper of that party hath increased to a greater height of impudence and audacious contempt of the laws, and of authority; for they are so far from relieving the nation of conventicles, that as themselves are stated in a formal and direct opposition to the church, so they make it their great business to draw and contain the populace to, and in their separation from the received worship, and all manner of conventicles both in fields and houses, *have never so much abounded nor infested the nation, as since the date of that favour granted to them*; nay, how much those indulged preachers contribute for inflaming the humour for conventicling, is enough apparent in this, that several of them have kept and preached at conventicles themselves, as is notour [notorious] from the practice of the most leading men amongst them, both at Edinburgh and Glasgow, some whereof have been actually seized preaching in those conventicles. Again,

“IF THE INDULGENCE shall be enlarged, it is to be feared that thereby a disaffected party shall be increased and strengthened within the kingdom, which will ever be ready to join with any discontented faction, and disturb its peace; and so the king and his authority shall still be exposed to the mercy of any



malcontented faction, who shall have the policy, by fair pretences and insinuations, to cajole that party (easy enough to be persuaded to any design of trouble), to side and join issue with them; and, indeed, without hopes of assistance from it, no faction, of whatever interest or quality, will adventure to make the smallest opposition to the king, or his authority in this kingdom; so that to extend and enlarge the Indulgence seems a proper expedient to advance a seed and nursery of trouble, without which no seditious design or attempt can ever prosper, so as to become formidable to the king or nation. Nor can it be reasonably presumed, that any favour, condescendance, or further indulgence, will ever gain that implacable party to be true and cordial friends to the king or church, since they believe they owe favours and indulgences merely to Providence, and to the necessities of the prince, who, they think, cannot otherways rid himself of their trouble, and do offer sacrifice to their own turbulent temper and actings, for any kindness or favour they enjoy; and so by just consequence, the more they are connived at or gratified, the more turbulent and humour-some will they prove; since by their seditious temper and turbulent actings, they find they may fairly cut out a way for themselves to have more ample favours and indulgences heaped upon them. King James VI. by his reason, and king Charles I. by his dear-bought experience, learned that none of these fanatically disaffected could ever be won or obliged, by all the effects of princely munificence and favour; nor hath any thing yet appeared in the temper and ways of those lately indulged by the present king, which can give his majesty solid ground to believe that they are of better natures, or of more ingenuous principles, or of truer affection and loyalty to his sacred person, his royal family, or government; their predecessors and themselves are sufficient proof, that nothing can satisfy their importunity and encroachments, unless they can grasp and become masters of all power and interest.

“Now if to preserve, encourage, and increase such troublesome seminaries and dangerous nurseries be agreeable to the interest, peace, and security of the nation, seems no difficult determination; nor if it be safe to encourage and increase a company of preachers in the kingdom, whose business is to bring the law into disregard, and the present government into contempt, and so justify and abet the former fatal principles, and withal to inculcate them on the present, and transmit them to the next generation.

“IT WOULD seem beyond probability, if a more effectual course be not followed for extirpating the seditious principles,





and that evil spirit of disaffection and separation, than hath been done, it cannot be avoided, but in a short time, the gangrene will spread, and the distemper will grow to that height, which nothing can cure but extreme remedies; so that in the end not only shall the ends of religion be subverted, without which no society can long subsist, but the crown shall be deprived, by this subtle artifice, of the great usefulness and assistance of the order of bishops, whose conscience, as well as interest, oblige them to an absolute dependence upon, and so to the most faithful and sincere service and support of it.

“THESE arguments and reasons against enlarging this indulgence are obvious enough, such as there appears no profit by, so no necessity thereof, in regard that no seeming scruple can reasonably be entertained by the disaffected, for their obstinate separation from the worship practised in this church, *it being notourly the same, without variation, as it was under presbytery*; and it deserves remark, that most of them who now separate, did formerly join into the church, so that there seems to be no *real scruple* in the case, but *faction and a laid design*, to advance the same; and as there appears no necessity of any further indulgence, so indeed it can be of no use for serving the ends pretended, since the great and leading demagogues are of such perverse humours and principles, that they will not accept of any such indulgence from the king, being persons who declaim and write against such as have embraced their ministry by his majesty’s indulgence, as deserters and betrayers of the cause and crown of Christ; now that these are the persons who are the most obstinate and seditious conventiclers and disturbers of the peace, who were actually upon the late rebellion, and are still ready to stir up the people to a new one, is abundantly notour, and such as will ever attempt to set up not only *ecclesiam in ecclesia*, but also *imperium in imperio*, so long as the present constitution of church and state is continued, the influence, the method for enlarging, the indulgence will have for advancing of popery and other errors, deserves its due consideration; nor needs it be added, that to such as may be ready, the king may extend farther indulgence to the disaffected people, and to the nonconform ministers, contrary to the standing legal establishment of the church, may, if occasion offer, be found as ready to complain of uncertain, arbitrary, and illegal proceedings, even in that matter, as well as in other things, which they fancy may be contrary to the standing established laws of the kingdom; and in fine, nothing seems to prove so effectual a mean for his majesty’s govern-





ment and the peace of the kingdom, as a steady, and even resolute and vigorous, execution of the good and wholesome laws thereof<sup>1</sup>."

TO THESE JUST REMARKS of bishop Patterson may be added the observations of bishop Burnet, a favourer both of the covenants and of their designs; who says, "the dissenters *are not to be gained by concessions*." When the government offered to give up the points of episcopal ordination and jurisdiction, yet they would not be satisfied. And when it was proposed to put them into vacant livings upon the simple condition that they should not preach against episcopacy, or administer the Lord's Supper to the inhabitants of another parish, without the permission of their own ministers, yet they would not keep these conditions. "None of them," says Burnet, "would engage to observe any limitation whatever."

1677.—THE ANIMOSITY betwixt the dukes of Lauderdale and Hamilton continued unmitigated; and it is not improbable that from factious motives the latter nobleman had given the covenanters secret encouragement to proceed in their lawless course, but it is certain that he defended them in the privy council. On the 6th of January, therefore, the council received a letter from the king, ordering them to make void his grace's commission in the militia, and in general to strip him of all his public employments.

THE CONVENTICLE ministers, who had brought themselves under the lash of the law, and had been obliged to abscond to Ireland and the north of England, returned and commenced their old work; there, it seems, they had been "a sweet savour unto Christ in many of their adherents . . . who had scarce had the gospel preached to them before." In the early part of the year there was a numerous meeting of these savoury ministers in Edinburgh, and Ralph Rogers was chosen moderator. This was called only a meeting for consultation; but it may be presumed from the "warm papers from Holland, full of heat against this meeting, as a pretended general assembly," that if it had been recognised, it would have had the authority of a general assembly; but the heat of their Dutch brethren made them contented with the more modest title of a consultation. They resolved that the sentence inflicted in the year 1661 by the brethren for the resolutions ought to be taken off. They likewise advised their brethren in the country to invite their unindulged brethren to preach for them, and

<sup>1</sup> MSS. Ep. Chest, B. 8, dated February 10, 1676.



that the indulged ministers should "preach up and down, and not confine themselves only to their own pulpits;" both of which recommendations were precisely contrary to law, and to the conditions of their indulgence. They also had long debates "about the question of indefinite ordination," whether or not in the present state of their affairs "ministers might be ordained without a call and invitation from, or the present prospect of a settlement in, a particular congregation." The majority were for the negative; but as those who were for the affirmative were so considerable, no determination of the question was made. These debates and resolutions give this meeting the semblance of, and an attempt at the jurisdiction of a general assembly<sup>1</sup>. Mr. Ward and some others lifted up their testimony against this meeting as an *erastian assembly*; first, because several of the indulged ministers were present in it; and, secondly, because Blackadder's motion that some days of fasting and humiliation should first be set apart, was treated with contempt. Another symptom of the assumption of jurisdiction was their summoning Welwood, Cameron, and others, to answer for preaching *separation* from the indulged ministers; but who declined their authority, as being an unlawfully constituted and unqualified judicatory<sup>2</sup>.

WELSH, and other itinerant ministers of the covenant, went after this assembly into the disaffected districts, and held conventicles in different places of the diocese of Glasgow; but the severity of the laws against these reverend "vagrants" was so great that they were never put in execution. A considerable reward was offered for the apprehension of the traitor Welsh, and in consequence he and Arnott rode through the country with as many as a hundred men well mounted and armed for their protection. These men, with several other itinerants, held a conventicle at Eckford, in Tiviotdale, and afterwards at the head of the water of Girvan, in the parish of Maybole, both in the diocese of Glasgow; where they "did celebrate the sacrament of the supper in the fields; and there were many thousands of people present, and very much success attended the word preached there. The people were encouraged to follow the gospel when they saw their own numbers; and, indeed, they regarded the present laws *no further* than the nature and reasons of them discovered their equity and righteousness<sup>3</sup>." Many of the ministers engaged at these two conventicles, but especially Welsh and Arnott, were attainted traitors, and had

Wodrow's History, ii. 346.

<sup>2</sup> Crookshank's History, i. 400-401.

<sup>3</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 347.



been actively engaged in the rebellion dissipated at Rullion-green. At the conventicle at Girvan, in the mountainous parts of Ayrshire, Welsh, addressing the multitude, said, "that he was confident that GOD would yet assert the cause of Pentland Hills," [that is, of rebellion], "in spite of the curates and their masters the prelates; and in spite of the prelates and their master the king; and in spite of the king and his master the *devil*." This is a specimen of the spirit by which these men were actuated, and by which they inflamed their hearers with hatred of the church and of their civil rulers. A spirit, alas! evidently proceeding from the devil, who certainly presided at these meetings. On these occasions the preachers administered the Solemn League and Covenant to the people—made them swear never to hear a curate, that is, an episcopal clergyman, preach—and after the popish manner gave them the sacrament, to bind this illegal oath on their souls.

THESE MINISTERS of the covenant also held classical meetings, where they ordained other apostles of the covenant; and likewise received the confessions and alleged repentance of those whom they had persuaded to acknowledge the heinous sin of worshipping in their parish churches. They established lay-elders authoritatively in various places; and even had the assurance to induct their own fanatical preachers into churches, whether they were vacant or occupied; and which they did upon the principle not yet exploded, that patronage is but a relic of popery. Welsh and Arnott rode through the country with guards, amounting to fifty, and sometimes as many as a hundred men, well armed and mounted, and attacked the houses of the episcopal clergy, and abused their persons and families. Welsh publicly declared that it was as lawful to kill the episcopal clergy as it was for the Israelites to kill the Canaanites. These violent and repeated outrages so alarmed and distressed the established clergy, that some of the more timorous, apprehensive for their own and their families' lives, resigned their charges. The barbarities exercised by the covenanting ministers and their followers in the west of Scotland, were the *cause* of the severities to which, in self-defence the government was driven; and which obliged the privy council to execute the laws against the conventicles. They issued proclamations for the capture of Welsh and Arnott, and some other seditious preachers; but the sheriffs in the seditious districts refused to act. In suppressing these field meetings they were not only preserving the king's peace, but acting in conformity with an act of a presbyterian General Assembly. It was the act of Assembly, 1647, and no presbyterian will





deny the authority of that assembly, intituled, "Act against such as *withdraw* themselves from the public worship in *their own congregation*<sup>1</sup>." It expressly prohibits all the members of their kirk from leaving their own congregations, except in urgent cases, made known to, and approved by, the presbytery. But separation and schism had now become epidemical, and many went to these field meetings merely out of curiosity and the over-persuasion of neighbours. The sober part of the community, however, became disgusted with the mixture of sedition and blasphemy which they heard from the "vagrant" preachers, and returned quietly to their parish churches.

ABOUT THIS time, Richard Cameron, whose mission from his ordainer was to "*set the fire of hell to men's tails*," preached at the Occasion above mentioned, and with a Mr. Robert Hamilton, and some rabid probationers, began to preach the necessity of separating from the indulged ministers, whom they stigmatised as erastians, council-curates, and dumb-dogs that could not bark. At this occasion "he used much more freedom in testifying against the sinfulness of the indulgence, for which he was also called before another meeting of the indulged at Dinugh, in Galloway; a little after that he was again called before one of their presbyteries at Sundewal in Dunscore, in Nithsdale, and this was the third time they had designed to take his license from him. . . . At this meeting they prevailed with him to give his promise, that for some short time he should forbear such an explicit way of preaching against the indulgence, and separation from them who were indulged; which promise lay heavy on him<sup>2</sup>."

EXPERIENCE taught the council that even the making breaches in "the walls of Jericho," in order to introduce the small end of the presbyterian wedge, was not sufficient to satisfy the ambition of the saints, unless they obtained also supremacy. The council, therefore, made an act to prohibit all the ministers of the covenant that had refused to enter into their parochial charges in the year 1672, from now taking possession of any churches; and they declared that no more indulgences would be granted for the time to come, but that wherever churches became vacant by death or removal, they should be filled by episcopal clergymen. This worthy return to the right path was persevered in, and priests of the reformed catholic church were afterwards inducted into vacant livings. But as these indulged ministers had "homologated" erastianism in their induction, so they now were doomed to feel the effects

<sup>1</sup> Vide *ante*, ii. chap. xx. p. 187.

<sup>2</sup> Scots Worthies, pp. 332-33.



of it; for the council thrust them out of their livings in as summary a manner as they had placed them in them. A number of the indulged ministers were cited before the council for not keeping the conditions of their indulgence; and James Greig not appearing, the council "declared his indulgence forfeited, and he was discharged [prohibited] to preach any more at Carstairs<sup>1</sup>." The council also ordered new copies of the instructions issued in 1672 to be given to the indulged ministers, who had universally broken all the rules imposed on them; with certification that if they break these regulations, they shall be immediately *turned out*, and further censured. Mess John Welsh took upon him to induct a Mr. Gilchrist into the church and parish of Carsphairn, in Galloway, on the death of the incumbent; whereupon Gilchrist took possession of the church, manse, and glebe. Indignant at such insolence, the council ordered Gilchrist to be arrested and brought to Edinburgh; and this proper exertion of authority is placed among the *sufferings* of the presbyterians!<sup>2</sup>

THE DUKE OF LAUDERDALE came down in the month of June, accompanied by his duchess, who had views of uniting her daughters by a former husband to members of the families of Argyle and Moray. As the former peer was known to favour the presbyterians, Lauderdale found it prudent to relax the laws against conventicles for a time, and to bring down a further indulgence from the king. He likewise consented to their negotiating with the moderate presbyterians; but the demands of that body were found to be so insolent, that he was compelled to desert the treaty. At the same time the fanatics were led, by the arts of designing men, to expect great favours from Lauderdale; but finding their hopes disappointed, they resolved to take by force that which they could not obtain by favour<sup>3</sup>. The great leaders among the covenanters, Robert Hamilton and Richard Cameron, with some others, as before mentioned, entered into a combination to separate from the indulged ministers; and they created a schism, which existed with great virulence before the Revolution. At that eventful period, however, it was temporarily soldered up, to serve political purposes, but it broke out again three years after that, and has not been healed to this day. When the indulged ministers in the western counties heard of the duke's arrival, they determined to present an address to his grace in favour of their party, and some ministers attempted to ascertain whether or not his

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 348.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. ii. 348.

<sup>3</sup> Memoirs of the History of Scotland, pp. 321, 322.



grace would receive their address. He declared that "he had once burnt his fingers that gate else, but resolved he would do so no more," and shewed them that the laws would be put with all rigour in execution against recusants<sup>1</sup>. They commissioned, however, one Mathew Crawford to go to Edinburgh and consult with John Carstairs, with whose concurrence, and that of some ministers in Edinburgh, he employed Anthony Murray, who was related to the duchess of Lauderdale, to wait on the duke, and to solicit him to remove the letters of intercommuning, and to release the state prisoners in the Bass. They also solicited permission to "meet together, under his grace's connivance, for drawing a supplication to the king's majesty." The duke assured him of his readiness to do himself any service, "but he would grant no favour to that party, being (as he was pleased to say) unworthy of any." From this answer the ministers concluded that the duke was not in reality so friendly to their cause as they had been led to suppose. However, the duke began to speak openly of granting a third Indulgence, and signified his design to several presbyterian ministers, through the medium of Lord Melville; but when the two archbishops represented the impolicy of this step to his grace, he is reported to have said, "that he intended no liberty to the presbyterians at all; but it was convenient to keep them in hopes till he got forces raised to suppress them, and keep them in order<sup>2</sup>." But for the truth of this assertion we have no better authority than that upon which Wodrow always relies—"I am informed."

"THE FANATICS," says the author of the Memoirs, "knowing that they might expect the connivance at least of the party in opposition to Lauderdale [Hamilton and others], and the party having blown up their expectations by assuring them that the parliament of England was by many late elections become more fanatical, they hounded out all their preachers to keep field conventicles, in such numbers, and *so well armed*, and to *threaten* so all the orthodox clergy, and to *usurp their pulpits*, that the council was much troubled at the clouds which they saw so fast gathering; and Lauderdale was the more envenomed, that all these disorders were charged upon the late offers made by him of an indemnity and indulgence, and the news that were industriously spread, both at London and Edinburgh, of great sums of money promised to the duchess by the fanatics. Notwithstanding all which, sir George Mac-

<sup>1</sup> Law's Memorials, cited by editor of Wodrow, ii. p. 349.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, vol. ii. p. 349.—Cruikshanks, vol. i. p. 408.





kenzie, being lately admitted to be his majesty's advocate, did prevail with the council to prevent, by the ensuing articles, all the fanatics' just exceptions against the forms formerly used against them.

"IT IS THOUGHT FIT and necessary for his majesty's service, that the laws against such disorderly persons be exactly but regularly put in execution in manner after mentioned:—

"1. THAT HIS MAJESTY'S advocate be special as to time and place, in libelling [indicting] against conventiclers and others pursued; but so as he may libel any day within four weeks, or any place within such a parish, or near to the said parish, for else conventicles may be kept upon confines of parishes, merely to disappoint his way of libelling.

"2. WHEN ANY person is convened upon a libel, that in that case he be only examined upon his own guilt and accession, seeing nothing can be referred to a defender's oath, but what concerneth himself during the defence of a process.

"3. THAT IF ANY person who is cited be ready to depone, or to pay his fine, he be not troubled with taking of bonds, or other engagements; seeing the constant punishment of such as do transgress will supply the necessity of the bonds, and the law itself is the strongest bond that can be exacted of any man<sup>1</sup>."

BESIDES the assembly which has been already mentioned, there had been meetings of Covenant ministers upon the 20th of May, 1676, of which a Mr. Andrew Forrester was the clerk. This man was arrested this year, and brought before the council, on whom they found the minutes of this meeting, which was designed to be a *commission of the kirk*. The following is the account of this affair, which is recorded in the council books:—"Mr. Andrew Forrester, when taken, had some papers upon him, by which it appears, that upon the 20th of May, 1676, there convened, within the town of Edinburgh, between fifty and sixty outed ministers, who did constitute themselves in form of a commission of the kirk, and voted their moderator, and appointed a committee of their number to bring in overtures; who, accordingly, did meet at night, and drew up a petition, and overtures of a most seditious nature, to be offered to their meeting; in which they condescend upon, and settle ways of, keeping correspondence in their several societies and synods established by them, and for entering upon trials, and sending out young men to the ministry in their several societies and bounds, and for one synod's corresponding with

<sup>1</sup> *Memoirs of the History of Scotland*, pp. 322, 323.





another, and for providing against any offer from the state in order to church affairs, without advertisement given unto, or concert of, the several societies, and for correspondence with gentlemen and judicious elders. Whilk overtures being on the said 25th of May presented to the great meeting, were by them voted and approved; which paper containing the said petition and overtures, with another paper bearing the leeting and voting of the moderator, and what votes every minister had, and the minutes of what passed at those meetings, being found on the said Mr. Forrester, and he confessing he was present, and the said minutes were his writing, but declining to answer in what house they met and who was present, though he owned he was clerk, and other circumstances, he was ordered to be kept close prisoner in Edinburgh<sup>1</sup>."

THE DISORDERS in the presbyterian districts of the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway still continued, and the sheriffs had refused to arrest Welsh, Arnott, and other preachers of the Covenant and sedition, as they were so well guarded by their armed disciples, and the proclamations of the council were thus rendered ineffectual. The fanatics carried their insolence to such a height against the episcopal clergy, that many of them were obliged to abandon their churches and homes, into which Welsh and Arnott immediately inducted some of their fiery probationers. The council also had authentic information from the earl of Dundonald, "a most cautious privy councillor, and from the president of the session, who always favoured them," and from other sources also, that the presbyterians were making preparations for a general rebellion of that body. The duke of Lauderdale therefore thought it his duty to inform the king of the whole scheme, and to lay a state of affairs before his majesty, and to request him to order his troops in Ireland to move towards the opposite maritime frontier of Scotland, to be in readiness to be transported if required. He also informed his majesty that the earls of Athole and Marr, and others, had offered to bring out their highlanders to repress the turbulence of the rebels before their plans were ripe for execution. It would have been easy, by the junction of two or three conventicles, to have collected an army of ten thousand men, according to the materials of which armies were then composed, and against whom the king could only oppose his own standing forces, which did not exceed fifteen hundred men, as the militia could not be entirely relied on, and many of the heritors were attached to Lauderdale's poli-

<sup>1</sup> Cited by Wodrow, ii. 355, 356.



tical opponents. In reply to which the king ordered three thousand men, under the command of the viscount Granard, to move to the north of Ireland, and to be in readiness to cross the channel on a summons from the Scottish privy council. Besides, he commanded a number of the loyal highland clans to be raised, and led into the south-western counties, and to take free quarters from such as refused to secure the public peace. The presbyterians were not a little surprised and alarmed at these movements, as they had been led to suppose that Lauderdale's interest was entirely gone at court<sup>1</sup>.

AFTER THIS demonstration to show the fanatics their danger, the council still endeavoured to suppress them without the aid of the military. Letters, therefore, were directed to the heritors in the disaffected counties, to enquire whether they would undertake to reduce the disorderly on their estates with their own power, backed by the king's authority. At that time the proprietors of the soil had a patriarchal power and authority over their tenants and vassals, and could easily have complied with the request of the privy council. Indeed, without their connivance, not one of these meetings could have taken place; and none did take place where the owners of the soil were well affected. In consequence of the mistaken policy in 1662, of banishing the ministers who deserted their charges to Morayshire, they had infected many in that county with their fanatical sentiments; but the earl of Moray, by his feudal authority, completely preserved the peace there, and did not allow a single conventicle to meet in the county. The same powers were vested in the gentry in the west, and in addition they would have had the assistance of government to strengthen their hands; but there were great men who secretly encouraged them to wink at the disorders on their lands.

IN THIS ALARMING state of the country, the council wrote to the earls of Dundonald and Glencairn, and the lord Ross, stating, that "there having been received frequent information of extraordinary insolencies having been committed, not only against the present orthodox clergy by usurping their pulpits, threatening and abusing their persons, and setting up of conventicle houses and keeping of scandalous and seditious conventicles in the fields, the great seminaries of rebellion, but likewise of the great prejudice that is like to arise to his majesty's authority and government and to the peace of the kingdom in general. We did therefore think it necessary, in a frequent [full] meeting of council this day, to require your lord-

<sup>1</sup> Memoirs of the History of Scotland, 329-332.—Ravillae Redicivus.



ships to send particular expresses, with sure bearers, to call together the commissioners of the excise and militia and justices of the peace, to meet at Irvine on the 2d of November, and to represent to them how highly, in his majesty's name, we resent the aforesaid outrages and affronts . . . that they may deliberate upon and take such effectual course for quieting their counties in obedience to his majesty's laws (which are the true and only rule of loyalty and faithfulness) as may prevent the necessary and severe courses that must be taken for securing the peace of those parts: in which, if they fail . . . we are fully resolved to repress by force and his majesty's authority all such rebellious and factious courses, without respect to the disadvantage of the heritors, whom his majesty will then look upon as involved in such a degree of guilt as may allow the greatest degree of severity as may be used against that country<sup>1</sup>."

WODROW fully admits that the persons and pulpits of the clergy had been invaded; and although, says he, "in prayer and sermons both, all loyalty was expressed by presbyterians, yet *I shall not defend any EXCESSES run to some time after this.*" The meeting took place at Irvine on the day appointed; and after suitable expressions of loyalty, the meeting unanimously resolved, 1st, "That they found it not within the compass of their power to suppress conventicles;—2dly, That it is their humble opinion, from former experience, that a toleration of presbyterians is the only proper expedient to settle and preserve the peace, and cause the aforesaid meetings to cease;—3dly, That it is their humble motion, that the extent thereof be no less than what his majesty had graciously vouchsafed to his kingdoms of England and Ireland."

THE COUNCIL considered this answer unreasonable, because the western counties had enjoyed more liberty than any other part of the kingdom, by having the laws dispensed with in their favour, and had presbyterian ministers settled in their parishes, and so enjoyed more than a toleration; and therefore the field conventicles were unnecessary while there were settled presbyterian ministers to resort to. But it is to be feared that more was meant than always met the eye or the ear at these conventicles: for materials were there preparing which burst out at Bothwell-bridge, and were consummated in the Revolution. The council now thought the time had arrived when it became necessary to resort to force; but they desired rather to reduce the west by native forces than to call

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, ii. 372-73.





in the assistance of the Irish. To the king's standing forces, which consisted only of about fifteen hundred men, they added the militia of the loyal county of Angus; and the noblemen on the Highland borders were ordered to call out their vassals, and rendezvous at Stirling; and the whole of these were united under the command of the earl of Linlithgow, who marched into the western counties. According to the uncharitable system of misrepresentation pursued by Wodrow and Kirkton, this act of the government is charged as an atrocious crime against the church — as “*a contrivance worthy of bishops*.” It was now charged upon the bishops, or rather on the primate, by the same author who, a short time before, gave the whole merit of this “contrivance” to Lauderdale. Their malice against the episcopal order makes the historians of that period fall into the most obvious inconsistencies and contradictions: in short, they recorded the most audacious falsehoods, and the mere suspicions of their own diseased imaginations, for the sole purpose of maligning and misrepresenting the prelates of that day, and these fabrications have been unhappily followed without reflection by others.

THAT THE intentions of government might be carried into effect in a legal manner, a committee of the privy council was sent along with the army, consisting of eleven of the members, who were invested with sufficient power, civil and criminal, to punish all sorts of offenders. They maintained a regular correspondence with the privy council, from whom they received instructions from time to time; and they commenced with disarming all suspected persons. They also pulled down all the meeting-houses that had been built for the disaffected ministers. Wodrow gratuitously asserts that the primate was overjoyed at this turn in affairs; but shows no other authority than his own malicious surmises. He further asserts that “there was *no provocation* given by the presbyterians, nor any occasion for this terrible instance of the prelate's fury, in the unprecedented oppression, save the preaching and the hearing of the gospel, *to which they wanted not altogether ENCOURAGEMENT from some who went in heartily in this inroad upon them*, and which they reckoned their civil as well as religious right<sup>1</sup>.” In this short sentence we have ample evidence that the covenanters were instigated to their unlawful conduct by some of the great men of the day; and that these fanatics met in conventicles which were

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow vol. ii. p. 278.



illegal and "the rendezvous of rebellion," for the purpose of provoking their rulers by a turbulence which no government could tolerate.

A COMPLETE set of instructions were prepared and signed by the whole privy council, except the archbishops, for the committee which directed the military<sup>1</sup>. It is somewhat surprising that Wodrow admits that the two archbishops did *not*, though privy counsellors, sign these instructions. And yet, with that inconsistency which his malice frequently betrays, he accuses them of having contrived and advised the whole mystery and plot of the "Highland host." However, we have here an unwilling evidence, that the archbishops and the bishops had no concern in this military movement, which the seditious conduct of the covenanters alone rendered absolutely necessary. The committee were empowered to exact a bond from the heritors, wherein, as masters of families, they were to become bound for themselves, wives, children, and servants, and as landlords for their tenants and cottagers, that they should not go to conventicles, nor receive nor supply conventicle ministers, but live orderly, in obedience to the law. So that if their wives or any of their children or servants transgressed, they became bound to suffer the legal penalties for them. In case their tenants or cottagers transgressed, they were bound to present them to justice, or to turn them off their lands or tenements, or else to suffer the penalties which they incurred. Lest the force of this bond might be eluded, the privy council declared, that every landowner that should receive the tenants or servants of any other proprietor into his lands or service, without a certificate from the latter or the minister of his parish, that they had conformed to the law in this particular, should be subject to such fines as the council should think fit to inflict, and repair the damage that shall accrue to the proprietor or master whose tenants or servants they received. All the lords of the council, the judges, advocates, and all connected with the law, signed this bond; and the landed gentry everywhere signed it readily, except in the five disaffected shires.

"SUCH WAS the state of affairs in Scotland from the Restoration," says an anonymous author, "that never any nation nor people had a more merciful and mild king, who loved nothing more than the ease and happiness of all mankind, but more particularly of his own subjects. But on the contrary, let us look over all history, yea, romance and fable too, there

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, vol. ii. p. 387.



is not to be found such a mutinous and factious race, and addicted to such tumultuary and seditious practices against all society and government, as some of the subjects were during that reign. All the acts of grace, favour, and indulgence, had no effect on them, or could make them capable of the protection of laws, such poisonable principles and practices were rooted in them. Now and then, law took place against some of the most notorious offenders among them, but where one suffered a hundred were winked at. But this, instead of curbing and restraining, heightened and increased the malice and rage of the rest, particularly from 1675 to 1679, insomuch that the furiosos of the party laid aside all respect for the laws of God and nature, and of those of the land, so that murdering of common soldiers, barbarous invasions upon the persons and families of the ministers of God, and affronting every thing that was in the least subservient to authority, were familiar to them, and became their common practice. It was only want of opportunity and power that preserved the sacred persons of the bishops, nay, and of the king himself too, (whom they had excommunicated, and designated the devil's vicegerent,) from being assassinated by their bloody hands. Of all these fathers of the church, their prejudice and rage was mainly levelled against archbishop Sharp. They knew him to be an Atlas for his order, and no less useful in the state. They thought, if they could once destroy him, they should shake the very fabric and unity of the government itself. These fears and threatenings little troubled that great and good man and the rest of his order, while they were conscious to themselves they were acting nothing without their sphere; and if these threatenings had any effect upon them, it was to strengthen and confirm them in the practice of their christian virtues and habits, which prepared them for all events<sup>1</sup>."

DR. HICKES, who was chaplain to the duke of Lauderdale, and afterwards dean of Worcester, accompanied him into Scotland, and who had an opportunity of judging for himself, speaking of this preparation for reducing the rebels to obedience to the laws, says, "All this hath been done under the wise conduct of the duke of Lauderdale, to whose presence among us, next under God, this poor church and religion are redeemable, that they have been preserved from confusion and blood. And I question not but his vigorous endeavours to suppress this schism (the like whereof, in all respects, was never yet heard of in any age or nation), have by this time

<sup>1</sup> True and Impartial Account, pp. 70, 71.





effectually confuted all the lying reports that were sent into England by our men of schism and faction, with a design to render him odious in our neighbour country, and discredit his administration here<sup>1</sup>.”

DR. GUTHRY, lord bishop of Dunkeld, died in the beginning of this year. On the 7th of May, William Lindsay, rector of Perth, and son of James Lindsay, esq. of Dovehill, was consecrated to the see of Dunkeld. On the 14th February, Murdoch Mackenzie was translated from the see of Moray to that of Orkney, which had been vacant nearly a year since the death of Dr. Honyman. James Aitken, rector of Winfrith, in Dorsetshire, in the bishoprick of Winchester, was presented to the see of Moray. After his escape from the angry fangs of the kirk and the rebel government, in the year 1650<sup>2</sup>, he lived in great obscurity in Holland till the year 1653, when he returned with his family to Edinburgh, and resided there till the Restoration, without having been discovered. He accompanied his friend, bishop Sydsersf, to London, to congratulate his majesty; when the bishop of Winchester presented him to the vacant living of Winfrith, where he served till he was promoted to the bishoprick of Moray. Robert Lawrie, bishop of Brechin, also died this year: he retained the deanery of Edinburgh, and a preachiership at the church of the Holy Trinity in that city, because the property of the see of Brechin had been altogether transferred to the family of Argyle during the titular episcopacy of the “boy bishop,” Campbell, in 1566, “who alienated most part of the lands and tythes of the bishoprick to his chief and patron, the earl of Argyle, retaining for his successors *scarce so much as would be a moderate competency for a minister*.” The following year, George Haliburton, the incumbent of Cupar, in Angus, was consecrated to the see of Brechin. There is a letter extant from the duke of Lauderdale to archbishop Sharp, dated the 2d of June this year, respecting the disputed right of presentation to a church in Aberdeenshire, and informing his grace that he had procured a royal dispensation for the lord bishop of the Isles to retain his former living of Dunbar, on account of the poverty of that see<sup>3</sup>.

IT IS A common subject of platform claptrap and declamation to lament over the sufferings of the Covenanters of this period, as martyrs for the gospel, and to eulogise them as having laid the foundation of British liberty and freedom. There

<sup>1</sup> Fana'ical Moderation, &c. 42, 43.      <sup>2</sup> Vide *ante*, ii. ch. xxiv. p. 316.

<sup>3</sup> MSS. Episcopal Chest, Aberdeen, No. A. 39.—Keith's Catalogue, 310, 168.





cannot, however, be a greater mistake. The conduct of these men was mutinous and seditious in the extreme ; and from their intractable obstinacy they were the real cause of all the arbitrary laws, and of their severe administration. By compelling the government to enact and enforce such severe laws, but especially the letters of intercommuning, the covenanters not only subjected themselves to restrictions upon their civil and religious liberties, but they exposed those who were both by principle and practice obedient to the laws, to the same restrictions. From their peaceable and benevolent habits, the episcopalians were much more liable to incur, through ignorance, the penalties attached to the relief of the necessities of intercommuned fanatics, than their own friends were, who knew their haunts and their persons, and so could avoid both. The harsh and arbitrary proceedings of Lauderdale and the privy council did not proceed from cruelty, or from any design to persecute the covenanters ; for they shewed an extraordinary desire to satisfy them by granting them a toleration which, in fact, amounted to an establishment. Yet, with every liberty which no other government ever conceded to any dissenters, the covenanters were not satisfied ; nay, they would not peaceably enjoy even the freedom that was thrust upon them. They would not confine themselves to preaching in the parish churches to which they were inducted and exempted from episcopal control, but they collected mobs of men and women to retired places at a distance from their cures, and to which the men went fully armed, or, to use the native expression, *in effeir of war*. This was a breach of the king's peace, and also of express acts of parliament ; and it was in violation of the ministers' solemn engagements to the privy council at the time when they received their indulgences.

HAD THE presbyterians lived, as in duty they were bound to have done, in obedience to the laws, none of these severe statutes would have been enacted, and they might have enjoyed their own gospel without let or molestation from either the civil or the ecclesiastical rulers of the kingdom, whom they called *the priests of Baal*<sup>1</sup>. But they would neither live peaceably themselves nor allow their fellow subjects of the established church to live in peace ; but harassed them, particularly the clergy, Wodrow and bishop Burnet being witnesses, by every species of annoyance, robbery, and personal maltreatment, which the former of these authors delicately calls *riots*, and the latter says that in *no other christian country could it have*

<sup>1</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, 277.



*been paralleled.* The covenanters were never called in question for their religion, in which they were indulged and established; but the punishments by fine and imprisonment with which they were visited were wholly and entirely for their *political* sins of sedition and obstinate breaches of acts of parliament. There could not be any conduct more opposite to the principles of christianity than that of these dissenters. One of the designs of the christian law is to maintain and defend the civil authority; and our Lord expressly taught us to "render unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's;" a precept which He illustrated by his own example. The first christians were most eminent for their submission and subjection to a heathen government and to heathen laws. Magistracy and civil government are the great supports and instruments of external peace and security, and in nothing did the primitive christians more triumph than in their exemplary obedience to their governors. They honoured their persons, revered their power, which they recognized as the ordinance of God; they paid tribute and obeyed the laws, where they were not evidently in opposition to the divine law; and when they were contrary to the Decalogue, they submitted with christian resignation to the most cruel penalties for conscience sake, without murmuring, and most certainly without resisting with the sword; for they were armed with the shield of faith. Now this was suffering for Christ, which was the true martyrdom: for without the shield of faith and the inextinguishable principle of charity, there cannot be martyrdom. But it was faction, not faith—hatred and malignity, not charity—that pervaded the covenanters; therefore their sufferings were not martyrdom, but the just punishment of their sedition.

THE CHIEF design and object of the Solemn League and Covenant was not only to break the unity of Christ's church, but to *extirpate* it from the face of the earth; and the Westminster Confession solemnly declares that there is "no ordinary possibility of salvation" out of the pale of presbytery, independency, and the other sects that composed the Westminster Assembly<sup>1</sup>. The true visible church of Christ is but ONE, and it is an article of the creed common to the christian church, "*to believe one holy catholic and apostolic church*"<sup>2</sup>. The true visible church of Christ can be but ONE, because Christ is but one, and one head can have but one body—one husband can have but one spouse; and there can be but one

<sup>1</sup> Chap. xxv. Sect. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Nicene Creed.



building erected on one chief Corner Stone. There is but one Mediator, and but one christian covenant; but one body of laws given to all christians, and but one government; all christians, therefore, were intended to make but ONE society, household, corporation, or kingdom, which is altogether quickened by one Divine Spirit. There is but one general vocation in one holy baptism; and because there is but one baptism, he that is baptized in any particular church, however humble or obscure, provided she adheres to the "one catholic and apostolic church," has a title to all the privileges of the one church catholic,—viz. calling, election, adoption, regeneration, justification, and sanctification; all of which are graces bestowed in baptism. It is not, however, necessary that all christians should be under one visible head, nor "that traditions and ceremonies be in all places one and utterly alike;" there is not the least intimation of such a thing in any part of Scripture, nor in any part of the history of the primitive church. Unity of faith alone is not sufficient to unite all christians into one society, as was evident both at the time we are treating of and at the present day; for although all the denominations in the kingdom agree with the church in certain fundamental articles of faith, yet they make separate societies and opposite communions. One hope also may consist with schism and separation from the church catholic; and therefore unity of hope is not sufficient to constitute the one catholic church, for heretics and schismatics may entertain the same hope as catholic christians, although they have not the same security. Without charity, we can neither be christians nor united in one christian society; but even an unity of charity is not sufficient to unite christians into one body, for even heathens and the publicans and sinners love one another.

IT MAY be concluded, then, that it is neither the possession of the same faith, nor of the same hope, nor of an universal charity, that can, either separately or jointly, constitute one visible catholic church; but ONE COMMUNION. "Nothing less than one external *visible communion* can unite all christians in one external visible body. To profess the same faith, or to entertain the same hope, or to love one another, is not enough; we must confirm one another's faith, we must encourage one another's hope, we must provoke one another's love, by *communicating* one with another in the same religious offices; but every man in his proper station—ecclesiastics in their respective orders and subordination, and private christians in their own rank. This and nothing less, and nothing other, can





unite all christians into *one body*, in *one catholic society*<sup>1</sup>. This is susceptible of proof from the description of the constitution of the church immediately after the day of Pentecost; at which time, we are informed, the first christians continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of [the] bread and in [the] prayers." This description of the church communion of the first christian believers as it subsisted in the purest time of the church under the immediate guidance of our Lord's apostles, who had been recently inspired by the miraculous descent of the Holy Spirit, is the model for the imitation of all christians who have been "added to the church" catholic by holy baptism, from that time till the end of the world.

THE FIRST mark in this apostolic church was their continuance in the faith once delivered to the saints, and which was preserved in their public liturgy or form of prayer, which they all used "*with one accord*." Their stedfast continuance in the apostles' doctrine was their living in the unity of the faith, on the profession of which they had been received into the kingdom of God, and made his adopted sons and daughters by the sacrament of baptism. The second mark was their equal stedfastness in the apostles' "fellowship;" that is, in *one communion* with the apostles. They did not separate from the apostles' fellowship, and set up opposite communions. They did not make parties, saying I am of Peter, and I am of John; nor a few of them bind themselves and their posterity under a solemn covenant or oath to "*extirpate*" and destroy, "root and branch," those faithful men who adhered to the apostolic fellowship. On the contrary, they were all of "one heart and of one mind," and "continued daily with *one accord* in the temple," and casting away all covetous desires, they deprived themselves of all luxuries and many comforts to relieve the distresses of their poorer brethren, and by this self-denial they manifested their love to God. The third mark of the church at Jerusalem, which is the mother of all churches, was their stedfast continuance in "*the breaking of the bread, and in the prayers*." This is a metaphorical expression for the administration of the Lord's Supper, and which was given by the hands of the apostles at the time under review. The first christian church, which consisted of three thousand souls, were altogether with one accord in one place; but from the numbers

<sup>1</sup> Sage's Letters on the Reasonableness of a Toleration inquired into, purely on Church Principles, 55.



that were daily added to the church, other "upper rooms" were appointed for assembling together, but still there was but *one* communion or fellowship. The definite article *the*, which, although it has not been translated in our version, yet is prefixed to all the three marks above named, and which decidedly denotes that *the bread* must signify the eucharist, and not a common meal, and *the prayers*, meant a certain form of prayer that the disciples had been taught, and had committed to memory, which they shewed by lifting up their voice with *one accord*, which means that they united with the apostle in his prayers, and which they could not have done had they been extempore. Here, then, we have the everlasting example of unity in doctrine—unity in government, which was apostolic, and obedience to it—*unity of communion*—and unity in a set form of prayer.

IT COULD NOT be expected that there would be a cordial intercommunion betwixt the presbyterians and the episcopalians, so long as the murderous oath of the covenant remained branded as if with a hot iron upon the souls and consciences of the former. But there did not subsist *one communion* even among the different parties of the presbyterians themselves; and, in point of fact, they did not communicate one with another. Richard Cameron, who received a commission from his ordainers "to set the fire of hell" to the tails of his hearers, spurned the acceptors of the indulgence, and with abundance of "keen hatred and round abuse" of his brethren, was "express and clear in declaring the *sinfulness* of the indulgence, and of joining with the acceptors thereof<sup>1</sup>." The sect called after this man's name, Cameronians, do not hold communion with the established kirk, or any of the seceders from it, at the present day. The unindulged or itinerant preachers held no communion with the indulged, but bestowed the most opprobrious epithets upon them—as council-curates, erastians, and dumb-dogs that could not bark, and they concluded "that the divine grace was departed from them." From this evidence of bishop Burnet for his friends, we can understand what they meant by "*divine grace*;" namely, a spirit of calumny and detraction, which exerted itself principally in exciting the people against their governors, and in fomenting sedition and rebellion as a fundamental principle. The only point on which all the different parties of presbyterians agreed and were united, was the persecution of the episcopal clergy, and the firm determination to murder the primate and extirpate the whole body of

<sup>1</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, p. 333.



the bishops. Such a spirit of delusion was sent upon them, that they mistook the suggestions of the devil and the marks of the flesh for divine grace; in short, they seem to have been given over to a reprobate mind, professing that they knew God, but in works denying Him, being abominable and disobedient. They were given over to a corrupt mind, and laboured under the delusion that they were serving God upon principle, whilst they were doing those things which were not convenient<sup>1</sup>. In fact, Burnet himself, in his "Four Conferences," enumerates as many kinds of violence which these saints practised upon the episcopal clergy, as the most notorious robbers could have been guilty of, and that simply for their submission to the jurisdiction of their respective bishops.

IN THIS AGE we are apt to compare the laws and customs of the present time with those of the period under review; and so are disposed to think that the measures adopted were more harsh than in reality they were. The patriarchal privileges of the nobility and chiefs gave them legally the power of life and death over their feudal vassals, and therefore the execution of the laws frequently was devolved on them, instead of on the judicial officers of the crown, as in the better ordered system of the present day. It was quite consistent with their privileges and extensive powers for the crown to make the chiefs accountable for the conduct of their vassals, and which, armed as they were with such extensive jurisdiction, they could very easily accomplish. To exact such terms from landlords now would be absurd, simply because they could not comply with them; but then it was quite different, for every tenant was absolutely at his landlord's disposal, bound to serve him in peace and to follow him in war.

THE CONSTANT hostility of the presbyterians, and their pertinacious denouncing of the liturgy and all the catholic rites and usages of the church, was so great, that the governors of the church feared the people too much to venture on so bold but necessary a step as either to adopt the liturgy compiled by archbishop Spottiswood and the other bishops of his day, or to introduce that of the church of England—*fearing the people*. Yet many of the clergy compiled prayers for their own individual assistance in the public worship and for the administration of the sacraments. But in other respects they conducted the public worship in the same extemporary manner as the presbyterians did, and therefore the distinction betwixt the church and the sects was neither marked nor visible.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. i. 28; Ephes. v. 4; 2 Tim. iii. 8; Titus, i. 16.





Particularly, the administration of the Lord's Supper was the same in both, viz. a long table placed, for the time being, along the centre aisle of the church, and at other times used for any secular purpose. There was no altar on which to offer to God the commemorative sacrifice of our Lord's death, and the oblations of the people; nor table of the Lord on which to feed the people in sacrament with the body and blood of our blessed Redeemer. There was no "form of sound words" to teach the young of the flock by catechising, as we are assured by bishop Ramsay in his controversy with the primate; but every individual clergyman taught the youth of his congregation as he best could by a compilation of his own. The catechism formed on the Westminster Confession of Faith was universally rejected by the church, on account both of the ultra Calvinism of its doctrines, and its never having received the authority of either the church or the state.

IT IS TO be feared, that so much yielding to the opposition of the presbyterians to all catholic or even decent usages, must have incurred divine displeasure; it shewed a deficiency of zeal, and of moral courage, in the cause of truth, on the part of the governors of the church. There were no articles or confession of faith authorised other than the inconsistent, imperfect, and not altogether catholic formulary, drawn hastily up by Knox, and as there was no liturgy, so there was no formulary in which to embody the APOSTLES' CREED, which is the confession of the faith of the whole church, from east to west, and from north to south.

THE WESTMINSTER Confession was exclusively the property of the presbyterians, and it ever has been repudiated by the church; of this ultra Calvinistic document, an acute and admirable satirist says—"If the Confession of Faith be true, none of our ministers are inspired in their prayers; for there, all mankind are divided into two classes, the elect and the reprobate. Yet it is evident, beyond all possibility of dispute, that the *elect* pray as if it were possible that they *may be damned*, and the *reprobates*, as if it were possible *they may be saved*; and yet it is impossible that the Holy Spirit inspires either of them with these prayers, unless we be so impious as to imagine that He directs them to pray upon false principles, and inspires them to pray for or against what He knows can never happen; and though some of you urge this argument of inspiration against your adversaries, yet our church [the presbyterian establishment], has, in fact, very fairly disclaimed it, by publishing, and authorising a Directory for public prayer, unless we would suppose them so presumptuous as to direct the Holy





Spirit how to pray. In truth, our presbyterian inspiration is as mysterious and as useless a gift as the popish infallibility. The popish church has an infallibility lodged *somewhere*, but she knows not where to find it in time of need; we presbyterians have an inspiration among us, but we know not to which of all the sects it belongs. The *infallible* church is filled with disputes which her infallibility cannot determine, and the *inspired* church has nonsense, contradiction, and whimsical opinions, vented in her public prayers, which her inspiration does not prevent. The *infallible* church has the most unreasonable and absurd creed of any church upon earth; and the *inspired* church has, and will have (while she adheres to her present plan) a very defective, unreasonable, and dangerous kind of public worship:—so fully and justly does the providence of heaven confute the vain pretensions of presumptuous men<sup>1</sup>.”

<sup>1</sup> Letter from a Blacksmith to the Ministers and Elders of the Church of Scotland. London, 1759. New York, reprinted, 1764.



## CHAPTER XXXVI.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP.

1678.—Highlanders rendezvous at Stirling.—Bond.—Committee of the council attend the army.—Letter from Dr. Hickey to Dr. Patrick.—Rumour of the assassination of the archbishops.—Mitchel's trial—Burnet's account—proceedings—interlocutor—confession—examinations—archbishop Sharp's evidence—the lord advocate's speech—the verdict—sentence—Burnet's remarks—observations—his speech, and execution.—Military movements.—An Occasion at Glasgow.—Application to the council—rejected.—Proceedings of the committee of council.—Law-borrows.—Act of council.—Highland Host—withdrawn.—Sufferings of the episcopal clergy.—Report of the presbytery of Ayr to the archbishop of Glasgow.—Memorial of the clergy to the king.—Duke of Hamilton goes to court.—King's letter.—Conventicles in Perthshire.—Letter of the lord bishop of Galloway.

1678.—IN CONSEQUENCE of a proclamation on the 26th of December, 1677, several noblemen connected with the highlands collected their vassals, to the number of eight thousand men, and rendezvoused at Stirling, where they were joined by two thousand lowland militia, and the whole were placed under the command of the earl of Linlithgow. The nobility and gentry in the presbyterian districts heard of this real preparation for the suppression of the rebellion with alarm, and they concerted to go to court and intercede with his majesty to prevent the nearer approach of this army. This design coming to the ears of the council, they issued a proclamation on the 3d of January, prohibiting all noblemen, some of whom were hereditary sheriffs of the counties, and others, except traders on their lawful calling, from leaving the kingdom without license: "The lords, &c. taking to their consideration, that upon the great disorders lately committed in some western and other shires, they did write to them in his majesty's name to take such course therein as might secure the peace in these places, with certification to them, *if they failed therein*, they would employ his majesty's authority for doing thereof; which, after having received no satisfactory answer, and they having declared that *they were not able to suppress the disorders*, nor free the coun-



try thereof, his majesty did command and warrant his privy council to arm such of his militia and such others as should offer to serve him, for redressing the said disorders: . . . and therefore lest any person should withdraw from the said service by going out of the kingdom, the said lords do hereby require and command all noblemen, &c. . . . not to remove forth thereof upon any pretext whatsoever, as they shall be answerable at their highest peril, &c."

As it was strongly suspected that the duke of Hamilton secretly encouraged the rebels, the council ordered him to attend the committee of the privy council that were to sit at Glasgow, and to receive and obey the orders, that they might give him, as hereditary sheriff principal of Lanarkshire; but his grace excused himself under the plea of ill health. The bond before mentioned was signed by all the noblemen and heritors in the county of Fife—"faithfully bind and oblige us, that we, our wives, bairns [children], and servants respectively, shall no ways be present at any conventicle or disorderly meeting in time coming, but shall live orderly in obedience to the law, under the pains and penalties contained in the act of parliament thereanent. As also, we bind and oblige us, that our haill tenants and cottars respective, their wives, bairns, and servants, shall likewise abstain and refrain from the said conventicles, and other illegal meetings not authorised by law; and further, that we shall not resett, supply, or commune with forfeited persons, intercommuned ministers, or vagrant preachers; but do our utmost to apprehend their persons."

THE COUNCIL appointed a committee of their own number to attend on the army, or, as it was called, "the Highland Host." Their commission narrated the principal rebellions and seditions, with sundry other "pranks" of the Covenanters, especially of their taking advantage of the king's being engaged in a foreign war, to rebel in the year 1666. That, notwithstanding all the favours and indemnities that had been granted them, they flocked together in field conventicles with armed men, usurped the pulpits of the regular clergy, and threatened their persons; built meeting-houses, resetted and followed declared rebels and intercommuned persons. The same extent of power was granted to the committee that was held in full by the whole council at head-quarters. Their instructions were, to disarm all suspected persons; and—4. vigorously to prosecute all such as have been present at field conventicles, and have convoked people thereto, since the 1st of January, 1677.—5. To prosecute such as have withdrawn from public ordinances, or that are guilty of irregular baptisms or marriages.—7. To take





bonds from the heritors, &c. for the good behaviour of their households and tenants.—9. To compel the heritors, &c. to give bonds for the security of the persons and property of the episcopal clergy; to make the heritors give bond not to permit conventicles to be held on their lands<sup>1</sup>. These instructions were “subscribed *ut sederunt*, except the two archbishops.” They were further instructed not to quarter the troops, or in any way to harass the loyal and peaceable, or those who willingly subscribed the bonds for the king’s peace.

THE FOLLOWING letter from Dr. Hickes is interesting, as opening up some of the secret springs of the movements at this time. It is addressed to the Rev. Dr. Patrick, who was afterwards bishop of Chichester, dated Edinburgh, Dec. 8, 1677:—

“SIR,—The enclosed is an account of the present state of affairs in this kingdom, and of that *effectual* course my lord duke hath taken to reduce these insolent fanatics. It is sent to my lord bishop of Rochester from my lord bishop of Galloway, who is a great support to this church, and a very faithful friend and councillor to my lord. I have formerly told you how the fanatics have been underhand encouraged to this height of insolence by some malcontent lords, and therefore, to particularize the general information of the enclosed, I have sent you the names of the most considerable and mischievous of them in their several divisions, where the fanatics of late have made so much stir. In the country of Fife, the earl of Rothes (the present chancellor) and the earl of Kincardine are chief, whereof the former hath been the *most false*, and the latter the *most ungrateful* men to my lord that ever were born. In Clydesdale, the duke of Hamilton is sheriff of the shire. In Carrick, the earl of Cassillis is sheriff of the shire. In Teviotdale, the earl of Roxburgh; and in Tweeddale, his father-in-law, the earl of Tweeddale, is sheriff. In the stewartry of Kirkcudbright, which containeth the east part of Galloway, the earl of Queensberry and the earl of Galloway; and in Stirlingshire and about Linlithgow, the earl of Callander and major-general Drummond.

“THESE ARE the chief of the party, and although all of them be not fanatics professed, yet those that are not, forgetting their duty to their prince and the established government of the church, take this wicked course of fomenting the fanatic faction (if it could be, to rebel), because (forsooth) they have not the chief administration of affairs. They are now, most

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow’s History, ii. 378-387.



of them, with their adherents, in the town, and daily club together to raise lies and disperse them about both kingdoms; and all the ways imaginable to debauch the military and gentry (though God be thanked, with little success) from their duty to his majesty, and to make them have an ill opinion of my lord.

“FROM THIS account you may see what good reason my lord duke had not to undertake the reduction of the forementioned countries till he had procured the English and Irish forces to be in readiness, in case there should be occasion; for had he sent the small forces we have here among them before, they would have been encouraged to rise by their foresaid patriots, whereof some wish the ruin of the church, and all of them the ruin of my lord duke. And notwithstanding the preparations that my lord hath made against them, yet the mad rabble think themselves secure, having received private information from their patriots, that they will undertake their protection till spring, which, whether they can do or no, must be proved by the event. My lord duke, you may assure all the world, will not let slip this opportunity of doing God and the church, the king and his country, all that service which a *most loyal subject, faithful minister, and zealous churchman*, can be imagined to do. And yet the lords of the party had so far insinuated themselves into the clergy, as to make some of them suspect his sincerity to the church: this I found everywhere in the late tours I made about the country; and I think I was more capable than any other single man to cure their jealousies, where-with some bishops were but too much possessed, till I conjured them to believe, that if my lord were not true to the church, I would not tarry with him three days.

“MY LORD hath taken care to hinder the French officers from levying recruits in this kingdom, which I hope will be acceptable news in England to all but those who would have him reputed of the French faction, because it is so odious a character in our country. You cannot well imagine what daily pains and trouble he undergoes here, what knotty businesses he has to go through, and yet how cheerful, serene, and undisturbed he is, as if he had neither enemies, nor anything to do.

\* \* \* \* \*

(Signed)

“GEO. HICKES<sup>1</sup>.”

IN THE MIDST of these preparations for the suppression of

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Collection of Original Letters illustrative of English History, vol. iv. 40-44.—Dr. Hickes was dean of Worcester, and deprived at the Revolution; and he was also a bishop among the non-jurors.



the rebellious conventicles in the diocese of Glasgow, the fanatical Covenanters made open threats of their intention to murder the two archbishops. "About this time," says Dr. Hickee, "it was rumoured about town and country, that the Whigs (for so we call the fanatics) *designed to take off the two archbishops*, and some other bishops, by assassination; and likewise vehement suspicions and presumptions were formed, that they had the like design on other eminent persons who were most concerned, and resolved to see them reduced to order and obedience. And therefore the council thought it expedient to prevent such barbarous attempts, and secure the lives of his majesty's faithful ministers, to bring Mr. Mitchel to public justice, that the remonstrator presbyterians of our country might see what these Clements and Ravallacs might expect<sup>1</sup>."

"THOSE IRRELIGIOUS and heterodox books, called 'Naph-tali' and 'Jus Populi,' had made the killing of all dissenters from presbytery seem not only *lawful*, but even *duty*, amongst many of that profession; and in a postscript to 'Jus Populi' it was told, that *the sending of the archbishop of St. Andrews' head to the king, would be the best present that could be made to JESUS CHRIST!* Animated by which principles, one master James Mitchel, a profligate fellow, who, for scandal and ill-nature, had been thrown out of the laird of Dundass's house, where he served as chaplain, did, in July, 1668, watch to kill that archbishop<sup>2</sup>." Among other alarming circumstances, the archbishop received an anonymous letter, threatening him with a ball from a surer hand, and with a better aim, than Mitchel's. Besides this, new discoveries were made, that the fanatics had formed a design to assassinate his grace upon the first favourable opportunity. It was therefore determined to bring Mitchel to trial, who had actually made the attempt, and had caused the death of the lord bishop of Orkney. Sir George Mackenzie, his majesty's advocate, was therefore ordered to proceed against him under an indictment founded upon the IVth act of the 16th parliament of James VI. which made the invading the persons of privy councillors, *de a h.*

HIS TRIAL lasted four days, and was conducted with great deliberation, and lord Fountainhall, a judge, says, "it was one of the most solemn criminal trials that had been in Scotland

<sup>1</sup> Fanatical Moderation, or Unparalleled Villainy displayed. London, 1711, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Memoirs of the History of Scotland, 326.





these three hundred years<sup>1</sup>." Sir George Lockhart was appointed his counsel, and who made a long and powerful speech in his favour. He was indicted for the attempted assassination of the archbishop of St. Andrews, who was at the same time a privy councillor, which was a great aggravation of the crime. He was put to the bar on the 7th of January; and Burnet, in that exquisite spirit of lying and malice which runs through his whole book, says, "but the judge, as he hated Sharp, *as he went up to the bench*, passing by the prisoner, said to him, Confess nothing, unless you are sure of your limbs as well as your life<sup>2</sup>. Upon this hint, he, apprehending the danger, refused to confess." This is a most malignant and false aspersions on the character of the judge before whom he was tried, and who was no other than his friend Primrose, then justice-general; and whose character he still farther blackens, by saying, "he was a man of most exquisite malice, and was too much pleased with the thoughts that the greatest enemies lie had were to appear before him, and to perjure themselves in his court; yet he fancied orders had been given to raze the act that the council had made . . . he took a copy of it, and sent it to Mitchel's counsel. . . . Primrose said [to Burnet], his conscience led him to give duke Lauderdale this warning of the matter, but that he was not sorry to see him thus reject it: and upon it he said within himself, '*I have you now*'<sup>3</sup>." It is hardly possible that Primrose would have related the matter to Burnet in the way at least that the latter represents it, because it casts such a foul blot upon that judge's character; for he was one of those who examined Mitchel when his confession was made, and of course knew all the circumstances. But Burnet's egotism and malice led him a step farther, and he says, "Primrose did most inhumanly triumph in this matter, and said it was the greatest glory of his life, that the four greatest enemies he had should come and consign the damnation of their souls in his hands<sup>4</sup>."

MITCHEL pleaded not guilty, and peremptorily denied that he had ever made any confession at all. Notwithstanding, both he himself and the party who espouse his principles and his crimes cling with the utmost tenacity to the conditional promise of sparing his life, which had been made *without authority*. In his opening speech, sir George Mackenzie said:—"The said Mr. James owns himself to be of a profes-

<sup>1</sup> Fountainhall's MS., cited by K. Sharp, Esq. in note to Kirkton's History, p. 387.    <sup>2</sup> Own Times, ii. 129.    <sup>3</sup> Ibid. 130.    <sup>4</sup> Ibid. 134.





sion who hates and execrates that hierarchy; and of which sect the unhallowed pen of Naphtali declares *it lawful to kill those of that character*. 2. It is notour [notorious], and offered to be proved, that Mr. James himself *defended* that it was lawful to kill such, and endeavoured, by wrested places of Scripture, to defend himself, and to gain proselytes thereby; and if need were, as there is none, it is specifically and distinctly offered to be proven, that he acknowledged that the reason why he shot at the archbishop was because he thought him a persecutor of the nefarious and execrable rebels, who appeared on the Pentland hills: and also, like as his confession was made in the presence of his majesty's privy council and the king's commissioner, in whom all the judicatories of the kingdom do imminently reside, and who might have sent the panel [prisoner] to the scaffold without an assize."

THE PRINCIPAL proof adduced against him was his own confession in the year 1674 to the chancellor Rothes, and a committee of the privy council. The debates as to points of law continued so long that the court pronounced an interlocutor, and adjourned till the following day<sup>1</sup>. On the 10th, when the court again met, and the jury had been sworn, the lord advocate produced Mitchel's confession, as follows:—"Edinburgh, 10th February, 1674. In presence of the lord chancellor, lord register, lord advocate, and treasurer depute, Mr. James

<sup>1</sup> "Edinburgh, 9th day of January, foresaid, the Interlocutor following was pronounced:—The lords commissioners of justiciary having considered the dittay and debate relating thereto, find that article of the dittay founded upon the 4 Act, 14 Par. Ja. VI., bearing the pannel's invading by shooting, and firing a pistol at his grace the archbishop of St. Andrews, a privy councillor, for doing his majesty's service, relevantly libelled, his majesty's advocate proving the presumption in his reply, viz. that the said pannel said he did make the said attempt and invasion, because of the archbishop his persecuting those that were in the rebellion at Pentland, or some words to that purpose, relevant to infer the pain contained in the foresaid act of parliament, and remits the same to the knowledge of an assize. And likewise finds that part of the dittay anent the invading of bishops and ministers, relevant to infer an arbitrary punishment, and remits the same to the knowledge of an assize. And sikelike that article of the dittay anent the wounding, invading, and mutilating of the bishop of Orkney, relevant to infer an arbitrary punishment, and remits the same to the knowledge of an assize. And also, having considered that part of the debates anent the pannel's confession, made and emitted before a committee, appointed by authority of council to receive it; and thereafter adhered to and renewed in presence of his majesty's high commissioner, and lords of privy council, convened in council, finds it is judicial, and cannot be retracted; and also having considered the debate and defence against the said confession, viz. that the same was emitted upon promise or assurance of impunity of life and limb, finds the same relevant to secure the pannel as to life and limb, referring to the commissioners of justiciary to inflict such arbitray punishment as they shall think fit, in case the defence shall be proven, and remits the same to the knowledge of an assize.



Mitchel, preacher, being called, did freely confess he was the person who shot at the archbishop of St. Andrews when the bishop [of Orkney] was hurt thereby, in the year 1668, and depones upon oath that no living creature did persuade him to it, or was upon the knowledge of it.

“Sic Subscr. J. MITCHEL.

“ROTHES. H. PRIMROSE.

“JO. NESBIT. CH. MAITLAND.”

IN THE examination of the witnesses, Patrick Vanse, the gaolor, deposed that the prisoner confessed to him “that he shot a pistol at the archbishop of St. Andrews.” John Vanse, son of the former deponent, “inquired at him how he or any man could be accessory to so impious an act as to kill a man in cold blood, who had not wronged him: he said it was not in cold blood, for *the blood of the saints* was reeking at the cross of Edinburgh.” The lord bishop of Galloway deponed that “he saw a pistol taken from the prisoner, out of which there were three balls taken . . . that hearing he had made a confession, his lordship went to the prison to speak to him about it,” who acknowledged to the deponent that he had made confession of that attempt against the archbishop before the chancellor and some others of the council, and that he had hopes of life, and desired the deponent to intercede for him. The earl of Rothes, lord high chancellor, “deponed that he was present and saw the pannel subscribe that paper; and deponed that he heard him make the confession contained therein, and that he thereafter heard him ratify the same at the council-bar, in presence of the king’s commissioner and lords of privy council sitting in council, and that his lordship subscribed the said confession. Depones that his lordship and treasurer depute were appointed by the privy council to examine the said Mr. James, and being interrogated, if, *after they had removed the pannel to the council-chamber*, whether or not his lordship did offer to the pannel, upon his confession, to secure his life, in these words—‘upon his lordship’s life, honour, and reputation;’ depones that he did not at all give any assurance to the pannel for his life, and that the pannel never sought any such assurance from him, and his lordship does not remember that there was any warrant given by the council to his lordship for that effect, and if there be any expressions in any paper which may seem to infer any thing to the contrary, his lordship conceives it has been inserted upon some mistake.”

CHARLES MAITLAND, of Hatton, deponed that he heard the prisoner make the confession verbally, and afterwards sign the



written confession, at which time there was nothing said of any assurance of life: he afterwards heard him acknowledge to the privy council that the confession now produced in court was his hand-writing, to which he adhered, at which time the prisoner neither solicited any assurance of life, nor was any such assurance made to him. The duke of Lauderdale having been sworn, deponed that Mitchel acknowledged the written confession, and adhered to it; and that "his grace heard no assurance given to him, and that his grace did not give him any assurance, and *could not do it*, having no particular warrant from his majesty for that effect."

"JAMES, Archbishop of St. Andrews, being sworn, depones that that day the pannel did fire the pistol at his grace, he had a view of him passing from the coach and crossing the street, which made such impression upon his grace that upon the first sight he saw of him after he was taken he knew him to be the person that shot the shot. Depones that his grace saw him at the council-bar, in presence of his majesty's commissioner and the council, acknowledge his confession made before the committee, and heard him adhere thereto and renew the same, and that there was no assurance of life given him, nor sought by him there. Depones that his grace himself *did never give him any assurance*, nor give warrant to any others to do it, only he promised, at his first taking, that if he would freely confess the fault and express his repentance for the same, at that time, without farther troubling judicatories therein, his grace would *use his best endeavours for favour to him, or else leave him to justice*, but that he neither gave him any assurance nor gave warrant to any to give it. It is a false and malicious calumny, and that his grace made *no promise* to Nichol Somerville, other than that it was best to make a free confession, and this is the truth, as he shall answer to God.

"Sic subscr. St. Andrews. H. PRIMROSE, J.P.D.<sup>1</sup>"

THE PRISONER's counsel produced the copy of the act of council which had been given to him by Primrose, the presiding judge, and craved that the register of council itself might be produced; but the duke of Lauderdale refused this request, on account of its containing secrets of state. And the lord advocate pleaded, that after the solemn oaths of the lord commissioner and the other councillors, that the *council as such* had not given any assurance of life, it was both unneces-

<sup>1</sup> The deposition of each of the witnesses was subscribed in the same manner.





sary and indecorous to produce the books of council: "and if the act founded on it [this conditional assurance and confession] cannot be divided, so that a mere narrative must prove, and the statutory words should not prove, especially seeing there is nothing more notour and ordinary than for the council not to consider a narrative, if the statutory words be right; and as the pannel pretends that his confession cannot be divided from the assurance given, but that it must be taken with the quality; so, much less must this act be divided, and the pretended act is long posterior to the pannel's confession, and even posterior to a former diet in the justice court appointed for the pannel's trial for the said crimes; and farther, *no such assurance could have been granted, seeing none but his majesty can grant remissions.*" The act of council, however, was read in court, but the court refused to allow the prisoner's counsel to speak on it. It does not appear that any other exculpatory evidence was produced; but the prisoner staked his last hope upon the private assurance of life that had been given him. The privy council would have recommended him to mercy, although this promise was an unauthorised act of the lord Rothes, had not the prisoner acted in the manner we have detailed, and withdrawn his confession, and even denied that any such confession had ever been made. Lord Fountainhall states that "Sir George Lockhart and Mr. John Ellis, advocates for the pannel, produced an act of secret council, bearing that they *revoked* the assurance of life given him, because of his disingenuity<sup>1</sup>" in withdrawing his confession. The trial here closed, and the judges ordained the jury to be enclosed, and to return their verdict on the following day at two o'clock; and which was as follows:—

"EDINBURGH, the said 10th January, 1678. The assize gives in their verdict conform to their written deliverance, whereof the tenor follows. As to the first part of the libel founded upon the 4th Act, 16 par. Ja. VI., the chancellor and whole assize with *one voice*, find it proven, conform to the lord's interlocutor. As to the invading of bishops and ministers, and wounding the bishop of Orkney, sicklike, proven *with one voice*. As to the third part of the lord's interlocutor, concerning his confession, first before a committee, and thereafter before his majesty's high commissioner and council, the whole assize *with one voice* find it proven conform to the lords' interlocutor. As to the fourth and last part of the interlocutor, concerning

<sup>1</sup> MS. Decisions, in Notes to Kirkton's History, p. 386.



the exculpation, the whole assize, *with one voice*, find it no ways proven; and farther concerning exculpation, when the pannel was pressing it strongly upon my lord chancellor, the whole assize heard his confession and acknowledgment of the fact.  
Sic subscr. JOHN HAY, Chancellor."

"AFTER opening and reading of whilk verdict, the lords or justiciary, by the mouth of Adam Auld, Dempster of Court, decerned and adjudged the said Mr. James Mitchel to be taken to the Grass-market of Edinburgh, upon Friday, the 18th day of January instant, betwixt two and four of the clock in the afternoon, and there to be hanged on a gibbet till he be dead, and all his moveable goods and gear to be escheat and inbrought to his majesty's use, which was pronounced for doom<sup>1</sup>."

THE DEEP malice of bishop Burnet appears strongly marked in his account of this trial, against both the primate and his old patron, the duke of Lauderdale, whom he now hated as much as he had formerly flattered and served. He says, speaking of Mitchel's trial, "But now Sharp would have his life: so duke Lauderdale gave way to it<sup>2</sup>." Both of these assertions are false and base; and he farther records what he calls "an impious jest" of Lauderdale, but which was only a play upon Mitchel's own words, who, when asked what induced him to make so wicked an attempt upon the person of the archbishop, replied that he *did it "for the GLORY of the Lord."* For this reason, afterwards, when it was resolved to hang him, the duke said, "Well, then, *let Mitchell glorify God in the Grass-market*<sup>3</sup>." One of Burnet's critics says, "And after all, it appears from our author [Burnet], that there could be no absolute promise made him of life, because the council had no such power; and had the books been produced, and it had appeared the council had promised they would *intercede* for his life (which is all they could contain) this would not have saved Mitchel, or have shewn they were perjured. And it appears further from our author that Mitchel retracted his confession in a court of justice, and therefore the council retracted their promise of interceding for him: neither would Mitchel make any discovery of his accomplices in the re-

<sup>1</sup> MSS. Narrative of the Trial, in the Writers to the Signet's Library, Edinburgh, the whole of which I was liberally permitted to copy, and which is given at full length in the Author's Life and Times of Archbishop Sharp, pp. 535-543.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, ii. 129.

<sup>3</sup> Historical and Critical Remarks on Bishop Burnet's History of his Own Times, by Bevil Higgons, gent. 1727, p. 206.



bellion, and those promises were made upon condition of his making a full discovery. Yet Mitchel had *never been executed*, but for the *repeated threats* the government and ministers of state met with from his confederates every day, of *being assassinated* themselves; and the execution was *so far* from being at the instance of his grace the archbishop of St. Andrews, *that he moved in council to have him reprieved*<sup>1</sup>." The editor of Burnet's History says, in a note, "In a letter, however, lately published, Dr. Hickes says, that Mitchel was not at first prosecuted, because the archbishop *would not* pursue him *in causa sanguinis*, adding that the king's advocate, Nesbit, would not, being a fanatic<sup>2</sup>."

THIS INFAMOUS assassin is a fair specimen of the principles of his sect, where there is opportunity and personal courage to carry them out; and accordingly he is placed amongst the most worthy of the Scots Worthies, that is, in the calendar of presbyterian saints. Through his sides the most atrocious charges have been made against archbishop Sharp, of perjury and thirst of blood; yet not a word of reprobation has ever been uttered by the party against Mitchel himself, and other fanatics, who were constantly watching for an opportunity to murder the primate. They even seem to think he was very ill used in not having been allowed to accomplish his villainy. The wailings of Wodrow, his editor, and some others, over the "martyrdom," as they call the just execution of Mitchel, shews but too plainly that they would have rejoiced had his attempt to murder the primate been successful. They all insist that the council ought to have kept the private and unauthorised conditional promise made by Rothes, although the assassin had absolutely withdrawn the condition, and persisted in denying his confession. The act of council *records* the promise thus made, but did *not confirm* it; but undoubtedly they would have carried it into effect had not Mitchel persisted in the course he did. The act of council narrates that he altogether refused to answer and adhere to his confession, "notwithstanding he was told by the lord commissioners of justiciary and his majesty's advocate [Nesbit, who was himself a presbyterian], that if he would adhere to his said confession he should have the *benefit* of the said assurance, and if otherwise he should *lose* the same. Therefore the lord commissioners, &c. do declare that they are free" from the private promise made by Rothes. Mitchel's friends, who had

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Examination of Bishop Burnet's History, ii. 761-62.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 134, note.





advised him to this denial, even admitting Burnet's accusation against Primrose to be true, which is hardly credible, must, without doubt, be considered the only cause of his execution, by advising him to deny a confession written and signed by himself, and which does not contain one word of any promise of remission. Not one presbyterian author has recorded the fact that the archbishop interceded, though without success, with the council to recommend to his majesty to grant him his life. He also assured the wretched man himself, when taken, that he *freely forgave him*, and promised to *intercede* for him if he would confess his crime, and which promise he performed after the trial. So much the contrary, that the latest presbyterian authority attempts to continue the prejudice against the primate, by recording the following falsehood, founded on Burnet:—"Lauderdale would have spared him, but Sharp strenuously insisted upon his death, as the only way of securing his own person against similar attempts. Lauderdale yielded with a profane jest; and Sharp's cowardly and revengeful heart was gratified by this act of judicial murder<sup>1</sup>."

IT WAS deposed on oath that Mitchel said to several persons whilst he was in prison, "shame fall the miss; he should make the fire the hotter *the next time*;" and "let me but shoot at him *again*, and I will be content to be hanged *if I miss*." Although he strenuously denied, up to the last moment of his existence, that he had ever made any confession at all, yet he *never ceased* to accuse the privy council, and the primate, of breach of promise, after he had entirely forfeited any pretensions to its fulfilment. The promise, however, was not made by the council, but by lord Rothes, as one of the committee, of which the very judge who tried the assassin was a member. There could, therefore, be no perjury in the other members of the council, who were not parties to the transaction, and swore truly enough that no such promise was made by the council. Rothes only, may be said to have equivocated, and it was in bad taste for Primrose to preside at the trial. But whilst we are left to decide betwixt the pertinaacious *assertion* of a convicted traitor and assassin, and the *solemn oaths* of so many illustrious members of his majesty's privy council, our ideas of the sacred character of an oath would lead us to condemn Rothes's equivocation, or trifling with such a solemn appeal to God for the truth of a matter of fact, of which he could neither be ignorant nor forgetful.

SIR GEORGE MACKENZIE, who was the prosecutor, says,

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington's History, p. 148.





"As to Mitchel's case, whereas it is said that he was executed after he confessed the crime upon promise of life, it is acknowledged by all that Mitchel, having upon the High-street of Edinburgh fired a pistol at the archbishop, with a design to murder him, he wounded the bishop of Orkney with a shot, *of which he never recovered*; and being thereafter apprehended, confessed the crime: but continuing still to glory in it, and very famous witnesses having deponed that he was upon a new plot to kill the same archbishop, he was brought to trial, and his defences were, that the earl of Rothes, to whom he confessed it, had promised to secure his life; and that the privy council had afterwards promised the same. For proving this the earl of Rothes and others, who were upon the committee of the council, and all the other members of council whom he desired to be cited, were fully examined upon all his interrogatories; and the registers of council were produced; but nothing of a promise was made to appear by either: and is it to be imagined by any man of common sense that they all perjured themselves, or that the registers of the council were vitiated to take the life of such an execrable villain as this fellow was, who died glorying in his crimes, and recommending to others the sweetness of such assassinations?"

THE TRIAL and execution of this true son of the covenant have occasioned the greatest possible amount of presbyterian sympathy, and they attempt to conceal his crime under the cloud of dust which they have raised against his majesty's ministers, and particularly against the primate. Dr. Burns, who has edited Wodrow's History, expresses his horror at a mass of depravity which he says is not to be found in the history of any other European country, but he altogether overlooks the depravity of this "Scots worthy," who was a type of the whole community, and he shews his union of sentiments with him by calling him "poor man,"—"poor Mitchel!" This is, in fact, to say God speed to his murderous purpose, and it is a plain vindication of that article of the covenant which binds its followers to *extirpate* the episcopal order. But he altogether overlooks "the mass of depravity" displayed by this assassin; and many such masses are to be found in the history of his communion during the grand rebellion, as can only be paralleled in atrocity by the events of the French revolution.

THE DEAN of Edinburgh, Mr. Annand, and some other

<sup>1</sup> Sir G. Mackenzie's Works, vol. ii. p. 343.

<sup>2</sup> Note to Wodrow's History, ii. 470.



clergymen, out of compassion for his spiritual delusion, attempted to gain access to him, and to bring him to a more christian state of mind; but he rejected their offers, and reproached them with being the murderers of souls, for which they had to answer. From his obstinate fanaticism, it was deemed prudent to prohibit him from addressing the people assembled to witness his execution; and this having been intimated to him, he prepared several copies of a speech which he intended to have made. In this paper he says,—

“THE shooting that shot intended against the bishop of St. Andrews, whereby the bishop of Orkney was hurt, to which I answered my lord chancellor *in private*, viz. that I looked upon him to be the main instigator of all the oppression and bloodshed of my brethren that followed thereupon, and the continual pursuing after my own: and, my lord chancellor, as it was credibly reported to us (the truth of which your lordship knows better than we), that he kept up his majesty’s letter, inhibiting any more blood to be shed upon that account, until the last ten were executed.”

HAD the chancellor assented to the allegation as a known truth, that the archbishop had really kept up the letter, there cannot be the least doubt but that Mitchel would have been very careful to proclaim it, and Wodrow no less careful to hand it down to posterity. But it is somewhat remarkable that he *suppresses* the chancellor’s answer to this plain appeal; and as he only records the accusation, it is therefore fair to conclude that the chancellor contradicted this most atrocious slander.

“AND I, being a soldier,” he continues, “not having laid down arms, but being still upon my own defence, nor having any other quarrel nor aim at any man, but according to my own apprehension of him; and that as I hope, in sincerity, without fixing either myself or any one upon the *Covenant* itself, and as it may be understood by many thousands of the faithful, besides the prosecution of the *ends* of the same covenant, which *was and is*, in that part, the *overthrow of prelates and prelacy*; and I being a declared enemy of him on that account, and he to me in like manner, so I never found myself obliged, either by the law of God or nature, to set a sentry at his door for his safety: but as he was always ready to take the advantage of me, as it now appeareth, so I of him, when opportunity offered. Moreover, we being in no terms of capitulation, but on the contrary, I by his instigation being excluded from all grace and favour, thought it *my duty* to *pursue him* upon all occasions. . . . Yea, these presumptuously murdering *prelates* ought to be killed by the avenger of



blood" [to wit, every private christian] "when he meeteth them, by the express law of God, seeing the thing is manifestly true, Numb. xxv. 21; and not have liberty to flee to such cities of refuge, as *the vain pretext* of lawful authority; but they should be taken even from the horns of such altars, *and be put to death.*"—"The king himself, and all the estates of the land, and every individual therein, both were and are obliged, by the oath of God upon them, to have, by force of arms, *extirpated perjured prelates, and prelacy*; and in doing thereof, to have defended one another with their lives and fortunes, the *covenants* being engaged unto them, upon these terms, viz. *the extirpation and overthrow of prelates and prelacy*<sup>1</sup>."

IN THE INTERVAL between his sentence and the scaffold, he always spoke of his execution as a martyrdom, and gloried in that of which he ought to have been ashamed and deeply penitent. His fellow covenanters exhorted him to die with courage in the good cause of murder and rebellion, and to seal the covenant with his blood: and they sent threatening letters to the primate to assure him that notwithstanding Mitchel's execution, another should complete his design. The covenanters formed the horrible purpose of revenging Mitchel's execution, not only on the primate, but on the whole bench of bishops; which, to be sure, was consistent with the obligations of the covenant. His attempt to murder the primate was the subject of rude jests among the covenanters, and one of the successors of their principles of the present day defends the conduct of this murderer, and says, "In the case of Mitchel, there was absolutely no proof whatever, except that founded on his *supposed* confession; and the leading men of the nation must perjure themselves in order to bring in the *poor man* guilty." Although the confession of his guilt is called supposititious, yet the conditional promise of life is considered most potential, and it is clung to with the utmost tenacity. In short, they attempt to conceal the atrocious guilt of the principles of the covenant, of which this wretched convict was a true and faithful type, in the outpourings of their venom upon the primate and the lords of council for their alleged perjury.

DR. HICKES says five hundred dollars were contributed to Mitchel, betwixt the period of his condemnation and his execution, by several persons, in order to fulfil that promise, "yet never saw I the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging their bread." And he adds, "within this week, several ladie

<sup>1</sup> Fanatical Moderation, pp. 14—20.





of great quality kept a private fast and a conventicle in this town [Edinburgh], to seek God to bring to nought the councils of men against his people; and before they parted, all subscribed a paper, wherein they covenanted, to the utmost of their power, to engage their lords to assist and protect God's people against the devices (as they call all expedients) that are taken to reduce them to order and obedience. . . . Last night we received information that Sunday was se'nnight, or some day last week, Welsh told a vast congregation of his western disciples, that they should certainly be hanged when the forces came among them; and that therefore it was better to resist and fight the Lord's battles with their swords in their hands, and that thereupon they resolved to rebel; and in order thereto, to rendezvous this day in the stewartry of Galloway<sup>1</sup>. Mitchel died in the odour of spiritual pride, presumption, and fanaticism, with a lie in his right hand, justifying and glorying in his intended murder of the primate. Some fanatical women had formed the design of rescuing him between the prison and the gallows; in consequence, the guards were doubled. His body was interred with great pomp by his fanatical friends and admirers<sup>2</sup>.

THE HIGHLANDERS, with the regular forces, had now rendezvoused at Stirling. The Irish army were cantoned in Belfast and the neighbourhood, and a division of English troops was quartered in Northumberland; a military movement which, while it shewed great foresight and genius in Lauderdale, convinced the insurgent presbyterians of the utter hopelessness of their proposed "fighting of the Lord's battles with their swords in their hands." Here was an overwhelming force ready to meet from three points, against which the fighting church could not make any head; and although Mess John Welsh exercised his spiritual thunders upon the people, yet the prudence of their leaders and their own fears prevented their drawing to a head. It had been determined, however, by the ministers of the covenant, to celebrate an "Occasion" at Glasgow, and preparations had been made for that purpose; but the duke ordered the regular forces to

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, iv. 45-47.

<sup>2</sup> Fanatical Moderation; or Unparalleled Villainy Displayed.—Memoirs of the History of Scotland.—Wodrow's History, with Burns' notes.—MS. Narrative of Mitchel's Trial, in the Writers to the Signet's Library of Edinburgh.—Sir George Mackenzie's Works.—Guthrie's General History, vol. x.—Scots Worthies; Life of Mitchel.—Naphthali; or the Wrestlings of the Church of Scotland for the Kingdom of Christ.—Burnet's Own Times.—Salmon's Examination of Burnet.—Letters from Dr. Hickey to Dr. Patrick, in Ellis's Original Letters illustrative of English History, vol. iv.



March as rapidly as possible to Glasgow, leaving the clans at Stirling, which they entered on Sunday forenoon, the 13th January. This sudden movement prevented the Occasion, and there was in consequence no extraordinary concourse of people with the "sword of the Lord in their hands." The Highlanders followed after the regular troops, and the whole were marched into the disaffected districts. Although those noblemen and county gentlemen who had met at Ayr, as formerly noticed, had represented to government their inability to prevent the meeting of conventicles, yet at the same time they were secretly abetting Welsh, and instigating the people with the promise of their protection, to have recourse to arms, for the double purpose of driving Lauderdale from the ministry and of establishing presbytery. When they saw such formidable preparations made for their suppression, and the impossibility of resisting such a well-planned combination, they became alarmed, and sent nine of their number as a deputation to Edinburgh, in order to cajole and deceive the duke. They represented "the peaceableness of their country, and that albeit the people were indeed addicted to conventicles, and thought they had principle and solid reason for so being, yet this was only in those parishes which were denied the benefit of the indulgence; and that not only in their shire [of Ayr] but likewise in the better part of the kingdom, the same mild course which his majesty had taken with his other kingdoms would certainly prove the most infallible means to put a period to these alleged disorders, which even yet they were not without hope to obtain from the benign disposition of their prince and their lordships' intercession; that, finally, as they were not conscious to themselves of a disloyal thought, so they could not discern the least tendency in the people to disorder or rebellion; and therefore humbly they deprecate that severe procedure of sending among them so inhuman and barbarous a crew<sup>1</sup>."

BUT THE duke knew the principles of the party too well to put any confidence in their assertions; for, like the jesuits, they were not very scrupulous about the means, provided they attained their ends. And it was their maxim, laid down by Naphtali, "that not only no obedience, but no allegiance, is to be given to any created power on earth, but with this restriction, in defence of religion and liberty, *according to the Covenant*;" and what that religion means he explains in another place, where he says, "the *extirpation* of prelacy is the

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 397-8.



*main covenanted duty*, in the endeavour whereof all the zeal of the faithful should be concentrated." They made two assertions in this short representation which were not true; for the indulged ministers itinerated, and held conventicles in places at considerable distances from their own parishes, as well as the "vagrant" ministers did; and the disloyalty of the heritors was conspicuous in refusing to keep the peace on their own properties, and in instigating the ignorant fanatics and their turbulent ministers to rebel, and resist the king's authority by an appeal to arms. The duke would not admit the deputation to an audience, nor hearken to the mediation of others, that the highlanders might be withdrawn, and none but the regular forces be employed on this service. If he had complied with their request, he must have transported the Irish, and marched the English troops into the kingdom; as, from the multitudes of the covenanters, and the dispersion and the trifling numbers of the king's troops, the rebels would have easily overpowered them. They *now* proposed to engage for the peace of the whole county, provided the duke would agree to their proposal, which shows that the *will* only had been before wanting; but had they engaged to do so in the first instance, which they now confess that they were perfectly well able to accomplish, they might have prevented the infliction of the Highland host. The only terms the duke would now grant them, were, that they should sign the bond formerly mentioned, and come under an obligation to oblige the other heritors of the county to do the same. Upon this not unreasonable condition his grace consented to withdraw the highlanders; but to this they declined to consent, and therefore the duke had no other alternative than to place that whole district under martial law; but this was regulated, however, by a committee of the council, furnished with plenary powers.

THE JUDICIOUS arrangements made by the duke of Lauderdale prevented that rising of the western Whigs which had been contemplated, and strongly urged by their preachers; but the heritors now set themselves obstinately to refuse the bond that was demanded of them. In order to procure the removal of the highlanders, they voluntarily offered to do that which they formerly refused to do, under the pretence that they were unable to perform it; but they refused to take that bond, and the highlanders were therefore marched into the disaffected districts, and cantoned throughout them, parties being quartered on the lands of those who refused it. Many, however, now took it, and of course they were relieved from the quartering of soldiers. The committee assembled the sheriffs,





whose office was hereditary, and gave them instructions to disarm the disaffected noblemen and heritors in their several counties, and to pull down the meeting-houses that the itinerant ministers had erected. On the 11th of February the council issued a proclamation to enforce the signing of the bond, in which it is declared—"Forasmuch as we have, for the preservation of the protestant religion as it is now established by the laws, taken care that all unlawful meetings upon pretence of religion may be restrained, by which many of the commons of that our ancient kingdom have been for several years withdrawn from their parish churches, and been thereby deprived of the appointed means for their establishment in the true fear of God, and the duty they owe to us and to our government, and have been seduced to keep *sedition* field conventicles in a tumultuous way, and other *disorderly* meetings, where they may and do actually hear declared traitors, intercommuned and vagrant preachers, and any who, without license or authority, do impiously assume the holy orders of the church, and make it their business to diffuse among the unwary and credulous multitude, *sedition and false doctrines* and pernicious principles, which are destructive to all order and constitution of societies, by which those who frequent those meetings are observed to be corrupted and poisoned with an *open and obstinate contempt of all authority*, civil or ecclesiastic, and to be led into most irregular practices, which are *inconsistent* with all order and government, and are not to be allowed in any protestant or christian church." Then it proceeds to enforce the subscription of a bond similar to that which was given by the county of Fife already mentioned.

THIS BOND was generally refused, and therefore the privy council were driven to the necessity of securing the public peace by demanding what was termed in law *Law-borrows*, which were similar to the process of one man binding another over to keep the peace towards him. An act of council was accordingly made on the 14th of February, which commenced with the truism, "that the greatest part of the disorders of this nation are occasioned by a *sedition and schismatic* humour in some western and other shires, which upon all occasions inflames them into great irregularities, and remembering how, albeit it might have been expected after his majesty's happy restoration, that the fresh remembrance of these insolencies which we suffered under a tyrannic usurpation (drawn upon us by *the same sedition principles* which begin now to revive in those places), would have inclined all his majesty's good subjects to live with great satisfaction quietly under his happy





government, and to believe that the laws made by his majesty and their own representatives were both the true healing remedies of these by-gone distempers and the safest means for preventing the like for the future; yet many in those shires did, by a most remarkable principle of disloyalty, rise in rebellion against their native prince in anno 1666, when he was engaged in a foreign war; and though after beating of their forces his majesty had extended his indemnity even to these rebels, and had so far gratified those shires as to grant them an indulgence, yet they continued still to disturb the peace, and to spread their infection over the neighbouring shires, by assembling themselves in *field conventicles*, these *rendezvous of rebellion*, resetting, maintaining, and hearing intercommuned preachers and declared traitors, who infused in them openly and boldly rebellious and treacherous principles, by invading the persons, usurping the pulpits of the orthodox clergy, threatening, affronting, and injuring both them and such as adhered to them, and by disobeying and deforcing with armed men in a hostile manner, and even wounding and killing such as offered, in his majesty's name, to put his laws in execution; and to let the world see that they were fixedly resolved to adhere to these principles in spite of authority, and that they had settled themselves in a permanent form of government (as they imagined), they did hold sessions, presbyteries, and assemblies, established correspondences, and for perpetuating the schism ordained and granted missions to preachers, built meeting places, and taxed his majesty's subjects for their maintenance: and that they might cut off their proselytes from all dependence upon their native prince, against whose person and government *they railed* upon all occasions, they at last arrived at so great a height of rebellion as to persuade the people that it was unlawful to take the oath of allegiance. . . . And all the courses which have been tried proving ineffectual, his majesty hath just reason to suspect the designs of such as have or shall refuse or delay to take the said bond, as tending to overthrow his majesty's authority, to subvert the established order of the church, and to disquiet the peace of his majesty's good subjects: and since every private subject may force such from whom they fear any harm to secure them by law-borrows, and that it hath been the uncontroverted and legal practice of his majesty's privy council to oblige such, whose peaceableness they justly suspected, to secure the peace for themselves, their wives, bairns, men, tenants, and servants, which are the very words of all such bonds, and that under such penalties as they find suitable to their con-



tempt, guilt, or occasion upon which such sureties are sought, and suitable to the qualities of such from whom caution is craved: therefore the lords, &c. considering that his majesty hath declared his just suspicion of those who refuse or delay to take the said bond in the terms aforesaid: and the said lords being, from the whole series aforesaid, justly suspicious of the practices and principles of such as refuse the same, do ordain, that all such persons *as refuse* the said bond shall be obliged to enact themselves in the books of secret council, that they, their wives, bairns, men, tenants, and servants, shall keep his majesty's peace, and particularly that they shall not go to field conventicles, nor harbour nor commune with rebels, or persons intercommuned; and that they shall keep the persons, families, and goods of their regular ministers harmless, and that under the double of every man's yearly rent (if he have any), and of such other penalties as shall be thought convenient by the lords of his majesty's privy council or their committee, if they have no valued rent, ordaining letters to be direct for charging all such persons as refuse to take the said bond, to enact themselves in the books of privy council to the effect foresaid, and that within six days after the charge, under the pain of rebellion, and putting to the horn; with certification to them, that if they fail, the said space being come and by-past, that they shall be denounced rebels, and put to the horn, for their contempt and disobedience."

IT CAN hardly be imagined to what a lamentable state the principles of the Covenant had reduced society in the south-western division of the kingdom. Those who had such a patriarchal power as could have put down all the conventicles, and confined the disaffected preachers to their own localities, secretly instigated the ministers of the Covenant in their lawless and disorderly conduct. This method of embarrassing the government, by pretending inability to stem the popular movements, made the Covenanters more bold and impudent than they would otherwise have been. These very men, who now secretly abetted the Covenanters, were those who had formerly taken the same course with the fanatics in 1667, when they themselves were privy councillors<sup>1</sup>. And Wodrow himself asserts, that "there is *no question* the heritors *could have*" put down those conventicles, "if they had had freedom to do it, and had not been convinced other methods would be more for the king's interest<sup>2</sup>." It was not therefore the tyranny, or oppression,

<sup>1</sup> True Narrative of the Proceedings of the Council in the Year 1678.

<sup>2</sup> History, ii. 410.



or persecution of the king and his ministers, that brought on these hardships on the disaffected counties; but the intrigues of the heritors, and the rebellious principles of the Covenant and its ministers. And one of their most esteemed authors says, "to engage in bonds to live *peaceably*, is to engage in bonds of *iniquity*: they are covenants of peace with God's enemies, whom we should count our enemies, and hate them because they hate Him. It is more suitable to answer, as Jehu did to Joram, 'What peace, so long as the whoredoms of thy mother Jezebel, and her witchcrafts, are so many?' than to engage to be at peace with those who are carrying on Babylon's interest—the mother of harlots and witchcrafts<sup>1</sup>." But amidst all the turbulence and fanaticism of the presbyterians, the episcopal clergy were exposed to the most horrible persecution, and which they bore with uncomplaining and exemplary patience. The presbyterians "hearing that his majesty was like to be involved in a new foreign war, they again assembled in mighty numbers in October and November, 1677, and *did violently invade the pulpits and persons* of the orthodox clergy, and so threaten all with sudden and great revolutions, and resisted so frequently and insolently such as came to them in his majesty's name, killing some and wounding many, that the privy council thought it necessary to write to the sheriffs of those shires to require an account of their diligence in repressing such disorders<sup>2</sup>." The highlanders that occupied the disaffected counties paid as little reverence to friends as to foes, and the episcopal clergy with their parishioners suffered from their rude and uncivilized conduct in an equal degree with the presbyterians, on whom they were sent as a punishment. The lawless conduct of the clans had a contrary effect to that which was desired; they irritated and still farther inflamed the minds of the disaffected, and therefore the committee which was then sitting at Ayr received an order from the privy council, about the 24th of February, to make the clans evacuate the diocese of Glasgow, and return to their own country. Five hundred of the highlanders remained after their countrymen's retreat; but they were dismissed at the end of April.

THE SUFFERINGS of the episcopal clergy had, however, reached a point when it became necessary to represent their unprotected state to the government. Wodrow and Burnet, ever ready to bring a railing accusation against the bishops and clergy, accused them of having been the prompters and

<sup>1</sup> Hind Let Loose, p. 516.

<sup>2</sup> True Narrative, &c., cited by Wodrow, ii. pp. 443-446.





instigators of the council to bring the late military array into the disaffected districts; and now they allege that it was owing to a written representation from the clergy, that the regular forces and the militia were not removed when the highlanders evacuated their county. Wodrow has it from "a person of very good intelligence," that this business of the "garrisons had its rise from a letter from the regular clergy in the west to the archbishop of Glasgow, wherein they signify that they may come away from their charges as soon as the host comes eastward, if garrisons be not settled<sup>1</sup>." He acknowledges, however, that he had never seen this letter among the public records; but it may be easily gleaned from this brief sentence how precariously the clergy held their lives and property. Their state was very similar to the popish system of parson-shooting in Ireland of the present day. Had they been left unprotected by the military, the pulpits would have been speedily emptied, to make room for more indulged ministers. The archbishop of Glasgow wrote to the different presbyteries in his diocese, desiring them to furnish him with reports of the state of affairs in their several districts; and the following is the return made to his grace by the presbytery of Ayr:—

"MAY IT PLEASE YOUR GRACE,—If we had received your grace's answer to our last letter, [probably this is the letter to which Wodrow refers, but which has not been preserved,] we possibly could have given your grace a better information of affairs than now we can; but, my lord, we thought it our duty to transmit to your grace our humble opinion of several occurrences. 1st. The great and leading men in this county are all gone into Edinburgh, and expect to be sheltered there; therefore it is fit they be severely dealt with, sought after, and forced to obedience; otherwise the commonalty, who *absolutely depend upon them*, will never be brought to conformity. —2d. The indulged ministers must be stinted of their liberty, and some new tie laid upon them, or be absolutely removed; for let the people say what they will, *most of these disorders flow from them*. —3d. That the leading men of this county, now at Edinburgh, be not protected by the council, but taken and sent hither; for the committee think their credit highly concerned in it: if, after they have been at the pains of prosecuting them this length, the council do protect them, it will be a great discouragement to them in their procedure for the future. —4th. The garrisons appointed here are but three, and

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 412.



are too weakly manned, and they are too far from the heart of the shire, and it will be fit two hundred men be left in garrison at Ayr. This is the humble opinion of your grace's most humble and obedient sons in the Lord."

THIS REPORT shews the distressed state of the clergy, and the apprehensions they felt of greater calamities falling upon them, from the state of exasperation which the late excesses of the highlanders had excited in the minds of the presbyterians. About this time his grace the archbishop of Glasgow went up to London to show the king the real state of affairs in his province; and he carried up an address from his diocesan synod to be presented to his majesty. The clergy in this address speak of a memorial to be presented along with the following address; but I have not been able to discover it, and Wodrow has not inserted it in his History. This is to be regretted, as from it the best and most authentic account of the sufferings of the episcopal clergy might have been expected, as well as of the conduct of the indulged and itinerant ministers of the covenant and their followers. Even that mendacious author, who was in heart, though not in habit, a presbyterian, says that even their abettors "confessed there were many conventicles held among them *in a most scandalous manner* . . . . these conventicling people were become very giddy and *furious*; and some *hot and hair-brained* young preachers had the chief following among them, *who infused wild principles* in them, which were disowned by the chief men of the party<sup>1</sup>."

"MAY IT PLEASE YOUR SACRED MAJESTY,—The danger this church is exposed unto in the present circumstances, which are such as threaten the dissolution thereof, hath necessitated us, in the discharge of our duty, to desire the lord archbishop of Glasgow humbly to address your royal presence, and to offer unto your princely consideration how inconsistent the violent and irregular courses of those who *rent the church* (and *persecute us*, for no other reason but that of our absolute and entire dependence on your majesty's authority), and with the rights and interests of your majesty's crown and government, as well as with the safety of your people, and the reverence unto religion; for no other end, but that your majesty's authority may be vindicated and rescued from the persecution of the open disturbers of the church and their abettors, who, for their own ends, endeavour to constrain the people, *and to debauch them equally from their loyalty as their religion*, as your majesty

<sup>1</sup> Own Times ii. 135.



will more fully perceive, by a memorial to be offered to your majesty at your conveniency, herewith sent <sup>1</sup>."

TO AVOID entering into the bond or to sign the law-borrows, the duke of Hamilton, with some of the nobility and gentry, disobeyed the proclamation against leaving the kingdom, and went to London, to represent the other side of the picture, thinking this a favourable opportunity to drive the duke of Lauderdale from his majesty's councils. The king refused to see them, because they had left the kingdom in contempt of the prohibition; but he admitted the earls of Athol and Perth, that had seceded from Lauderdale, who represented to the king that the prohibition to their leaving Scotland was one of their chief grievances. Such proclamations, they said, were anciently both legal and political when the king resided in the kingdom; but now that he altogether resided in another realm, it must be held illegal and oppressive to debar his hereditary counsellors from access to him either to offer advice or to tender complaints. The duke of Hamilton and his friends were heard before the cabinet council, and the duke of Lauderdale was powerfully defended by the duke of York, and the earl of Danby, one of his majesty's most faithful ministers; but the opposition lords took nothing by their journey, and the matter fell to the ground <sup>2</sup>.

ON THE 6th of March the council sent a despatch to the king containing an account of all the proceedings in the disaffected districts. And to counteract the representation of the Hamilton party, the council sent up the earl of Moray, whom Dr. Hickee pronounces "a good churchman," and the lord Collington, to give that information orally which could not be so easily conveyed by letter. The former nobleman had been constantly present in the western committee, and the latter in all the meetings and committees of the council in the capital, and were therefore competent to give full information. On the 26th of March, the king wrote to his privy council approving of all their proceedings in the late attempted rebellion, and thanking them "very heartily for their careful prosecution" and suppression of field conventicles, "which we, as well as our laws, think the rendezvouses of rebellion, and the refusing [of the heritors] to suppress them did justly oblige you to look upon these shires as in a state of rebellion. . . . We approve, likewise, of that Bond presented to our subjects, in which, after serious perusal, we see no cause of discontent to any who resolve to live peaceably, and for subscribing whereof

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 412.

<sup>2</sup> Burnet's Own Times, ii. 139-41.





we are very well satisfied with our judicatories ; and since all our judges, and learned lawyers of that kingdom, have subscribed the same, we must ; and our people should see, that such as call it illegal, do so merely from the principles of faction and humour. . . . And for encouragement of all such as serve us, we declare that this our approbation shall have the force of an ample and absolute indemnity and letter of thanks, to all any ways concerned in that expedition, either in council, committee, or execution, we having very good reason to consider the same as our special and necessary service." After some correspondence betwixt the earl of Cassillis and the privy council, which was submitted to the king, he directed his council to relieve the western nobility and gentry of the law-borrows, and they were accordingly withdrawn in the month of May, and were never again inflicted on the subjects. "In all these transactions," says Hume, "and in most others which passed during the present reign, we still find the moderating hand of the king interposed to protect the Scots from the oppressions which their own countrymen, employed in the ministry, were desirous of exercising over them<sup>1</sup>."

THE MARQUIS OF ATHOL and the earl of Perth, from having been churchmen and regular supporters of Lauderdale's government, now turned open patrons of the conventicles, and which had most likely been occasioned by their joining the ranks of the opposition, and from their disappointment at not being able to overturn the duke's government. They had also entered into those secret cabals which were common in the presbyterian districts, and under their auspices conventicles began to appear in the county of Perth, as we learn from the following letter from the lord bishop of Galloway to the lord register :—

"MY LORD,—Since my return from the north, I am surprised to hear of the great and insolent field conventicles in Perthshire, it being as much influenced by the marquis of Athol's example, as directed by his authority. There is, besides many others, a constant field conventicle now settled in the confines of some parishes in Methven, Gask, Tippermuir, and another, where it is marvelled, that many observe several shoals of highlanders in their trews, and many bare-legged, flocking thither to propagate the mischief of the 'good old Cause.' It is to good men no small discouragement, that a shire under the influence and conduct of the marquis of Athol

<sup>1</sup> History of England, vii. 440. Edit. 1789.





and the earl of Perth, who say they are true sons of the church, should (being formerly orderly and obedient to the laws) become so turbulent and schismatical; especially since the marquis is sheriff-principal, and that one altogether devoted to his lordship is sheriff-depute of that shire, in whose hands is placed the power to punish and suppress these disorders. I write this, being informed of the state of the shire by a most serious, godly, and knowing minister, that my lord M. may know it, and the rather that it comes from such a minister as is a great honour to his noble family. Many questions are hereupon proposed, which I am not able to answer, (as I gladly would), which insinuate all the blame of these disorders and disturbances to be upon the marquis and the earl aforesaid, but especially upon the former, such as—1st. How comes this change on a sudden, that the most orderly and obedient shire should become so irregular and turbulent? 2. Whence is it that the marquis of Athol and earl of Perth, so long as they kept friendship with the duke of Lauderdale, and consequently clave to their duty to the king, that shire, under their power and influence, continued in order and obedience; and now since they parted from his grace, that it has fallen into these disorders, which are so destructive to monarchy as well as to religion and the church? 3. Whether there be not a deeper design in corrupting Perthshire than many are aware of, that shire being the key to open the door to all manner of mutinies and disorders into the northern parts of Scotland, which is yet almost *untainted*, yea, and unacquainted with these ill humours and disorders that infect and threaten the peace of the kingdom? 4. Whether this discontented party have not so far prevailed upon the marquis of Athol and the earl of Perth, as to engage their lordships to give way to these outbreaks and insolencies, to suffer the other half of the kingdom (which is yet entire) almost to be embroiled and debauched: thereby their lordships may in the issue be as much endangered as the king and kingdom. 5. Whether all those pretences can in any tolerable sense be reconciled to the principles of these noble persons, who profess not only a kindness to our poor desolate church, to repair the ruins thereof, but a zeal for the famous and well composed church of England; or if these professions be not industriously made, the more effectually, under trust, to ruin the interest of the protestant religion in both churches. For my part I am not able to answer these shrewd questions, when put to it. My good lord, I freely allow your lordship to show my lord marquis this letter, and show him I have so much zeal for the king's service, the interest of religion and the



church, and so much honour for his lordship, that I could not conceal this from him, nor from your lordship, who, I know, wishes both his person and family both honour and happiness, he keeping his duty to his prince, and his prince's faithful ministers: yea, the rather I do it now, that by the same honest minister I learn, that the fanatic people openly say in that shire, that they expect connivance from the marquis of Athol and the earl of Perth; and that Mr. Henry Murray, when charged with neglect in not punishing these disorders, invidiously blamed the privy council, who, I am sure, never denied assistance and encouragement to sheriff-principal or deputes for suppressing of these mad disorders. I beg pardon for this long letter, which my zeal for the church hath drawn from me, to which I add nothing, but that I am, my lord, yours, &c.,

“JOHN GALLOVIDIENSIS.”



## CHAPTER XXXVII.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP.

1678.—Law-borrows suspended.—Council's letter to the king.—Conventicling recommences.—sConventicle near the Bass—one at Cathcart.—Convicts allowed to escape.—Learmont's execution.—Convention of estates.—More forces re-embodied.—A cess.—Conventicle at Maybole.—Conventicles in Perthshire—at Methven.—Mrs. Smythe's letter to her husband.—A schism among the presbyterians.—Kingsland.—A meeting of ministers.—Assaults on the indulged ministers.—A day of fasting.—Remarks.—Creed of Trent.—Confession of Westminster—whence the pope derives his supremacy—and whence the presbyterians derive theirs.—Obligations of the covenant.—Bishop Burnet.—Duke of Lauderdale.—The Highland host.

1678.—SIR JOHN CUNNINGHAM and sir George Lockhart went up to London, to assist the opposition lords who were already there, and the king was persuaded to write to the Scottish privy council on the 19th of April, stating that his majesty "had considered some representations made by some of his subjects anent the late methods with the west country, with the answers made thereunto, and replies, which so fortified the representations, that he resolved to hear and consider things fully;" and in the meantime he commanded the council to suspend the bond and law-borrows till his majesty's further pleasure; and also directed all the forces except the guards to be disbanded. Thus, by the misrepresentation of the opposition, all the benefit that had accrued from the late vigorous measures was overturned at once; and the covenants being left without any efficient military check, immediately renewed their turbulence, and the field conventicles became as common and numerous as before. The council now became alarmed for the peace of the kingdom, and despatched sir George Mackenzie, the lord advocate, to London, with a letter to the earl of Moray and lord Collington, to excite them to greater diligence in counterworking the insidious advice of Hamilton and his party. They said: "You know how much all were inclined to give the council ready obedience till these noblemen interested themselves in this fanatical quarrel; how ready all were to concur in assisting his majesty





both with their own tenants and with the militia; and, which is very remarkable, how ready the gentry and heritors in every shire were to rise, betwixt sixty and sixteen; which, in showing how all ways were taken and owned for assisting the royal authority, did strike a just terror in all those who were refractory. Whereas now the number and humorousness of those who are gone up, has done all they could to shake loose all the foundations of authority here, to such a height as *will soon grow above correction* if it be not speedily, vigorously, and openly adverted to by his majesty." The underhand encouragement which these opposition lords gave the ministers and the fanatics counteracted all the efforts of the government to suppress that spirit of revolt and subordination which Mess John Welsh and others of his fraternity taught in their sermons. The disbanding the army was the worst expedient, in the present posture of affairs, that could have been devised; and it led to the insurrection that broke out in the spring of the following year.

No sooner had the regular forces been disbanded than the conventicles began to meet as formerly. On the 14th May, one, very numerous, attended, was held in the parish of Cathcart and county of Renfrew, only a few miles from Glasgow: a party of the horse-guards were sent to disperse them: a good many of the citizens of Glasgow were captured, but the ministers made their escape. The bond was tendered to the prisoners, some of whom took it, and were immediately set at liberty; but those who refused to sign it were sent to Edinburgh for trial. Those who refused to inform the council of the ministers' names, or the names of any of the parties who were present, and likewise for refusing the bond, were banished to Virginia. When they with some others arrived at Gravesend, they were removed from the vessel that brought them from Leith into another vessel; but the commander was bribed by the dissenters in London, and encouraged by lord Shaftesbury, "who was always friendly to the presbyterians," and they were all put ashore at Gravesend, and allowed to escape without any bond or imposition whatever<sup>1</sup>. The country [people] were very kind to them, when they knew the cause of their sufferings, and they generally got home safe, after they had been absent from their homes about nine months<sup>2</sup>.

ANOTHER and more formidable conventicle assembled in East Lothian, opposite to the state prison of the Bass; the

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies; Life of Alexander Peden, p. 412.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 475-76.



lieutenant-governor of which sent an ensign and the insignificant force of forty foot soldiers to disperse them. Infantry can never act well against mobs; but it is a great mistake to send a small force against a multitude, as they are tempted to make resistance, and occasion bloodshed, whereas an overwhelming force renders resistance impracticable, and therefore is really the most merciful procedure, by preventing bloodshed. In the present case the people came armed to the meeting, and seeing such a paltry force, they attacked the soldiers, and one of them, John Hogg, was killed by a shot, and the others were wounded by swords and halberts, and the whole party were disarmed. For this murder, and the assault upon his majesty's troops, one James Learmont was tried and found guilty, and sentenced to be hanged; and Wm. Temple, another person who was very active on this occasion, was sentenced to be transported<sup>1</sup>. On the scaffold, Learmont compared himself, and the other sufferers in the same cause, to the souls of those saints whom St. John saw under the altar, that were slain for the word of God and for their testimony<sup>2</sup>; and in their words he asked, how long it would be before the righteous Lord would avenge the blood of the Covenanters. And he said, "I declare my blood lieth at the bishop of St. Andrew's door, to stand against him; for since I received this sentence of death it hath frequently been brought to my ears that he pressed the king's advocate to take my life, although he needed not for want of malice<sup>3</sup>."

WHILST the duke of Lauderdale was placed in an attitude of defence by the advice given to the king by the opposition, and by their means some of his plans for the pacification of the kingdom were counteracted, he had the address to gain the king's consent for the assembling of a convention of the estates in June. The king, therefore, wrote to the privy council on the 7th of May, authorising them to issue out writs for a convention; and he says, "finding, by good information, that the fanatics there, expecting encouragement from such as oppose you, and taking advantage of the present juncture of affairs *here* [the popish plot], have of late, with great insolence, flocked together in open and field conventicles, these rendezvous of rebellion, and have dared to oppose our forces. Though we neither need nor do fear such insolent attempts, yet, from a just care of our authority, and kindness to our subjects there, we have thought fit to order some more forces to be levied; and for that effect we have commanded the lords of our Trea-

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, ii. 476-80.    <sup>2</sup> Revelations, vi. 9, 10.    <sup>3</sup> Naphtali, Appendix, 18.



sure to take an effectual course for providing what money we shall find necessary, for raising and maintaining these troops at our charges."

THE RESULT of the Hamilton party's advice was the increase and audacity of the field conventicles, which shewed the sagacity of Lauderdale's policy, and compelled the government to re-embody more forces almost immediately after having disbanded the former body of troops. Besides, the covenanting chiefs and ministers had entered into secret correspondence with the English conspirators, who were at that time forming treasonable combinations and plots. The duke of Lauderdale was appointed high commissioner; and on the 26th of June the convention sat down. One regiment of infantry, and a few squadrons of cavalry, were voted, and a cess of £1800,000 Scots was imposed for their pay and equipments, to be paid in five years; but this sum, when turned into sterling money, only amounted to £150,000. It is acknowledged in the act, that the troops were designed for the suppression of field conventicles, which are here truly designated "rendezvouses of rebellion," that "*do still grow* in their numbers and insolences." With singular and wicked ingenuity, Wodrow contrives to ascribe the raising of this small body of troops, and the imposition of the cess, entirely to the tyranny and cruelty of the bishops: "their friends," he says, "are provided for in the army." How few their friends must have been, if one regiment and a few troops of cavalry could contain them, unless, indeed, they served as privates in the ranks, "presbyterians are first divided, and then borne down by the soldiers; and by the severities of this new army *they are forced to a RISING next year*<sup>1</sup>." But this cess was another source of division among the presbyterians, and an alleged cause of persecution; "it divided those who were *already disjointed*, and the debates upon the lawfulness or unlawfulness of paying the cess here imposed were not few." The jesuitical niceties and hair-splitting distinctions that were advanced for and against paying this tax, would do honour to Loyola himself:—"Some were upon both sides of this debate, and the heats and heights among ministers, preachers, and people, were not small." That most malicious and evil-disposed nest of traitors who had sheltered themselves in Holland "were warmly against paying this assessment; and such ministers here, who were of the same sentiments, preached *against* the paying of it, and some of the hearers violently

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 489, 490.





pressed ministers to preach against it, whilst those of the other side asked how they would keep it, and much more, out of the soldiers' hands." They were all, however, obliged to pay it, but not without lifting up their testimony against it. In the clamour raised against this cess, the episcopalians of the established church are entirely left out of the question; presbyterians could not sympathise with their being burthened with a tax rendered necessary by the turbulent and unruly principles of the Covenant. The established church submitted to every ordinance of the government with the dutiful obedience of christian men and loyal subjects; whereas the presbyterians first gave occasion for the severe measures of government, and then raised a clamour, which has been re-echoed by their successors to this day against the bishops and clergy of the established church, who suffered every indignity and persecution at the hands of these disobedient "angels" of the Covenant.

THE FIELD conventicles still increased in the presbyterian districts; and in the month of August a great many were summoned before the council for this breach of the law; but they obstinately refused to depone who were present, or to what transactions took place. Some were fined, and others sentenced to be transported to the colonies. At the muir of Granholm, near Maybole, in Ayrshire, there was a very numerous conventicle held on the 4th of August, to which the men went fully armed, and marched in formed troops and companies, and thus were drilled for the rebellion that broke out next year. To prevent conventicles in life, a detachment of the guards were quartered in Cupar. The folly of placing indulged presbyterian ministers in the vacant parishes was now seen and appreciated, and therefore the council sent a peremptory order to the marquis of Douglass to present a regular orthodox clergyman to the parish of Douglass, which was then vacant.

THE COUNTENANCE which the covenanters received from the Whig lords, and the disbanding of the troops, were great encouragements to the covenanters, who now convened in all parts of the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway, and even in other places that had formerly been uninfected by that delusion. In consequence of the quartering of the Highland Host in that country, the two noblemen already mentioned, and many of their people, were perverted from the paths of loyalty and true religion to hold conventicles in Perthshire, which hitherto had been uninfected. One of these "rendezvouses of rebellion" was held on the hill of Coltenachar, in the parish of Forgoudenny, in the county of Perth and diocese of Dunkeld.





This conventicle was dispersed by a party of highlanders, who, upon resistance being offered, fired upon them, when one man was unfortunately killed, and who left a widow and four orphans to lament his folly. This attack and dispersion is considered by Wodrow to be much aggravated by its performance on the Lord's day; but it never occurs to him to pull the beam out of his own eye first; for had they not assembled on that sacred day, to break the statute laws of the land, the military would not have been engaged on any such service. As he considered this a great breach of the fourth commandment, it is certain that his friends must be the most criminal, in having *caused* the breach<sup>1</sup>.

IN OCTOBER another attempt was made to hold conventicles in the parish of Methven, near to Perth, and in the diocese of St. Andrews. Mr. Patrick Smythe, the proprietor of the lands, was at that time in London, but in his absence his lady maintained his baronial rights and patriarchal authority over his vassals and tenants; and she shewed that the bond which had been considered so oppressive in the south was in reality no hardship to those who were loyally, religiously, and peaceably disposed. One of these conventicles met not far from the mansion-house, on Sunday, the 13th of October; but Mrs. Smythe, at the head of her tenantry, drove them off her husband's estate. Her own despatch to Mr. Smythe, her "heart-keeper," gives a better and more graphic account of this exploit than any abbreviation could do, and she seems to have possessed not only courage, but military skill. The spelling only is modernised. It is addressed, "for my Heart-Keeper:"—

"MY PRECIOUS LOVE,—A multitude of men and women from east, west, and south, came, the 13th day of this October, to hold a field conventicle two bows' draft above our church; they had their tent set up before the sun on your ground. I, seeing them flocking to it, sent through your ground, and charged them to repair to your brother David, the baillie and me, to the Castle-hill, where we had but sixty armed men. Your brother with drawn sword and bent pistol, I with the light-horseman's piece bent on my left arm, and a drawn tuck in my right hand, all your servants well armed, marched forward, and kept the one half of them fronting with the other, that were guarding their minister, and their tent, which is their standard. That rear party that we yoked with, most of them were St. Johnston's [Perth] people; most of them had no will

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, vol. ii. p. 484.



to be known, but rode off to see what we would do. They marched towards Baslie, we marched by west of them, and gained ground before they could gather in a body. They sent off a party of one hundred men to see what we meant by hindering them to meet; we told them, if they would not go from the parish of Methven presently, it should be a bloody day; for I protested, and your brother, before God, we would ware our lives upon them before they should preach in our regality or parish. They said they would preach. We charged to fight or flee. They drew to a council among themselves what to do; at last, about two hours in the afternoon, they would go away, if we would let the body that was above the church, with the tent, march freely after them; we were content, knowing they were ten times as many as we were, and our advantage was keeping the one half a mile from the other, by marching in order betwixt them. They seeing we were desperate, marched over the Pow; and so we went to the church, and heard a feared minister preach. They have sworn not to stand with such an affront, but are resolved to come the next Lord's-day; and I, in the Lord's strength, intend to accost them with all that will come to assist us. I have caused your officer warn a solemn court of vassals, tenants, and all within our power, to meet on Thursday, when I intend, if God will, to be present, and there to order them in God and our king's name, to convene well armed to the kirk-yard, on Sabbath morning, by eight o'clock, when your brother and I, with all our servant men and others we can make, shall march to them, and, if the God of Heaven will, they shall either fight or go out of our parish; but, alas! there is no parish about us will do the like, which discourages our poor handful; yet, if the heritors of the parish be loyal and stout, we will make five hundred men and boys that may carry arms. I have written to your nephew, the treasurer of Edinburgh, to send me two brass hagbutts of found, and that with the bearer. If they come against Saturday, I will have them with us. My love, present my humble duty to my lord marquis (of Montrose) and my lady, likewise all your friends; and, my blessed love, comfort yourself in this, if the fanatics chance to kill me, it shall not be for nought. I was wounded for our gracious king, and now in the strength of the Lord God of Heaven I'll hazard my person with the men I may command before these rebels rest where ye have power: sore I miss you, but now more as ever.

“ON MONDAY the 14th, your brother, the baillic, and I, rode into the town, and I called on the provost, who came to lady Margaret Hays to me. I told him how matters went the day



before with us. He promises to cause guard the ports [gates] Saturday and Sunday next, to keep in the rabble of rebels. The sheriff was away to Edinburgh, else I had spoke to him that he would charge Balgowan and Tippermallo to cause their men assist us. More of this you will hear the next week. This is the first opposition that they have encountered, so as to force them to fly out of a parish; God grant it be good hansom: there would be no fear of it if we were all steel to the back. My precious, I am so transported with zeal to beat the Whigs, that I almost forgot to tell you my lord marquis of Montrose hath two virtuous ladies to his sisters, and it is one of the loveliest sights in Scotland, their nunnery. I see many young gentlewomen there helping them to close a very fine piece of sowing. Our honest bishop Lindsay is lying sick of the gout in his knees, and down to his foot; he was heartily remembered to you. So is all I meet with. I wrote to you formerly to expect me up, if you would not come; now I have engaged with the conventicles, from whom I will not fly. I know ye will allow me to do what I am able to suppress them; I'll do good will, God give the blessing, is the prayer of your, &c.

"ANNE KEITH."

"Methven Wood, 15th inst. 1678."

IN A SUBSEQUENT letter, Mrs. Smythe, who, according to the Scottish fashion, signs by her maiden name, complains to her "heart-keeper" that "it was a grievous matter we dare not draw their blood, yet must disperse them; how should that be, if they come well armed to fight? The acts against them are *for and against*;—*riddles* indeed, not easily understood. My love, if every parish were armed, and the stout loyal heads joining, with orders to concur, and *liberty to suppress them* as enemies to our king and the nation, these raging gypsies would settle." Here, then, we see the policy of the times. Laws were made against these "raging gypsies," which were neither intended nor allowed to be put in execution. The loyal gentry were commanded to subdue the covenanters by force of arms, but yet were prohibited from "drawing their blood." And as her ladyship well remarks, how could that be avoided, when the fanatical whigs appeared in the field better armed and in greater strength than their opponents. But the continual agitation in which conventicles kept the nation, answered the political views of some of the great men of the day, and the fugitives in Holland kept up that excitement which had its consummation in the total subversion of the national





church, and the rabbling and persecution of the clergy, at and after the Revolution.

TOWARDS the end of this year a great schism broke out among the presbyterians, which their own authors ascribe to the cess imposed by the last convention of estates; but which, in truth, was the effect of their principles and government. The young ministers and probationers of the covenant would not be restrained by the older ministers, and very justly, for upon their principle of parity one minister has an equal power and authority with another, and each being on an equality with another, it is unreasonable to expect that one will obey an equal when he assumes an authority to which, by their own principles, he can lay no claim. A correspondent of Wodrow says, "the gospel was for some years generally preached in the fields through the south of Scotland, and that with success; God was unquestionably at work upon the hearts of the people by the ministry of the Word, both in the fields and in the churches of the indulged, and that both in conversion and edification; and no doubt Satan was busy sowing his tares, *the seeds of dissension and division*, which afterwards sprung up. Albeit, even from the very first, not a few of the judicious had their own doubts as to the Indulgence, some thinking their way to be a little *too submissive and pliable* to such usurpations and encroachments as were daily making; others judged that they should have accepted no favour from declared enemies, but what was generally extended to their brethren in the same circumstances with them; others smelled much cunning and craft in the design, and feared the event<sup>1</sup>." Here, then, we have a genuine avowal of their principles, which was *resistance* to all lawful authority, and a determination to accept of no favour, but to claim every thing as a right due to them; but, in fact, like their prototypes, the papists, nothing short of *supremacy* would satisfy them. One of their most esteemed authors says—"Our first reformers never resigned nor abandoned *that first and most noble privilege of resistance*<sup>2</sup>." He proceeds to say, "about this time the zeal and love of many being revived by the preaching of the Word, and a considerable accession of great numbers of young people, brought in by the gospel, whose zeal and fervour, generally speaking, runs high, the genius of the people seemed to me to be quite altered, and, from a fearful and discouraged temper, to turn to a high sanguine constitution: no strength of the enemy was then thought

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 497.

<sup>2</sup> Hind Let Loose, p. 24.



upon, nor danger was regarded, and little else among some was matter of thought and conversation, but projects of disappointing our enemies' designs against us. The *zeal and good success* of our first reformers, and our more immediate predecessors, in the year 1638, was a *pleasant subject of discourse, and much admired*." This is the witchcraft of rebellion; it is never repented of, but is gloried in, made pleasant subjects of discourse, and *copied*; and so the sin becomes perpetuated, and "worse than the sin of witchcraft," which in Scripture is reckoned one of the damnable sins. On the subject of the cess, Mr. Shiels says, "The paying of subsidies to the present government is to furnish that party of the dragon's legions in their war against prince Michael *and his angels* with supplies, which no mortal force can excuse, no more than it can do the shedding of the blood of their innocent children, or sacrificing them to Moloch . . . and in evidence of their opposition to Christ; and in recognition of Satan's sovereignty, and their subjection, they are appointed to pay these black-mails<sup>1</sup> [taxes].

THE INDULGED ministers were as much the objects of hatred and misrepresentation to the "vagrant" Mess Johns as were the established episcopal clergy; accordingly, one Kingsland formed a party among the itinerants to bring the indulged ministers into odium and contempt in their own regular congregations. Cameron, Kidd, Hogg, and Dickson, were leaders in this divisive band, and they were commonly called "Kingsland's curates." This fact is communicated by bishop Paterson, of Galloway, in a letter of the 26th of October, to archbishop Sharp, in which he endeavours to convince the primate of the impolicy of granting any further indulgence to the fanatical party of the presbyterians<sup>2</sup>. This division is also admitted by Wodrow's correspondent, who says, "It may also be remarked, that many of the most wise, aged, and experienced of the ministry, were taken off the field, some by the indulgence, some by age and infirmity, and others by keeping themselves quiet in towns, preaching very seldom and very quietly to some persons of note; so that the preaching of the gospel in the fields, which was at this time mostly in repute, was followed with the greatest numbers, and most zealous of our way, fell, generally speaking, to the weakest, and most inexperienced of the ministry: and it was observable that where old and experienced ministers did frequently preach in the fields, either in their

<sup>1</sup> Hind Let Loose, p. 712.

<sup>2</sup> MS. Papers in the Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, No. B. 45.



own charges or elsewhere, there our breaches were not so wide, nor did people run to such great heights; whereas the younger and less experienced ministers, not being aware of the *evil of division*, and therefore not so careful to avoid the first causes of it, did either moth-eat, or too much suffer to be moth-eaten by the vulgar, the reputation of such who did not follow their way, by putting hard constructions upon their actions in ordinary conversation, and did not know how to cultivate the minds of a good and zealous, though young and *weak* people; yea, some might too much cherish some *frothy professors*, not duly considering the difference betwixt a proselyte to a party and a true christian. . . . Likewise at this time many other papers were reprinted and carefully spread, such as Mr. Douglas's coronation sermon [which was so seditious as deterred that gentleman from accepting a bishoprick], and the oaths the king took [much against his will], 'the Causes of God's Wrath,' 'Gillespie upon associations with his dying testimony;' and these [seditious books], with other concurring circumstances, blew our smoke to a flame."

AT THE SAME time the preaching of Kingsland's curates against the indulged ministers helped to widen the breach; and some began to consider the famous itinerant preacher Welsh to be an Achan in their camp; and their jarings and quarrels ran so high that many of their followers became disgusted with their intemperate zeal, and left off following them, and returned quietly to their parish churches. Both the indulged and the itinerant ministers took the alarm at the success of Kingsland's curates, and at the wild imprudence of the probationers, and "judged it high time to essay some remedy." A number of both sorts, therefore, assembled in Edinburgh, "where they had well-attested informations of the excesses to which these young men had run in their discourses to the people." They conversed with two of these fiery youths, but upon whose excited tempers they made no impression, and a third refused to hold any converse with them, nor submit to their admonitions. This is only the natural consequence of the presbyterian system; and instead of quenching the flame, this meeting, and its abortive attempt at discipline, only added fuel to the fire that was fiercely burning, and "the heats continued, yea, rose to greater heights, as we shall hear." There was another meeting in September on the same subject in the west country; but here again the turbulence and fiery zeal of the probationers and young ministers set the authority of their seniors at defiance. Now they were beginning to feel the effects of their own division and separation from the church; for division and





schism having been their crime, these sins had now become their punishment, and one of them exclaims—"what shall we run to at last, if such manifest and *scandalous schisms* be not early prevented!" The fiery youths of the covenant now began to disturb the meetings of their elder brethren, and one of them, supported by a man named Hamilton, and some armed men, entered the meeting of Mr. Selkirk, the indulged minister of Monkland, near Glasgow, forcibly ejected him from his pulpit, and preached a most inflammatory sermon against the indulged ministers, and those who advocated sobriety and peace<sup>1</sup>. Thus was retribution coming round upon these men, who were now preaching up soberness, but who had formerly been active in their persecution of the episcopal clergy, and who only saw the evil effects of such disorderly conduct and of division when they themselves became the sufferers.

THE COUNCIL ordered by proclamation a day of fasting and humiliation to be observed by the established church, on Wednesday, the 18th of December, on account of the popish plot which was discovered in England this year, that his majesty's person and government might be preserved from such imminent danger as then hung over him from that restless, intolerant, and ambitious party. The council also wrote a congratulatory letter to the king, expressing their horror, indignation, and profound amazement, at "that execrable and hellish plot against his majesty's most sacred person." They assure his majesty that the ramifications of the plot, as far as they had been able to discover, did not extend to Scotland: in fact, his Scottish subjects had their hands full with plots of their own: but there is little doubt but that their divisions and outbreaks were fomented by secret emissaries from the jesuits, who were more actively engaged in England. The discovery of this "execrable and impious conspiracy" set the council on looking after the papists in Scotland, and a number of them were arrested by the earl of Moray, when a committee of the council was appointed to examine them and their papers. Strict search was made in Edinburgh for priests, and their meetings for the celebration of mass; and the priests were, if caught, to be imprisoned. The bishop of Galloway was introduced and sworn a member of his majesty's privy council.

AS THE CHURCHES in the Roman obedience have by their own act excommunicated themselves from the church catholic, by the adoption and imposition of a new and heretical creed, so the Scottish presbyterians have likewise cut themselves off

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, ii. 499-501.





from the universal church by their adoption of the Westminster Confession of Faith, and the Solemn League and Covenant, and by their forcing the latter as a term of communion wherever they have the power. The family likeness betwixt the mother of harlots and her child is striking, and they both come under the judgment of the Council of Ephesus, A.D. 431, which was confirmed by the Council of Chalcedon in the year 451, which councils have been received by all the particular churches in christendom ; whose decree was,—“ The holy synod determined that it should not be lawful for any one to set forth, write, or compose, *any other creed* than that which was determined by the holy fathers who assembled in the Holy Ghost at Nice : and that if any *shall dare to compose* any other creed, or adduce or present it to those who are willing to be converted to the knowledge of the truth, whether from heathenism, judaism, or any heresy whatsoever, such persons, if bishops, *shall be deprived* of the episcopal office ; if clergy, of the clerical<sup>1</sup>.” The mother *added* twelve articles to the creed of the whole church, and so established image worship, transubstantiation, and a reiteration of the personal sacrifice of Christ, which is declared in Scripture to have been *once* only offered ; the daughter has cast away the ancient creed of the church altogether, and substituted the Westminster Confession of Faith, which consigns all men to eternal flames except the members of the kirk of Scotland, who alone being the members of the catholic church, as they affirm, can alone be saved. Both these communions have broken the canon made by one general council, and confirmed by another, and therefore the bishops and clergy of the one and the ministers of the other have incurred the penalty of deposition decreed by these holy synods. Vincentius Lirenensis compares the ancient creed, as to its parts, to the limbs and members of a *child’s* body ; which, although they increase and grow to the stature of a *man*, yet they remain the same limbs and members, without either addition or change. Both the Trent and the Westminster assemblies imposed new articles of belief that never grew out of the “limbs and members” of the ancient creed, but differ entirely from it. The advocates for the doctrines contained in the popish and presbyterian creeds can neither show that they are ancient orthodox doctrines, that have been generally received and revered by antiquity, nor that they possess Vincentius’s three marks of catholicity—*antiquity, universality, and consent*. The new doctrines which each have superadded to the christian

<sup>1</sup> Perceval’s Roman Schism, pp. 33, 37.



faith are not to be found in the Apostles' Creed, nor by just inference can they be deduced from it; yet both the Trent and the Westminster assemblies declared their own superadded creeds to be the true catholic faith, and without the profession of which there is no ordinary possibility of salvation. Both these communions also have their own oaths for the destruction of the catholic church; the Roman bishop takes a solemn oath on entering to his office,—“heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our said lord [the pope], or his aforesaid successors, I will to my power *persecute* and oppose;” and the presbyterian minister by the Solemn League and Covenant swears to “endeavour the *extirpation of prelacy*.”

THE AIM of both these communions is *supremacy*. The Romanists deduce their divine right to supremacy over the civil power from 16th verse of the first chapter of Genesis, where it is written, “And God made two great lights, the *greater* light [the sun] to rule the day; and the *lesser* light [the moon] to rule the night.” Their most esteemed writers, Bellarmine and others, explain this passage to mean, that the greater light, or the sun, typified the pope; and the lesser light, or the moon, represented the emperor and all other sovereign princes. And hence, as the sun was the supreme ruler, not only of the day, but also, by reflection, of the moon, so the pope is the supreme ruler not only in the church but in the state also, and over the sovereign of every country. The presbyterians contended that the king was only entitled to govern *in subordination* to the covenant and to Christ's crown and kingdom, which meant the commission of the kirk; and this they founded upon the nature of the Jewish constitution, which was a theocracy or divine government, through the official instrumentality of the high priest, who was empowered to declare the will of God to the civil magistrate. “The crowning of king Jesus,”—“Christ's crown and kingdom,”—“His crown and dignity,”—and such like expressions, meant nothing less than a supremacy of the commission of the kirk, or of a few of its leading ministers, similar to the authority which the pope formerly exercised and still claims over crowned heads. The pope calls himself the vicar of Christ upon earth, in things temporal and spiritual; and the presbyterians declare that they are infallibly possessed of the “mind of Christ,” which renders them incapable of erring in directing the affairs of church or state. And, says Shiels, “In the covenants we are not bound, *but only conditionally*, to maintain the king's person and authority; that is, only that he should be a loyal *subject* to Christ [which means to the com-



mission of the kirk], and a faithful *servant* to the people; which he cannot be thought who does not cause all to stand to their covenant engagements, as Josiah did<sup>1</sup>." In another place he explains what he means by the king being a faithful servant to the people:—"The inferior," he says, "is accountable to the superior; the king is inferior, the people are superior; *ergo*, the king is accountable to the people<sup>2</sup>." These antiscritptural doctrines and views shew what were the real meaning and intentions of the leaders in the assemblies and commissions of the kirk during the progress of the grand rebellion, and which have been faithfully detailed in this work, from their own acts of Assembly and approved authors. In their struggle for the supremacy they overturned both the throne and the altar, and deluged the three kingdoms with blood. They attempt to throw the guilt of blood upon king Charles I. who, in the execution of his bounden duty to God, his only superior, and to the people committed to his charge, drew the sword *in defence* of the church which they had sworn to extirpate, but of which he was the appointed nursing-father and protector, as well as a member, and of the religious and political freedom of his country.

WE HAVE NOW seen the persecution and bloodshed that have arisen out of the persecuting principles embodied in the Covenant. It has been most justly called a perpetual bond of rebellion; and its persecuting obligations are acknowledged by an author whose opinions have been already cited. He says—"In the fourth article of the covenant we are obliged to endeavour that all incendiaries and malignants, &c. be brought to *condign* punishment; therefore is it imaginable that the head of that unhallowed party [the king], *the great malignant enemy*, who is the spring and gives life to all these abominations, should be exempted from punishment? Shall we be obliged to discover and bring to punishment the little petty malignants, and this implacably stated enemy to Christ escape with a crown upon his head? Nay, we are by this obliged, if ever *we be in a condition*, to bring these stated enemies to God and the country to condign punishment, from the highest to the lowest: and this we are to do, as we would have the anger of the Lord turned away from us, which *cannot be, without hanging up their heads before the Lord against the sun*. . . . By the fifth article of the covenant we are obliged to endeavour that *justice* be done upon such as oppose the peace and union between the kingdoms; but this man and his bro-

<sup>1</sup> Hind Let Loose, 206.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 389.





ther have destroyed and annulled that which was the bond of these kingdoms' union—viz. the Solemn League and Covenant<sup>1</sup>." The covenant having been framed by jesuits, there is as much of their serpentine wisdom in it, as marks the union of doctrine betwixt their rules and the obligations of the covenant; for there is a saving clause in that document which obliges its votaries to accomplish its infernal obligations only when they are "*in a condition*" to execute its threats. Accordingly we find, that whenever the pressure of military compulsion was removed from them, then, feeling themselves to be in "*a condition*" to fulfil their covenanted principles, they began to assemble in armed conventicles, and to wreak their malice on the weaker party—the clergy of the established church. Their fears for the vengeance of the laws only prevented their adding murder to their "*invasion*," as assaults were called, house-breaking and robbery of the episcopal clergy, who, living at great distances from each other, and perhaps apart from near neighbours, were common. They were attacked in their beds, their own and their wives and families' persons brutally beaten, their furniture destroyed, and the portable parts of it carried off, as well as whatever money and other valuables they might have were made prize of; and they were often compelled to swear to abandon their churches, and not even to complain of the bad usage they received.

BUT the church of Rome has quite altered the primitive ecclesiastical government by erecting a *monarchy* in the church, and setting up her bishop as the universal pastor and sovereign of the whole catholic church, and making all other bishops to be but his vicars and substitutes in point of jurisdiction. The presbyterian communion have also quite altered the primitive ecclesiastical government, by setting up a *democratical republic*, consisting partly of ministers and partly of lay elders, in a gradation of republican courts comprised in kirk sessions, presbyteries, synods, and general assemblies. And as the pope endeavours to *subject* all christian bishops to his obedience, so the presbyterians endeavour to *extirpate* all the fathers of the church who are independent princes, within their own dioceses. The church of Rome has changed the primitive rule of faith by adding twelve *new* articles to it, as necessary to be believed in order to salvation. The Westminster Assembly imposed a new Confession of Faith, consisting of thirty-three articles, out of which it entirely excluded the ancient creed of the universal church. The church of Rome

<sup>1</sup> Hind Let Loose, 411-12.



most miserably corrupted the primitive liturgy of the church ; for a corrupt faith must produce a corrupt worship, the one being based on the other—*viz.* prayers in an unknown tongue, contrary to the apostle's express command, conducted by the priest alone, during which the people are mere spectators, or employ themselves at their private devotions. Their liturgy is full of most humble prayers to the ever blessed Virgin St. Mary, as their only mediatrix betwixt them and God ; they have taken the cup of blessing from the people, and they are guilty of idolatry in the direct worship of images and the wood of the cross. On the other hand, the presbyterian communion have entirely dismissed both ancient and modern liturgies, as means " to make and increase an idle and unedifying ministry ;" and as the minister is " the mouth of the congregation," the people listen simply to what he says without joining with him ; having no priesthood, of course they have no christian sacrifice, so the people are deprived entirely of the eucharistical sacrament, for although they eat and drink the bare elements, yet these are altogether deficient of the " Spirit that giveth life."

No MAN has given the enemies of the church greater opportunities of blaspheming and triumphing over her, than Gilbert Burnet, bishop of Salisbury. He has shewn a deep-rooted hatred against archbishop Sharp and his brethren throughout the whole History of his Own Times ; and though a churchman in profession, yet he was a presbyterian in heart and affections. He therefore omits no opportunity of displaying his " keen hatred and round abuse ;" and insinuates that piety and morality were only to be found during the usurpation and amongst the rebels. He asserts that that joy and festivity which were happily indulged in after the Restoration, were the effects of men having thrown off the very professions of virtue and piety. It would require some ingenuity to convince a reasonable person that piety and virtue suffered by the Restoration ; for some of the most pious and virtuous men, both lay and clerical, that have ever adorned the church of the three kingdoms, flourished subsequent to that event. But, on the other hand, if we are to consider as piety and morality, revenge, censoriousness, evil speaking, lying and slandering, perjury, robbery, sacrilege, injustice, murder, oppression, rebellion, impious pretences to inspiration, the most consummate hypocrisy, the decrying of all morality as *malignancy*, and the overturning of every civil and religious institution ; if these works of the flesh be piety and morality, perhaps the times of the civil war and the usurpation were the most



moral and pious since the piety and morality of the antediluvians down to that time. The murder of the king, the robbery of lands and houses, the sacrilege committed on what had been solemnly dedicated to God, were all, indeed, professed to be done *in the name of the Lord*, and, like certain hypocrites in the Jewish church, with long and ostentatious prayers. It is not to be wondered at that an extravagant joy should overspread the length and breadth of the land, when the people of all ranks escaped from the grinding tyranny of such a multitude of tyrants, who had the absolute disposal of their lives and properties, and when they were on a sudden restored to the full enjoyment of all the comforts and blessings of life.

THE DUKE OF LAUDERDALE is much blamed, of course, by the presbyterian authors, but particularly by bishop Burnet, *after* he broke with him, for suppressing the combinations of "Messiah's angels." But when it was notorious that the field conventicles were contrived for the convention of armed rebels, who only waited for assistance from Holland and a favourable opportunity to attack the king's troops for the overturn of the government, his grace must be justified before all the world, in trying every method, both of severity and conciliation, to prevent a revolution. He found that moderation only encouraged these "angels" of the covenant in their barbarous treatment of the episcopal clergy, and in their insults to government. It is to be observed that neither Burnet nor Wodrow give any real instances of oppression and tyranny, although they make such an outcry about "the sufferings of the presbyterians;" unless, indeed, we are to put out the eyes of our understandings, and consider that exacting fines, which were always remitted upon submission and the promise of future obedience, upon men who would have been hanged under any other government, may be called oppression. These conventicles became more frequent and audacious after the formation of an opposition to Lauderdale's government; and there is not the least doubt but that the opposition secretly encouraged the meetings of conventicles, in order to embarrass the government and effect a change in the administration. But Lauderdale's sagacity in bringing three armies to bear upon the disaffected district at once, from as many different points, shewed them the folly of making head against an attack from the royal troops, with their undisciplined though enthusiastic followers, and so it was not only a skillful but a merciful measure, inasmuch as it prevented their adopting Welsh's advice, and "drawing to a head." If there had been no other forces to oppose them than the king's regular troops in Scot-





land, they would undoubtedly have taken the field, and from the superiority of their numbers, and their fanaticism and bravery, the issue might have been the shedding of much blood both in the field and on the scaffold.

MUCH has been said against Lauderdale for his policy at this time, but especially for having introduced the wild uncivilised highlanders into the country of the conventicles; but the cause has been always concealed, under the flood of indignation and obloquy which has been vented against the military and the "highland host." The cause was altogether the presbyterian principles of *resistance* to all regular government, of *intolerance* that bound them to *extirpate* the church, and their bond of *persecution*, which bound them to put all *malignants* to death; also the turbulence of their preachers, who would not confine their ministrations to the parish churches to which they were legally inducted, but collected field conventicles, where they chiefly preached sedition and the principles above named. With so much excitement, the ignorant people considered themselves as the peculiar people of God, and all others as His enemies; and therefore, like the Canaanites and Amalekites of old, the episcopalians were to be utterly extirpated if they did not yield their christian liberty to the supremacy of the presbyterian preachers. Hence the cruel treatment that the episcopal clergy experienced at their hands, who were assaulted and abused in their very pulpits and during their administration of public worship, as well as on the roads, in the fields, and in their own houses, besides the destruction of their furniture and the robbery of their property. It was only when government kept military possession that the episcopal clergy in the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway had any protection from their ruthless persecutors. In the other parts of the kingdom, where the people were churchmen in heart and affections, there were no military stations, nor disturbances to call for their interference, but the utmost tranquillity reigned, which was the result of christian principles, which, when persecution arises, teaches men to *suffer* but *not to fight* for Christ. They bore the hardships patiently to which the government was compelled to subject them, owing to the turbulence of the fanatics, and especially the extraordinary taxation which the maintenance of a standing army brought upon them. Wodrow can find no "sufferings" to record any where in the kingdom out of the province of Glasgow; and he always places the due and not too severe execution of the law on notorious offenders foremost among the "sufferings" of his saints,—"*angels*," indeed, as he calls them.





## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP.

1679.—State of the presbyterians.—A visitation of the universities.—Overture for suppressing schism—turned into an act of council.—Non-residence.—Bishop of Galloway licensed.—Oppression of the church.—Proceedings against the jesuits.—Mr. Veitch.—Earl of Danby—his speech—sent to the Tower.—Duke of York.—The king's difficulties.—Duke of York goes abroad.—Bill of exclusion—the king opposed to it.—Covenant renewed.—Opposition to Lauderdale.—A conventicle in Edinburgh.—Town-major assaulted.—A proclamation.—Mrs. Smythe—letter to her from the primate.—Conventicle at Cumberhead.—Death and translation of bishops.—Murder of two soldiers.—County meetings.—Proclamation against conventicles.—The king's letter.—State of the country.—Remarks.

1679.—DR. COOK SAYS, that at the commencement of this year "the presbyterians themselves were split into parties; one division of them cleaving to the indulged ministers, another declaiming against them, warning the people not to attend them, and *poisoning* their minds by the *most fanatical and rebellious tenets*. The efficacy and the security of a regular government were at an end; the nation was torn by faction, and vast multitudes attributing all this to the bishops, and particularly to Sharp, who was regarded with peculiar abhorrence, considered themselves as warranted to proceed to any extremity. The conventicles were now attended by *formidable* bodies of desperate and *armed men*; small detachments of these were constantly passing through different districts, and the public mind was raised to a degree of frenzy which prepared it for the most disgraceful enormities<sup>1</sup>." And Wodrow, in a melancholy mood, admits, that in "January, this year, some preachers formerly pointed at began *warmly* to preach up *separation* from the indulged, and in such a broken time as this, no doubt such doctrine would take, when people's spirits were rankled with so many evils. When this flame was rising, several ministers and probationers in and about

<sup>1</sup> History of the Church of Scotland, iii. 344.



Glasgow, with a good many of the solid of the old elderships in that city, who had been witnesses to the sad consequences of the last rent in this church upon the public Resolutions, had frequent meetings, and endeavoured what in them lay to put a stop to the growing division, but were not able to do so much as they wished<sup>1</sup>."

THAT SPIRIT OF division and schism which is inherent in the constitution of presbytery was now making havock of "the cause" itself; but with their usual blindness to their own sins and infirmities, they accused the government as being the cause of their own internal dissensions. The government was, however, equally puzzled how to preserve the peace of the kingdom, and to protect the established clergy from the "formidable bodies of desperate and armed men" which perambulated the south-western parts of the country. There was what was called a standing army in small detachments quartered at various places in the disturbed districts, but so small and so scattered as to be no terror to the unruly, but rather an incentive to attack or resist them, from the probability of being able to conquer them. There can be no greater mistake than to employ too small a force against insurgents, for they are sure to engage in a conflict where they have a prospect of success, whereby much bloodshed will follow, whereas they will make no resistance to a superior force, the employment of which is, therefore, the most merciful and judicious plan.

ON THE 2d of January the council addressed a circular letter to the two archbishops and the bishops of Edinburgh and Aberdeen, requiring them to visit the universities of their several cities, and to ascertain whether or not the professors and masters had taken the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and to cause them to be administered to those who had not taken them. The reports from all these prelates were satisfactory; but there were some individuals in the university and schools of Edinburgh who had not taken the oaths, and the council ordained them either to comply, or to be removed from their offices. A Mr. Warner, whom Wodrow says was "the last of the antediluvian presbyterian ministers; that is, such who had seen the *glory* of the former temple, and were ordained before the Restoration," was outlawed for not obeying the summons of the privy council for holding field conventicles, although he had an indulgence to the parish of Balmaclellan, in the diocese of Galloway.

ON THE 9th of January the council submitted some over-

<sup>1</sup> History, iii. 23.



tures to the king for his approbation, for the suppression of the present schism and disorders in the church, and the frequent insurrections of which they were the cause. In these overtures the council very truly say, that "notwithstanding their former endeavours, manifold disorders do still abound, arising from withdrawing from the public worship, and from *the dangerous and pernicious principles* instilled into the minds of unwary people *by seditious preachers* in their scandalous conventicles, whereby many are hardened in a most violent and unreasonable schism, and *animated to most turbulent* virulent practices, threatening the *subversion* of the protestant religion, as well as the *peace* of the kingdom, have thought it their duty (now that the forces are raised whereby these *seditious disorders* may be easily and effectually suppressed) humbly to represent to the king's most excellent majesty:—That many of the enormities are committed in remote parts, where probation cannot be easily found, nor the laws receive their due execution, and therefore they proposed that the sheriffs-deputes, and some other local magistrates, should receive additional authority, and be empowered to "put the laws in execution against withdrawers from public ordinances, keepers of conventicles, such as are guilty of disorderly baptisms and marriages, resetting and communing with fugitive and intercommuned persons, and other vagrant preachers. That soldiers be authorised to disperse disorderly meetings and conventicles, and that they may not be prosecuted, if, from resistance, death or mutilation should ensue: That the soldiers be instructed to arrest the preachers at conventicles, and hold them to bail, except those that had been declared traitors; and to seize upon all the arms of those who were present: That a reward be offered for the capture of the intercommuned traitor Welsh, and some others: And lastly, that his majesty may be pleased to give order to the council, to take exact notice of, and proceed against, those indulged ministers who do not observe the rules and instructions prescribed to them at their indulgence; and that upon the decease or removal of any of these indulged ministers from their kirks, the council may be careful to see *orthodox ministers* planted in these kirks; and if the patron do not present such persons within the time prescribed by law, that the ordinary be ordained to present *jure devoluto*."

HIS MAJESTY approved of these overtures, and returned them to the council with his superscription, and they were immediately turned into an act of council upon the 28th of January; and instructions were prepared and sent to the sheriffs,





and other magistrates, for their guidance<sup>1</sup>. The disputes and divisions among the presbyterians became more violent and extensive; and not even the pressure of the new attempt to curb their licentiousness had any effect in uniting them. The cess created many disputes, but the law settled that cause of division by compelling them to pay it; but the Indulgence was the source of much deeper and more inveterate contention among them. "Kirkland's curates" were particularly active in preaching the necessity of separating from "the council curates," and with great success, for numbers began to secede from the indulged ministers, and this circumstance both swelled the conventicles and multiplied their numbers<sup>2</sup>. And notwithstanding the large offers of reward for the capture of Welsh, he was so well guarded by an armed party of horsemen, that always attended him, and by the protection of the people in the disaffected districts in which he itinerated, that he was never apprehended.

AT THE SAME meeting of council, a dispensation from his majesty for non-residence, granted to the lord bishop of Galloway, was read and recorded; and as it is a complete refutation of the numberless falsehoods charged against the Scottish hierarchy, that they were constantly at the ear of the council, instigating them to cruelty and persecution, and always the suggestors of those measures for which Wodrow and his friends cannot otherwise account, I here insert it entire:—  
"Whereas none of our archbishops or bishops may lawfully keep their ordinary residence *without the bounds* of their dioceses respective, unless they have our royal dispensation, warrant, and license for that effect: these are, that in regard John, bishop of Galloway, is not provided in a competent manse or dwelling-house in the diocese of Galloway, and for the better promoting of our service in the church, to allow and authorise the said bishop to live in or near the cities of Edinburgh or Glasgow, or in any other convenient place, where he may be able to attend the public affairs of the church. With whose non-residence in the diocese of Galloway, we, by virtue of our royal supremacy in causes ecclesiastical, do by these presents dispense, as well with the time past preceding the date hereof as for the time to come, during our royal pleasure; any canon of the church, or acts of parliament, enjoining residence, notwithstanding. And we strictly enjoin all our subjects, church officers, and others, never to quarrel or call in question the said John, bishop of Galloway, during the

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 1-21.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 23.



continuance of this our royal dispensation and license, as they shall answer to us at their peril."

THUS IT appears that the bishops were tied down to a constant residence within their respective dioceses, and could not reside beyond the limits of them without a royal dispensation. This has fully as much the aspect of persecution as the confining the indulged ministers to their parishes; the conduct of the two parties, however, decidedly shews their respective principles. The bishops and their clergy, who were also bound to reside within their parishes, complied with the law, and when they were desirous of residing elsewhere, they applied for permission, and did not remove without it; but the indulged ministers rambled about the country in spite of the utmost efforts of the government to prevent them, and gathered conventicles at considerable distances from the parishes to which they were indulged, breaking the peace of the kingdom, and inflaming the minds of their hearers by seditious sermons. The church owed its bondage and servitude under the royal supremacy to the obligations of the covenant, and the continual insubordination and sedition which it produced. The king and his government having the remembrance of the grand rebellion ever before their eyes, and having seen the desolation of three kingdoms produced by the covenanting madness of the ministers, extended the royal supremacy to the verge of oppression; lest the same principles might again produce similar calamities. In consequence of this jealousy they did not sufficiently make a distinction betwixt the principles of the gospel professed by the one, and those of the covenant followed out by the other. Therefore, in those times of rebuke and blasphemy, the church was nearly crushed, yet never murmured nor complained, betwixt the upper millstone of the supremacy and the under millstone of the barbarous covenanters.

THE POPISH PLOT that had been discovered in England set the privy council to look after the jesuits and priests in Scotland, and a proclamation was issued empowering magistrates to search their houses for arms, and to commit all jesuits, priests, and trafficking papists, to prison, and to prohibit all papists from being appointed to public offices or to commissions in the army. And the reason assigned for this measure was, "because many of the Romish church do delude and abuse our people, under the profession of *some or other* of those who refuse to conform to the worship of this reformed church, as it is established by law." It therefore appears that the jesuits were busy fomenting the religious distractions of the kingdom,



under the assumed characters of rigid presbyterians and covenanters, in the same manner as the same unscrupulous fraternity had founded the puritan schism and the numerous sects in England. If Melville, the founder of Scottish presbyterianism, was not himself a jesuit, there can be no doubt but many jesuits co-operated with him in his efforts to introduce and perpetuate presbytery; and now we have the authority of a royal proclamation that they were pursuing their usual vocation amongst the itinerant preachers of the covenant, and doubtless stimulated their naturally pugnacious principles.

MR. VEITCH, a minister of the covenant, and who is designated as "a notorious ringleader in field-conventicles," was apprehended in Northumberland, and lodged in Morpeth gaol. He had been actively engaged in the Pentland rebellion, and in consequence had found it convenient to retire into England, where he "preached with much acceptance;" that is, he created dissension and introduced schism and rebellion among the peaceable church-going peasantry of the parish of Long-Horsley, where he had fixed his abode. Mr. Bell, the clergyman, appealed to the bishop of Durham, in consequence of the unruly state into which Veitch had preached his parishioners; and the bishop applied to the duke of Lauderdale to be relieved from the nuisance of the Scottish preachers, who were spreading infection in England, but particularly from this man. He was removed from Morpeth to Edinburgh, and the privy council committed him to the Bass prison till the king's pleasure was known, because he had been forfeited on account of his having been engaged in the rebellion of 1666, the record of which was found in the eleventh act of the first session of the second parliament. After several postponements Veitch was at last tried and acquitted, and set at liberty upon condition of retiring altogether from the realm of Scotland, not so much from his decided innocence of the guilt of rebellion as from the intercession of powerful friends that had been made with the king<sup>1</sup>.

ABOUT THIS TIME the affairs of England had some influence on those of Scotland. A violent burst of popular odium was excited against the earl of Danby, whom Burnet has much misrepresented; and which was produced by the exertions of that nobleman to extricate the king from the entanglements into which the former ministers had brought his majesty's affairs. On account of his rejecting the offers made to him by the court of France, it had become a maxim with them that

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 8-9.





the earl of Danby must be ruined before their intrigues could be successful in England. The French agents in England entered into secret negotiations with a Mr. Montague, who had been formerly ambassador at the court of France, but who now represented the borough of Northampton. He produced some copies of official letters written to him by lord Danby, which the commons considered sufficient matter for the impeachment of that nobleman. When the articles of impeachment were brought to the bar of the House of Lords, lord Danby spoke at some length in his own vindication, and alleged that nothing of importance had been transacted without his majesty's warrant under the sign manual. That it was impossible that any thing could be more contrary to his own interest than to prevent the discovery of the popish plot, or to contrive the assassination of the king. That the happiness of no man living depended more than his own on the preservation of the king's person. He had been so far from concealing any information respecting the plot, that the very person who had given the information at the bar of the House of Commons, had acknowledged that he had received the utmost encouragement from him; and besides, that he had been particularly instrumental in seizing the papers of Mr. Coleman, which had been the most material evidence of the plot. That so far from wasting the public money, he had not seen in the course of six years one farthing applied to any other purpose than according as the acts directed; and that he had not retained any part of it for his own or his family's use. Although he was accused of being popishly inclined, yet he was so far otherwise, that if he had been either a papist or friendly to French interests, no accusation would now have been brought against him, at least not by his present accuser, who, he had good reason to believe, had been assisted by French advice. And if, he said, "that gentleman were as just to produce all he knows for me, as he hath been malicious to shew what may be liable to misconstruction against me, or rather against the king, as indeed it is, no man could vindicate me more than himself, under whose hand I have to shew, how great an enemy to France I am thought, how much I might have had to have been otherwise, and what he himself might have had to have got me to take it. But I do not wonder this gentleman will do me no right, when he does not think fit to do it to his majesty, upon whom chiefly this matter must reflect; though he knows, as will appear under his hand, that the greatest invitations to his majesty for having money from France have been made by himself: that if his majesty would have been tempted for





money, he might have sold towns for as much as if they had been his own, and the money have been conveyed as privately as he pleased: that his majesty might have made matches with France, if he would have consented to have given them towns; and yet that the king hath always scorned to yield the meanest village that was not agreed to by the Spaniard and the Hollander. . . . That ever since I have had the honour to serve his majesty to this day, I have delivered it as my constant opinion, that France was the worst interest his majesty could embrace, and that they were the nation in the world from whom I did believe he ought to apprehend the greatest danger, and who have both his person and government under the last degree of contempt; for which reason alone, were there no other, I would never advise his majesty to trust to their friendship<sup>1</sup>."

BURNET's insinuations against the king and his minister are given with his usual maliciousness. Lord Danby was also accused of the murder of sir Edmund Godfrey, although his accuser afterwards withdrew his affidavit, and declared that the saints had set him upon making the accusation. Lord Danby was, however, sent to the Tower, where he remained for several years, before the Court of King's Bench would venture to admit him to bail, owing to the tyrannical interference of the House of Commons. "The duke of York," says Wodrow, "was reckoned, by such who appeared for the liberties of England, to be at the bottom of all the maladministrations they would have been rid of. Even before the parliament sat down, the king found a party forming against his brother, and towards the end of February gave it him as his mind that he should retire from court; the duke was in amaze till the king sent it him in writ under his own hand<sup>2</sup>." The machinations of the papists at this time had created such a ferment in England, that in the House of Commons there were violent debates respecting the exclusion of the duke of York, on account of his religion, from the succession to the throne. At that time there was no law in existence to prevent a person professing the popish religion from succeeding to the crown; and it is rather a curious anomaly in the presbyterian religion, that it is laid down with authority in their public formulary, that even "Infidelity, or *difference* in religion, doth *not* make void the magistrate's just and legal authority, nor free the people from their due obedience to him<sup>3</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Examination of Bishop Burnet's History, ii. 831-32.

<sup>2</sup> History, iii. 27. <sup>3</sup> Westminster Confession of Faith, ch. xxiii. sect. 4.



BURNET misrepresents Charles as being so indolent and indifferent to every thing but his own pursuits, that he would sacrifice his dearest friends, and even his brother, rather than be disturbed. Instead of which, Charles exhibited the greatest steadiness and firmness in supporting his brother's rights; and he maintained his ground on this point against three successive parliaments, which had thrown England into the greatest confusion with their strides towards independence and arbitrary power. They shewed some symptoms of imitating the proceedings of the memorable Long Parliament, and the whig party attempted to force the king into similar concessions as those that had effected the late king's ruin. The king, however, had profited by his father's misfortunes, and he firmly kept possession of the sword and the power of the militia in his own hands; and at length, by firmness and resolution, he not only extricated himself from the difficulties of his position, but obliged the parliament to return to a sense of their duty. Charles's conduct shews how grossly he has been misrepresented by Burnet in his malignant gossip; for he displayed talents and address of a superior order, and of which Burnet everywhere insinuates that he was incapable.

BURNET again represents the king as so far from entertaining any affection for the duke of York, that he dreaded and disliked him; yet so false was this, that when a bill was brought in for banishing the duke, and excluding him from the succession to the crown, he steadily opposed it. The commons would have passed any money bill, or have obliged the crown in any thing the king could have asked, in order to gain this point; yet he cheerfully ran more hazards in support of the duke's claims than he had ever before done, and which must have been the result of affection as well as from a sense of rectitude. To allay the agitation which had arisen on the score of popery, and the dread which the prospect of a popish successor to the crown had excited, the king requested the duke of York to retire abroad till the storm should subside. He retired to Brussels with his family; and lord Nottingham, in his speech in parliament, said that the separation between the royal brothers was attended with more than ordinary sorrow on both sides<sup>1</sup>. In England, Charles "constituted a new privy council, consisting of a medley of whigs and tories," and amongst the rest took in the lord Shaftesbury again. The commons resolved, That the duke of York being a papist, the hopes of his succeeding to the crown had given the greatest

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Examination, ii. 335-36.



countenance and encouragement to the present conspiracies of the papists against the king and the protestant religion, and ordered the lord Russell to carry up the said vote to the lords for their concurrence. They addressed the king also for the execution of several condemned popish priests and jesuits. The king steadily opposed the exclusion of the duke of York from the succession; and on the 30th April he came down to the house, and offered to put any restrictions on his successor, or to consent to whatever laws the parliament might propose for the security of the protestant religion, except the altering of his brother's right of succession. So earnest was he to preserve the duke's rights, that he offered to limit the authority of a popish successor, so that no papist should sit in either house of parliament; that none of the privy council or judges should be put in or displaced, but by authority of parliament, which would have been a most dangerous precedent; that none but protestants should be justices of the peace, lords lieutenants, deputy lieutenants, or officers in the navy, during the reign of a popish successor; and that none of these officers should be put out or removed but by parliament. He offered, besides, to consent to any other limitation, so as that the duke's right of succession was not defeated<sup>1</sup>.

THE FACTION in Scotland kept pace with the schemes of the whig party in England, and while the latter were intriguing against the duke of York, the former were engaged in a real plot. Burnet says, "the party against the duke of Lauderdale had lost all hopes, seeing how affairs were carried in the convention of estates; but they began to take heart upon this great turn in England. The duke was sent away, and the lord Danby was in the Tower, who were that duke's chief supports: and when the new council was settled, duke Hamilton, and many others, were encouraged to come up and accuse him<sup>2</sup>." The covenanters now assembled in formidable bodies, the men being well armed, and some of them mounted, and at these unlawful conventicles that Covenant was renewed and sworn by which their fathers had effected the ruin of three flourishing kingdoms. And, says Salmon, "the fanatics were grown so insolent and assuming through the whole island at that time, that most men are apt to think at this day that the popish plot was originally designed for a blind to cover their seditious practices, and screen their friends from the just resentment of the government; though the saints afterwards improved the design, and made it serve to several other wicked

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronological Historian, i. 213.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, ii. 229





purposes, which were not thought of at first<sup>1</sup>. The king admitted Hamilton and the others to an audience, and the earls of Essex and Halifax were present; sir George Mackenzie, the lord advocate, was also present to defend Lauderdale's administration, while Lockhart and Cunningham were retained on the other side. The opposition dwelt chiefly on the unconstitutional act of maintaining a standing army in time of peace, and the free quarter of troops on the inhabitants, besides a general accusation of misgovernment. Sir George, on the contrary, shewed that it was very far from being a state of peace, but of actual war, for which he had but too good evidence, since the covenanters were in a state of armed rebellion, and the laws actually denominated their conventicles "rendezvous of rebellion." Burnet insinuates that the king liked to hear his prerogative magnified, and that he had set up an interest distinct from that of his people; but it would have been an extraordinary interest for either the king or his people, to suffer armed rebels to assemble weekly in vast numbers, insolently to arraign the conduct of their governors, and to rob and plunder all such as they were pleased to consider the enemies of their kirk and Christ's crown and kingdom.

THE DUKE OF MONMOUTH, it seems, "was beginning to form a scheme of a ministry; but now the government in Scotland was so remiss that the people apprehended they might run into all sorts of confusion. They heard that England was in such distractions that they needed fear no force from thence. Duke Lauderdale's party was losing heart, and were fearing such a new model there as was set up here in England. All this set those *mad people* that had run about with the field conventicles *into a phrenzy: they drew together in great bodies*; some parties of the troops came to disperse them, but found them both so resolute and so strong that they did not think fit to engage them: sometimes they fired on one another, and some were killed on both sides<sup>2</sup>." As Burnet can now no longer defend or apologise for the barbarous cruelties and treasons of his friends the covenanters, he turns round upon them, and calls them madmen and crack-brained enthusiasts. He insinuates, in his *Own Times*, that all their murders and robberies were piously designed, and executed in the name of the Lord, and thinks that the government ought therefore to have connived at them, and have suffered them to

<sup>1</sup> Examination, ii. 840.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, ii. 231.



crown king Jesus in their own way. Notwithstanding all the efforts of the duke of Hamilton, assisted by the "underspur leathers," the Mess Johns and their "angels," Lauderdale maintained his place in the king's councils.

ABOUT THE 10th of March a new scene of violence occurred in Edinburgh. John Kay, son of a minister of the covenant, sent notice to Johnston, the town major, whose business it was to preserve the peace of the town, that there was an illegal conventicle assembled in a house in an obscure part of the town, and requested him to come to disperse it. As in duty bound, major Johnston took a party and went immediately to the house indicated, but instead of a conventicle he found he had been trepanned into a house where Kay and a company of armed men were met for the purpose of murdering him. They secured the doors, and fired upon major Johnston and his men, and then assaulted them with their swords; when the major was dangerously, and several of his party were mortally, wounded. In excuse for this daring outrage, Wodrow alleges that Johnston was "a most violent persecutor;" but how that could be, when he only put the law, as it stood, in execution, must be left to covenanting casuistry to decide. We nowhere read that the primitive christians, who suffered a real persecution, ever trepanned their persecutors into solitary places, and attempted to murder them, or even, as Wodrow delicately describes this murderous assault, to "threaten and soundly beat" them. No, they *suffered* for Christ, they took up their cross of afflictions, but never fought for Him, nor attempted to set up His crown and kingdom by murdering the servants of heathen governors. This natural effect of covenanting principles occurred on the very day that the council were sitting, and they immediately issued a proclamation for the apprehension of Kay and such of the others as had been recognised.

IN THIS proclamation they say:—"Several, *pretending* to be of the protestant profession, have not only disgraced and endeavoured to ruin the true reformed religion established in this our kingdom, and overturned the principles of all society and government by a bloody and distracted false zeal, which hath prompted them to open rebellion, to the printing of *jesuitical murdering tenets*, and the deforcing and invading such as are clothed with our authority; but have also proceeded to such extravagant and inhuman practices as tend to the destruction of mankind itself. Amongst many instances whereof, some villainous murderers did lately lay a design to kill and assas-



sinate the town-major of Edinburgh, for whom they having sent, upon pretext to dissipate a conventicle, they did discharge *many shots* at him and other soldiers who assisted him, and thereafter wounded him and them mortally in several places of their bodies, threatening to kill him if he would not swear never to put our laws in execution. Which affront being done publicly to our authority in the capital city of our kingdom, the very day of the meeting of our council, and being a practice laid down to terrify all such as serve us, and to involve all in a confusion, which they most earnestly wish; therefore, &c." a reward was offered for their apprehension<sup>1</sup>. Wodrow is indignant that such principles should be ascribed to his beloved covenant, and fairly expresses his ignorance that any such murdering tenets had ever been published by his friends, although he could not have been ignorant of the Hind Let Loose, Naphtali, the Cloud of Witnesses, and others, and he affects to consider this true and appropriate expression in the proclamation merely "a piece of necessary style." It became necessary to order the widows of the covenant ministers to remove from the cities of Edinburgh and Glasgow, as conventicles were held, and the "vagrant ministers" sheltered, in their houses; and it was in the house of a Mrs. Crawford, "a known and most irregular fanatic," that the outrage on major Johnston had been perpetrated.

MRS. SMYTHE, of Methven's, heroism has been already recorded, and her military talents were again required to put down conventicles that attempted to establish themselves on her husband's estate<sup>2</sup>. In another letter she informs "her heart-keeper" that the provost and dean of guild of Perth had waited on archbishop Sharp at St. Andrews, to solicit his approbation and induction of a clergyman whom they had presented to the vacant living of St. Johns, the parish church of that town; and, she continues, "the archbishop was very civil to them, and after he had tried [inquired] at the provost all the way of my proceeding against the conventicle, which was truly repeated, the archbishop drank my good health, and said the clergy of this nation were obliged to me. But it was the Lord God's doing, who made me His instrument; praise, honour, and glory be to His great name." The church of Methven also became vacant about this time, and Mrs. Smythe interested herself in behalf of Mr. John Omev, in whose favour she wrote to the archbishop, who appreciated

<sup>1</sup> Cited in Wodrow's History, iii. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Vide *ante*, ch. xxxvii. p. 111.





the merits of this loyal and religious lady, and made the following reply to her letter, dated St. Andrews, 27th March, 1679:—

“MADAM,—I had the favour of your ladyship’s letter, signifying to me your purpose that Mr. John Omev be presented to the church of Methven, vacant by the decease of Mr. Hew Ramsey. I am well satisfied with Mr. Omev, who is a good man and a worthy minister, and shall be ready to go along with your husband, the laird of Methven his design in reference to him. I am glad to find that your husband, a gentleman noted for his loyalty to the king and affection to the church, is so happy as to have a consort of the same principles and inclination for the public settlement, who has given proof of her aversion to join in society with separatists, and partaking of that sin, to which so many of that sex do tempt their husbands in this evil time, when schism, sedition, and rebellion, are gloried in, though christianity does condemn them as the greatest crimes. Your ladyship, in continuing the course of your exemplary piety and zeal for the apostolic doctrine and government, shall have approbation from God and all good men, which is of more value than a popular vogue from an humourous silly multitude, who know not what they do in following the way of seduction. You are commended to the establishment of God’s grace in truth and peace, by, &c.

“ST. ANDREWS.”

FIELD CONVENTICLES were of weekly occurrence, and also became “more formidable both in the numbers who attended, and the army-like aspect which they began to wear. The preachers were generally accompanied by a band of armed men, who were resolved to protect their ministers at the hazard of their lives; and when they met for public worship, they chose *strong positions*, and posted armed sentinels all around them, to watch the movements of *the enemy*, and to warn their friends for a timely flight or a resolute resistance<sup>1</sup>.” One of these “army-like” conventicles met at Cumberhead, in the parish of Lesmahago, in the diocese of Glasgow. A party of military was sent to disperse them, but on their arrival they found them so well posted and fully armed that it would have been imprudent to have attacked them; and therefore they contented themselves with seizing, according to the council’s orders, the outer garments of some

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington’s History of the Church of Scotland, p. 148.





stragglers and some women's plaids, to be kept as evidence of their having been at this conventicle. The military saints determined not to allow these trophies to be carried off; and they drew up in order of battle, and attacked and fired upon the military, took some of the soldiers prisoners, and wounded the officer commanding the detachment and several of the men. It was therefore necessary to retreat, and upon the report being made to lord Ross, the commander of the forces, he marched out of Glasgow towards Lanark, to prevent the fighting mania from spreading farther. A commission was granted to several of the privy councillors to meet at Lanark, and to inquire judicially into this affair. In their report to the council, dated the 25th April, they say that they had received "frequent informations from divers places, of murdering some, wounding and robbing of others of his majesty's forces, when sent to bring in the cess . . . . two soldiers were killed, and others wounded . . . . a tumult and insurrection made within the town of Renfrew, upon the sheriff-depute taking of one Walter Scott, a noted ringleader of conventicles and of such-like disorders, and of the beating and wounding the laird of Beltrees, sheriff-depute, to the hazard of his life, and deforcing them and rescuing the prisoner. . . . In the shire of Lanark and other shires adjacent, those rebels who keep field conventicles have formed a design of keeping strong and armed conventicles in many distant places, of design to necessitate your lordships to keep his majesty's forces together in considerable numbers . . . . and are resolved to hinder the inbringing of his majesty's cess . . . . and if small parties [of military] be employed, to *murder them* as they have actually done, intending thereby to obstruct the payment of his majesty's forces, whereby we, conceiving that these rebellious courses are now come to that height, thought it our duty to advertise my lord chancellor, &c. to meet upon Wednesday next, being the last of April, to deliberate and consult what is fit to be done in this juncture, for obstructing the growth and increase of these disorders, now come to so great a height, and for securing the public peace in time coming<sup>1</sup>."

THE PUGNACIOUS propensities of the covenanters occupy so much of the history of this period, that the calm and peaceful current of the church is entirely lost sight of, and little else is recorded but the deaths and translations of the bishops. John Paterson, lord bishop of Ross, died early this year, and Alexander Young, the lord bishop of Edinburgh, was iname-

<sup>1</sup> Report of the Comm. of Council at Lanark, cited by Wodrow, ii. p. 35-36.



diately translated to Ross. John Paterson, lord bishop of Galloway, and the son of the late bishop of Ross, was translated to the see of Edinburgh on the 29th March; and Keith, citing an original letter of Lauderdale to archbishop Sharp, says the translation of bishop Young was owing to the powerful interest of the duchess, in order to make room for the advancement of bishop Paterson, who had received a royal dispensation to reside out of his diocese. William Lindsay, lord bishop of Dunkeld, died this year, having only sat two years, but the new bishop was not consecrated till October<sup>1</sup>.

"IT IS VERY CERTAIN," says Wodrow, "that about this time matters were *running to sad heights among the ARMED followers* of some of the field meetings:" coming from such a quarter, this is a powerful admission of the desperate state of anarchy and rebellion which then existed among his "angels." Murders of the soldiers were very common, and two which were perpetrated by these "armed followers" excited much public indignation. In the presbyterian districts, when any one refused to pay the cess imposed by the last convention, one or more soldiers were billeted on them at free quarters, till they paid, when the men were removed. One of these recusants, a farmer on Loudon-hill, had three soldiers quartered on him for about ten days, and Wodrow admits that they were peaceable and well-behaved men. A female in the family had warned them, that unless they removed they might meet with rough treatment; but they replied, that they could not leave the premises without orders, or unless the cess was paid. One of the men, however, went in the afternoon to the village of Newmilns, and the threat of violence having made an impression on his mind, he remained there all night. The other two slept, as usual, in the barn, and early on Sunday morning, the 20th of April, they were awoken by a "rude knocking at the barn door." Thinking it had been their comrade returned, one of them got up and incautiously opened the door, which he found besieged by five men on foot and five on horseback, one of whom shot the soldier through the heart, when he fell down and never spoke. The other, in alarm, got up for the purpose of closing the door against his assailants, and received a pistol shot in the thigh from the same assassin, who appeared to be the leader of the party, and who now dismounted and knocked down the wounded man. The covenanters then robbed the soldiers of their clothes and arms, and made off with all speed. The

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue, *passim*.



wounded soldier languished till the following Saturday, when he died. These barbarous murders were committed on the morning when a field conventicle was to have been held; and for which it was a fit and proper preparation, being under a solemn vow to pursue all malignants to death. Wodrow is anxious to remove the stigma of these murders from his party, but is forced to admit, that "it is uncertain who were the actors," and wishes to land it on "a tool and spy" whom, he says, was employed by government to do such dirty work. The wounded soldier lived long enough to give such information as identified a man Scarlet as the actual murderer, and who was one of Welsh's armed guards, as Scarlet himself swore before the privy council; and although Wodrow "jaloused" him to have been an emissary of government, yet he declares that this Scarlet "came and joined himself with some others in arms who were *a kind of guard* to Mr. R. Cameron, who preached in the fields<sup>1</sup>." But these murders had not been an accidental "incident," but a plan and conspiracy; for although the people of the farm-house are not implicated as having directly assisted in the murders, yet they must have had a previous knowledge of the murderers' intentions, or they could not have given the men warning of their danger. This circumstance alone must exonerate the government of having authorised the perpetration of such an infamous transaction; but it the more firmly fixes it upon the *armed followers* of the covenanting party that were *running to such heights*.

THIS OUTRAGE occasioned a meeting of the nobility and gentry of the county of Ayr, who agreed upon an address to the council, and sent three of their number into town to present it; in which they lament the recent murders, and throw the whole of them and other outrages on "a few unsound, turbulent, and hot-headed *preachers*—making it their work to draw people to separation and schism from pure ordinances, and to instil in them the seeds of rebellion by their informations, exhortations, and doctrine." This denunciation of covenanting doctrine by men who lived among, mixed with them, and could not be ignorant of what doctrines were taught, is evidence not to be refuted of the antichristian nature of the covenant and its adherents. Wodrow is much at a loss to know how to account for the enormous wickedness of his friends; and he enters into a sort of apology, and says:—"It is very certain that about this time matters were running to sad

<sup>1</sup> History, iii. 37.





heights among the armed followers of some of the field meetings. Whether the information here was true, I do not know; but as far as I can learn, there was *yet* no disowning the king's authority, though it was some of these the gentlemen point at, who afterwards *did* come this length: and until this spring, nothing of unsafe doctrine could be at all charged upon field preachers, and it was but some few run this way either. Indeed, *separation and schism from the indulged was now violently inculcated*; and at one of the meetings this month, the letters before me bear that Robert Hamilton spake publicly to the people, and discharged [that is, forbid] any hearers of the indulged, any banders or payers of cess, *to join* with them, or bring any arms with them. One of them cried out, 'We are all almost cessmen!' and after some confusion among them, Mr. Richard Cameron, who preached that day, settled the matter by telling Mr. Hamilton that it would be impossible to purge the meeting that day: yea, some of them did openly threaten they would insult the indulged ministers if they met with them; upon which, some of these [the indulged ministers] found it needful to retire from their houses<sup>1</sup>."

AMONG the episcopal papers at Aberdeen, there is a copy of a royal proclamation of Indulgence to House Conventicles and Nonconformist Ministers, who were to be permitted to assemble in houses any where except in Edinburgh, Musselburgh, Dalkeith, St. Andrews, Glasgow, and Stirling. At the same time armed field conventicles were sternly prohibited, under the penalty of being considered in open rebellion, and to incur punishment accordingly—the ministers capitally, and the hearers by fines. But the indulged nonconformists were not at liberty to marry or baptize out of their own congregations, and were to administer their sacrament all in one day, so as to avoid the assembling of a great concourse of people to any one sacramental occasion<sup>2</sup>.

THE NUMBERS that attended the field conventicles, and the audacity of the covenanters, now excited serious alarm in the council for the peace of the country; and they issued a proclamation, stating, "the lords of his majesty's privy council, considering that it is notour that there is a party who continue in arms and follow Welsh, Cameron, and some other of their accomplices, at their several field conventicles, do therefore give warrant to the earl of Linlithgow, major-general and commander-in-chief of his majesty's forces, to order a com-

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 38.

<sup>2</sup> MS. Aberdeen Chest, B. 42.



manded party of his majesty's forces, horse, foot, and dragoons, to prosecute and follow that party into whatsoever place Welsh, Cameron, Kidd, or Douglass keep their field conventicles, or any other whom that standing party follows; with power to the commander of that party to give money for intelligence where those conventicles are appointed, that thereby they may be able to seize and apprehend such as shall be found at the said conventicles, and, in case of resistance, to pursue them to the death; declaring the said officers and soldiers shall not be called in question therefore civilly or criminally. And recommend it to the earl of Linlithgow to muster his majesty's forces, and see that they be full and ready for action." This proclamation, but especially that necessary clause in it to protect the military from legal penalties in the execution of their orders, is charged home upon the primate as his "last legacy, and an earnest of what he would have essayed had he got up to court;" but which the author of the True and Impartial Account says, is "neither more nor less than a manifest falsehood." Before issuing the above proclamation, the council sent it up to court for the king's approbation, who not only signed it, but, when it was returned, he wrote the following letter to the council:—

"CHARLES REX. Right trusty, &c.—Having seen and considered the proclamation for the suppression of field conventicles, which, in your letter of the 1st instant, to the duke of Lauderdale, you sent hither for our perusal and approbation before the publication thereof, we are so well pleased with it, and do judge it so fit for that purpose, as that we do give you our hearty thanks for that good effect of your care and diligence to promote our service, and preserve the peace of that our ancient kingdom; and do return it to you without any delay, to the end that no time may be lost in the prosecution of so good a work; whereof that you may have our full and solemn approbation, we have thought fit ourself to sign the draft you sent up as you have it here enclosed; and we are fully resolved upon all occasions to assert and maintain our authority, and to put the laws in execution as well against those who by private and underhand dealings, endeavour to create any disturbance to our government there, either in church or state (where the same shall be made manifest to us), as against those who of late have assumed the boldness more openly to attempt the raising of a rebellion there, by frequent and numerous convocations in arms at field conventicles, (these nurseries of rebellion,) and many other irregular and illegal



courses; so we do hereby give you our assurance, that you shall have all due countenance, encouragement, and protection from us, in the discharge of your duties in our service, against all who shall traduce or asperse any of your proceedings, which have been so agreeable to law and reason, as we cannot but admire the impudence (no less than the malice) of such persons as study to create a contrary opinion of your actions. We did receive such full satisfaction from these lords, you sent up last year to inform us when there was some noise raised (indeed very unjustly) against your procedure, as we do now think fit to desire that some of your number may repair hither with all convenient expedition, to the end we may not only receive from them a full account of the state of our affairs there, but also may have an opportunity to signify our pleasure in many things (after conference with them) which at present we cannot impart in a letter. And because the noblemen who are employed in our service are either of our privy council or have command of our forces, or both, and therefore cannot well be absent at this time, we have thought fit rather to require you to send three of our officers of state; *viz.* our clerk-register, our advocate, and our justice-clerk, together with the president of our college of Justice, and sir George Mackenzie, of Tarbert, our justice-general, seeing from them we can have full information, as well in matters of law as in fact. So expecting from them a ready compliance with this our pleasure, and not doubting the continuance of your care and diligence in all things that concern our service, and the peace and quiet of that our kingdom, we bid you heartily farewell.—Given at our court at Whitehall, the 6th day of May, 1679, and of our reign the thirty-first year. By his majesty's command, (Signed) “LAUDERDALE.”

THE SOUTHERN PART of the kingdom was at this time in a dreadful state. Religion had assumed the reality of armed rebellion; and conventicles, under the pretence of preaching the gospel, were the rendezvouses for preparing their warriors for the field, and that in such numbers, too, that the handfuls of troops that were sent to disperse them were frequently beaten and dispersed. The Covenanters complained of the insolence of the soldiers; but this was occasioned by the rough usage that the military met with from the saints, and which provoked retaliation. Many of the soldiers were murdered by the saints, and there cannot be any doubt but that the murders at the farm-house on Loudon-hill, already related, had been resolved on by those who attended the conventicle that





same day, and that the farmer's family were engaged in the conspiracy, otherwise they could not have given warning, by which one of the men preserved his life. The shooting an officer in the execution of his duty, and the trepanning of major Johnstonin to a house, with the attempt to assassinate him and his party, are instances to show that murder was not an *accidental* circumstance, arising out of collisions with angry opponents, but the cool deliberate determination to fulfil the obligations of the Covenant, by despatching those whom they considered their enemies. But these enemies of law and order could not have become so outrageous, had they not been secretly instigated and protected by the great men connected with the party in opposition to Lauderdale's government. The feudal powers of the nobility and gentry were such, that they could have suppressed the nuisance at once, by their patriarchal authority over their tenants and servants, if they had chosen; and their having declared their inability to do so, clearly marks their connivance with the field conventicles.

THE ALONE KING AND HEAD of the church, which is His body, and who is also King of kings and Lord of lords, hath said, "The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat; all, therefore, whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do<sup>1</sup>." In Scripture, Scribe is a name of office, and signifies one who makes his living by writing<sup>2</sup>; a secretary of state—as Shebna the Scribe<sup>3</sup>; an officer in the church, or an expounder or interpreter of Scripture<sup>4</sup>. The Pharisees were a sect, or fraternity, in the Jewish church, that pretended to live by peculiar rules, and more strictly than other men; among whom there were priests, scribes, and laymen<sup>5</sup>. These were to be obeyed, because they sat in Moses' seat; which means, first, the throne or seat of civil government; and, next, the seat of doctrine and spiritual jurisdiction proper to the governors of the church. The meaning, therefore, of Our Lord's words is, that in all things that belong of right to the office and authority of the crown and the mitre, the people are bound to honour and obey the king, and all that are put in authority under him; and to submit themselves to all their governors, teachers, spiritual pastors, and masters, because the office of instructing and prescribing was entrusted to them. And, therefore, the right conclusion is evident, that it was the duty of the Covenanters to have submitted to the directions and prescriptions of their temporal and spiritual rulers, but especially to the latter, because

St. Matt. xxiii. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Psalm xlv. 1.

Isa. xxxvi. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Ezra, vii. 6—Matt. xiii. 52.

<sup>5</sup> St. John. iii. 1-10—

Acts, v. 4.





they succeeded to and represented a greater than Moses in the oversight and government of the church, even Christ and his apostles, in all those things that they persuade or prescribe, which are not contrary to the Word of God and the established government of the kingdom; not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake. But the prophets of the covenant prophesied falsely, and the people loved to have it so; their ministers taught them to believe that the bishops were limbs of antichrist, the liturgy a rag of popery, and conformity a mark of the beast; and the much-abused prelates might, with justice, have complained, in the language of Isaiah, "O, my people, they that lead thee cause thee to err."



## CHAPTER XXXIX.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP SHARP.

## MURDER OF THE ARCHBISHOP OF ST. ANDREWS.

1679.—The government suspicious of the intentions of the covenanters.—The primate resolves to go to court—his murder resolved on.—An attack on sheriff Carmichael feigned—their real views.—The primate crosses the Forth—slept at Kennoway—set out next morning—his deportment—Hackston chosen captain—his reasons for declining the post—Balfour of Burley chosen—their manifesto—previous operations of the conspirators—deposition before the privy council—names of the conspirators—their fanaticism.—An account of the primate's escape on a former occasion—the pursuit—the primate wounded—a second wound—Russell's speech—their violence—Miss Sharp wounded—his last appeal to the murderers—the finishing assault—Miss Sharp—they rob the coach—Burnet's account.—The primate is accused of being a wizard—his composure and christian spirit—his character.—Remarks.—Hind Let Loose.

1679.—IN A NOTE TO his History of the Church of Scotland, Dr. Cook says—"The account which this historian [Wodrow], who was *not partial* to Sharp, gives of the murder, must, I should think, shock every mind not sunk in depravity<sup>1</sup>." And Dr. Burns, in the spirit of the covenant, says—"It is true he [Wodrow] does not deal in the harsh invective of the high cavalier party on such an occasion, and he would be *far from* maintaining that the prelate did not, in point of fact, *deserve* to die. . . . He just takes that view of it which every moderate and fair man on a proper knowledge of the dreadful state of the country at the time, and the agency of Sharp in the persecutions, will be inclined to take." Perhaps we shall be considered neither "fair nor moderate" by the descendants of the covenanters, if we say with Mr. Skinner—"At last, by the repeated instigations of him who was a murderer from the beginning, and under the permission of heaven, for the filling up the measure of their iniquities, they put in execution the horrid purpose, which they had once [twice] attempted and

<sup>1</sup> Vol. iii. p. 346.



still had their hearts set upon, against the one person in the kingdom whom, next to majesty, they most feared and hated.'

It was surmised by government that the fanatics had some dangerous projects in contemplation at this period, and that they were encouraged in their seditious designs by some noblemen who kept themselves in the background. The Covenanted presbyterians were merely, in the language of the times, the "under-spur leathers," while "in the court itself there were then an Absalom and an Achitophel too, who were stealing away the hearts of the people; and they did not want many abettors, some of whom, perhaps, were the king's own servants<sup>1</sup>." To complain of these traitors, and to warn the king of his danger, archbishop Sharp resolved to take a journey to court; but it was previously necessary for his affairs, to return to St. Andrews.

THE MURDER of the primate had been long premeditated, and, in fact, it was a natural consequence of the principles displayed in the Covenant, and the murderous doctrines taught by the field preachers. Wodrow delicately calls his execrable murder "a violent death," and himself "a bloody and perfidious man<sup>2</sup>." Russell, in his account of this "fact," as it is likewise cautiously denominated, calls his murder a "*duty*," and says, "they resolved to fall upon Carmichel at St. Andrews;" that is, to murder him who was the sheriff-substitute, and an agent of the councils for the suppression of the conventicles. "Some objected, what if he should be in the prelate's house, what should be done in such a case? Whereupon all present judged *duty to hang both over port [gate], especially the BISHOP*, it being by many of the LORD'S people and MINISTERS judged a *DUTY long since, not to suffer such a person to live*, who had shed, and was shedding, so much of the blood of the saints, and knowing that other WORTHY CHRISTIANS had used means to get him upon the road before<sup>3</sup>." So determined were these "saints" on their bloody work, that a short time before they sent John Archie and Henry Corbie into the western counties "to know the minds of other ministers and christians, which was evidently enough made known, by what was coming to their ears every day, of their *resisting of soldiers*, both at meetings and for paying cess." Going armed to their conventicles, resisting the troops, and murdering the soldiers, were therefore parts of an organised plan for the *extirpation* of the bishops;

<sup>1</sup> True and Impartial Account, p. 72.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 40

<sup>3</sup> Russell's Account of the Murder of Archbishop Sharp, appended to Kirkton's History, pp. 107, 408.





not, as Wodrow falsely alleges, for self-defence, but for the bloody purpose of murdering their adversaries when opportunity offered. Russell continues—"One Alexander Smith, a weaver at the Struther Dyke, *a very godly man*, after prayer anent<sup>1</sup> their clearness in the matter about [the murder of] Carmichel, desired all to go forward, seeing that God's glory was the only motive that was moving them to offer themselves to act for his broken-down work; and if the Lord saw it meet to deliver Carmichel into their hands, he would bring him in their way, *and employ them in some piece of work more honourable to God and them both*<sup>2</sup>; namely, the murder of the archbishop, which these "very godly men" premeditated.

ON FRIDAY, the 2d of May, the primate crossed the Forth, accompanied by his eldest daughter Isabel; on the evening of that day he slept at captain Seton's, Kennoway, where he remained all night. Two of the murderers, well mounted and armed, came into that village about midnight, and made anxious enquiries whether or not the archbishop slept at the house of captain Seton. Upon receiving the required information, they hastily rode off and joined the conspirators, who were on the alert the next morning, when several parties of horsemen were seen to traverse the road betwixt Kennoway and St. Andrews. Dr. Monro waited on the primate on Saturday morning, previous to his leaving Kennoway, and found that his spirits were very much depressed; and it was remarked, that on Friday night and Saturday morning he ate and drank very sparingly. He was likewise longer and more fervent than usual in his private devotions, as if he had had a presentiment of his approaching and fearful end. His religious deportment on Saturday morning was so impressive, that the learned and pious Dr. Monro said he believed he was inspired.

ON SATURDAY morning, about nine o'clock, they continued their journey. The primate was a man of good natural courage, and having been so providentially preserved from the merciless hands of these fierce zealots for nearly twenty years, he had brought his mind to entire confidence in the protection of God. In his conversation he dwelt entirely on the vanity of life, the certainty of death and judgment, the necessity of faith, good works, repentance, and daily renovation by the Holy Spirit; and, as if he had presaged sudden death, he gave his

<sup>1</sup> A vulgar Scotticism, which means "respecting," "regarding," "opposite to," "over against."

<sup>2</sup> Russell's Account of the Murder of Archbishop Sharp, appended to Kirkton's History, pp. 409, 410.



daughter much pious counsel and advice; her answers to which were so satisfactory, that he embraced and formally blessed her, about half an hour before he was assaulted. As he passed the farm-house of Magus, he remarked to his daughter, "*There lives an ill-natured man: God preserve us, my child.*" The name of this ill-natured man was John Miller, and he was certainly in the secret of the murderers' intention, for on the 1st of May the conspirators met, and concerted the plan of the murder at his house, which they would not have done had he not been privy to their design. When the conspirators passed his house, they inquired of him if that was the bishop's coach? From fear he made no answer; but his servant-woman ran up to Russell, who made the inquiry, and assured him that it was. The conspirators, except Rathillet, dropt their cloaks here when pursuing the archbishop, and he, like Saul, kept them till their return, for which he was on the watch, and delivered their cloaks, remarking, "Lord forgive you, sirs, for doing this so near my house, for it will herrie [ruin] me."—Not for doing the bloody deed itself, but *for doing it so near to his house*, and so too, by consequence, to implicate him.

THE PARTY engaged about this "very godly" work, chose Hackston of Rathillet for their captain, and "blessed the Lord that had put it into the minds of his people to offer themselves for carrying on the Lord's work!" They had appointed the next Saturday for seeking the Lord's mind further into the matter, and "that the Lord would stir up the minds of *his people* to appear for his cause." Hackston declined to act as captain, because he had a personal quarrel with the primate. The archbishop's chamberlain had arrested him for embezzling the property of one Lovel, of Cannuchie, to whom the primate was guardian. This Lovel was the archbishop's vassal, and had left Hackston guardian to his children, who was confirmed in his office by the primate, as the superior, in February, 1677. The rents of the estate of Cannuchie were due to the primate by decree and sentence of the judges; but out of kindness to Lovel's children he authorised Hackston to collect the rents, and sell the produce, that he might allow them an annual maintenance. Hackston collected the rents and sold the produce; but instead of accounting for the proceeds, he purchased arms for the Covenanters. The primate accepted his bond for the debt, but Hackston still evaded the payment; and in March, 1678, during the primate's absence, and without his knowledge, his grace's chamberlain arrested him for the debt. His grace would not have consented to



his imprisonment, had he not been credibly informed that the rents of Cannuchie, and the produce sold, had been disposed of by Hackston for horses and munitions of war, for equipping the conventicle saints, which they considered only as a spoiling the Egyptians. He continued in prison, till Dr. Falconer, his relation, became bound for the debt; and in consequence, "private pique, aggravating presbyterian rancour, inflamed him against Sharp." As he declined to act as their captain, John Balfour, of Burley, was chosen to command this body of very godly men, and whom Wodrow always delicately terms "the captain," but carefully abstains from naming him, but whom Mr. Kirkpatrick Sharp describes as a ferocious enthusiast, "although he was by some reckoned none of the most religious. He was a little man, squint-eyed, and of a very fierce aspect!"

THEY COMMENCED operations by drawing up the paper below<sup>1</sup>, which Hackston posted on the church-door of Cupar, in Fife, on Wednesday, the 30th of April. Next morning this paper struck terror into the whole inhabitants of Cupar, but particularly those employed in the execution of the laws; and they were further encouraged in their bloody purpose by Andrew Turnbull, who informed them that "all the west was already in arms<sup>2</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> "To all and sundry to whose hands these presents shall come, but especially to the magistrates and inhabitants of the town of Cupar, in Fife:—

"Be it known to all men, That whereas under a pretext of law, though most falsely, there are most abominable, illegal, and oppressive robberies and spoils committed in this shire, by captain Carnegie, and his soldiers, by virtue of a precept from that adulterer, Wm. Carmichel, held on to it by that perjured apostate, prelate Sharp, a known enemy to all godliness: These are therefore to declare to all that shall any way be concerned in this villainous robbery and oppression, either by assisting, resetting, levying, or in any manner of way countenancing the same (however they thought themselves at present guarded by a military force, and these persons spoiled, despicable), that they shall be looked on as accessory to the robbery, and should meet with a punishment answerable to the villainy, and that by a party equal to all who durst own them in these courses; and that so soon as God shall enable them thereto, whose names they shall find under subscribed, in these following letters, A, B, C, &c."—MSS. Ep. Chest. Russell's Account, p. 411. True and Imp. Account, Appendix to the Preface, p. liii.

<sup>2</sup> The following facts were deposed on oath before the privy council:—

"ON THURSDAY, the first day of May, in the morning, there were three or four of the villains at John Millar's house in Magus, and they had a discourse of my lord St. Andrews, and that his daughter was a high-handed gentlewoman, indeed, who refused the laird of Barns, who was seeking to marry her: he was a well-born gentleman, and they were not so good, but lower than he. Another answered, *We shall make him lower ere it be long.* Then they fell all a whispering for some space, and thereafter one of them broke out thus:—We will be able to do it amongst ourselves, we need no other help; Robert Black will be one. John Millar was present all the while; and this Robert Black is the tenant in Baldinn<sup>v</sup> at whose house either all the nine, or most part of them, were either all





THE PLOT to murder the primate was of long standing ; and it appears that his grace was not the only one marked out for slaughter. There is no doubt but that at this time they intended to have murdered Mr. Carmichael, the sheriff-sub-

the night before, or breakfasted with him in the morning ; and it is reported, that at their parting, Black's wife, (when one of them kissed her), did bid God bless him and prosper him ; and if Long Lesslie [the incumbent of Ceres] be with him, lay him on the green too : at which he answered, ' There is the hand shall do it.'

"IT IS ALSO reported for a certainty, that Andrew Turnbull, tenant to Broom-hall, crossed the water the same tide with my lord, and was the man that came to Kennoway, asking if my lord was quartered there, and thereafter was present at the fact, and encouraged the rest to it ; and said that all the west was up already.

"WHEN the murderers returned to the spot, John Millar spoke with them, and his first expression was, Lord forgive you, sirs, for doing this so near my house, for it will herry me ; and thereafter he and his servants gave them their two cloaks and coat, which they dropped at his dykes, when they rode to the action.

"SOME FOUR hours after my lord's corpse was brought into St. Andrews, Henderson in Kilbrachmont his son rode through St. Andrews on a bay horse, and at the Abbey-gate asked twice at one Habistone, if the good man of the abbey was dead ? and then rode peaceably away, and now talks of it freely enough, and the most part of this time since hath kept his father's house unquestioned until this hour, although it be not doubted that he was an actor.

"THE NIGHT before the murder. John Balfour and Rathillet came to the house of Rathillet, with a webster [weaver] in Balmarino parish, and stayed no longer but till the horses were baited, and Rathillet changed his breeches, and immediately horsed. John Balfour had his beard long, at least ten weeks grown ; and there was no mention of the murder at Rathillet, till about nine o'clock at night the next day, at which time there came in a person to the house, and rounded [whispered] something to John Balfour's wife, who, within a little, (without any change of countenance), said, the bishop has taken a sleep in the home-going. For certain, John Balfour was not at Kinloch since the murder, nor for two days before.

"IN THE BEGINNING of the week after the murder, John Balfour's wife fled from Rathillet, leaving behind her a child, to whom she gave suck, and was dislocate in one of the arms, whereof the child was like to die : within two days after, all the servants about the house fled, except one lass that attends that child. Robert Dingwall, son to William Dingwall, in Coldhame, near Leslie, is reported to have been at the murder ; and his father being examined at Cupar, depones, that on Saturday morning, young Inchdairnie and Henry Shaw took away his son, well mounted and armed, but whither he knew not, and that he had not seen him since.

"THERE IS ALSO one Robert Forrest, a bonnet-maker, who left Dundee for adultery, who drinking that Saturday morning with William Leslie, my lord chancellor's gardener, and John Colville, his rider, refused to drink a health, with this expression—' Ere forty-eight hours ye shall get a health to drink indeed ;' and before the news came the length of Leslie, he fled, and hath not since appeared.

"ROBERT BLACK and John Miller, with their servants, know all the persons, and for certain have prevaricated in their examinations at Cupar, and ever will, except the truth be extorted ane other way, for it is well known that the murderers are all as dear to them as their nearest relatives, and their giving in delations against them is called by them and their party a betraying of the godly."—MS. Papers in the Episcopal Chest at Aberdeen, A. 18.





stitute, as well as Mr. Leslie, the parish priest of Ceres, and made many efforts, both on the 2d and 3d of May, to fall in with the former, in which they were happily disappointed. These blood-thirsty saints intended to have committed three murders on Saturday, the 3d of May, as a preparative to keeping a field-conventicle on Sunday, the 4th, "resolving to resist such as should offer to oppose the meeting, and there was one away for bringing of a minister<sup>1</sup>." This is a lively commentary on their principles; and shows with how little reason the government of Charles II. has been accused of tyranny, in suppressing such "rendezvouses of rebellion," and "nurseries for murder."

ON FRIDAY NIGHT, the 2d of May, the thirteen murderers met on the moor, north-east from Gilston, one of whom was sent away, the rest "not being clear to reveal to him what was designed." He knew of their intention to murder Carnichel; but it seems they did not consider it prudent to communicate to him their intention of murdering the primate<sup>2</sup>. "These, after a while advising what to do, and no more coming, and fearing they should be discovered, went all to Robert Black's in Baldinny, himself being absent for fear of being taken, where, putting up their horses, and *praying (!)* they laid down in the barn to sleep." They afterwards went eastwards, and were met by Andrew Guillon, who advised them where to go, so as *to fall in with* the archbishop. At this time "Balfour said, *he was sure they had something to do*, for he being at his uncle's house, intending towards the Highlands, because of the violent rage in Fife, *was pressed in spirit to return*; and *he inquiring the Lord's mind anent it, got that word borne in upon him*, GO AND PROSPER. So he, coming from prayer, wondering what it could mean, went again [to inquire the Lord's mind], and got it confirmed by that Scripture, GO, HAVE NOT I SENT YOU? whereupon, he durst no more question, but presently returned<sup>3</sup>." So here these murderers proceeded under a strong delusion, and by the instigation of the devil, who was a murderer from the beginning, as if acting under as divine a warrant as that under which Saul went forth to "slay both man and woman, infant and suckling, ox and sheep, camel and

<sup>1</sup> Russell's Account, p. 411.

<sup>2</sup> The twelve conspirators names were—David Hackston of Rathillet, John Balfour of Kinlock, James Russell in Kettle, George Fleman in Balbathie, Andrew Henderson and Alexander Henderson in Kilbrachmont, William Dalziel in Caddam, James, Alexander, and George Balfour, in Gilston, Thomas Ness in P—, and Andrew Guillon, weaver, in Balmarino.

<sup>3</sup> Russell's Account, p. 413.



ass." Searching for Carmichel was a mere pretence; and as a proof of this, that amiable lady, Mrs. Black, of Baldinny, sent a boy on Saturday morning, to inquire how they had sped, and to inform them that the archbishop's coach was approaching; "which they seeing betwixt Ceres and Blebo-hole, said, 'Truly this is of God, and it seemeth that God hath delivered him into our hands; let us not draw back, but pursue;' for all looked on it, considering the former circumstances, as a clear call from God to *fall upon him*<sup>1</sup>."

HERE RATHILLET surrendered his command of the party, saying, "as he had a private quarrel with the primate, his revenge would mar the glory of the action." James Russell said, "it had been borne in upon his spirit some days before in prayer, having more than ordinary overlettings of the spirit, that the LORD would employ him in some piece of service, ere it was long, and that there would be *some great man* who was an enemy to the kirk of GOD, cut off. . . . And seeing he had been at several meetings, with several godly men in other places of the kingdom, who not only judged it *their duty to take that wretch's life*, and *some others*, but had *essayed it TWICE before*, and came to the shire [of Fife] for that purpose, and once wonderfully he *escaped* at the Queensferry, for he went down to Leith with the chancellor in a boat; in the meantime they were on the other side coming over, but knew nothing of it; and the LORD had kept them back at that time, he having more blood to shed, for this was about eight days before Mr. James Mitchel was executed; but he said he was sure that he had a clear call at that time, and that it seemed the LORD had delivered that wretch into their hand, and he durst not draw back, but go forward, considering what engagements the LORD had taken from him the day before; for though the LORD had kept him back formerly, *he doubted not but his offer was acceptable to the LORD*<sup>2</sup>."

THIS is the language of one of the principal actors in this horrid drama. Mitchel's attempt was not the solitary act of a desperate fanatic, impelled by a sudden impulse and a favourable opportunity; but the formed and systematic design of the whole party. Those who were capable, and whose religious principles taught them to premeditate, and make so many attempts to take away the primate's life, as well as the lives of the other bishops, had no right to complain of the severities of the government. Such *principles* would disgrace a horde of Tartars, and ought not to have been tolerated by any govern-

<sup>1</sup> Russell's Account, p. 414.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. p. 415.



ment. Those men who justify and applaud the murder of the archbishop in the present day are partakers of the guilt of those fanatics who actually imbrued their hands in his blood. But what must be thought of those ministers of the Solemn League and Covenant who taught and inculcated such bloody tenets as works well pleasing and acceptable to God?

As THE ARCHBISHOP'S equipage drove past the Struthers, he sent a servant to say to the earl of Crawford that it was not in his power to wait on him at that time. Soon after passing the farm-house at Magus, between eleven and twelve o'clock, the coachman, looking round, saw the conspirators riding at full speed, pistols in hand, with swords drawn, and hanging from their wrists; and he immediately called to the postillion to drive on, for he suspected their pursuers had evil intentions. Finding his coach driven at such an increased speed, his grace looked out to see what was the cause. Russell was by this time so near as to see and recognise the archbishop; and he immediately fired, and called to the rest to come up. The primate urged the coachman to drive on, and he kept on for half a mile before they overtook it; and would certainly have escaped, had not Henderson, who was best mounted, got ahead of the postillion, wounded him in the face, and cut his horses' hams; by which means the coach was stopped, and the conspirators got up. On this, the archbishop, turning to his daughter, exclaimed, "Lord have mercy on me." "My poor child, I am gone!" They then fired into the coach, and wounded his grace two inches below the right clavicle or collar-bone, the ball entering betwixt the second and third ribs. This pistol was fired so close to his body that the wadding burnt his gown, and was rubbed off by Miss Sharp. This shot, which alone would have caused his death, was fired by George Fleman, who then rode forward, and seized the horses' bridles on the near side, and held them till George Balfour had fired into the coach. James Russell alighted, and taking Fleman's sword, opened the coach-door, and desired "Judas" to come forth, calling him "dog, betrayer of the *godly*! persecutor of Christ's church, &c." Russell, when he opened the coach-door, furiously desired him to come forth, for the blood he had shed was crying to heaven for vengeance on him, and thrust his shabel or hanger at him, and wounded him in the region of the kidneys. With the disgusting cant of the sect, Russell now said they committed this murder for the glory of God, and said he "declared before the LORD, that it was no particular interest, nor yet for any wrong that he had done to him, but because he had betrayed the church as Judas,





and had wrung his hands these eighteen or nineteen years in the blood of the saints, but especially at Pentland, and Mr. Guthrie and Mr. Mitchel, and James Learmonth; and *they were sent by God to execute His vengeance* on him this day, and desired him to repent, and come forth<sup>1</sup>." John Balfour, who was still on horseback, also commanded him to come forth, and fired his pistol at him; James Russell desired him again to come forth, "and make for death, judgment, and eternity<sup>2</sup>." They called to him to "come out, cruel bloody traitor!" to which he answered, that he never wronged any man, and added, "Gentlemen, if you will spare my life, whatever else you will please to do, you shall never be questioned for it." They told him there was no mercy for a Judas, an enemy and traitor to the cause of Christ. Miss Sharp now sprung out, and falling on her knees, with tears and prayers, begged her father's life; but her tender appeal had no effect on the fanatical enthusiasts; they threw her down, trampled on her, and wounded her. Seeing the brutal treatment of his daughter, the archbishop came composedly out of the coach, and calmly told them, "he did not know that he had ever injured any of them, but if he had, he was ready to make reparation; beseeching them to spare his life, and he would never trouble them for that violence; but prayed them to consider, before they brought the guilt of innocent blood upon themselves."

"THE REVERENCE of his person, his composed carriage, and his undaunted courage in addressing himself so resolutely and gravely to them, surprised and awed the villains, and one of them, relenting, cried, *Spare those grey hairs!* but their hot zeal consuming their natural pity, replied—"He must die," calling him 'traitorous villain, Judas, enemy to God and his people (!), and telling him he must now receive the reward of his apostacy, and enmity to the people of God<sup>3</sup>.'" He now said, "Well, then, I shall expect no mercy from you; but promise me to spare my poor child, and for this, sir, give me your hand," offering his hand to John Balfour, and added, "I will come to you, for I know you are a gentleman and will save my life; but I am gone already, and what needs more?" By this time his grace felt the pain of his wounds increasing, and that death would ensue even though the blood-thirsty murderers had done no more. Reaching out his hand to him, to entreat the murderer to spare his daughter's life, and looking him full in the face, the bloody villain started back, and

<sup>1</sup> Russell's Account, p. 417.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. p. 418.

<sup>3</sup> Fanatical Moderation, Second Letter, p. 65.



by a mighty blow cut him more than half through the wrist. Wodrow and Dr. Burns most malignantly and falsely say, the archbishop could not be prevailed on to pray; and that there was no sign of contrition in him. This was rather an awful moment for the calm exercise of prayer; notwithstanding, such was the composure of this good man in his present peril, that he did pray, and that for his murderers too. The falsehood of saying he refused to pray was fabricated for the purpose of blackening his character, and keeping up the delusion in the public mind, that he was familiar with the devil, and practised necromancy. But so far was he from refusing to pray, as they falsely and maliciously allege, that seeing all hope of softening the barbarians vain, he requested a short space for prayer. But this the assassins *refused*, exclaiming—"God would not hear the prayers of such a dog." "I hope," says he, "ye will give me some time to pour out my soul to God, and I shall pray for you; and presently falling on his knees, he said, *LORD forgive them, and I forgive you all; LORD JESUS, receive my spirit*<sup>1</sup>."

WHILST HE was praying for himself and his murderers, they cut at him furiously on the hands; and Balfour gave him one tremendous back-handed cut above the left eye, on which his grace exclaimed, "*Now you have done the turn;*" and then fell forward, with his head resting on his arms, as if he had been to compose himself for sleep. The murderers then cut and hacked the back of his head, as he lay extended on the ground, and gave him sixteen wounds on the head, till they gashed the back part into one hole. "In effect, the whole occipital part was but one wound." Some of them, to make sure work, stirred his brains in his skull with the points of their swords, and pieces of the shattered skull and brains were found some days afterwards on the ground. After finishing their long-desired work, they made his servants swear not to discover them, and then bade them, in derision, *take up their priest* and be gone.

IN THE ACTING of this dreadful tragedy, Miss Sharp was held fast by Andrew Guillon, from whom she struggled hard to escape. She screamed, and said, "This is murder." To whom Guillon replied, "It is not murder, but God's vengeance on him for murdering many poor souls in the kirk of Scotland." In her efforts to save her father, she was severely wounded in the thigh, and likewise in one of her thumbs, while she threw herself

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Privy Council.



between the murderers and her father, on whose lifeless body she swooned. After this, they rifled his grace's pockets and robbed the coach, in which they found Miss Sharp's dressing-case, containing some gold and other articles. They carried off his grace's night-bag, bible, girdle, and some important papers. They disarmed and robbed his servants, one of whom, named Wallace, offered to make resistance, but he was severely wounded in the face by Russell, and his pockets rifled by the pious and godly executors of God's vengeance. There was no money found on the archbishop nor in the coach, save what they stole from Miss Sharp; but it is singular that the eulogists of this parricide are most highly indignant that the saints have been accused of *robbery*; which is, indeed, a straining at gnats and swallowing camels.

"THUS FELL," says the account published by authority of the privy council, "that excellent prelate (whose character and worthy acts deserve, and no doubt will find, some excellent pen), by the hands of nine fanatic ruffians. That they were so is not to be doubted, their names being all now known, and all of them denounced or intercommuned, for frequenting field conventicles, and the known champions of that party in the shire of Fife. Besides, their bloody sanctified discourse at the time of their bloody actings shews what temper and spirit they were of. I have done with my relation (attested to me before famous witnesses, by my lord's daughter, and those of his servants that were so unfortunate as to be spectators of this execrable villainy) when I have observed how ridiculous the author of the pretended true one is, when he endeavours to discover the occasion of that murder of the archbishop of St. Andrews; for what need was there of anything more to provoke them, than his being an archbishop and the primate of Scotland; and the most active as well as the most reverend father of this church? Was it not for this reason that he was, on the streets of Edinburgh, shot at by Mr. James Mitchel, while in his own coach? Was not this the reason that these fanatical books from Holland, both some time ago and of late, marked out his '*sacrum caput*,' as they term it, and devoted him to a cruel death, and gave out predictions that he should die so? which they easily might, being so active in stimulating and prompting instruments to fulfil their own prophecies. 'O Lord, how unsearchable are thy judgments, and thy ways past finding out!'<sup>1</sup>"

<sup>1</sup> Narrative of the manner of the execrable murder of the late lord archbishop of St. Andrews, published by authority of the privy council, in folio, in





THAT PRESBYTERIAN authors, even of the present day, should exult over this effect of the principles of their own covenant, is not to be wondered at; but that a bishop should have identified himself with these murderers, and speak of this murder as “the just judgment of God<sup>1</sup>,” is passing strange; and Burnet farther insinuates the accusation that the archbishop was a wizard, and had purchased a spell from the devil to keep him shot-free. “One of them,” says he, “fired a pistol at him, which burnt his coat and gown, but the shot did *not* go into his body<sup>2</sup>.” In contradiction of this diabolical falsehood, there is a certificate of three surgeons and a doctor of medicine, who were sent by the privy council to view and embalm the body, that the pistol-shot entered “two or three inches below the right clavicle, betwixt the second and third ribs;” and this wound alone would have occasioned his death, even if he had received none other. After murder had done its worst, he gives him one stab more, and endeavours to sacrifice the archbishop’s memory to the obloquy of posterity; and it is likely, if the “magical secret and suspicious things” had really been found upon him, his informer, Welsh, and others, would have better explained such a sin to the world, and made more noise about them. Having done their “very godly deed,” the murderers did not stop to search his pockets or to examine his wounds, and therefore they could not tell whether the shot had entered or not, or whether he carried “a magical spell,” for they hastened the murder in the most furious manner, and then rode off in haste. No man could have shewn more christian courage and resolution in such a trying moment than did this christian martyr. He cautioned his murderers, who “gnashed on him with their teeth,” against shedding blood; but when he saw their determination not to allow him the least time to recommend his soul to God, he bespoke their mercy for his daughter, and had only time to say he forgave them himself, and to pray God to forgive them also. This is an instance of composure and magnanimity in death, which is, perhaps, unparalleled in history since the first christian martyrdom; and if death by stoning be justly considered martyrdom, surely murder by shooting and stabbing, *on account of episcopacy*, may merit the same title. This was the crime with which his murderers upbraided him when they killed him, that he had embraced episcopacy and had been true to it, as the truth and institution of





God; and he had now the christian fortitude to die for it, and also to pray for his murderers.

BUT BURNET still farther maliciously concludes, "this was the dismal fate of that unhappy man, who certainly needed a little more time to have fitted him for an unchangeable state. But I would fain hope he had all his punishment in that terrible conclusion of his life." All men are not alike prepared for sudden death; but, as before mentioned, this martyr's conduct on the morning of his murder shews that he was in a very fit state to die, and his sufferings were such as his Lord and his God, into whose custody he recommended his parting spirit, had warned him and all His true disciples to expect. "The time cometh, that whosoever *killeth* you will think that he doeth God service." Now this prediction may much more literally be applied to their successors than to the apostles themselves, because *they* were put to death by heathens who knew not God, and therefore could not pretend to serve Him; but this worthy martyr's murderers called themselves christians, and actually boasted of the acceptable service they had done to God. The author of the *Hind Let Loose* vindicates this fulfilment of prophecy, and all similar "attempts for cutting off such monsters of nature, as *lawful* and *laudable*;" and to this vindication Dr. Burns adds his approving note,— "in the circumstances of the country at that time." No circumstances can justify murder, or render it lawful or laudable; but it becomes more heinous when perpetrated on the persons of those who by their office are consecrated to God's service, and represent the person of Jesus Christ. Whosoever receive the apostles and their successors, receive Christ; yea, the gift to any of His disciples of a cup of cold water, in the true spirit of faith and obedience, has the promise of reward. But this christian martyr imitated his heavenly father's perfection, and not only forgave those who cursed, hated, and despitefully used him, but he blessed them and prayed for them, which was fulfilling the condition which our Lord exacted for the forgiveness of his own sins and infirmities.

BURNET would insinuate as much as that the archbishop went straight to hell, an opinion which he probably adopted from his friend Mess. John Welsh; but if it be original, it verifies his own maxim of thinking and speaking ill of all churchmen. Under the guise of affected charity, he reflects most maliciously on the archbishop; but he utters not one word against the "godly men" who committed this most atrocious murder. He seems rather, by his silence, to approve of their cruel fulfilment of prophecy. "No age," says Mr. Elliott, "or his-



tory can scarce parallel so cruel, so barbarous and horrid a piece of villainy, as this of the murderers was ; so likewise we will no less find an unparalleled baseness in the historian. The murderers fell upon him with all the fury that their vile and wicked hearts were capable to vent or perform ; they dragged him out of his coach, and when he desired of them time to pray, they said, he need not pray, *for he was in hell already.*" And if we were to take archbishop Sharp's character from Wodrow and his party, we should conclude that he "was as false as Judas ;" being, says Crookshanks, "an apostate from, and a betrayer of, the cause of Christ . . . the actors could *not*, therefore, be charged with murder, nor the action be esteemed any other but an *extraordinary execution* of the law of God against such a capital offender. Besides, they looked upon themselves as in a state of war, and consequently as having a right to cut off their great enemy. . . . Only it is obvious, that whether the actors were right or wrong, *he met with the just reward* of his deeds, and God was righteous in the providence." Hetherington says, "his death may be justly viewed as an instance of the retributive justice of God."

THE ARCHBISHOP'S character may be gathered even from his enemies, who have exhausted their malice and ingenuity in heaping calumnies upon him, and, as far as lies in their power, of murdering his memory and his character ; but they are declared to be blessed who are reviled, persecuted, and have all manner of evil *falsely* spoken against them by men for Christ's sake, and they are desired to rejoice and be exceeding glad, for great is their reward in heaven. In these particulars, few men have had such good reason to rejoice as this worthy martyr ; and few men have borne such great indignities while living, with such patience and meekness, as he did. Mr. Elliott says of him, "I can justly and on good grounds say, that he was a most reverend and grave churchman, very strict and circumspect in his course of life ; a man of great learning, great wit, and no less great and solid judgment ; a man of great council, most faithful in his episcopal office, most vigilant over the enemies of the church, and most observant of performing the duties of divine worship, both publicly in the house of God and privately in his own family. In a word, none could deserve better the place and dignity of primate of all Scotland. I could say a great deal more in commendation of this most reverend and most worthy primate . . . But if Burnet could have said any thing to stain the archbishop with immo-



rality in his life, he would certainly not have forgotten to have brought it in here; but seeing he had nothing to say upon that head, why should he presume to pronounce such an uncharitable and unwarrantable judgment, 'that he certainly needed a little more time to fit him for an unchangeable state?' Hear what the unjust judge says! He pronounces judgment without evidence. I am confident no good christian will ever pronounce any such sentence as this upon any man that has not been profligate and vicious in his deportment, but will rather have charity for him, and so much the more if he had been of civil and sober conversation; and Burnet hath nothing to say to the contrary of the archbishop, and therefore his malicious reflections upon him give us a full demonstration of the baseness of his own spirit<sup>1</sup>."

MR. GEORGE MARTINE, of Claremont, who was commissary clerk of St. Andrews, and one of the primate's household, says of him, that "he was a man of profound wisdom, great courage, wonderful zeal for God and his church, prudent in conduct, and indefatigably laborious. By an unusual sagacity, piety, sense of duty, foresight, and providence, he revived and cherished the small remainder of loyalty that remained amongst the ministry of this church [during the grand rebellion]; and, for seven years, maintained the same in life and being, against all the invidious insinuations, and secret and open practices of the undermining party, till the happy change. And then he piously and dexterously contributed his effectual endeavours most successfully to the resettling of the church of Scotland, in its ancient and primitive offices and government, maugre all the opposition which he met with from divers parties and persuasions; and by God's blessing, and the king's favour on his labours, he effectuated that great work, as if he had been born thereunto, which, it is thought, hardly any other could have done. He got the highest and greatest ecclesiastical dignity in the kingdom from king Charles II., after his restoration to the throne, *as a debt* to his great abilities, and *as a reward* to his merits and services, in labouring might and main to effect and compass the king's restoration; and he no sooner acquired this honour, but the enemies of *kings* and *bishops* in Scotland *persecuted him* with slander and invectives, and the streets swarmed with libels

<sup>1</sup> Specimen of the Bishop of Sarum's Posthumous History of the Affairs of Church and State, pp. 2—10.—Leslie's *Cassandra*, vol. vi. of the *Rehearsals*, p. 212—215.





against him, and all because of his endeavours to set up episcopacy, which was *subverted* by the Solemn League and the usurper Cromwell. Of this fabric he was the sole Atlas; upholding the same by his extraordinary prudence, watchfulness, courage, prayers and tears, against all his enemies, secret and avowed, in the state and in the church; disappointing their designs and defeating their projects. Supported by his own innocence and duty, with the reverence, constancy, and magnanimity proper to himself and his character (undervaluing all perils and dangers), he encouraged some and awed many into compliance; which eminent services to God, the king, and the church, wrought and brought him to a *crown of martyrdom*: for these procured him the inveterate, irreconcilable *envy of the fanatic, turbulent party.*"

THE WHOLE body of the presbyterians have taken the blood of this martyr on themselves and on their children, by approving of the deed, and I have never met with any of them who ever formally, and in a right spirit, disapproved of this murder, but who always reckoned it an act of justice. They wish it to be considered an accidental rencontre, but the circumstances already detailed, and the fact attested by sir William Sharp, that there were twenty-seven men engaged, and there being three roads that he might take, they divided into three parties, each taking one of these roads, so as to make sure of his murder, prove it to have been designed. A presbyterian author, of standard authority, speaks of this sacrilegious and most detestable murder as laudable and lawful:—

"NEVERTHELESS," says Shiels, "such *lawful*, (and, as one would think,) *laudable* attempts for cutting off such monsters of nature, beasts of prey, burthens to the earth, as well as enemies to the commonwealth, are not only condemned as murders and horrid assassinations, but criminally punished as such; and upon this account the sufferings of such as have left a conviction upon the consciences of all that knew them, of their honesty, integrity, soundness in the principles, and seriousness in the practice of religion, have been several, singular, and signally severe, and owned of the Lord, to the admiration of all spectators; some being cruelly tortured and executed to the death for *essayng such execution of judgment, as Mr. Mitchel*; others for *accomplishing it, as Mr. Hackston, of Rathillet*, and others, who avowed their accession to the cutting off that arch-traitor, Sharp, prelate of St. Andrews, and others, for not condemning *that act of justice*, though they were as innocent of the fact as the child unborn."—

"However this may be exploded by this generation as odious



and uncouth doctrine, yet in former periods of this church it hath been *maintained with courage, and asserted with confidence*. How the ancient Scots, even after they received the christian faith, served their tyrants and oppressors—how in the beginning of the Reformation, the killing of the cardinal [Beaton] and of David Rizzio *were and are generally to this day justified*<sup>1</sup>." All the three parties rendezvoused, after the murder, on the afternoon of that memorable day, at a place called the Tewchits, where the whole party went to prayers, first together, and afterwards individually, "with great composure of spirit, and enlargement of heart more nor [than] ordinary, blessing the Lord, who had called them out, and carried them so courageously through so great a work, and *led them by his Holy Spirit* in every step that they stepped in that matter, and prayed that, seeing he had been pleased to honour them *to act for him*, and to *execute his justice upon that wretch* (whom all who loved the welfare of Zion ought to have striven who might have had their hand first on him), might let it be known, by keeping them out of the enemy's hands, and straight in his way, that they did nothing out of any self-prejudice nor self-interest, but only *all they were commanded of God*; and as now he had been pleased to lead and guide them by his Spirit, and made them act valiantly as soldiers of Jesus Christ, not being ashamed of what they had done, but desiring to glorify God for it, and was willing, if he should be pleased to see it for his glory, they were willing to seal the truth of it with their blood, through his grace and strength enabling them, who would send none a warfare on their own charges<sup>2</sup>."

It is very shocking to think what a "strong delusion" possessed the minds not only of these murderers, but of the whole presbyterian party. These men truly verified our blessed Lord's prophetic words; and the reason which Christ assigned for evil-treating the apostles is fully as applicable to those who killed their successor as to them—"because they have *NOT KNOWN the FATHER nor ME*"<sup>3</sup>." Had they known the Father, or had they been guided by the gospel of his Son, they would have obeyed those who were set in authority over them, and have held such in estimation,—they would have obeyed every ordinance of man for Christ's sake, and would have known that the prayers of *unrepentant* murderers, and of men swollen with spiritual pride, are an abomination to the Lord.

BURNET most maliciously and falsely asserts, that all ranks

<sup>1</sup> *Hand Let Loose*, pp. 635-638.

<sup>2</sup> *Russell's Account*, p. 422.

<sup>3</sup> *St. John*, xvi. 2, 3.



of the clergy of the church of England, in those days, "were the most corrupt body of men in the nation;"—"they allowed themselves," he says, "in many indecent liberties—railing scurrilously—cherishing profaneness—implacably set on the ruin of all that separated from them; and, in a word, many of them were a reproach to christianity and their profession." His words having been cited by a most illustrious contemporary as a gross libel on the clergy, he goes on to refute Burnet's assertions, and says, "*That England never saw before a more learned, pious, and eminent clergy, than they were at that time, of which this history speaks.* That it is never to be expected but among so many there will be some who live not up to their profession; but this accuser of the brethren draws his conclusion against the whole body 'as the most corrupt body of men in the nation.' This was not meant as an admonition to them, to amend them, but left as a character upon them for after ages, when they were dead, and could not justify themselves. . . . However, how could so much tenderness of conscience and charity as he pretends to, think it no crime to leave so black and odious a character to posterity of the church, his mother, had she deserved it? But when *the brightest state of our church* since the Reformation is thus represented, what name shall we give it? and coming from a person of figure in it, and living in that time, what would hinder foreign churches to believe it, and our dissenters at home to make their own use of it? . . . And yet in that most corrupt state of the English church, which he does instance, in the reign of Charles II., he might have found, if he had been inclined to have inquired on that side, that more acts of public charity and benefit to the nation were done by the bishops and clergy, in proportion to their revenues, than by five hundred times as much that was in the hands of the laity; and by one single bishop, at one time, more than the saints had done with all the bishops' lands in England during the many years they had possessed them on pretence of making better use of them."





## CHAPTER XL.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP BURNET.

1679.—Council's letter to the king—the king's reply.—A proclamation.—Cargill's intercepted letter.—Council's proceedings.—Wodrow's remarks.—Proposed union between a body of papists and the covenanters.—Conventicle at Galashiels.—Symptoms of rebellion.—Sedition at Rutherglen.—The Rutherglen declaration.—Burning acts of parliament.—Graham of Claverhouse.—Marched against the rebels—seized King—set out for Drumclog.—Amount of the rebel's forces.—The action there.—Retreat of Claverhouse.—Rebels march to Hamilton—and Glasgow—retreat to Hamilton.—Cameron.—A proclamation.—Lord Ross retreats to Kilsyth.—Duke of Monmouth takes the command of the army.—Transactions of the rebels—they advance to Monkland—order the ministers to preach to a certain text.—A reinforcement from Galloway.—Cessnock.—Gordon of Earlston.—A council of war.—Lord Melville held intercourse with the rebels.—Negociations.—The battle of Bothwell Bridge.—The retreat.—The royal clemency.—The prisoners.—A proclamation.—Disposal of the prisoners.—Two ministers and others hanged.—Concluding remarks.

1679.—THE MURDER of the archbishop took place about one o'clock in the afternoon, and the intelligence was brought to Edinburgh the same night; when the privy council immediately assembled, and addressed a letter to his majesty, to inform him of the parricide; in which they say, "The archbishop of St. Andrews, primate of this your majesty's ancient kingdom, one of your majesty's privy council, having been yesterday assassinated upon your majesty's highway, at noon-tide, by ten or eleven fanatic ruffians, bare and open faced, by so many wounds as left one of many instances of their unparalleled cruelty, most of his wounds having been given after he was visibly dead; we could not but acquaint your sacred majesty by this express, by which your majesty may easily consider whether we have been *needlessly* jealous of the cruelty of that sect that is by our enemies said to be so unnecessarily persecuted by us; and by which, and the *many* late murders committed upon your soldiers, and others, for doing your service, your majesty may, and we may certainly conclude





these of that profession will be insatiable, till by crimes and cruelties they do all that in them lies to force your majesty from your royal government; this being the natural product not of their humours, but of their *principles*, out of which these flames will undoubtedly at last arise, that will consume even those who accuse the necessary zeal of your servants, as illegal, oppressing of tender consciences, *albeit we never straitened the liberty of any religion save that which dissolved the principles of human society*, and unhinged your majesty's royal government; nor can we omit upon this occasion to inform your majesty, that this assassination has been revived by a paper lately spread here, whereby the just execution of Mr. James Mitchel, who died for attempting formerly the same crime, is charged upon your ministers and judges as as illegal a murder as that which he designed to commit, though he died inveighing to the greatest height of bitterness against your majesty in his last speech."

IN A LETTER the duke of Lauderdale was informed at the same time of the murder, and of the steps that had been taken; and that some of the forces had pursued some suspected persons who made resistance, and, in consequence, that one of them, who proved to be Andrew Ayton, esq. younger, of Inchdairny, was mortally wounded by a pistol-shot in the scuffle, and that Henry Shaw, an intercommuned person, had been taken. The king wrote to the privy council a long letter with his own hand, in which he expresses his abhorrence at the barbarous effects of presbyterian principles; "an action," he says, "attended with so many circumstances of inhumanity and barbarity, as that were it not certified to us from so good hands, we could not have believed that in any nation civilized (much less where christianity is professed) there could have been such a hellish design contrived, much less put in execution. . . . For we do look upon them [the accomplices] as no less guilty thereof than the wretches that assumed the boldness and impiety to shed that innocent blood, and that to so high a degree of cruelty and barbarity as can hardly be paralleled in any nation."

ON THE 4th of May the council issued a proclamation, commanding all the heritors in the county of Fife to bring their tenants and cottars to St. Andrews, Kirkaldy, Dumfermline, and Cupar, in order that the witnesses of the horrid tragedy might be able to identify any of the murderers, if any were present; and rewards were offered for the discovery of the murderers, or those who had "hounded them out." The council expressed the just indignation and horror with which all



christian and upright men ought to speak of such villainy, and say, "which barbarous and inhuman assassination and parricide will (we doubt not) spread horror and amazement in all the hearts of such as believe that there is a God, or a christian religion; a cruelty exceeding the barbarity of pagans and heathens, amongst whom the officers and ministers of religion are reputed to be sacred, and are by the respect borne to the deity which they adore secured against all such bloody and execrable attempts; a cruelty exceeding the belief of all true protestants, whose churches have justly stigmatised with the marks of impiety all such as defile with blood those hands which they ought to hold up to heaven; and a cruelty equal to any with which we can reproach the enemies of this true and reformed church, by which also not only the principles of human society, but our authority and government (the said archbishop being one of our privy council), is highly violated, and example and encouragement given for murdering all such as serve us faithfully, according to the prescript of our laws and royal commands, daily instances whereof we are to expect, whilst *field conventicles, those rendezvouses of rebellion, and forges of all bloody and jesuitical principles*, are so frequented and followed, to the scandal of all government and the contempt of our laws: and which murder is, as far as is possible, rendered yet more detestable by the unmasked boldness of such as durst openly, with bare faces, in the midst of our kingdom at mid-day, assemble themselves together to kill, in our highway, the primate of our kingdom, and one of our privy council, by so many strokes and shots as left his body as it were but one wound; and many of them being given after they knew he was dead, were remarkable proofs they were actuated by a spirit of hellish and insatiable cruelty."

THE MURDERERS did not continue longer in the barn than the approach of darkness enabled them to escape with safety across the Forth, to join their friends in the presbyterian districts. By an intercepted letter from John Cargill to his brother Donald, one of their most esteemed ministers, it would appear that the rebellion had been preconcerted, and that the archbishop's murder had been a preliminary step; for on the date of the murder he alleges that there were 10,000 men already in the field. It would also appear that the conspiracy had included the murder of several other prelates; but who had providentially escaped their fury. Cargill says—"I am glad to hear of your welfare, and that you continue in the faith, which I wish you may retain, and persevere in to the end. You shall know that our forces daily increase, and are now



surmounted to the number of 10,000, and there are daily adding to the number of those who shall be saved. I hope you have heard of the dreadful death of the old fox, who was clothed with the sheep's skin, and countenanced with the king's authority. *The same was intended for others also*, but it seems God hath not altogether forsaken them, and given them over to themselves; but it may be supposed that they are referred to a greater judgment, which God in his own appointed time will cause fall upon them, and send deliverance to his people, which shall be the daily prayers of him who greets you in the Lord. I am informed that the king is sending down 5,000 English, under the command of the duke of Monmouth, to assist the prelatical party, and to suppress *the godly*: but God knows how to deliver *the just* from the hand of their enemies. But I hope within a few months we shall see an end of thir things; and then shall the righteous flourish like a palm-tree, which shall be the evening, morning, and mid-day prayers of your beloved brother in the Lord,

"3d May, 1679.

J. C.

"Directed to Mr. D — C — I, minister of the gospel at Glasgow. With care deliver these."

A PROCLAMATION was issued to prevent any one under the degree of a nobleman or gentleman of estate, from travelling with arms without license; at the same time giving warning to the people that the meeting in arms in an illegal manner incurred the guilt of high treason. And although such breaches of the law had been hitherto overlooked, yet now finding such meetings of armed men at "these rendezvouses of rebellion" were with criminal intentions, "which grow in proportion to the clemency" which had been shewn, it was determined that all judges and officers of the forces should proceed against all such as go with any arms to those field-meetings, as traitors. And it is added, "we being fully convinced both by reason and experience that those meetings do certainly tend to the ruin and reproach of the christian religion and discipline, to the introduction of popery and heresy, the subversion of monarchy, and the contempt of all laws and government." Upon which Wodrow observes, "it will certainly, when remarked by posterity, leave a lasting reproach upon this period and government, to find such a public declaration concerning *the pure and peaceable preaching of the gospel*. . . . No wonder such a proclamation drove people to measures which otherwise they had no mind to. The former laws and their severe execution forced people to come with arms to hear the gospel [but





not to pray]; now this is made treason, and they traitors. And when no way of relief was possible, but by standing their ground, *we need not be surprised*, after what went before, and this proclamation, *to hear of a rising very soon*, especially if we consider the further severe methods agreed upon at this time.<sup>1</sup>

IN ANTICIPATION of a designed "rising," attempts were made to divide the king's forces, and withdraw them from the scene of the "pure and peaceable" gospel; but the council had the good sense to order the earl of Argyle, and some other lords, to call out their feudal array, with forty days' provision, and suppress "the rebellious and disorderly practices of the lord Macdonald and his accomplices," to whom the whigs had made overtures for union and co-operation<sup>2</sup>, and who are denominated "rebels and papists." Herod and Pontius Pilate can be politically reconciled as well for the extermination of the church, as for the crucifixion of her Head and Redeemer; and the "pure and peaceable gospel," and "the idolatrous mass," can be united when their mutual necessities require such an unnatural union. But the *extirpation* of the reformed catholic church was the real object of both the rebel parties, although the one pretended to seat King Jesus on his throne, and the other to exalt the supremacy of the pope.

COLONEL JAMES GRAHAM, of Claverhouse, surprised a conventicle at Galashiels, in the diocese of Glasgow, and captured Thomas Wilkie, the minister, who, with Francis Irvine, an intercommuned minister from Dumfries, were sent to the Bass.

THE PRESBYTERIANS were now sensible that the sacrilegious murder which some of their body had committed on the person of the archbishop of St. Andrews, and who was also a privy councillor, would not be overlooked by the government. And they were, besides, inflamed by the presence of the murderers, who had sought shelter among them, who, says their historian, "might help on the warmth upon that side to which they joined, and endeavour to bring matters to such an issue as to serve themselves by a formed rising<sup>3</sup>." The bickerings and disputes among themselves, too, about the indulgence and cress, their right-hand defections and left-hand backslidings, assisted greatly to hasten the open rebellion which was now on the eve of breaking out. The itinerant or "vagrant" ministers, with their followers, hated the indulged ministers almost with as

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 58-60.

<sup>2</sup> Vide Lord Macdonald's petition, Wodrow, iii. 88.

<sup>3</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 68.







cordial a hatred as they did the episcopal clergy, and it was with difficulty that they were brought to act in concert. If they had been unanimous, and had had leaders of any military sagacity, their rebellion might have been much more formidable than it was. Douglas, Cargill, Cameron, and "Kirkland's curates," were divided against Welsh, Hume, Semple, and others, who, although holding the indulged in equal contempt, yet thought it expedient at present to court them. These two parties were, however, fiercely exasperated against each other, and their military councils were governed by the party animosities of the leaders who might happen at the moment to preponderate. The strict pursuit of the conventicles made the presbyterians unite several of the smaller meetings into one considerable one. In consequence of parties of military that were sent to disperse them, their numbers *in arms* increased, "and warm persons coming in among them, projects were spoke of à la-volée [rashly]; and some put upon courses they at first had no view of, nor design to come to. They continued together in parties through the week; and their tempers, by hardships and *conversation*, being heightened, *there was talking of going some further length than mere self-defence*: but any thing that way came never to any bearing till Drumclog<sup>1</sup>."

MULTITUDES of armed men congregating and exciting each other with their real and imaginary grievances, now thought themselves equal to effect a revolution, especially as the whigs in England gave them secret encouragement to persevere. Mr. Hamilton, a *nephew* of bishop Burnet, and a "lively and hopeful youth" whom "he bred himself," but who, he now says, had "become a crack-brained enthusiast, and, under the shew of a hero, was an ignominious coward<sup>2</sup>," moved "that somewhat further should be done by them as a testimony against the iniquity of the times<sup>3</sup>." This is a tolerable specimen of Burnet's "breeding," and shews that whilst he wore the habit of a churchman he had been at heart a presbyterian, and had insinuated his principles into his "lively and hopeful nephew." After serious consideration and prayer, they resolved to continue to hear that *other*<sup>4</sup> gospel which was propagated at the point of the sword, and to publish their testimony against the sins of other men, who were obedient to divine and human laws. The conventicle which was held in the latter end of the month of May, therefore, sent this "crack-

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 63.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, iii. 66.

<sup>3</sup> Own Times, ii. 233.

<sup>4</sup> Gal. i. 8, 9.



brained enthusiast" Hamilton, Douglas, a preacher, and eighty armed men, to the burgh of Rutherglen, about four miles eastward of Glasgow, on the afternoon of Thursday, the 29th of May, being the anniversary of the king's birth-day, and of the Restoration. To evince their contempt for that memorable day they extinguished all the bonfires, and read the following DECLARATION and TESTIMONY of some of the presbyterian party in Scotland, and afterwards affixed it to the market-cross of that burgh with great formality:—

"As THE LORD hath been pleased to keep and preserve His interest in this land by the testimony of faithful witnesses from the beginning, so some in our days have not been wanting, who, upon the greatest of hazards, have added their testimony to the testimony of those who have gone before them, and who have suffered imprisonments, finings, forfeitures, banishment, torture, and death, from an evil and perfidious adversary to the church and kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ in the land. Now we, being pursued by the same adversary for our lives, while owning the interest of Christ according to his Word, and the national and Solemn League and Covenants, judge it our duty (though unworthy, yet hoping we are true members of the church of Scotland) to add our testimony to those of the worthies who have gone before us, in witnessing against all things that have been done publicly in prejudice of His interest, from the beginning of the work of reformation, especially from the year 1648 downward, to the year 1660. But more particularly those since;—as,

"1. AGAINST the Act Rescissory, for overturning the whole covenanted Reformation.—2. Against the acts for erecting and establishing of abjured prelacy.—3. Against that declaration imposed upon, and described by all persons in public trust, where the Covenants are renounced and condemned.—4. Against the act and declaration published at Glasgow, for outing of the faithful ministers who could not comply with prelacy, whereby three hundred and upwards of them were illegally ejected.—5. Against that presumptuous act for imposing a holy anniversary day, as they call it, to be kept yearly upon the 29th of May, as a day of rejoicing and thanksgiving for the king's birth and restoration; whereby the appointers have intruded upon the Lord's prerogative, and the observers have given the glory to the creature that is due to our Lord Redeemer, and rejoiced over the setting up an usurping power to the destroying the interest of Christ in the land.—6. Against the Explicatory act, 1669, and the sacrilegious supremacy





enacted and established thereby.—Lastly, Against the acts of council, their warrants and instructions for Indulgence, and all other their sinful and unlawful acts, made and executed by them, for promoting their usurped supremacy.

“AND FOR confirmation of this our TESTIMONY, we do this day, being the 29th of May, 1679, publicly at the cross of Rutherglen, most justly BURN the above-mentioned acts, to evidence our dislike and testimony against the same, as they have unjustly, perfidiously, and presumptuously burned our sacred Covenants. And we hope none will take exception against our not subscribing this our testimony, being so solemnly published, since we are always ready to do in this as shall be judged necessary, by consent of the rest of our suffering brethren in Scotland.”

AFTER burning the above-named acts of parliament, extinguishing the fires, reading their Testimony, and affixing it upon the market-cross, which might be considered as a declaration of war, Hamilton and his party quietly retired to Evandale and Newmills, in the county of Ayr, where a conventicle was to be held by Douglas on the Sunday following. This exploit created a considerable sensation both at Glasgow and Edinburgh. The council had conferred extensive powers on colonel Graham, who was then at that city, and he determined to pursue the party who had been guilty of the insolent act of rebellion at Rutherglen. On Saturday, the 31st May, he marched from Glasgow, at the head of three troops of horse, and in the afternoon he seized Mess John King, at Hamilton, where he intended to have held a conventicle the next day, in the immediate vicinity of the duke's residence, which gives good reason to infer that the duke of Hamilton connived at, if he did not encourage, these unholy meetings. King had his well-mounted body guard, as well as Welsh, for Claverhouse seized fourteen men, and all strangers who were with him in the house. “There was some pretence,” says Wodrow, “to seize King, being a vagrant preacher, and I think intercommuned<sup>1</sup>.” Some of his guards, however, made their escape, and entertained thoughts of rescuing the preacher and their friends, and took the direction of Loudon-hill, for the purpose of securing the assistance of the armed saints at that conventicle.

HERE CLAVERHOUSE first heard of the meeting at Loudon hill, and he determined to attend it with his troop; so, on Sunday morning, the 12th of June, he set out, and carried

<sup>1</sup> History, iii. 69.



his prisoners along with him. At the village of Strathaven he received certain information that Douglass was to preach that day at Loudon-hill, a few miles distance southwards, whither he proceeded. Their scouts brought notice to the conventicle of the advance of Claverhouse just after the preaching had begun; and immediately those who carried arms left the women and others with the preacher, and advanced to a strong position, called Drunclog. Burnet's hopeful nephew commanded the rebels; Balfour, of Burley, and some of the other murderers of the archbishop, also held commands. Wodrow says "they had forty horse and two hundred footmen, very ill provided with ammunition, and untrained, but hearty and abundantly brisk for action." De Foe says they amounted to two hundred and fifty; but "before the action began, it's thought they were near four hundred. The assembly was great, and the people sat all on the ground, on the side of a steep hill, the minister preaching to them from a little tent near the bottom of the hill<sup>1</sup>." The rebels were posted behind a stone fence with a ditch in front, from which they fired with security and effect. It was found that no impression could be made on the strength of their position with cavalry, and after several attempts to force their defences, Claverhouse was obliged to retreat precipitately, with the loss of forty men killed, besides a great many wounded. He himself was nearly taken by a Mr. Cleland, and his horse was severely wounded; the rebels pursued the king's troops for some distance, and liberated King and the other prisoners<sup>2</sup>. Five prisoners were taken, one of whom was shot by Hamilton, who had issued an order, previous to the engagement, *that no quarter should be given*; that is, to put the prisoners to death. The other four were saved by the humanity of some of the other rebels<sup>3</sup>. Only one of the rebels was killed in the action, and Dalziel, one of the primate's murderers, died some days after of his wounds.

THIS UNEXPECTED victory elated the rebels, and made them think that it was an answer to their prayers; and visions of the enthronization of King Jesus flickered across the mind's eye of both the ministers and the soldiers of the Covenant. Hamilton resolved to continue in arms, because, having committed such an overt act of treason, "they could not separate without evident hazard. After an unnecessary delay of several hours, the rebels marched to Hamilton in the evening,

<sup>1</sup> Memoirs of the Church of Scotland, p. 196.    <sup>2</sup> Ibid. 197—Wodrow, iii. 69.  
—Vide "Old Mortality."

<sup>3</sup> Note by Wodrow's editor, p. 70.



instead of making all haste to Glasgow, where lord Ross, with the king's troops, were in the utmost consternation. The news of their victory brought together all the covenanters in the neighbourhood, and on Monday, the 2d of June, their numbers were increased to two thousand men, when they advanced on Glasgow; but before reaching that city their army had increased to seven thousand men. In this brief space lord Ross had thrown up barricades of overturned carts in the leading streets, through which the rebel saints might be expected. About ten o'clock the rebels entered the town in two divisions, one under Hamilton by the Gallowgate, and the other by the cathedral and college, and attacked the barricade in the High street. Hamilton shewed the utmost poltroonery. He took shelter in a house while his men attacked the barricades, but they were unable to force them, and therefore both divisions of the rebels retreated, and uniting, took up a position immediately outside the town, and waited in order of battle for the attack of the king's troops, who did not think it convenient to leave their intrenchments. The rebels behaved with great courage and intrepidity, and had they been properly commanded, or led on by inferior officers acquainted with their business, they might have dislodged the king's troops. Lord Ross sent out some videttes to ascertain the position of the rebels, but took no active steps to attack them. On the evening of the primate's murder, we are informed by Cargill that the organized members of this rebellion "were now *surmounted* to the number of ten thousand;" but they had not all at this time joined their standard. Seeing that lord Ross lay inactive at Glasgow, the rebels marched back to Hamilton, a distance of about ten miles. "where they formed a kind of camp; the people not being unfriendly, and the duke and duchess at London, they took the liberty to put their horses into their parks." Numbers now began to join the rebel stadnard; and there were no less than eighteen fighting ministers of the Covenant, whose watch-word was—The sword of the Lord and of Gideon!

THE PRIVY COUNCIL issued a proclamation on the 3d of June, in which the rebels were commanded "to desist from their rebellion, and to lay down their arms, and to render and present their persons to the earl of Linlithgow, &c. or to some other of our officers or magistrates, within twenty-four hours after publication hereof, with certification to them, if they continue in rebellion after the said time, they shall be holden and proceeded against as incorrigible and desperate traitors, and that they shall be incapable of mercy and pardon." The





council also called out the militia, and the nobility with their feudal retainers from the northern counties.

LORD ROSS became alarmed at the sudden increase of the numbers of the rebels, without reflecting that they were undisciplined rustics; and instead of attacking them with his disciplined and well-appointed troops, he evacuated Glasgow, and retreated to Kilsyth, on the 3d of June, where he was joined by the earl of Linlithgow, the commander-in-chief, with the forces under his command. The council ordered the earl of Linlithgow to concentrate his forces at Edinburgh, which he did accordingly; and his lordship requested the council to apply to the king for the assistance of English troops. "When," says Salmon, "the news of the insurrection arrived at London, the Whigs, it seems, and particularly the lord Shaftesbury, opposed the sending of any English troops to suppress it; but the king was so happy as not to be governed by them, and immediately ordered the duke of Monmouth for Scotland<sup>1</sup>." On the 18th June the duke arrived at Edinburgh, and was admitted a privy councillor, and the next day assumed the command of the army, which was put in motion towards Hamilton, in the slowest and most dilatory manner, which it was thought was for the purpose of giving the rebels time to make their submission.

IN THE MEANTIME the rebels were wasting their time in theological disputes and hair-splitting dissensions about their stumblings and short-comings, their defections and backslidings, instead of taking any measures either for offence or defence, while their partizans were daily adding to their strength, and they amounted at one time to eighteen thousand men. Hamilton proposed to publish a Testimony against the Indulgence and the payment of the cess; but he was opposed by those who had enjoyed the one and paid the other. The indulged wished to make the old distinction betwixt the authority and the person of the king, and to fight for the king against Charles Stuart; while Hamilton and the vagrants wished to declare that the king had forfeited the crown, because he had disowned and burnt the Covenant. This he called the *right stating of the quarrel*; but in this council of war there were eighteen ministers, some of whom had been indulged, and others were "vagrants." "Neither party would submit to the other, and all their councils became scenes of tumult and angry contention, discouraging the army, keeping back many who would have joined them, inducing others to

<sup>1</sup> Examination of Burnet's History, ii. 846.



abandon a divided and falling cause, and holding them spell-bound, while their enemies were preparing to crush them<sup>1</sup>." The rebels moved to within four miles of Glasgow, and the kirk of Monkland seems to have been their head quarters. On Sunday, the 15th, when the ministers were to ply their vocation, "a council of war called the whole ministers, and told them, if they did not preach name and surname against the Indulgence, they should preach none. They [the ministers] thought it very hard to be kept within guard, and to be commanded what to preach. They told them they were to receive their commission from Jesus Christ what to preach, and not from them. . . . We told them, it was the height of *supremacy* to give instructions to ministers what to preach: we would hear no such doctrine<sup>2</sup>." Ure's Narrative shews, that what they called councils of war, which they held daily, were rather presbyteries or synods than the debates of sane men, banded in arms against a powerful government, without resources of any sort, magazines, or even a supply of provisions. In one of these anomalous meetings, Ure very justly told them, that instead of preparing to face the king's troops, "they were come here to fight among themselves; and if they got their wills, they would be a reproach as long as the world stands<sup>3</sup>."

THE SAME narrator says, "We marched after that about a long mile north from the moor towards Cumbernauld, and when they came there they called a council of war, and we marched immediately back again, the way we came, to the moor, and over to Hamilton town," where they were joined by one thousand horsemen from the diocese of Galloway<sup>4</sup>.

THIS was the party that were raised in Nithsdale, and in which a cornet Smith served. On their march, Smith says they were supplied by several secret friends, among others by sir Hugh Campbell and his son, sir George, the former of whom was afterwards arrested and tried for this act of treason, and is duly enrolled among the martyrs. At Cessnock, the seat of these gentlemen, cornet Smith says, sir Hugh and his son made these rebels a present of four hundred lances as "a free and voluntary gift." Smith then narrates an anecdote of one of the rebel chiefs:—"There was one passage in this march which I cannot forbear to relate; viz. that as we were passing by the old castle of Thrieve (. . .), old — Gordon, of Earlsston, who in a few days afterwards was killed at Bothwell

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington, p. 151.—Vide "Old Mortality."

<sup>2</sup> Ure's Narrative of the Rising at Bothwell, in Memoirs of Veitch and Brysson, pp. 466, 67.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. 468.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. 473.



Bridge, in my hearing, spoke to the officers about him as followeth:—"Gentlemen, I was the man that commanded the party which took this castle from the late king, who had in it about two hundred of the name of Maxwell, of whom the greater part being papists, *we put them all to the sword*, and demolished the castle, as you see it. And now, though an old man, I take up arms against the son, whom *I hope* to see *go the same way* that his father did, for we never can put trust in a covenant-breaker: so, gentlemen, your cause is good; ye need not fear to fight against a foresworn king<sup>1</sup>."

IT WAS NECESSARY to hold another council, or rather presbytery, to inform these new recruits of their disputes, and to engage them on the different sides; and after they had fought all their theological battles over again, the draft of a petition to the duke of Monmouth was read, but which one of the parties thought was too "humbly drawn," and before they could agree upon another, a private messenger brought Welsh information that the royal army was advancing. Ure says, they were no more concerned for an enemy than if there had not been one within a thousand miles of them; and he distinctly *accuses the ministers of preventing* any overtures from being made to the duke, "for they did not desire us to agree. . . . Our men, with our divisions, slipped away still from us; for it was our common discourse, that we could do no good<sup>2</sup>."

MILLER, who brought the private message to Welsh, was sent by lord Melville, and he again had a written declaration from the duke, "warranting lord Melville to send a messenger to the rebel army, to Mr John Welsh and Mr. David Home, and to tell them from him that they might send a petition to the duke of Monmouth, and that they might expect good conditions<sup>3</sup>." Lord Melville told Miller, that "if he were at Mr. John Welsh, he would sit down on his knees and beg them to lay down their arms; for if they will not follow advice, and these people be broken, it will ruin the presbyterian interest." But the chiefs of the rebels and the ministers were more intent upon their theological disputes than possessed of common military prudence, and "had it not been for the intelligence brought by the said Miller, the king's army had surprised the rebels, and got all of them, as it were, in a hose net<sup>4</sup>." This communication was with the privity of the

<sup>1</sup> Smith's Information, Appendix to Bishop Spratt's Account of the Ryehouse Plot, p. 174.

<sup>2</sup> Ure's Narrative, p. 474.

<sup>3</sup> M'Crie's note to Memoirs of Wm. Veitch, p. 109-110.

<sup>4</sup> M'Crie's note to Ure's Narrative, 475.





duke, and had been preconcerted at London before he left it, by Shaftesbury and other whigs. Miller's message was delivered on Saturday the 21st, and on Sunday morning the royal army was within sight of the rebels. The duke sent some cavalry to the bridge of Bothwell, and desired some of their chiefs to come to him ; so Hume and Welsh, ministers, and another gentleman, went to his grace, and requested that he would prevent the effusion of blood. " He told them their petition ought to have been more humbly worded, and said, lay down our arms, and come in his mercy, and we should be favourably dealt with : so he returned and told us. When Robert Hamilton [their hopeful commander] heard it, he laughed at it, and said, ' and hang next.' So we sent over word, we would not lay down our arms." The battle then commenced by the royal army crossing the bridge, which had not been sufficiently guarded, and entirely routed the covenanters, whose native valour was entirely paralysed by the disputes and insane contentions of their commanders, who " in all this hot dispute never owned us. . . . The Lord took both courage and wisdom from us." Mr. Ure alleges there were only 4000 foot and 2000 horse engaged on the side of the rebels, and which, but for the wranglings about the indulgence, he says, might have been tripple ; " but when they came the one day, they went the next<sup>1</sup>." Ure says there were few slain in the battle ; but it is said that upwards of four hundred men were killed in the pursuit by the royal cavalry, and about twelve hundred surrendered at discretion. In the council's despatch to the king, of the 13th June, it is stated that the presbyterians in Fire had collected for the purpose of co-operating with their friends at Bothwell, but were attacked and dispersed by the earl of Moray's retainers, under the command of his steward, and forty of them made prisoners and lodged in Stirling castle. Crookshanks says these rebels " deserved to be had in great reputation. Let rebellious jacobites call this rising rebellion ; none who own the glorious revolution . . . can esteem it so. . . . It is certain they who were for bearing their testimony against it, *did nothing but act according to the principles of the presbyterians*<sup>2</sup>." To be sure they did : who ever doubted it ? Mess John Welsh was the first to flee in the day of battle, and he never stopped till he reached London, where he took shelter in the earl of Shaftesbury's mansion, where he assisted in the plot of the revolution, and crammed Gilbert Burnet for expectoration in his Own Times.

<sup>1</sup> Narrative, p. 479—481.<sup>2</sup> History, ii. 43.





WHEN the rebels fled, the king's troops might have taken or destroyed the whole of them; but they were stopped in their pursuit soon after the flight. The horse at first intended to retreat to the east quarter of Ayrshire, called Carrick, and into the Rhynnes of Galloway; and "their chief encouragement to prosecute this design," says Smith, "was the confidence they had, that the duke of Monmouth would not put any hardship upon them, which I have good reason to believe was true; for when I was in company with all the rebel horse (about 1600), less than a mile from the field of battle, marching upon a rising ground (in our retreat), I looked over my shoulder and saw the king's horse at a stand after they had pursued us a little way, which we looked upon as having been done to favour our escape; for if they had followed us, they had certainly killed or taken us all, a few only excepted, who were very well mounted; and we were afterwards told that they were stopped by the duke of Monmouth's positive command, when they were violently pursuing us after they had quite broken our foot (consisting of upwards of 4000), and were within less than half a mile of the body of our horse, which then were in great consternation and confusion<sup>1</sup>."

BURNET attempts to deprive the king of the credit due to him for the clemency shewn to the rebels after their rout, and to transfer it to the duke of Monmouth; he has even the audacity to say that his majesty and the duke of York expressed regret that the rebels were not put to death on the field in cold blood<sup>2</sup>. This story must have a better voucher than Gilbert Burnet, before it can be believed, as such an atrocity is altogether repugnant to the nature and characters of the royal brothers. But whether Charles executed or spared his rebellious subject, Burnet is determined to represent him as a ruthless and implacable tyrant. "It appears very inconsistent," says Higgons, "and strange, that the sword of war should be so very sharp, and that of justice so very blunt, in the *same hands*; if these princes were so sanguinary and so cruel in their tempers, why did they not gratify their thirst of blood upon that part of those miscreants who fell into their hands<sup>3</sup>?" The prisoners were placed in the inner burial ground of the Greyfriars churchyard, which has high stone walls, and some wooden huts were erected for their shelter. The council issued a proclamation, in which they denominate the Bothwell Brig-whigs "traitors," and their attempt "a desperate and

<sup>1</sup> Spratt's Rye-house Plot, App. 177.      <sup>2</sup> Own Times, ii. 236.

<sup>3</sup> Historical and Critical Remarks, p. 218.



avowed rebellion;" which gives deep offence to Wodrow, who says it is hard to be stigmatised with such epithets. The prelates also were directed to cause the proclamation to be read from the pulpits of their dioceses; which Wodrow considers iniquity unto iniquity, and he calls it a *new and unheard of profanation*; although his friends formerly made the pulpit "a market-cross," as honest Spalding says, for reading the proclamations of the committee of estates. The king wrote to the council to set the prisoners at liberty, "upon their enacting themselves not to take arms against his majesty or his authority," under certification, if hereafter taken *in arms* at any field conventicle, they should forfeit this indemnity. Three hundred of these men refused these easy and reasonable terms, and they were ordered to be transported to the West Indies, and the others were dismissed. But the signing of this bond is called a "*suffering*;" for their historians say, "it is plain that they who signed this bond, acknowledged that the rising of Bothwell was *rebellion*, and obliged themselves against defensive arms for the future; and therefore it is no wonder, though many stood out and refused to accept deliverance upon terms they thought not only *contradicting their principles*, but also trampled upon the blood of their brethren, who died in the cause<sup>1</sup>."

THE MURDERERS of the archbishop, and some others, were excepted out of the indemnity; and among these were King and Kidd, two preachers who had been active in preaching rebellion for many years. The two ministers were tried and hanged; their heads were cut off, and placed beside Guthrie's, on the Netherbow Gate. Five persons were hanged on the spot where the archbishop had been murdered; who, in their dying speeches, said that they suffered because "of our refusing of a bond which we could not take, no, not for our lives . . . . that we should acknowledge our being at Bothwell Bridge to be *rebellion*, which we profess to be our *duty*. . . . In our appearing at Bothwell Bridge we count it no rebellion, but our *bound duty*, and no sin. . . . As for our part, when we considered the obligations of them [the covenanters], we thought it was not a time for us to lie at ease in Zion, lest we should bring the curse of Meroz upon ourselves, if we went not up to the help of the Lord against the mighty. . . . So we give our witness and testimony to the cross of Christ, and bless the Lord that ever we appeared at Bothwell Bridge for the defence of his persecuted cause, which within a little

<sup>1</sup> De Foe's Memoirs, p. 202.—Crookshank's History, ii. 51.



while we shall seal with our blood<sup>1</sup>." Those who had refused to sign the bond to keep the peace were put on board a vessel to be sent to Jamaica, but which was wrecked among the Orkney islands, and through the inhumanity of the captain and mariners, the unfortunate covenanters all perished. Thus ended this ill-managed rebellion, through the incapacity and cowardice of its leaders, and the dissensions of their ministers. "The hopeful" Hamilton was amongst the first to secure his own safety by flight, "leaving the world to debate whether he had acted most like a traitor, a coward, or a fool." "The amazing height," says Guthrie, "to which it [the rebellion] arrived in less than fourteen days after the archbishop's murder, leaves me no room to doubt, notwithstanding the suggestions of Mr. Wodrow to the contrary, that it was *preconcerted* both with the *discontented party in England*, and with the exiled covenanters in Holland<sup>2</sup>."

CHARLES himself was not only a prince of a firmer and more resolute disposition than his father, but he was better and more honestly served; otherwise the same scenes would have been enacted as produced the horrors of the rebellion in the late reign. The *same principles* that had overturned the throne and the altar in the previous revolution, prompted and stimulated the presbyterians in the rebellion, or "rising," as they delicately call it, of Bothwell; for in their proclamations they declared that the "covenant was the original contract betwixt God, the king, and the people. Therefore, they said, king Charles II. having broken it, forfeited his crown; and being to be considered only as a private subject and enemy to God, they declared a just war against him, and that it was lawful to *kill him and all who served him*.<sup>3</sup>" These were the *principles* of the men who were then struggling to effect that revolution which was afterwards accomplished.

IN THE PUBLICATIONS of the time it was shewn that the whigs entirely owed the severities which they suffered to their *own antichristian principles*, their obstinacy and fanaticism; and that so far were they from acting on principles of civil or religious liberty, that many of their preachers were jesuits and popish priests! Wodrow cannot deny it, and a proclamation about this time actually charges it home upon the "vagrant preachers." Wodrow, of course, accounts for this phenomenon

<sup>1</sup> Naphtali, Appendix, pp. 83—85.

<sup>2</sup> General History, x. 192.

<sup>3</sup> Sir George Mackenzie's Vindication, 4to. 1661, p. 7.





in his own way, and accuses the duke of York, but the fact is allowed to remain uncontradicted, that jesuits and popish emissaries did ply their craft among the presbyterians. And it would have been contrary to the avowed principles of the jesuits if they had not; and their interference may very rationally account for the insane and unnatural divisions among the presbyterians themselves. Wodrow cites Dr. Oates' narrative to shew the participation of the jesuits in the commotions in Scotland:—"Wright, Morgan, and Freeland, he says, were sent over to Scotland to preach under the notion of Scots presbyterians . . . Deponents saw fathers Moore and Saunders, alias Brown, despatched to preach among the Scots presbyterians . . . that letters from the fathers met at Edinburgh, dated August 10th, 1678, bear, that they had 8,000 catholics ready to rise when the business grew hot, and to join the disaffected Scots under the directions of the *Scots jesuits* . . . that twelve Scots jesuits were sent with instructions to keep up the commotions in Scotland, and to carry themselves like nonconformist ministers among the presbyterian Scots<sup>1</sup>."

BUT THIS rebellion was not a matter of chance or of surprise. It had been long premeditated. The following information given by Robert Smith, who was a native of the parish of Dunscore, and a cornet of the rebel horse, sets this fact beyond dispute. He says, "At all the conventicles for nearly two years before the rebellion in 1679, there were *great contributions of money* (which were cheerfully given) under the pretence of subsistence for their ministers and the poor of their persuasion (the *only design* that was known to the *meaner sort* of people); but the greatest part of the money was employed for arms and ammunition for a general rising, in order whereunto, the fanatics, in the months of April, May, and June, 1679, were preparing themselves by keeping several great field conventicles, both in the west and in the south, in which were *considerable numbers of armed men*. And although they were generally very fond and forward to put their design in execution, yet it was hastened a month sooner than was intended by the skirmish [at Drumclog], that happened about the middle of June, within two miles of Loudon Hill, between a party of his majesty's forces under captain Graham, of Claverhouse, and a strong field conventicle, in which I was myself with a party of a troop of horse, levied in Nithsdale,

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 150.



whereof I was cornet . . . . The same night I was at the earl of Loudon's house with Robert Hamilton, John Balfour, and David Hackston, both murderers of the archbishop of St. Andrews, and several others, in number about twenty-seven horse<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Copies of the Informations and Original Papers affixed to Bishop Spratt's True Account of the Rye-house Conspiracy, p. 173.



## CHAPTER XLII.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP BURNET.

1679.—Whigs in England correspond with the presbyterians.—Prisoners set at liberty.—King's letter to bishop Leighton.—An Indulgence.—Meeting of presbyterian ministers.—An attempt to displace Lauderdale.—Duke of Hamilton—admitted to the king's presence.—King's illness—his declaration.—Duke of York's arrival.—Translations and consecrations.—The crown vassals fined.—Duke of York goes to Scotland—admitted a councillor without the oaths.—The Meal-Tub Plot.—A riot in London.—Court intrigues.—1680.—Translations and consecrations.—Cameron and Cargill.—Several conventicles.—Plan to murder the Duke of York.—Conventicle at Darmead.—King's letter.—Council permits the use of the English liturgy.—Duke of York left.—Henry Hall arrested.—Queensferry covenant.

1679.—“THUS WERE the rebels happily reduced, and the kingdom restored to a quiet condition, to the great mortification of the Whigs in the south, who proposed to have made as great advantages by this insurrection as they had done by their sham Plot.” The duke of Monmouth was secretly well disposed to the presbyterian rebels, in order to assist his own views on the crown, and at the same time the English Whigs were favourable to his unwarranted claim. It is, however, extraordinary that the presbyterians should have opposed the duke of York's undoubted right of succession, when their confession of faith determines, that difference of religion ought not to exclude papists, or even Mahometans, from the throne. As soon as the duke of Monmouth's appointment to the chief command in Scotland was known, the Whigs sent secret notice to their friends, and Wodrow has inserted a letter from one of them, but who has not signed it:—“I told the duke,” says he, “that some of your persuasion should come and wait upon him, and give him an account of your *peaceable* inclinations. I have encouragement from him to invite you, and some of your number [the ministers], from all places, to address yourselves to him—he *will take it kindly*; and by it I am confident you will much engage him to be your friend; where-



fore let me entreat you not to omit so great an occasion of advantage to your affairs. My brother will be with him, and he will introduce you to him; or if you miss my brother, the lord Melville will be always with him, who is very friendly to your interest. There shall be nothing left undone here that may advance the interest of all honest peaceable men."

THE PRESBYTERIAN ministers near Edinburgh accordingly took advantage of this invitation to wait upon the duke, and entrusted to him a petition to the king, which he undertook to present, and he promised "that nothing should be wanting that was proper on his part." The effects of this petition, and the duke's interposition, were a proclamation to suspend the laws against conventicles, and which paved the way for the third indulgence; in which the field conventicles are ascribed to the intrigues of jesuits. In consequence, a number of prisoners, both ministers and their people, were set at liberty, after engaging not to rise in arms again, although they considered it a contradiction of their principles; and sure enough it was: but does not Satan say, "skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath, will he give for his life;" and here, the principle being bad, the prediction was verified. Another royal letter, designed to make late favours effectual, granted permission to the presbyterian ministers not only to preach, but also to administer their so-called sacraments, and relieved them of such fines as had been imposed but not yet paid. The political friends, therefore, of the "vagrant ministers" "pressed the prisoners to carry very soberly, and wished the persecuted party would leave field conventicles, *at least for a little*, till the duke came down again; and adds, he, God willing, would not stay long. And assures them, some in the council are gaping for field conventicles, in order to get things marred<sup>1</sup>."

It is ASSERTED that the fears of the prelates induced them to send up the archbishop of Glasgow to court, in order to counteract the surprising favours that had been shewn to the presbyterians. Wodrow acknowledges that he has no accounts of what he did or said whilst there; nevertheless, he ventures a "*no doubt*, he fell in heartily with the duke's party, and in a few weeks there was a change above, and piece by piece this favour was curtailed by the council<sup>2</sup>." It is more probable that the archbishop was sent for, as the murdered primate's successor had not yet been appointed; and perhaps there was some intention in the royal councils of placing Leighton again in the see of Glasgow; for after a retirement

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 149.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. iii. 152.





of five years, the abdicated prelate was surprised and alarmed by receiving a letter from the king, written by his own hand, threatening to recal him to actual service. It is dated Windsor, July 16, 1679.

“MY LORD,—I am resolved to try what clemency can prevail upon such in Scotland as will not conform to the government of the church there; for effecting such design, I desire that you may go down to Scotland with your first convenience, and take all possible pains for persuading all you can of both opinions to as much mutual correspondence and concord as can be: and send me from time to time characters both of men and things. In order to this design, I shall send a precept for £200 sterling upon my exchequer, till you resolve how to serve me in a stated employment. Your loving friend,

“CHARLES R.”

THIS, IT SEEMS, was a proposal of the duke of Monmouth's, and to which he had probably been prompted by the presbyterians before he left Scotland; and as they had formerly found the bishop of Dunblane so pliable, they thought he might now, in conjunction with the ascendancy of whig councils at court, be made an instrument for the advancement of Christ's crown and kingdom<sup>1</sup>. Leighton was willing to carry out the king's views, and he could now have occupied the bishoprick of Glasgow in a canonical way, which he did not before; but the duke's designs becoming apparent, he fell into disgrace at court, and Leighton's advancement fell with him.

THE INDULGENCE was granted by proclamation, dated the 29th of June, which, after relieving the presbyterians from certain penalties, ordains—“But to the end that none whom we may justly suspect, shall under the colour of this favour continue to preach *rebellion, schism, and heresy*, we hereby ordain all such as shall be suffered to preach to have their names given in and surety found to our privy council for their peaceable behaviour, only one preacher being allowed to preach; and none to be allowed who have appeared against us in this late rebellion, nor none who shall be admitted by the unconform ministers in any time hereafter: assuring all those to whom we have extended this favour, that if they, or any of them, shall for the future frequent any field conventicles, or disturb the peace of these our kingdoms, we will secure our people, and maintain our authority and laws, by such effectual

<sup>1</sup> Pearson's Life of Leighton, cxliv. v.



courses as, in ruining the authors, cannot be thought rigid after so insufferable and unnecessary provocations<sup>1</sup>." In a letter from Edinburgh, the writer says, "I find the generality of the *best* men here much troubled at the Indulgence the duke of Monmouth got for the fanatics here, after they had been beaten, and say it will encourage them to another rebellion<sup>2</sup>."

THE PRESBYTERIANS considered "this breathing time" to be a prelude to their complete restoration to supremacy and political power, and in this delusive hope, "a very large meeting" of their ministers took place in Edinburgh on the 8th of August, and agreed upon some "conclusions and rules," which, Wodrow alleges, shews "they had the principles of presbyterian government at heart, and the preservation of the church from any hazard from persons who should afterwards be licensed and ordained; and had they not been stopped by the new turn of affairs at court, it is very probable this indulgence would have been so managed, as to have cured our divisions, tended to a comfortable change in Scotland, and might have proved of great use, not only to the church, but even to the state. But very soon the popish party prevailed at court<sup>3</sup>."

THE ENGLISH whigs allied themselves to the presbyterians in Scotland from political and factious motives; and they opposed Lauderdale's administration so much as to make several ineffectual efforts to dislodge him from the councils of his sovereign. The present juncture seemed favourable for making another and more powerful attempt to "discourt" him. The duke of Hamilton, therefore, had gone to London in May, and was followed by several noblemen, and by sir George Lockhart and sir John Cunningham. They laid before the king a written statement of their grievances, which was afterwards printed; and Wodrow and others say, "it certainly contained a material *vindication* of the people at Bothwell;" but had they "laid many things contained in it at the door of the prelates, as well as at that of Lauderdale, the representation had been more full and just. But Sharp, the *primum mobile*, was gone; and so the duke was charged with all." This short acknowledgment shews what an amount of calumny and malignity was heaped upon the head of the late primate, all of which was now to be transferred to the duke of Lauderdale. The publication of this statement was declared a libel, and the king

<sup>1</sup> Proclamation, June 29, 1679.

<sup>2</sup> Cited in note by the editor to Burnet's Own Times, ii. 237.

<sup>3</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 153.



ordered the privy council to make inquiry after the parties who had been active in dispersing it. On the 8th and 13th of July, the king admitted the duke of Hamilton with his friends to his presence, at Windsor Castle, where they were met by sir George Mackenzie, the king's advocate, when the debates lasted from ten in the morning till one in the afternoon, and from four till nine in the evening. The lord's advocate vindicated the duke of Lauderdale's administration; and the king was firm in the support of his minister, and resolved still to place full confidence in him, and therefore the opposition desisted from making any farther attempt to oust him from office, and returned home. The duke of Hamilton's party and the presbyterians were supported by lord Shaftesbury, who was the leader of the English whigs, and his faction was distinguished by the name of "Green Ribband Clubs;" and of the members of this club it was said—"he has his emissaries everywhere to whisper treason and sedition, smite the king through the duke [of York's] side, libel and lampoon him, make him the author of the present miseries; cry out daily of property and liberty that it is like to be invaded; when quite contrary, their designs are absolutely to invade the prerogative of their prince, and render him only the bare compliment of a king, and no more<sup>1</sup>."

THE KING was seized with a severe illness at Windsor on the 2d of September, and for some time his life was despaired of, and a general consternation seized all ranks; for he was extremely popular, and many entertained strong apprehensions from the religion of his successor. The duke of Monmouth disgusted the loyal subjects, and alienated his father's affections, by publicly asserting that he thought himself heir presumptive to the crown, because it had been alleged that his mother, Mrs. Lucy Walters, had been married to the king. To set this matter at rest the king commanded a declaration, which he had formerly made, to be entered in the books of the council:—"His majesty was this day pleased to command that the declaration hereafter following be entered in the council book, it being all written and signed by his majesty's own hand, in a paper which his majesty this day delivered at the board, to be kept in the council chest, viz.:—

"FOR the avoiding of any dispute which may happen in time to come, concerning the succession of the crown, I do

<sup>1</sup> The Present Interest, both of King and People, in a Letter, &c., by F. K——, in the Somers Tracts, p. 53.





here declare, in the presence of Almighty God, that I never gave nor made any contract of marriage, nor was married to any woman whatsoever, but to my present wife, queen Catharine, now living. Whitehall, the third day of March, 1679.

“(Signed) CHARLES R.”

THE MINISTERS, Essex, Halifax, and Sunderland, were apprehensive that a new civil war might be precipitated, especially as Shaftesbury, and the whigs in both kingdoms, were favourable to the pretensions of the duke of Monmouth. They advised the king, therefore, to send for the duke of York secretly, that in the event of a demise of the crown, his royal highness might be in readiness to assert his rights. On his arrival, however, he found the king out of danger, and it was agreed to conceal the invitation which he had received; and he returned to Brussels after having obtained leave to retire to Scotland. The earl of Shaftesbury was dismissed from office as president of the council on the 15th of October, and the duke of Monmouth was stripped of his command as captain-general, and ordered to reside in Holland. “Whatever,” says Guthrie, “late writers may pretend, the duke of York appears to have received from the duke of Monmouth and his party sufficient provocation for rendering him their enemy; and the more sober part of the people of England were of the same opinion.”

IN CONSEQUENCE of the various events that have been detailed, the new translations and consecrations did not take place till September and October. Arthur Ross, lord bishop of Argyle, was translated on the 5th of September to the see of Galloway; and the venerable Andrew Bruce, archdeacon of St. Andrews, was elected to the bishoprick of Dunkeld, vacant by the death of Dr. Lindsay. On the 15th of October, Dr. Burnet was translated from Glasgow to St. Andrews; and after having sat about a month in the see of Galloway, bishop Ross was again translated to Glasgow. Keith says Colin Falconer, minister of the town and parish of Forres, in Morayshire, was elected to the see of Argyle on the 5th of September, but Mr. Scott, of Anstruther, informs me “there is good reason to suppose, from the records, that he was elected in May.” From the records of the presbytery of St. Andrews, the bishops elect of Argyle and Dunkeld were consecrated at St. Andrews by archbishop Burnet on the 28th of October. Mr. Lyon says, “This day the presbytery met in the town kirk,

<sup>1</sup> Somer's Tracts, p. 83—Ellis's Original Letters.



but without any public exercise, in regard that Dr. Moor, who was appointed to have it, did yesterday preach by appointment from my lord St. Andrews, at the translation of my lord St. Andrews to the archbishoprick of St. Andrews, and the consecration of the bishop of Argyle." And by a private communication I am favoured with another excerpt from the same record.—"1679, October 28th. Received at the translation of the archbishop of Glasgow to St. Andrews, the bishop of Argyle to Glasgow, the consecration of the bishop of Dunkeld and the bishop of Argyle, £38 12s. Scots<sup>1</sup>."

IT WAS FOUND necessary to inflict some punishment on those feudatories of the crown who had refused or neglected to join the royal standard when summoned at the rebellion of Bothwell-bridge, or who had deserted it after they had joined it. In former times, when there were frequent rebellions of the powerful nobles, it was reckoned a capital crime to refuse or neglect to join the royal standard: and death was the consequence, when the crown had the power to execute vengeance for this crime. A committee of the council awarded, however, the milder punishment of fines for refusal or desertion, and on the 18th of November his majesty approved of their decision; and the officers of the army were appointed to send in the names of the heritors who did not attend the king's host. The duke of York re-embarked for Holland, but having received permission to retire to Scotland, his royal highness and the duchess, with the princess Anne, arrived at Whitehall from Brussels, on the 12th of October<sup>2</sup>; and on the 16th, the Scottish privy council began to prepare for the reception of his royal highness with his family at Edinburgh. The council met him at the borders with every mark of respect; he slept at Berwick on Friday, the 31st, and arrived at Holyrood-house on Monday, the 24th of November; "he was received into town with the greatest solemnity, and sumptuously entertained by the town of Edinburgh and the nobility<sup>3</sup>." Next day the lords of the session waited on him, and sir James Dalrymple, the lord president, made a congratulatory speech, when he said, among other things—"it was a matter of great joy to the nation to see one of the royal family among them, after being for so many years deprived of that honour, and the nation being *entirely protestant*, it was the fittest place his highness could make his recess to at that time<sup>4</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Private Letter from Rev. Hew Scott, minister of Wester Anstruther, 26th Feb. 1844.—Lyon's History of St. Andrews, ii. 103.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon's Chronology, ii. 215.—Wodrow's History, iii. 154.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.* 174.

<sup>4</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 452.



THE PRESBYTERIAN ministers had several synodical meetings in the autumn of this year; one in Edinburgh in September, and another at Paisley in December, but where they did not assume any jurisdiction; only they agreed on and sent secret notice to their brethren to hold "a general meeting [assembly] of ministers at Edinburgh in February next, and the warning was sent in thither with one of their number. But the times growing worse, and some noise being made by the managers about that meeting, it was found convenient to drop the meeting<sup>1</sup>." Meantime a letter was received from the king, directing the council to admit his royal highness to the privy council without taking the usual oath:—"It is our pleasure," says the king, "that he continue to act as a privy councillor in that our ancient kingdom, without any oath, being named in our last commission, 1676; it being the privilege of the lawful sons and brothers of the king not to be comprehended under any general words, as those of the 11th Act of our first parliament; though that doth comprehend all others except them alone."

IN ENGLAND both the real and the supposed intrigues of the papists had created a very great alarm, and the plot sworn to by Titus Oates, and some others, was succeeded by "the Meal-Tub Plot," which was got up by the papists to bring the witnesses in the former popish plot into discredit. It obtained this extraordinary appellation, from a paper, containing the heads of it, having been found in a tub of meal on the 25th of October. Burnet, whose politics required him to be at enmity with the duke, asserts that his royal highness's party endeavoured to inflame matters; but, if he did so, Monmouth and his enemies were equally active in exciting agitation, and attempting to incite an insurrection. On the 17th of November, which was the anniversary of Queen Elizabeth's birth-day, the Whigs collected a mob, and, in a tumultuous procession, they carried the effigies of the pope, the devil, sir George Jefferies, and the effigy of "the dead body of sir Edmundbury Godfrey, on horseback, with one riding behind him; and a bellman went before, to remind the people of his murder: priests in their copes with crosses, friars, and jesuits, were part of the shew; and after these, to expose the established church, and to insinuate that the bishops and clergy had a share in their sham plot, bishops in lawn sleeves and mitres were in their train." The effigies were burnt at Temple Bar. The Whigs also procured fictitious signatures to petitions, in

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 176.





a riotous manner, for the sitting of parliament, which had been prorogued, and many treasonable pamphlets were published at this time, to recommend the duke of Monmouth to their choice as successor to the crown. And when loyal men objected to the obvious defect in Monmouth's title, it was answered, "that he who had the *worst title* ever made the *best king*¹."

THE PLOTS hitherto seem to have been discredited, and Salmon says, "When the party thus openly discovered their intentions, and had procured Whig sheriffs to their mind, so that they were secure from being brought to justice, no wonder that the king was apprehensive of plots from that side: Dangerfield's discoveries were thought to carry an appearance of probability with them at first. Had there been a Shaftesbury on that side to have managed him, here was a much better foundation to have built upon than ever the popish plot had; and there is all the probability in the world that this discovery, as well as others, was set up, or at least managed, by the faction to amuse the people, that they might not see into their real plots and designs against the government, and to support their pretended popish plot, which now began to be the jest of all companies²."

WITH HIS USUAL mendacity, Burnet pretends that he was consulted about the Bill of Exclusion, and in all other important matters; although he most unmercifully abuses the bishops and clergy for interfering in any way in politics. He tells one of his gossiping stories about the king being desirous of raising his son by the duchess of Portsmouth to succeed him on the throne, and that the duchess entered into intrigues with the exclusionists. To this intrigue she was prompted by the king, in order to penetrate the designs of the party; for his majesty was firmly resolved to support his brother's title to the crown: "But it is merry enough to observe," says Salmon, "how the *saints* at this time, to serve their cause, could court a popish French mistress; and while they were ready to impeach the harmless honest queen, take a courtesan, her rival, into their bosom confidence, to defend them against France and popery; even that very mistress whom the faction formerly exclaimed against, as sent over to promote popery and French councils. Till now we were unacquainted with the advantages the nation might reap by royal concubines. . . . Here we see the party

¹ Somers Tracts.—Salmon's Chronology, ii. 215.—Salmon's Examinations of Burnet's Own Times, ii. 856.

Salmon's Examination, ii. 856





first expressing the greatest tenderness and concern for the king's person, and insinuating that his brother was in a conspiracy to destroy him, then they raise their mobs, make their rebellious processions, and spirit up the deluded people against their sovereign, by their treasonable libels and discourses. When this won't prevail, they not only refuse to grant his majesty money for the necessary defence of the kingdom, but they declare every man an enemy to his country that lends the king any money, and arbitrarily and illegally imprison his friends; and, as their last refuge, apply themselves to his mistress, that he might have no rest, day or night, till their importunity was satisfied. But here his majesty shewed a superior reach, and by advising the lady seemingly to comply with them, discovered all that black scene of treachery and rebellion they had laid to accomplish his ruin<sup>1</sup>."

1680.—JAMES AIKEN, lord bishop of Moray, was translated by the king's letter, dated at Whitehall on the 6th February, to the bishoprick of Galloway, vacant by the translation of the late bishop to the see of Glasgow. He received a royal dispensation to reside in Edinburgh, because it was thought unreasonable to oblige a reverend prelate of his years to live among such a rebellious and turbulent people as those of that diocese were." He never visited his diocese but only once; and bishop Keith asserts, that he "has seen letters of ordination by him performed in Edinburgh;" and then innocently adds—"He so carefully governed this diocese, partly by his letters to the synod, presbyteries, and single ministers, partly by a journey he made thither, that had he resided in the place, better order and discipline could scarce be expected." The king's letter is dated on the 7th of February, for the translation of Colin Falconer, lord bishop of Argyle, to the bishoprick of Moray, and it is addressed to the dean and chapter of that church, who elected his lordship accordingly. The earl of Argyle had interest at court to procure a *congé d'élire* to the dean and chapter of Argyle, to elect the rev. Hector Maclean, of the family of Lochboine, to that see. His loyalty in his younger years had induced him to follow the profession of arms during the presbyterian wars of the usurpation, and he was in the field for the king; but being of a religious disposition, he was admitted minister of Morverne v. Kilcolumkill, in the presbytery of Haddington; from thence he was moved to Dunoon, in the presbytery of the same name, and county of Argyle; from this parish he removed again to Eastwood, in

<sup>1</sup> Examination, ii. 858, 859.



the presbytery of Paisley. Patrick Forbes, lord bishop of Caithness, died, and was buried amongst his predecessors; and immediately bishop Wood was translated from the Isles to Caithness. Archibald Graham, of the family of Kilbride, and parson of Rothsay, in the isle of Bute, was elected by *congé d'élire* to the bishoprick of the Isles<sup>1</sup>."

CAMERON AND CARGILL, two rabid preachers, whom even Wodrow denounces, the former of whom came home from Holland, where he had been to purchase arms and ammunition, and had been well instructed in the mysteries of rebellion, soon after the defeat of their confederates, began to hold conventicles in remote and secure positions; and government offered a reward of five thousand merks for the capture of either of them. Cameron kept a field conventicle within a mile of sir Robert Dalzell's house, in the county of Lanark, where there were about three thousand people congregated. Smith was present, and he said the reason for holding it was to see how the county stood inclined, and who would join them. From thence, Cameron, with a guard of twenty men, of whom Smith was one, went to the laird of St. John's kirk, about thirty miles from Edinburgh, where he and his guards staid four days, during which time there were conventicles held each day, at which the laird and his lady were always present. The following Sunday, Cameron kept a conventicle on Tinto-hill, in Lanarkshire, where there were between three and four thousand people present, "whereof many were *well armed*." From this place, continues Smith, "I went with Richard Cameron, and about twenty men, to the widow lady Gilkerscleugh's, in Clydesdale, staid a week, and kept several conventicles with her. About this time the duke [of York] was come to Scotland, and whilst we were in this house, it was one night at supper proposed by Hackston [one of the primate's murderers], to kill his royal highness, the said lady being present, together with the two Camerons. Hackston said he would do it himself, if he could come at him; and thought it might be best done when the duke was at dinner: whereupon he asked if there were any there who would go and observe all the manner of his royal highness's dining?—whether people might get into the room to see him at dinner, &c.? So Michael Cameron undertook it; and took me along with him. We were particularly instructed to observe whether people could go in with large coats or cloaks on them, and women with plaids; and whether they

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue, *passim*.—Perceval's Apology, 2d edit. 252.



could pass the sentinels with their swords." These men went and gained admission into the apartment, and saw the duke at dinner; but as they were returning to their lodgings they met a person who recognised Cameron, whereupon they betook themselves to their horses, and were pursued for several miles<sup>1</sup>.

CAMERON visited many of the ministers "who formerly kept up the public standard of the gospel in the fields;" but they had got such a salutary check at Bothwell, and the government kept such a vigilant eye upon them, that all his eloquence was insufficient to persuade them to run any more hazard. Cargill, however, united with him, and they held "a public fast-day in Darmidmuir, one of the chief causes of which was the reception of the duke of York, that sworn vassal of anti-christ, into Scotland, after he had been excluded from England, and several other places<sup>2</sup>." This, with some other conventicles, roused the government, and measures were taken to secure these worthies; but their escapes are certainly most wonderful, and even romantic. This recommencement of the conventicles induced the king to circumscribe the late Indulgence, as there was now every indication that it would be abused, and the people seduced by the preachers to their former turbulence. He therefore wrote to the privy council on the 14th of May, regretting the ungrateful return of the presbyterians to his unparalleled clemency and tenderness; for, "notwithstanding all their insolencies, murders, and treasons, and our gracious indemnities and indulgencies, such is the perverseness of that schismatical and rebellious generation, that they, in contempt of our greatest condescensions and favours, continue to run out to field conventicles in several parts of that our kingdom, which as our laws have declared, so in experience have they been found, to be *rendezvouses of rebellion*; their insurrections against us and our authority, in the years 1666 and 1679, have been nothing else save so many running and continued field conventicles, and by force and violence to oppose the legal settlement of regular ministers, *beating, stoning, and wounding them in a most savage and barbarous manner*, and to *invade the pulpits of orthodox ministers*, preaching and baptizing in avowed conventicles in our capital city of Edinburgh. By all which insupportable and unnecessary provocations, they having notoriously *forfeited* our favour and indulgence, none could judge it severity to maintain our authority and laws by such effectual courses as should

<sup>1</sup> Appendix to Spratt's Ryehouse Plot, 179.

<sup>2</sup> Scots Worthies—Life of Cameron, p. 334.





ruin that unsatisfiable and ungovernable tribe and faction. . . . And at this time, as upon all occasions, we cannot but express our firm resolution to maintain, and inviolably preserve, the sacred order of episcopacy, to the subversion whereof nothing tends more than the contempt too frequently and injuriously thrown upon our bishops: therefore we do heartily recommend unto you, as your best service unto us, your countenancing and encouraging, and supporting of them in their persons, credit, and authority, the lessening whereof we do justly esteem a weakening of our government. We must also recommend our orderly and orthodox presbyters to your care and protection, and that you particularly require and command all magistrates, in their several jurisdictions, to own and assist them in the exercise of discipline against scandalous offenders, and in all other parts of their function, which we will take as very acceptable service done unto us<sup>1</sup>."

BUT THE CHURCH, in her state of splendid misery, felt the want of that liturgy which, in the first paroxysm of covenanting madness, a faction of the people had rejected; and the hearts of the devout were now yearning after something more substantial than extempore effusions—something that might be seen and examined, and enjoyed in the secret chamber. Some noblemen and members of the council made a representation to that body of their own desire to be permitted to use the English liturgy in their families; and this good beginning would in the course of time, and with divine help, have leavened the whole church; and there are various incidental circumstances occur, which, as we proceed, will shew that the "leaven" thus thrown into the "meal" was beginning to work. The order is dated on the 12th of February. "The lords of his majesty's privy council, having considered a representation made to them by some of their own number, that divers persons of quality, and others of this kingdom, were *very desirous* to have the allowance of the use of the solemn form of divine worship, after the *laudable and decent* custom and order of the church of England, in their private families, do hereby allow the same, and give assurance to them of the council's countenance and protection therein<sup>2</sup>."

ON THE 15th of February the duke of York took his leave of the council, and set out on his journey to court. He informed the council that he had been sent for by his majesty, and thanked them for "the civility and kindness" which they had shewn to him. In their letter to the king, the council say

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 185-188.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. ii. 232.



that his presence had had a very salutary influence on the peace of the kingdom, and what was rather wonderful, "the most malicious had abstained from all manner of risings and undutiful speeches," and neither libels nor pasquils had disgraced their city during his royal highness's abode among them; "so that this too short time has been the most peaceable and serene part of our life." When they wrote thus, they were not aware of the attempt of the Camerons and of Hackston of Rathillet, above narrated, or perhaps they would have modified their language.

MR. HETHERINGTON very truly says, "the year 1680 was remarkable for what appears a new aspect assumed by a section of the persecuted presbyterians, but what in reality, if impartially considered, may rather be regarded as a *more full development of presbyterian principles*, somewhat biassed and exaggerated through the force of circumstances. . . . After that fatal day [Bothwell Bridge] the division between the two parties not only continued, but became wider, till it ended in a complete separation, Richard Cameron and Donald Cargill being the only ministers whom those zealous opponents of all practical tyranny and lax submissiveness would acknowledge<sup>1</sup>." Along with these two stern and uncompromising representatives of "presbyterian principles," there was associated a "Scots worthy," Henry Hall, esq. of Haughhead, in the parish of Eckford, in Teviotdale, who, with Cargill, had taken shelter in Borrowstounness, and other parts of the coast of the Forth, waiting for a favourable opportunity to hold a field conventicle. The acts of parliament which denounced intercommunion against the field preachers, at the same time obliged the established clergy, under heavy penalties, to give information of the whereabouts of any of these daring intruders into their parishes. The knowledge that the notorious Cargill, who had been an approved disciple of the remonstrator Guthrie that was hanged after the Restoration, was lurking in their parishes, made it necessary for the Rev. John Park, the incumbent of Carriden, in the county of Linlithgow, to give Mr. Middleton, the governor of Blackness Castle, information that these worthies were then in Queensferry; and for which Mr. Park and the minister of Borrowstounness are called, by Hall's biographer, "two bloody hounds." In attempting to arrest them in a public-house, there was a scuffle, in which Hall received so violent a blow on the head from a carbine, that he died on the road to Edinburgh, whither he was being

<sup>1</sup> History of the Church of Scotland, 153.



conveyed to gaol : and thus, says his biographer, "this worthy gentleman, after he had in an eminent manner served his day and generation, fell a victim to prelatic fury." Cargill, however, made his escape, although he had been severely wounded, and went to Loudon, where he preached to a field conventicle the next Sunday, at a place called Cairnshill<sup>1</sup>.

IN MR. HALL'S pocket a paper was found, which was evidently intended to have been circulated amongst the presbyterians, and was a species of covenant to which they were to be bound to adhere. From the place and the circumstances, it was denominated the QUEENSFERRY COVENANT ; and its political sentiments were so extreme, that Wodrow, Crookshanks, and even Hetherington, acknowledge that they cannot be justified. Some extracts from it will shew the exquisite cunning of the jesuit, united with the natural obstinacy of the presbyterian. . . . " Seriously considering that the hand of our kings and rulers with them hath been a long time against the throne of the Lord . . . . and Christ's reigning over his church . . . . and there is no more speedy way of relaxation from the wrath of God . . . but of *rejecting them* [their governors] who have so manifestly *rejected God* . . . . Our ancestors neither did nor could bind us ; they did not buy their liberty with our thralldom and slavery . . . neither did they bind us but to a government which they esteemed best for the commonwealth and subjects ; and when this ceaseth, we are free to choose another. . . . The covenant only binds us to maintain our king in the maintenance of the true established and covenanted religion. . . . We do declare that we shall set up over ourselves, and over what God shall give us power of, government and governors according to the word of God, *Exod. xviii. 21.* . . . that we shall no more commit the government of ourselves, and the making of laws for us, to any one single person or lineal successor, we not being by God, as the Jews were, bound to one single family ; and this kind of government by a single person being most liable to inconveniences and aptest to degenerate into tyranny, as sad and long experience hath taught us<sup>2</sup>."

AFTER PREACHING at Cairnshill, Cargill sought out his friend and co-worthy, Mr. Cameron, with whom he held sweet counsel, and they determined to carry the war to extremity. These men had broke off from the rest of the presbyterian ministers, and denounced the indulged preachers as only a

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies : Lives of Hall and Cargill.

<sup>2</sup> Mackenzie's Vindication, 4to. App.





shade less the children of darkness than the established clergy.

ON THE 22d of June they collected about twenty of their infatuated followers, well armed, and entered the small royal burgh of Sanquhar on the 22d of June, and there, with such formalities as they deemed gave their proceedings the sanction of divine law, read a DECLARATION founded on the Queensferry covenant, in which they renounced their allegiance, and declared war against the king, as a tyrant and *usurper*. After having read this treasonable paper, they affixed it to the market-cross, in the manner of legal proclamations, and then marched off to their hiding-places in the moors. From the place, this act of treason is usually called the SANQUHAR DECLARATION. The indulged ministers, however, disavowed this declaration; but whether their disavowal arose from their being shocked at the genuine development of their own principles, or from the fear that such treasonable proceedings would inevitably draw down the vengeance of government, it seems certain that none but these two leaders of the ultra-section of the presbyterians were engaged in this outrageous insult to the king and his government<sup>1</sup>.

Scots Worthies — Lives of Cameron, Cargill, and Henry Hall, *passim*. — Wodrow's History, iii. 205-213. — Cloud of Witnesses. — *Sanquhar Declaration*, 1680. It is not among the smallest of the Lord's mercies, that there have been always some who have given their testimony against every course of defection (that many are guilty of), which is a token for good, that He doth not as yet intend to cast us off altogether, but that He will leave a remnant in whom He will be glorious, if they, through His grace, keep themselves clean still, and walk in His way and method, as it has been walked in and owned by Him in our predecessors, of truly worthy memory, in their carrying on of our noble work of reformation in the several steps thereof from popery, prelacy, and likewise erastian supremacy, so much usurped by him, who, (it is true so far as we know) is descended from the race of our kings, yet he hath so far deborded [departed] from what he ought to have been, by his perjury and usurpation in church matters, and tyranny in matters civil, as is known by the whole land, that we have just reason to account it one of the Lord's great controversies against us that we have not disowned him and the men of his practices (whether inferior magistrates or any other), as enemies to our Lord and His crown, and the true protestant and presbyterian interest in thir lands, our Lord's *espoused bride* and church. Therefore, though we be for government and governors, such as the word of God and our covenant allows, yet we for ourselves and all that will adhere to us, as the representatives of the presbyterian kirk, and covenanted nation of Scotland, considering the great hazard of lying under such a sin any longer, do, by thir presents, *disown* Charles Stuart, that has been reigning (or rather tyrannizing, as we may say), on the throne of Britain these years bygone, as having any right, title to, or interest in, the said crown of Scotland for government, as forfeited several years since, by his perjury and breach of covenant, both to God and His kirk, and usurpation of His crown and royal prerogatives therein, and many other breaches in matters ecclesiastic, and by his tyranny and breach of the very *leges regnandi* in matters civil. For which reason we declare, that several years since, he should have been denuded of being king, ruler, or magistrate, or of aving any power to act, or to be obeyed as such. As also, we being under the





SUCH A DARING act of rebellion immediately succeeding the discovery of the Queensferry covenant, clearly evinced that the ultra-presbyterians had designs in hand for setting Christ on his throne, that would render them more obnoxious to government than ever. "Their friends in Holland," says a presbyterian writer, "were a desperate set of enthusiasts, always ready to print and publish the ravings of the party, than which nothing could be more despicable, and sending them missionary preachers, whose civil principles were subversive of all government. Those missionaries formed a seminary of young zealots, who soon broke into a burst of treason and rebellion<sup>1</sup>." The council communicated these recent transactions to Lauderdale on the 30th of June; and added that Cameron was at the head of seventy horsemen fully equipped. The king approved of the measures which the council had adopted, and ordered them to issue a proclamation offering a reward for the apprehension of the traitors. The military detachments were also redistributed, so as that some of them might fall in with the party which was now in the field "in effeir of war," and who had entered into a bond for mutual support, and for the repudiation of both the king and the duke of York.

INFORMATION having been received at head quarters that the presbyterians had "drawn to a head" at Aird-Moss, in the parish of Auchinleck, in Ayrshire, under the command of Hackston of Rathillet, one of the late archbishop of St. An-

standard of our Lord Jesus Christ, Captain of Salvation, DO DECLARE WAR with such a tyrant and usurper, and all the men of his practices, as enemies to our Lord Jesus Christ, and his cause and covenants; and against all such as have strengthened him, sided with, or any way acknowledged him in his tyranny, civil or ecclesiastic, yea, against all such as shall strengthen, side with, or any wise acknowledge any other in the like usurpation and tyranny, far more against such as would betray or deliver up our free reformed mother kirk unto the bondage of antichrist, the pope of Rome. And by this we homologate that testimony given at Rutherglen, the 29th of May, 1679, and all the faithful testimonies of those who have gone before, as also of those who have suffered of late. And we do disclaim that declaration published at Hamilton, June, 1679, chiefly because *it takes in the king's interest*, which we are several years loosed from, because of the foresaid reasons, and others which may after this (if the Lord will) be published. As also we *disown*, and by this *resent*, the reception of the duke of York, that professed papist, as repugnant to our principles and vows to the most high God, and as that which is the great, though not alone just, reproach of our kirk and nation. We also by this protest against his succeeding to the crown; and whatever has been done, or any are essaying to do in this land, (given to the Lord) in prejudice to our work of reformation. And to conclude, we hope after this none will blame us for, or offend at, *our rewarding those that are against us*, as they have done to us, as the Lord *gives opportunity*. This is not to exclude any that have declined, if they be willing to give satisfaction according to the degree of their offence. Given at Sanquhar, June 22d, 1680."

<sup>1</sup> Guthrie's General History, x. 200.



drew's murderers, and under the supreme direction of Cameron, the general ordered sir Alexander Bruce, on Thursday, the 22d of July, to proceed to the spot. A folio pamphlet, however, which gives a minute account of the skirmish, says the place where the rebels were posted was in the parish of Crawford-John, in the upper part of Lanerkschire, which is much at variance with other accounts. The author says, "On Thursday, the 22d of July, 1686, the general hearing that Cameron was at *Crawford-John* with a *considerable* party of horse and foot, he immediately commanded sir Alexander Bruce, of Earshall, lieutenant to captain Graham, of Claverhouse, to take his troop, and a troop of dragoons, and go in search of the rebels. Cameron's party consisted of a hundred men, mostly horse, who retreated to a bog, where the dragoons dismounted and attacked them on foot, and after a combat of half an hour, Cameron and fourteen men were killed, though fighting the battles of the Lord<sup>1</sup>." When they saw the cavalry approaching, and that there was no possibility of escape, the people gathered round about Cameron, "while he prayed a *short word*; wherein he repeated this expression thrice over,—'Lord, spare the green, and take the ripe.' When ended, he said to his brother, with great intrepidity—'Come, let us fight it out to the last; for this is the day that I have longed for, and the day that I have prayed for, to die fighting against the Lord's avowed enemies; this is the day that *we shall get the crown!*' And to the rest he said—'Be encouraged, all of you, to fight it out valiantly, for all of you that shall fall this day, *I see heaven's gates open to receive you!*'"<sup>2</sup> The rebels fought like brave men, and did considerable execution in the ranks of the royalists; but the courage of despair and enthusiasm could not long stand against better discipline and superior arms. In this fierce skirmish twenty-eight soldiers and fifteen of the rebels were killed; but among them was their pugnacious and *ripe* minister. He had seen heaven's gates open to receive him; but in the meantime his head and hands were immediately cut off and sent to Edinburgh, and placed on the Netherbow gate. The assassin Hackston was severely wounded, and captured; he was also sent to Edinburgh, and in his own account of this affair he twice acknowledges that he was very kindly treated on the way, his wounds dressed, and refreshments given to him.

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Defeat of the Rebels at Crawford-John. Folio.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History.—Cloud of Witnesses.—Scots Worthies.—Lives of Cameron, Cargill, and Hackston, *passim*.



WODROW speaks of the preparations made by government to suppress this rebellion, with an air of martyrdom, as a monstrous cruelty and persecution in checking the pranks of these wandering stars. Hackston declined the king's authority at his examination; but a jury unanimously found him guilty of the primate's murder, accessory to the Sanquhar Declaration, and of having levied war against the king. He was hanged on the 30th of July, and Wodrow complains that "the sentence was executed with great solemnity and severity, *though* he was a gentleman of good descent, excellent parts, and *remarkable piety*!"

BISHOP BURNET speaks of the covenanters as a "harmless sort of people"—"that they never attempted any thing against any person"—"that they never offended any person." "If," says Salmon, "Burnet can thus become an advocate for rebels and murderers, with what face can he fall so severely upon common failings? But so happy a thing it is, as I have observed already, to be of the number of the elect! the grossest crimes, the greatest immoralities, become virtues in the saints! They shall be represented as innocent, if not meritorious, while the best deeds of unsanctified churchmen are accounted exceeding sinful! and not only their failings, but their virtuous actions, entitle them to nothing better than damnation, in the opinion of our author and his brethren<sup>1</sup>."

DONALD CARGILL was now left alone in his glory, and he still continued to preach out of the reach of the military, who were on the watch to secure him; but, says Hetherington, "the blood-stained banner which fell from Cameron's dying hand, was caught up, and borne aloft by Cargill with unshrinking resolution." Cargill displayed this figurative banner bravely at Torwood, in Stirlingshire; where, he said, "he had a tout [blast] to give with the trumpet that the Lord had put in his hand that would sound in the ears of many in Britain, and other places in Europe also<sup>2</sup>." This astounding tout, therefore, was given at the field-preaching on the 30th of September, at the Torwood, when, "moved with zeal against the indignities done to the Son of God, by overturning His work, and destroying His people, he delivered up to Satan some of the most scandalous and principal promoters and abettors of this conspiracy against Christ<sup>3</sup>." He commenced with the chief *malignant*, the king, saying—"I, being a minister of Jesus Christ, and having power and authority from Him, do

<sup>1</sup> Examination of Burnet's Own Times, ii. 897.

<sup>2</sup> Life, in Scots Worthies, p. 333.

<sup>3</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, p. 342





in His name, and by His Spirit, excommunicate Charles the Second—James, duke of York—James, duke of Monmouth—John, duke of Lauderdale—John, duke of Rothes—sir George Mackenzie, the lord advocate—and Thomas Dalzell, of Bins, for executing the tyranny of the preceding parties<sup>1</sup>. The following Sunday he preached at Fallow-hill, where he said, “I know I am, and will be condemned by many, for excommunicating those wicked men; but condemn me who will, I know I am approved of by God, and *am persuaded*, that what I have done on earth, is ratified in heaven; for *if ever I knew the mind of God*, and was clear in my call to any piece of my generation-work, it was that<sup>2</sup>.”

HIS MAJESTY published a second declaration in the London Gazette, on the 10th of June, respecting the duke of Monmouth, whose unlawful pretensions to the crown might have involved the empire in all the horrors of a disputed succession. The declaration embodies that already given; and narrates that—“we found the same rumour not only revived again, but also improved with new additions;” several lords were named as having been present at the marriage, one of whom possessed a written contract betwixt the king and Mrs. Walters. These noblemen were examined before the king and council, and solemnly denied all knowledge of any such marriage or contract: “yet we think it requisite at this time to make our declaration above recited more public; and to order the same (. . .) to be forthwith printed and published. And we do again upon this occasion call ALMIGHTY GOD to witness, and DECLARE, upon the faith of a christian, and the word of a king, *that there was never any marriage*, or contract of marriage, had or made between us and the said Mrs. Walters, alias Barlow, the duke of Monmouth’s mother, nor between us and any woman whatever, our royal consort queen Catherine, that now is, only excepted. . . . Given at our court at Whitehall, the second day of June, in the two-and-thirtieth year of our reign<sup>3</sup>.”

THE NATURAL dispositions of some men are often better than the principles of the religious sect to which they attach themselves; and this is conspicuous in the conduct of the religious body whose affairs have occupied so much more of our attention than is consistent with the title of this work. Their principles tended directly to murder their religious opponents; but when we consider the constant call upon them to extir-

<sup>1</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, 342-345.

<sup>2</sup> Life, in Scots Worthies, 353.

<sup>3</sup> Somers’ Tracts on all Subjects, 4to. pp. 82-85.—Salmon’s Chronology, i. A.D. 1680, 217.—Ellis’s Original Letters. vol. iii. p. 345, anno 1824.



pate, which means to murder, the episcopalians, it is most wonderful to think how few were assassinated. There cannot be a doubt but that the presbyterians laboured under an invincible "delusion to believe a lie;" and which seemed to increase with opposition. The severe measures, and the military coercion, to which the government was obliged to resort, were not the result of any inherent tyranny or disposition to exercise arbitrary power; but they were driven to them to preserve the peace of the kingdom, the lives of the episcopal clergy and people, and the dignity and power of the crown, all of which were in perpetual danger from the jesuitical principles of the covenanters. When interrogated whether or not the archbishop's death was *murder*, the universal answer was, that it was *not murder*; but with the same universality the just execution of Hackston, who assisted at the primate's murder, was at Bothwell Bridge, and was finally taken in the act of fighting against the king's troops, was *indeed reckoned murder*. Patrick Forman said on the scaffold—"I adhere to all the faithful testimonies that have been given for the truth since the year 1638, *especially* the Sanquhar Declaration, the Rutherglen Testimony, and the papers found on Henry Hall at the Queensferry, called the new covenant, and to the lawfulness of the Torwood excommunication<sup>1</sup>." And John Potter, in his dying speech, said—"I bear witness, and leave my testimony against the reception of the duke of York . . . and now he must have this our blood to quench his thirst upon; but that heart of his, that is so rejoicing at the hearing and seeing our death, ere long my heart shall sing hallelujah to the Lamb of God, and join in my note, and *pass my sentence with the Great Judge against him and all the enemies of God*, if great repentance and free grace prevent it not<sup>2</sup>." Wodrow pretends to disown the extravagant sentiments of the last props of the covenant—Cargill and Cameron; but he speaks of them with fraternal and apologetical tenderness. And Hetherington asserts that the sentence pronounced at Torwood "was one which these perjured and blood-stained men *deserved*<sup>3</sup>."

THE ROOT from which all the heresies, schisms, rebellions, delusions, and enthusiasm, of the period sprang, was fixed and imbedded in that device of the jesuits—THE COVENANT, with its antichristian, antisocial, and murderous obligations. The covenant was that *other gospel*, to hear which is so severely condemned by St. Paul; and their blind enthusiasm made them court death joyfully, but especially egotistical scenes of

<sup>1</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, p. 145.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> History, p. 155.



display and dying speeches, which partook more of madness than of sober and undefiled religion; for the spirit of enthusiasm puts out the eye of reason, and extinguishes the sobriety of religion. Instead of following a proper rule or principle of action, it leaves a man to the impulses and excitement of imagination and the delirium of fancy, and makes him believe that he is in the highest exaltation of charity, whilst he is in the very gall of bitterness. As Ham was not afraid to uncover his father's skirt, so the religious enthusiast is not afraid to speak evil of dignities either in church or state; and whilst he is persecuting the church for which Christ died, he is perfectly persuaded that he is actuated by zeal for the honour of God, and actually doing Him service. This delusion sanctifies in his eyes, schism, rebellion, murder, and the most uncharitable opinion of his neighbour, who, he thinks, offends of malicious wickedness, whilst if he can see any infirmities in himself, he only considers them mere human frailties. An enthusiast, says Leslie, "is of all men the most impatient of contradiction, or of any reflection upon his [own] reputation; and yet he seeketh not honour of men, and thinks himself an holy and humble man of heart! He is all made up of contradictions; proud in his humility; meek in his rage; charitable in railing; zealous in lying; patient in his revenge; for unity in schism, and loyalty in his rebellion!"

THE POWER of the keys which Christ left to his church has ever been a subject of unmitigated ridicule to presbyterians; and when it has been exercised by any portion of the church catholic, they have invariably denied the authority of men to forgive sins, whereas it is not man, but God, that forgives sin, through the official declaration of His ministers. Yet they claim most distinctly for their "church officers," "the keys of the kingdom of heaven; by virtue whereof they have power respectively to retain and remit sins, to shut that kingdom against the impenitent, both by the word and censures<sup>1</sup>." Their claiming the power of the keys for themselves, and denying it to the Greek, Roman, Anglican, and other branches of the holy catholic and apostolic church, is a powerful evidence that, as has been before observed, like the Romanists, they confine the catholic church to their own body, and out of which both parties assure us "there is no ordinary *possibility* of salvation." It is singular, and contrary to apostolic doctrine, that the presbyterians have ever exercised the power of the keys "to destruction," "to shut out of the kingdom" of

<sup>1</sup> Chap. xii. Sec. 3.





heaven ; but never to edification, to admit by absolution into it. At all periods of their history they have shewn the most reckless barbarity in thundering out anathemas and pronouncing excommunications, and which they never relaxed *nisi in extremis*. Believing that promise of Christ to His holy and universal church, with equal sincerity as I do all His other "gifts unto men," I as firmly believe that all those acts performed by unauthorised men are of no value whatever, but that they are sins of presumption in "the church officers" that venture to usurp the priest's office. Whilst they had law on their side, however, their excommunications, though scatheless in regard to heaven, yet they had the most tremendous *temporal* consequences—the loss of life, fortune, and reputation. In the Torwood drama, the parties that came under Cargill's ban were exposed to the knife of the assassin ; and such was the fanaticism of these "harmless saints" and "angels of Michael," that opportunity only was required, for any of them to have carried Cargill's sentence into execution. Cargill himself asserted the *justice* of his excommunication, and added, "there are no kings nor ministers on earth, without repentance of the persons [which, upon Calvinistic principles, is an impossibility], can reverse these sentences upon any account : God, who is the author of that ordinance, is the more engaged to the ratifying of them ; and all that acknowledge the scripture, ought to acknowledge them." The excommunications thundered out by the Glasgow Assembly in 1638, against the whole apostolic company of Scotland, have never been to this hour removed by any presbyterian public act, or repented of by any private repudiation of their dreadful crime ; but, contrariwise, it is gloried in, and the unhappy actors extolled "as the most heroic spirits that ever God inspired and raised up in this last age of the world."

THESE extravagances and fanaticism may excite "our special wonder ;" but they are merely the natural consequences of the principles on which their whole system is based. The presbyterians are bound to the utter extirpation of the glorious company of the apostles, and of course to *renounce their fellowship*, (although St. Luke calls it one of the *marks* of the church), not only in their own land, but wheresoever the sword of the secular arm can reach. They are also bound to discover, bring to trial and to *condign punishment*, all whom they choose to designate malignants ; and these sins they bind on themselves "in the presence of Almighty God, the searcher of all hearts, *with a true intention to perform the same*, as they shall answer at that great day when the secrets of all hearts shall be disclosed."





CHARLES was a most merciful prince, and he was most unwilling to treat his Scottish subjects with severity; and whenever their complaints reached his ears, he gave orders for a relaxation of the penalties they had incurred. But, asks Mr. Skinner, "what could government do? Here was the first man in the church, and a privy councillor in the state, openly and inhumanly murdered, and his murderers protected and abetted, the king's authority renounced, and his person set up as a mark for every private ruffian to shoot at; his officers insulted, his laws defied, his very mercy affronted; and all this by a pitiful parcel of hot-headed fanatics, not the thousandth part of the nation, either for number, figure, or property<sup>1</sup>."

Ecclesiastical History of Scotland, ii. 484.



## CHAPTER XLIII.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP BURNET.

1680.—Bishops' houses repaired.—Presbyterian tradesmen refuse to work to episcopalians.—Complaint of the synod of St. Andrews.—English parliament meet—motion for disinheriting the duke of York—the duke's arrival.—Earl of Moray made principal secretary of state.—Riot of the students.—1681.—A regency proposed.—English parliament dissolved.—King published his reasons.—Two women executed—their testimonies—enthusiasm.—A declaration.—Cargill's capture—condemnation—execution.—Reflections.—Whigs dismissed.—Duke of York high commissioner.—Meeting of Parliament—king's letter—act recognising the duke of York's succession.—Lord Hatton accused in parliament.—The Test Act.—Dissatisfaction.—Bishop and clergy of Aberdeen's resolutions.—Clergy averse to the test—many deprived.—Council modify the oath.—Act of council.—King's letter.—Remarks.—Earl of Shaftesbury's trial.—Reflections.

1680.—THE CRIME of sacrilege had been so universal and so extensive after the destruction of the Romish church in Scotland, that the revenues of the different sees were insufficient to maintain the prelates, and keep up the fabrics of their houses. And this year it became necessary for the council to authorise the lord bishop of Dunkeld to appropriate £200 sterling of the stipends of the vacant parishes of his diocese for the repair of his dwelling-house; and his grace the archbishop of Glasgow was allowed £300 sterling from the same source for the repair of his mansion-house. It became also necessary for the council to protect the episcopal clergy in the province of Glasgow from a most annoying species of persecution, to which, since the suppression of open rioting and rebellion, the presbyterians had resorted, probably at the advice of the jesuits that lurked among them. "About the same time, the council considering the insolences committed against the orthodox clergy in Galloway, in *defrauding* them in their stipends, and indirect methods taken *to force them to leave* that shire, by tradesmen and others, their *refusing* to work for them, ordain



the sheriff to give sentences against such, and upon complaint upon such as refuse to work to them, that he fine them and call for soldiers to execute his sentences<sup>1</sup>." The breaking down of this confederacy was considered part of their "sufferings!" It was founded on the popish doctrine of non-intercourse with heretics, "that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast," or of the covenant; and we have divine authority for saying, "Here is wisdom;" nevertheless, it is of the serpentine sort.

GREAT complaints were made at this period by the clergy in the disaffected districts, of the indifference and slack attendance of many of the people on the eucharistic sacrifice, and of their falling off in their part of that sacrifice in their alms and oblations, "many persons giving but one copper doyt at their offering." This melancholy state of things was entered on the records of the synod of St. Andrews on the 2d of September, as follows:—The archbishop and synod being deeply sensible of the great discontentment the orderly and orthodox ministers labour under, by reason of the many vagrant conventicle preachers and others, that in certain places of this diocese, especially in Fife, do keep weekly preachings in their houses, to the great disturbance of the peace and unity of the congregations where they reside, and the next adjacent; therefore it is thought fit that the moderators of the several presbyteries should give in to the clerk of the synod a list of the names of all such, whether itinerant or settled, that his grace may make use thereof as he shall find expedient. It being complained, that in several places so many withdraw from the church, and refuse to be examined, so that the ministers of these parishes are doubtful whether or not they shall administer the sacrament of the eucharist; it is appointed that it shall be given to those who are desirous of the same, though they be but few.

ON THE 21st of October the parliament of England met at Westminster; and, in his speech from the throne, Charles offered to give them any satisfaction they could desire for the security of the reformed catholic church of England, except the alteration of the succession; and he recommended a farther examination into the Popish Plot. On the 2d November, lord William Russell brought in a bill for disinheriting the duke of York, and it passed the House of Commons on the eleventh, notwithstanding that the king sent a message declar-

<sup>1</sup> Records of the Diocesan Synod of St. Andrews, cited in M'Crie's *Memoirs of Veitch and Brysson*—Appendix, p. 507.





ing his readiness to concur in any other measure for the security of religion than the deprivation of the duke of York of his just rights. The Commons presented a remonstrance to his majesty, in which they complained of the practices of the papists, and of the encouragement they had received; and they represented, that unless a popish successor was excluded, every other remedy for the security of the church of England would prove ineffectual. On the 15th, lord William Russell carried up the exclusion bill to the House of Lords, but it was thrown out there at the second reading by a majority of thirty-three votes, the king himself being anxiously present in the house. It has been asserted that three of the bishops voted in favour of the bill; but this is a mistake, arising from three of them having voted for its committal on the first reading. Burnet says, "the whole bench of the bishops was against it;" and in a note on the place, his editor says this error can be now corrected, "a list of those peers who voted for the bill of exclusion having been lately found by the head librarian of the Bodleian library, Dr. Bandinel, among the Ormond papers bequeathed to the library by Carte, the historian<sup>1</sup>. They are all temporal peers, thirty in number, and to the list of their names this note is subjoined, 'thus all the fourteen bishops and forty-nine temporal peers (sixty-three in the whole) voted for its being rejected,' against thirty temporal peers. Wodrow, in evident chagrin, remarks, that "when the news of the rejecting of the exclusion bill came to Edinburgh, the chancellor offered to cause set on bonfires and ring bells, and order public rejoicings there; but the duke of York declined this, and told him there was no haste in this matter, for he expected an impeachment; but his fears were soon over<sup>2</sup>."

THE DUKE and duchess of York and their family sailed from Woolwich on the 20th October, to which place the king accompanied them, and, after a very stormy passage, they landed at Kirkaldy, where they were received by the duke of Rothes, with the nobility and gentry of the county. They were entertained at Lesly-house till the 29th, when they repaired to Holyrood-house. On the following day, the lord bishop of Edinburgh and the city clergy presented a loyal address to his royal highness, expressive of their attachment to his illustrious family, and of the satisfaction that was felt at his arrival. The privy council also informing the king of the duke's arrival, expressed their hopes that they should be able to suppress

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 218. Ann. 1680.—Burnet's Own Times, ii. 252, and Editor's Note *in loco*.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 241.



those principles that had formerly ruined the kingdom; and assure his majesty of their determination to support the duke of York's succession to the imperial crown. On the 2d November the earl of Moray was appointed sole secretary of state, in the place of the duke of Lauderdale, who, from age and infirmities, had resigned the seals which he had held from the Restoration, a period of twenty years. Lord Fountainhall says there was a riotous assemblage of students in Edinburgh, on Christmas-day, when they burnt the pope's effigy, and paraded the streets with banners and mottos, which produced an order of council to shut up the college, and to banish the ringleaders fifteen miles from the city; a punishment that excited Wodrow's indignation.

1681.—In England the revolutionary party still continued their persecution of the duke of York; but finding the nation against the exclusion of his royal highness, they proposed some expedients instead; viz. upon the death of Charles II. to vest the whole government in a regent, who should be the princess of Orange, and if she died without issue, then the princess Anne; but if the duke of York should have a son, and be educated a protestant, that the regency should last no longer than his minority. That the regents should, during the duke's life, govern in his name; but that he should reside five hundred miles distant from the British dominions; and should he return to this kingdom, that he and his adherents be deemed guilty of high treason, and the crown devolve upon the regent. The Bill of Exclusion was read a first time, and ordered for a second reading; but the king came to the House of Lords, and having summoned the Commons, he told them that he observed such heats amongst them, and such differences betwixt the two houses, that he thought fit to dissolve the parliament. The Whig members had brought a multitude of people to overawe the houses, and the king fearing lest he might be insulted, set out for Windsor, but returned next day to Whitehall. On the 8th of April he published a declaration, and assigned the following reasons for having dissolved the parliament:—Their entire neglect of the public business, and falling into factions; their issuing arbitrary orders for taking his loyal subjects into custody in matters unconnected with the privileges of parliament; their declaring many eminent persons enemies to the king and kingdom, without any order or process of law, or any hearing of their defence, or any proof so much as offered; their resolutions against any person lending the crown money, or to buy any tally of anticipation, and thereby endeavouring to reduce him to a more helpless



condition than the meanest of his subjects; their taking upon them to suspend the laws and acts of parliament, by voting against the prosecution of dissenters. This declaration was ordered to be read in all churches and chapels. Immediately addresses of congratulation were presented to his majesty from all quarters, for his happy deliverance from the thralldom of the republicans; at the same time loyally promising to stand by him and to support the throne with their lives and fortunes, and for the preservation of his majesty's government, both in church and state<sup>1</sup>.

Two WOMEN, named Isabel Allison and Marion Harvey, were executed; and the martyrologists have raised a terrible howl of cruelty against the duke; for his presence in council now relieved it from the accusation of persecution. Sir George M'Kenzie says, "there were, indeed, two women executed, and *but two*, in both these reigns, and they were punished for having received and entertained, for many months together, the murderers of the archbishop, and who had been likewise openly in rebellion at Bothwell-bridge: they declined the king's authority, as being an enemy to God, and the devil's vicegerent. And though pardon was offered to them upon their repentance, they were so far from accepting it, that they owned the crimes to be duties<sup>2</sup>." On the scaffold Allison left her testimony "against the receiving that *limb of antichrist*, the duke of York, and against the Indulgences. Harvey adhered to the Queensferry covenant, the Torwood excommunication, and the excommunication of the bishops; and in lifting up her testimony, she said—"I leave my blood upon the traitor that sits upon the throne; then on James, duke of York, and on the bloody crew that call themselves rulers. And I leave it on James Henderson, in the north ferry, who was the Judas that sold Archibald Stewart, and Mr. Skeen and me, to the bloody soldiers. I leave my blood on serjeant Warrock, who took me: I leave my blood on the criminal lords, as they call themselves; and especially on that excommunicated tyrant, George M'Kenzie the advocate, and the fifteen assizers; and on Andrew Cunningham, that gave me the doom; and on that excommunicate traitor, Tom Dalzell, who threatened me with the boots<sup>3</sup>."

SUCH ENTHUSIASTS were fitter for Bedlam than for the scaffold; but their madness was infectious, and it had method in it. The presbyterians in Fife were smitten with the

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 220, 221.

<sup>2</sup> Vindication, 4to.

<sup>3</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, 83-103.





desire to imitate Cameron and Cargill, and they affixed a declaration on the church-door of Kettle, disowning the king's authority, besides other extravagances; but as no one appeared to own it, it was torn down, and no more was said about it. What between the preaching of the indulged and of the vagrant ministers, and the displays on the scaffold and in presence of the council, the mad enthusiasm spread, and a set of blasphemers arose in Borrowstouness, where Cargill had so long lurked, headed by one John Gibbs, a sailor; hence they were called Gibbites, and also Sweet Singers, and whose extravagance exceeded that of the fifth monarchy men. They emitted a long declaration, which is in the appendix to "M<sup>r</sup> Kenzie's Vindication," and attested as a true copy by William Patterson, the clerk of council; in which they said—"It seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to take out of our Bibles the Psalms in metre . . . for the Revelations say, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are mentioned in this book; and we did burn them in our prison-house, and swept away the ashes. . . . We being pressed to this work by the Holy Ghost, do renounce the translation of the Old and New Testaments, and that for additions put into them by men. We *renounce and decline* all authority throughout the world, and all that are in authority, and all their acts and edicts, from the tyrant Charles Stuart to the lowest tyrant, and burn them<sup>1</sup>. They also renounced their own habitations, and betook themselves to desert places; and at a place called the Frost Moss, they burnt the Bible, using many blasphemous expressions, not fit to be repeated<sup>2</sup>. These fanatics were humanely sent to the House of Correction to hard labour, which proved a sanative process; for in a few months they were liberated, and returned to their own homes, and were restored to their right minds.

THE TIME of Cargill's glorification in the Grass-market was now at hand. He was seized at Covington Mills, on the borders of Lanarkshire, after having preached his last sermon at Dunsire common, and with barbarous cruelty he was placed on a horse's back without a saddle, and having his feet tied painfully tight under the animal's belly; in this state he was taken to Edinburgh. Cargill's case was so "notour," that he was sentenced to death by the council, but sent to be tried by a jury, and that, too, by the *casting vote* of one of their own martyrs, the earl of Argyle; for the council were equally di-

<sup>1</sup> Appendix to Sir George M<sup>r</sup> Kenzie's Vindication, 219, 220.

<sup>2</sup> Cruikshanks' History, i. 135, 136.





vided—one-half intending to confine him for life in the Bass. But Argyle, the future martyr, decided Cargill's fate, and he was ordered for death; nevertheless, he was offered his life, if he would say "God save the king<sup>1</sup>," but which he refused to do. He declined to answer the council's interrogatories respecting the Torwood excommunication or the Sanquhar declaration, because they were ecclesiastical matters, and the council was only a civil court. He asserted the lawfulness of rising in arms, and denied the slaughter of the archbishop to be murder. He died consistently, and when at the foot of the ladder, he said, "The Lord knows I go on this ladder with less fear and perturbation of mind than ever I entered a pulpit to preach;" and when he mounted the scaffold, he said—"Now *I am near the getting of the crown* which shall be *sure*; for which I bless the Lord, and desire all of you to bless him that he hath brought me here, and made me triumph *over devils, men, and sin*." This was one of the most extraordinary men of the age; and had he exerted the same zeal and fidelity in the service of God as he bestowed in the service of him who was a murderer both of souls and bodies from the beginning, there could have been little doubt of his receiving the crown of righteousness. But when we consider that even to give up the body voluntarily to be burned will avail nothing without charity, of which he was notoriously deficient, it is to be feared that his expectations were but the mere ravings of enthusiasm, mixed with a love of display, and the desire to maintain his character as a prophet. He had many good points in his character: he loved religious solitude; he was affectionate, sober, and temperate in his diet, saying "it was well won that was won off the flesh," and he was "a great hater of covetousness." But if he himself was not a jesuit, he was at least the tool of that fraternity; for he not only broke charity by dividing the church, which an ancient father saith, even the blood of martyrdom will not wash out, but, after the manner of the jesuits, he divided his own sect, the presbyterians, among themselves, and denounced the indulged ministers, calling them as bad as the clergy, whom he denominated "*the priests of Baal*?"

ALL THE concessions and favours, and acts of conciliation, that the government had essayed, had failed to reclaim or to subdue the presbyterians; but the defeat of their rebellion at Bothwell, and the execution of some of their ministers, had

<sup>1</sup> Chronological Notes of Scottish Affairs, from 1680 till 1701; being chiefly taken from the Diary of lord Fountainhall, 4to. p. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow—Cruikshanks—Hetherington—Scots Worthies—Cloud of Witnesses.



a salutary effect upon the rest of them. Besides, the government was now more firm and steady since the king had emancipated himself from the Whigs at court; there was less vacillation in his councils, and the law was steadily but temperately enforced. He had dismissed the earl of Shaftsbury and others, who were the heads of a desperate faction at court, and who were in alliance with the presbyterians; and in order to exalt themselves in power, they excited the covenanters to keep armed field meetings. Monmouth, Shaftsbury, and some others, persuaded the presbyterians, that by helping the Whigs into power at court, their own sect would be again established in as arbitrary a supremacy as they had formerly held. But the king laid the axe to the root of the confederacy, by dismissing the chiefs; and so the underspur-leathers having no prompters, and being more steadily governed, became quiet and peaceable, and even began to return to the church. Even Wodrow himself acknowledges, that since the execution of the prophet Cargill "there was *not one* who preached at *field meetings*, neither were there many sermons in houses; *YEA, some presbyterian ministers*, now deprived of all other opportunities, *did, at some times, even communicate with the episcopal clergy . . .* to manifest their holding communion with them in those things which they held in common with other protestant churches<sup>1</sup>."

THE KING transmitted a commission, dated the 22d of June, to the duke of York, constituting his royal highness the lord high commissioner to the parliament, which was summoned to assemble at Edinburgh on the 28th of July, after an interval of nine years. Wodrow presents every act of the government, however innocent or necessary, as a "grievance," and a cause of "suffering." "It was now nine years," says he, "since we had a parliament in Scotland, and it may be, considering all circumstances, the kingdom was at no great loss<sup>2</sup>." This parliament was "ridden" with the greatest magnificence, and Dr. Patterson, lord bishop of Edinburgh, preached before them; and the whole of the spiritual estate, except two, were present. The marquis of Athole was appointed the president, and he presented the king's letter, dated from Windsor Castle, the 12th of July. Wodrow very justly observes, that "papers of this nature contain as much of the mind of the ministry and minions about the king, as his own;" but although this "observe" be true in general, yet it was not so in this instance, for Charles had a mind of his own on the subject that lay nearest his heart at this time. In his speech from the throne

<sup>1</sup> History, ii. 242—*vide post*.

<sup>2</sup> Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, 4to. 19.



the duke said, the king "hath commanded me to assure you, that he will inviolably maintain and protect the protestant religion as now established by law in this his kingdom; and that he will, upon the same account, protect and maintain the government of the church by archbishops and bishops, and will take their persons, and all other their concerns, into his royal care and protection; and doth seriously recommend to you to fall upon effectual courses for suppressing those seditious and rebellious conventicles, from whence proceed all disorder and confusion, and these horrid and extravagant doctrines, which are a scandal to christianity, and tend to the subversion of all public and private interests." The next topic of the speech might, perhaps, have come more gracefully from the king himself in his letter; but it was left to the duke to inform the house, that the king "doth expect that you will not be short of the loyalty of your ancestors in vigorously asserting and clearing his royal prerogative, and in declaring the rights of his crown in its natural and legal course of descent."

THE ANSWER to the king's letter was an echo of it and of the duke's speech; and, to the horror of Wodrow and the Whig party, they affirm their resolution to maintain the rights and prerogatives of the crown and monarchy, "the native succession whereof cannot be invaded, without utter subversion of the fundamental laws of this your majesty's ancient kingdom." In conformity with this resolution, they passed the following act, recognising the duke's right of succession, to which it is most astonishing to hear any presbyterian object, when that clause of their confession is considered, which every one is bound to obtemperate as the confession of his *own faith*. "*Infidelity, or DIFFERENCE IN RELIGION, doth not make void the magistrate's just and legal authority, nor free the people from their due obedience to him; from which ecclesiastical persons are not exempted*."

"THE ESTATES of parliament, considering that the kings of this realm deriving their royal power from God Almighty alone, do succeed lineally thereto, according to the known degrees of proximity in blood, which cannot be interrupted, suspended, or diverted by any act or statute whatsoever; and that none can attempt to alter or divert the said succession without involving the subjects of this kingdom in perjury and rebellion, and without exposing them to all the fatal and dreadful consequences of a civil war, DO THEREFORE, from a hearty and

<sup>1</sup> Westminster Confession of Faith, ch. xiii. sect. iv. p. 143.





sincere sense of their duty, recognize, acknowledge, and declare, that the right to the imperial crown of this realm is, by the inherent right and the nature of the monarchy, as well as by the fundamental and unalterable laws of this realm, transmitted and devolved by a lineal succession, according to the proximity of blood; and that upon the death of the king or queen who actually reigns, the subjects of this kingdom are bound by law, duty, and allegiance, to obey the next immediate and lawful heir, either male or female, upon whom the right and administration of the government is immediately devolved; and that no difference in religion, nor no law, nor act of parliament, made or to be made, can alter or divert the right of succession and lineal descent of the crown to the nearest and lawful heirs, according to the degrees forsoaid, nor can stop or hinder them in the full, free, and actual administration of the government, according to the laws of the kingdom. LIKEAS our sovereign lord, with advice and consent of the said estates of parliament, does declare it high treason in any of the subjects of this kingdom, by writing, speaking, or in any other manner of way, to endeavour the alteration, suspension, or diversion of the said right of succession, or the debarring the next lawful successor from the immediate, actual, full and free administration of the government, conform to the laws of the kingdom; and that all such attempts or designs shall infer against them the pain of treason<sup>1</sup>."

Wodrow expresses due horror at this act; nevertheless it shows the wisdom and piety of our ancestors; and he denounces it as an "iniquity established by a law;" but after reading this and a subsequent act, I hope my readers will entertain charitable thoughts of our blessed fathers in Christ for abdicating their establishment in the next reign, when they see how stringently they were encompassed with oaths and acts of parliament. An act was passed for securing the peace of the country against seditious and rebellious field conventicles, which for so many years had been the bane of both trade and agriculture, and destructive of charity and goodwill among neighbours. "As they were going on in public business, *one* stood up in parliament and accused lord Hatton, the duke of Lauderdale's brother, of perjury on the account of Mitchell's business<sup>2</sup>." The name of this mysterious *one* is not mentioned; he produced copies of the letters written at the

<sup>1</sup> Act 2, Parl. 3, Charles II. acknowledging and asserting the right of succession to the imperial crown of Scotland; August 13, 1681.

<sup>2</sup> Burnet's Own Times, iii. 306.



time by lord Hatton to lord Kincardine, who was now dead, but his widow had given them to this *one*, out of spite to Hatton. By misstating the facts of Mitchel's case, perjury might be made to appear; but upon referring back it will be found that that charge cannot be substantiated<sup>1</sup>. Burnet's editor has added the following note to the place:—" . . . it is related, that lord Kincardine sent a bishop to duke Lauderdale, desiring him to consider better, before he denied, upon oath, the promise of life which had been given to Mitchel, because lord Kincardine had letters from the duke and the duke's brother in his possession, which requested him to ask the king to make good the promise. On which place of bishop Burnet's history, the late lord Auchinleck, judge Boswell, who was grandson of the earl of Kincardine, has written the following observation, inserted here by the favour of his lordship's grandson, James Boswell, esq. of the Inner Temple, a gentleman well known by his own and his father's merits:—"The bishop who was sent by my lord Kincardine was Patterson, bishop of Edinburgh, and those very letters were the cause of Lauderdale's disgrace. For when the duke of York was in Scotland he sent for my lady Kincardine, and these letters of hers. My lady told the duke she would not part with the originals; but that if his grace pleased, he might take a copy of them; which he did, and shewed to his brother, the king, who was stunned at the villainy, and ashamed he had employed such a minister; and immediately ordered all his posts and preferments to be taken from him<sup>2</sup>."

THE TEST, "a self-contradictory oath," was enacted on the 31st August, in which it was required of the parties taking office, either in church or state, to swear that resistance to the crown was unlawful, and at the same time to acknowledge Knox's "uncatholic" confession of faith to be the confession of their own faith, which pointedly advocated the *lawfulness of resisting* the powers that be. At first sight, it would appear to have been inconsistent with the duke's own principles, to have admitted into it words expressing adherence to the protestant religion; but that clause is so loosely mentioned, that it might easily be explained away. In fact, this oath cut directly at the established church, whose confession was the apostolic creed, at the presbyterians, who adhered to the Westminster confession of faith, and to the papists, who clove to the Tridentine creed; neither of whom could conscientiously

<sup>1</sup> Vide *ante*, vol. ii. ch. xxxiii. pp. 686, 687.

<sup>2</sup> Note to Burnet's *Own Times*, iii. 307.



swear to maintain a form of belief which was obsolete to all the parties. It was a most insidious and an erastian device of his royal highness's secret councillors, whose brethren had been so long engaged in prompting the ringleaders of the field conventicles. Opposition would have been generally made, and Queensberry and Argyle made some show of it, and which might have been effectual; but it was voted treasonable, and others were intimidated, so the bill passed. The only clause of the act that need be repeated, is that which required "that the ministers of each parish give up in October yearly, to their respective ordinaries, true and exact lists of all papists and schismatical withdrawers from the public worship in their respective parishes; which lists are to be subscribed by them, and that the bishops give in a double of the said lists subscribed by them to the respective sheriffs, stewarts, baillies of royalty and regality, and magistrates of burghs, to the effect the said judges may proceed against them according to law<sup>1</sup>." The effects of this fifth-ribbed clause will appear afterwards; but the TEST itself is as follows:—

"I — solemnly swear, &c. that I own and sincerely profess the true protestant religion, contained in the confession of faith recorded in the first parliament of king James VI., and that I believe the same to be founded on and agreeable to the written word of God: and I promise and swear that I shall adhere thereunto during all the days of my lifetime, and shall endeavour to educate my children therein, and shall never consent to any change or alteration contrary thereupon; and that I disown and renounce all such principles, doctrines, or practices, whether popish or fanatical, which are contrary unto and inconsistent with the said protestant religion and confession of faith: and for testification of my obedience to my most gracious sovereign, Charles II., I do affirm and swear, by this my solemn oath, that the king's majesty is the only supreme governor of this realm over all persons and in all causes, as well ecclesiastical as civil; and that no foreign prince, person, pope, prelate, state, or potentate, hath or ought to have any jurisdiction, power, superiority, pre-eminence, or authority, ecclesiastical or civil, within this realm: therefore I do utterly renounce and forsake all foreign jurisdictions, powers, superiorities, and authorities; and do promise that from henceforth, *I shall bear faith and true allegiance to the king's majesty, HIS HEIRS and lawful successors*; and to my power shall assist and defend all rights, jurisdictions, prerogatives, privi-

<sup>1</sup> 6 Act iii. Parl. Charges ii. Aug. 31, 1681.





leges, pre-eminences, and authorities belonging to the king's majesty, *his heirs* and *lawful* successors: and I further affirm and swear by this my solemn oath, that I judge it unlawful for subjects, upon pretence of reformation or any pretence whatsoever, to enter into covenants or leagues, or to convocate, convene, or assemble in any councils, conventions, or assemblies, to treat, consult, or determine in any matter of state, civil or ecclesiastic, without his majesty's special command or express license had thereunto, or to take up arms against the king or those commissioned by him; and that I shall never so rise in arms or enter into such covenants or assemblies, and that there lies no obligation upon me from the national covenant, or the solemn league and covenant (so commonly called), or any other manner of way whatsoever, to endeavour any change or alteration in the government, either in church or state, as it is now established by the laws of this kingdom: and I promise and swear that I shall, with my utmost power, defend, assist, and maintain his majesty's jurisdiction foresaid against all deadly; and I shall never decline his majesty's power and jurisdiction, as I shall answer to God. And finally I affirm and swear, that this my solemn oath is given in the plain genuine sense and meaning of the words, without any equivocation, mental reservation, or any manner of evasion whatsoever. So help me."

THIS TEST laid the axe to the root of the presbyterian tree, and accordingly it is fiercely denounced by all their writers as "conscience debauching,"—"for engaging them to own the king's supremacy over all persons and in all causes; to renounce our covenants with *defensive arms*, and all the former steps taken for carrying on the reformation<sup>1</sup>." But their own leaders were principally to blame for its inconsistency with their principles. Sir James Dalrymple, president of the court of session, and the earl of Argyle, had got the old confession of faith put into the act, for the purpose of excluding the duke of York from the throne, but being dissatisfied with the other parts of it, they refused to take the test without a qualification. This being refused, the former resigned his office and retired to Holland, to wait the progress of the revolution; the latter was committed to the Castle on a charge of treason. The earl of Queensberry also, and several of the nobility and those high in office, refused to take it, and therefore they resigned their offices.

THE BISHOPS and clergy generally demurred to take the

<sup>1</sup> Willison's Testimony, p. 17.





test, and they prepared to suffer for conscience sake. The bishop of Aberdeen was appointed by the council to administer the oath to the university and commissariat of that city; but both his lordship and his clergy demurred, and in a synodical meeting drew up the following resolutions, in the shape of queries:—

“WHEN AN oath is of the strictest obligation, and must be taken in judgment, truth, and righteousness; and when conscience is the most tender thing in the world, and not to be constrained, I cannot but inquire, for my satisfaction, anent the present Test, and desire to be resolved—

“1. How CAN I swear that confession of faith recorded par. 1, James VI. to be the true standard of the protestant religion, and the rule of my faith, and sincerely swear it to be founded upon the word of God, and bring up my children in that faith, which in some passages is obscure and doubtful; as chap. iii., where the confession says, ‘that the image of God is utterly defaced in man;’ and ch. xix. ‘the marks of the true church, the power of expounding the controverted sense of scripture and the supreme judge of controversies in the church, are dubious and disputable things.’ In which some things are contrary to the doctrine of this present church and all other reformed churches; as ch. xxiii. where the confession denies the ministers of the popish church to be true ministers of Christ; for the reformed churches never reordained popish priests when they turned protestants. Ch. xiv. the confession denies that to be a true church where the sacraments are not rightly administered—where they are not administered in the elements appointed in the word. Whereas the christian churches do not unchurch one another, because of the different circumstances in administration, because some use pure wine, and some wine mixed with water; nor did the church baptize such as were not baptized with water. And in which some things are contrary to the test itself, and the sound principles of protestants; as ch. xxv. the confession enjoins obedience and paying tribute to rulers only *conditionally*, while they travel vigilantly in the execution of their office; and in ch. xv. the confession forbids the resisting of the magistrates only conditionally while they pass not over the bounds of their office; and ch. xxv. he that resists the power, doing that which pertains to its office, resists the ordinance of God; and the chapter, of good works, says it is a good work to bear down tyranny. I think such a confession would teach us religion about as well as the solemn league and covenant.

“2. How CAN I swear that I believe the king’s majesty to be



the only supreme governor over all persons and in all causes? when the forementioned confession obliges me to believe Christ to be the *only* head of the church. And when I believe all ecclesiastic authority to be derived from Christ, and not from secular princes; when I believe no judge on earth is supreme judge in error or heresy, albeit they can punish the same; and when I believe the king's power to be cumulative, and not destructive of the intrinsic power of the church. I ask, therefore, whether the king's supremacy, as it is extended by the act, November 16th, 1669, doth deprive the kirk of her intrinsic power? when the disposal of the external government in all ecclesiastical matters, persons, or meetings, is put in his majesty's hand without any restriction, distinction, or limitation, by former laws or customs; all acts, laws, customs, or constitutions, contrary to the said supremacy, being expressly rescinded and annulled, which is to be well marked.

" 3. IF I BELIEVE the present established church to be *juris divini et apostolici*, how can I swear that it is in the king's power to alter or change the same? And if it be in its nature indifferent, how can I swear to that which the king can alter at his pleasure?

" 4. HOW CAN I swear to defend the king's privileges and prerogatives, until I know them, and consider them if they be consistent with the principles of religion? And if acts of council, founded upon the supremacy, be a just commentary on the king's supremacy, perhaps it will not be found to be consistent with the principles of the christian church.

" 5. HOW CAN I swear that I judge it unlawful, upon any pretext whatsoever, to enter into leagues and covenants without the king's express license and consent, when it was lawful enough, in the first days of christianity, to enter into a covenant with Christ and a league with one another, though not to cast off the yoke of secular princes, yet to cast off the yoke of paganism, judaism, and idoltary, even contrary to the express commands of the earthly sovereigns. And, put the case of avowed and professed popery in the kingdom (which God forbid), would it be unlawful for subjects, without tumult or force of arms, to shake off the Romish yoke, and to enter into a covenant for that effect? Will not that clause in the test condemn our reformation in Scotland?

" 6. HOW CAN I swear sincerely that I judge it unlawful for subjects to convene in any assemblies, to treat, consult, or determine, in any matter of state, civil or ecclesiastic, when I have no security from the test, or the laws of the land, but that clause may comprehend the assembly and meetings for



the worship of God and the ordinary exercise of discipline; especially when all ecclesiastical meetings are put in the king's hands by the act November 16th, 1664, and all acts, clauses, and constitutions, civil and ecclesiastic, to the contrary, rescinded and annulled? Can I condemn it as unlawful to meet or assemble for preaching the gospel, administering the holy sacraments, or exercising church discipline, unless I condemn the apostles and primitive christians, who did meet for such purposes? Again, if the license which we enjoy for meeting for God's worship and the exercise of discipline according to our reformed customs, should be in process of time recalled (which God forbid), would it be unlawful for us to assemble with one another for the said purposes?

"7. CAN I swear there lieth no obligation upon me, any manner of way to endeavour any change or alteration in the government of the church or state, as it is now established by law? For if there be any corruption in the government or administration thereof, may I not, if I have opportunity, advertise his majesty, his commissioner, his council, or some of his court? May I not desire quietly what I would have reformed? And though there were no corruptions at present, may not some creep in in process of time, and may not I in the least endeavour to reform these, though I may not in the least endeavour any alteration or change in the government? It must be a perfect constitution that needs no alteration in any of the least circumstances; and yet a change in some circumstances is a change: yea, the confession prescribed by the Test, ch. xxi. teaches me that no policy or order of ceremonies in the church can be appointed for all ages, places, or times, because what is now convenient may prove burthensome at another time, or in other circumstances. May I not pray to God Almighty to put it into the hearts of men to reform what is amiss? and yet to pray is some sort of endeavour. What if the king's power in national synods, by act of parliament, be destructive of the true church power? What if there be something in the act of restitution of bishops to be amended?

"8. I ASK if there be no more in this test, than in the acts of parliament whereupon it is founded, albeit there be a vast difference betwixt an act of parliament and an oath; and though it be said there is no more in the test nor in former oaths? But in act 8, par. James VI. and in act 4, par. 1. Charles II. against convocating and assembling the king's lieges without his license, there is an express clause put (but except in ordinary judgments); now this considerable clause is kept out of the Test, which should be well marked; for I





swear by it, that I judge it unlawful to convene or assemble upon any pretext whatsoever, even though it were to worship God with others. Again, in the declaration, act 5, ses. 2, par. 1, Charles II., these words are mentioned: 'There lieth no obligation upon me from the covenants to endeavour reformation;' but the Test adds, 'any manner of way,' may I not be under some obligation, though from neither of the covenants? And though I be under no obligation at present, may I not be under some afterwards? Again, if there be no more in this Test than in former oaths, how comes it to pass that the Test is imposed upon them who took the declaration and oath of supremacy formerly, and upon ministers who take the oath of supremacy and canonical obedience at their entry? To all this may be added the evil of imposing and multiplying of oaths."

THE ESTABLISHED clergy generally refused to take this oath; for, by virtue of his prerogative and supremacy, the king might, according as the law stood, dispose of the external government of the church as he might choose, and so, according to the policy of the reigning monarch, it might be changed to either presbytery or popery. The queries of the bishop of Aberdeen contained the sentiments of the other bishops and clergy generally, and others of them drew up protests in their synodal meetings to the same effect. Many of the clergy were deprived for refusing to take the test, and some of them voluntarily resigned their churches, rather than take an oath which contained so many and so great inconsistencies. Wodrow cannot refuse his praise to the episcopal clergy for their patient endurance of what he calls "wholesome severities." "Although," says he, "these *wholesome severities* wanted not their effect, yet it must be owned, *to the credit* of a great many others [besides those sufferers whom he names] among the episcopal clergy, that upon this occasion they made the best appearance that ever they did<sup>1</sup>." Many of them were deprived of their parishes by the privy council, and others abandoned their preferments, rather than commit such manifest perjury, and, moreover, to give a decided acknowledgment and consent to the assertory act, to maintain the king's privileges upon oath. Their christian courage, however, was not exhibited by an armed resistance to the law, nor in preaching the people into sedition and mutiny; but in meekly and patiently preparing themselves to suffer the vengeance of the privy council.

<sup>1</sup> History, iii. 304.



THE BISHOPS of Dunkeld and Aberdeen published the sense in which they and their clergy were willing to take the Test; but which was evidently not the sense that the literal meaning of the oath would bear, or that in which the government intended it. Bishop Patterson, of Edinburgh, also drew up a sort of explanation to salve consciences; but it could not supersede the plain letter of the law as it stood. After about eighty of the clergy had been deprived, and seeing the firm determination of the rest, not to betray the inherent rights of the church, which had been so flagrantly invaded by the duke of York as commissioner, and the earl of Moray as prime minister, and whom the celebrated Dr. Hickes calls "a good churchman," the government became alarmed at the unexpected but calm resolution of the clergy. Their christian fortitude extorted the admiration even of their enemies, and Wodrow says, "This stir among the clergy, which was *new and unprecedented* in any thing imposed by the state, made the mangers about Edinburgh begin to reflect a little, and to huddle up a declaration, and act explanatory anent the Test." Ministers therefore found it necessary to frame and issue the following act of council, without waiting for the king's approbation, dated the 3d of November:—

"FORASMUCH as some have entertained jealousies and prejudices against the oath and test, appointed to be taken by all persons in public trust, civil, ecclesiastic, or military, in this kingdom, by the 6th act of his majesty's third parliament, *as if* thereby they were to swear to every proposition or clause in the Confession of Faith therein mentioned, or that invasion were made thereby upon the intrinsic spiritual power of the church, or power of the keys, or as if the present episcopal government of this national church, by law established, were thereby exposed to the hazard of alteration or subversion; all of which are far from the intention or design of the parliaments imposing this oath, and from the genuine sense and meaning thereof: therefore his royal highness, the royal commissioner, and lords of privy council, do allow, authorise, and empower the archbishops and bishops to administer this oath to the ministers and clergy in their respective dioceses, *in this express sense*, that though the Confession of Faith, ratified in parliament 1567, was framed in the infancy of our reformation, and deserves its due praise, yet by the Test *we do not swear* to every proposition or clause therein contained, but only to the true protestant religion, founded on the word of God, contained in that confession, as it is opposed to popery and fana-



ticism. Secondly, that by the Test, or any clause therein contained, *no invasion or encroachment* is made or intended upon the spiritual power of the church, or power of the keys, as it was exercised by the apostles, and the most pure and primitive church, in the three first centuries after Christ, and which is *still reserved entirely to the church*. Thirdly, that the oath and test is without any prejudice to the episcopal government of this national church, which is declared by the first act of the second session of his majesty's parliament, to be most agreeable to the word of God, and most suitable to monarchy, and which upon all occasions his majesty hath declared he will inviolably and unalterably preserve: and appoints the archbishops and bishops to require the ministers in their respective dioceses, with their first convenience, to obey the law, in swearing and subscribing the aforesaid oath and test; with certification, that the refusers shall be esteemed persons disaffected to the protestant religion and to his majesty's government, and the punishment appointed by the foresaid sixth act of his majesty's third parliament shall be impartially and without delay inflicted upon them."

THIS ACT was sent to court for the king's approbation and superscription; and as he himself had no intention of persecuting the church of Scotland, he not only supersigned the act, but wrote the following letter to his privy council, dated November the 15th:—

CHARLES R.—Most dear and most entirely beloved brother, &c.—Whereas, by one of your letters directed unto us, bearing date the 8th instant, we do find that some having entertained scruples and prejudices against the Test, by mistaking the true sense and meaning thereof, and others having put false and unjust glosses and senses upon it, tending to defeat its excellent design for the security of our government; and that upon this account you found it necessary, by an act of that our council (which we have seen), to declare its true and genuine sense, and to allow and empower the bishops to administer the same in this sense to the clergy in their respective dioceses: We are so well pleased with that explanatory act, that we will not delay to send you our cheerful approbation thereof, with our hearty thanks for your zeal in our service upon all occasions, especially in what relates to the security of the persons, rights, interests, and privileges of our orthodox clergy, which we do now (as we have often done before) in a particular manner recommend to your care, as a matter wherein you





may render unto us the most acceptable service; and therefore we do expect that you will, upon all fit occasions, give them all possible encouragement, as these whom we have received, and will constantly shelter under our royal protection, against all their enemies."

THE POPISH party certainly intended this Test to have been a very "heavy blow and great discouragement" to the church; and although the explanation made it more acceptable to the clergy, yet it was not the sense in which it was enacted. One of the objects contemplated by the framers of the Test was insensibly to engage them to acknowledge the Assertory act, by which the popish party could have restored that hierarchy when the crown came to be favourable to their designs. The Test bound the clergy under heavy penalties to maintain the king's supremacy, and all his other assumed privileges that had been granted and confirmed to him by that sacrilegious act. The design of the Test was to inveigle the clergy into an acknowledgment and recognition of that extraordinary supremacy or popedom, which the Assertory act had conferred on him; but their sagacity discovered the trap thus cunningly laid for them, and they had the christian courage to refuse it. They were ready to obey every lawful ordinance; but their duty to God and the church made them ready to suffer all the penalties for disobedience to laws that usurped the rights of Christ's church; and rather than betray them they prepared themselves to possess their souls in patience, and to suffer the last extremities of persecution. Their christian courage was successful; and when the privy council saw the calm resolution of the clergy to suffer persecution under the form of law rather than to betray the rights of the church, they passed that declaratory act which removed the evil, when the rising storm of persecution exhausted itself, and the unnatural claim of supremacy was resigned. "They rid out the storm," says Leslie, "and they prevailed, as others would do if they tried it. The inherent rights of the church are so flagrant, that a christian state will hardly invade them, but where they are tamely given up. The king, seeing the clergy resolute to suffer and to assert their rights, found he could not bear the odium, nor was able to maintain his claim. Therefore a declaration was published by the king and council (. . .) wherein they renounced all pretences to the *intrinsic power of the church*, and left entirely to her all the ecclesiastical power, authority, and jurisdiction, exercised by the church for the first three centuries, which being the whole that could be asked,





the breach was made up ; and the deprived clergy were restored. And by this all the erastian teeth of that Assertory act were drawn out<sup>1</sup>."

IN JULY, the earl of Shaftesbury was committed to the Tower for high treason ; and on searching his papers a treasonable association was discovered drawn up for excluding the duke of York from the throne, and to compel his majesty to submit to such terms as this whig association might impose. On the 24th of November, an indictment for high treason was preferred at the Old Bailey against Shaftesbury, for having framed this association for the duke's exclusion by force, for the intention to destroy the king's guards, and the attempt to impose terms on his majesty. These facts were proved, and the paper containing the proposals was produced ; but, says Salmon, "though positively proved by eight witnesses, and the association itself found among the earl's papers, the grand jury being packed by the whig sheriffs, refused to find the bill, and returned *ignoramus* <sup>2</sup>." This verdict so mortified the judges that they proceeded no farther against him ; but he was not discharged till the following February.

IT IS A christian maxim that we ought not to do evil, although good may be the result ; and this rule stood good in the case of the duke of York. His right of succession was undoubted, from the laws of nature and of the kingdom ; for at that time there was no law, as at present, which regulated the principle that the sovereign must be a member of the anglo-catholic church. And, as before mentioned, the presbyterian confession of faith absolutely bars all coercion on the conscience of the sovereign ; and so far from making popery an obstacle, it does not even admit that infidelity itself is any impediment to the just and lineal succession to the crown. The duke's attachment to popery was notorious and bigotted, yet his arbitrary exclusion from succeeding to his brother was an act of injustice which ought not to have been done, under the expectation that good would follow, as it is not to be supposed that he and his adherents would have been deterred by an act of parliament from attempting the recovery of his rights. This would have produced civil war and bloodshed, the destruction of property, and party feuds, instead of the good proposed ; but it is to be feared that Shaftesbury and the whigs made opposition to popery an excuse to veil their own designs of establishing a republic. This was one of the arti-

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Regale and Pontificate stated, ed. 1703, pp. 233, 234.

<sup>2</sup> Chronology, i. 222, 223.—Somer's Tracts, p. 141.



cles against that nobleman at his trial, "that he had imagined to compass and procure the death of the king, the subversion of the government, and the known laws of the land, *by reducing this ancient monarchy into a REPUBLIC.*" Shaftesbury was in close correspondence and league with the chiefs of the covenanters in Scotland; hence his principles, and hence the origin of the political party in England known by the name of THE WHIGS, whose principles always have been anti-monarchical and revolutionary.

THE DUKE OF YORK was not only a bigotted papist himself, but he was surrounded and secretly advised by jesuits about his person. The Test was a corollary to the Assertory act, and was devised by his secret advisers to have set that act in motion in due time, had it succeeded. But the firmness of the clergy, under God, saved the church and nation from the infliction of a papal supremacy, which had all the appearance of having been designed, and which could have been legally accomplished by the operation of the Assertory Act, which empowered the sovereign to change at his pleasure the external government of the church. This would have introduced a religious anarchy of another sort; for the people had too firm an abhorrence of popery to have complied with the re-establishment of the dominion of the see of Rome. But by means of the Assertory act, James's successor on the throne gave the church that stab below the fifth rib under which she suffers to the present day. His priestly councillors had taught his royal highness to practise deep dissimulation, and to assume the appearance of great moderation, so that he managed affairs in Scotland with great dexterity. He was a man of unquestionable abilities, and perfectly understood commerce and navigation; and, from his judicious suggestions on these subjects, he had gained considerable popularity amongst the mercantile part of the nation.



## CHAPTER XLIV.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP BURNET.

1681.—Objections to the Test.—Argyle's reservation—tried and condemned—made his escape from the castle.—1682.—Test a cause of suffering to the clergy—their resignations.—Test burnt at Lanark.—Apologetick declaration.—Council's retaliation.—Death of bishop Scougal.—Translations and consecrations.—The king goes to Newmarket.—Letter of the bishops to the English prelates.—Duke of York goes to Newmarket—embarks on board the Gloucester frigate—wrecked—account of it—number on board, and saved.—Burnet's account.—Changes in the administration.—The duke leaves Scotland.—The clergy compelled to make reports.—Recusants summoned.—Presbyterians came to church.—Death of the duke of Lauderdale.—1683.—Presbyterian reasons for refusing to say God save the king.—King returns from Newmarket.—Rye-house conspiracy.—Views of the conspirators.—Plot discovered.—Renwick—some account of him—commences preaching.—Andrew Guillon arrested—his execution.—Thanksgiving.—Decree of the university of Oxford.—Twenty-seven propositions condemned and books burnt.—Cambridge address to the king.—Views of the Whigs.—Monmouth's confession.—Effects of the Test.

1681.—THE PRESBYTERIANS objected to the Test because it contained a renunciation of their beloved covenants, and bound them also not to attempt any change in the government of either church or state as by law established; "which," says Hetherington, "of necessity, implied the entire and final abandonment of *every presbyterian principle*!"<sup>1</sup> Several of the nobility and gentlemen in office hesitated, and shewed reluctance to take the test. The earl of Queensberry took it with an inoffensive explanation; but the earl of Argyle was the most unfortunate in his evasions and explanations. On the adjournment of parliament, he declared that he would either not take it at all, or else with a reserve of his own explanation, which he put in writing, and dispersed for the edification of the public. He offered to take the oath with the following

<sup>1</sup> History, p. 157.





qualification:—"That he was desirous to give obedience to the Test as far as he could, and now took it so far as it is consistent with itself and with the protestant religion: but that he did not mean to bind himself up in his station from endeavouring in a lawful way any thing he might think for the advantage of the church or state, not repugnant to the protestant religion and his own loyalty: and this he understood as part of his oath." The duke of York did not object to this qualification at first, till after consultation with his priestly councillors; but Argyle was not satisfied with urging his own scruples, he had used some means of agitation which was then considered in the light of sedition. The privy council decided that his qualification was destructive of the intention of the act, and brought his lordship within the statute of high treason for *limiting* his allegiance; and they pressed Argyle to withdraw his conditions, and the bishop of Edinburgh waited on him, and earnestly urged him not to ruin his noble house by persisting in what the law had made high treason.

He was prosecuted for treason; and bishop Spratt says the privy council were well informed of the earl's seditious carriage in city and country, and were satisfied "of his traitorous purposes in that fallacious and equivocating paraphrase on the Test, which he owned in their presence, perverting thereby the sound sense and eluding the force of his majesty's laws, in order to set the subjects loose from their obedience, and to perpetuate schism in the church and faction in the state." On the 12th of December he was brought to trial before a jury of his peers, who unanimously returned a verdict as follows:—"They all in *one voice* find the earl of Argyle guilty and culpable of the crimes of treason, leasing-making, and leasing-telling; and find, by plurality of votes, the said earl innocent, and not guilty of perjury." The court sentenced his lordship to be beheaded; but the bishop again asserts that "the king was far from any thought of taking away his life, and that no farther prejudice was intended against him but the forfeiture of some jurisdictions and superiorities which he and his predecessors had surreptitiously acquired and most tyrannically exercised<sup>1</sup>." Not trusting to the king's clemency, he made his escape in the character of a footman to lady Sophia Lindsay; and in company with Veitch, a presbyterian minister, he took shelter in London, where, under an assumed name, he entered into plots and conspiracies against

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Spratt, lord bishop of Rochester's, True Account, &c. of the Rye-house Conspiracy; Preface. 1686. 8vo.



the king's life and government, particularly into that of the Rye-house; and after some time, to avoid capture, he made his escape to Holland. "Thus," says Mr. Skinner, "these two eminent champions of presbytery [the earl of Argyle and lord Stair, president of the court of session], who, whatever sentiments of affection they might have had for the crown, were avowed enemies of the church, and had introduced this double-faced oath to entangle the episcopal clergy, were unexpectedly caught in the trap of their own devising, and drew down upon themselves the effects of an act which they had intended and hoped should have operated another way<sup>1</sup>."

1682.—NOTWITHSTANDING the explanation that had been given by the privy council, the Test was the cause of much suffering to the clergy. On the 5th January, the archbishop of St. Andrews, in the name of the council, wrote to the magistrates of Aberdeen, that having received information that the clergy of their city had undutifully refused the Test, their churches were now vacant, and required them, as patrons, to present fit and qualified persons, within three weeks from that date. Among those who resigned their charges on account of the Test, was MR. GEORGE MELDRUM, who afterwards became a chief leader in the presbyterian establishment, and Mr. John Menzies, who objected to the renunciation of the covenant; the latter was restored to his church, but Meldrum went to Irvine, and became a preacher among the presbyterians<sup>2</sup>. Many of the clergy had fled to England on their resignation or deprivation, and Burnet fails not to take the merit of having provided for them. He says, "About twenty of them came up to England; I found them men of excellent tempers, pious and learned, and I esteemed it no small happiness that I had then so much credit by the ill opinion they had of me at court, that I got most of them to be well settled in England; where they have behaved themselves so worthily, that I have great reason to rejoice in being made an instrument to get so many good men, who suffered for their consciences, to be again well employed and well provided for<sup>3</sup>." There is an order in council directed to certain patrons, to fill up exactly twenty churches which were then vacant, and which corroborates what Burnet said above; and the order was issued, in the name of the council, by archbishop Burnet, to present fit persons within twenty days. Those clergy in

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 489.

<sup>2</sup> Sage's Letters on Toleration: Pref. cc.

<sup>3</sup> Own Times, iii. 315.—Wodrow's History, iii. 360.



the city and county of Aberdeen, who had resigned or had been deprived, were now reponed by an order of council dated the 23d of February, which says, "His royal highness and lords of privy council, being informed by some of the lords of the clergy that several loyal and learned churchmen within the diocese of Aberdeen had for a time some scruples anent the oath and Test . . . but being fully cleared and satisfied, did, before the decease of their late ordinary, take and sign the Test in his presence . . . the council allow them to return to their former charges, and to enjoy the emoluments and profits thereunto belonging." In March and April other clergymen, in different parts of the kingdom, were reponed, and on the 11th May the council authorized the bishops, who had acquired the right of presentation *jure devoluto* of those churches that still continued vacant, to present fit and qualified persons to them immediately<sup>1</sup>.

"WHEN CARGILL perished on the scaffold, that determined band of covenanters who had adhered to him were left without a minister, no man for a time daring to take up a position so imminently perilous. In this emergency these fearless and high-principled men resolved to form themselves into an united body, consisting of societies for worship and religious intercourse in those districts where they most abounded; and for the more effectual preservation of their opinions and security against errors, in the absence of a stated ministry, these smaller societies appointed deputies to attend a general meeting, which was empowered to deliberate upon all suggestions, and adopt such measures as the exigencies of the times required<sup>2</sup>." There had been a meeting, and some resolutions formed, in December last year; and upon the 12th of January, about forty well-armed horsemen, and twenty foot, entered in a body the burgh of Lanark, burnt the Test with great formality at the market-cross, and also burnt the act of parliament that recognised the duke of York's right of succession to the crown, which marked their connection with the Shaftesbury faction, and then read their proclamation, previously agreed on, against the king as a tyrant and persecutor, called, "The Act and Apologetick Declaration of the True Presbyterians of the church of Scotland;" after which they formally fixed it upon the market-cross in the manner of legal documents. No sooner were the council informed of this transaction than they imposed a heavy fine upon the magistrates of the burgh for not having used any means to prevent

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 361, 362.

<sup>2</sup> Hetherington p. 158.





this insult; and they ordered the League and Covenant, the Rutherglen and Sanquhar Declarations, Cargill's Queensferry Covenant, and this last act and apologetick declaration, to be publicly burnt at the market-cross, by the common hangman<sup>1</sup>.

DR. PATRICK SCOUGAL, lord bishop of Aberdeen, died at the age of 73, on the 12th, or, as Keith says, on the 16th of February; he was held in great and deserved estimation, and had sat bishop in this see since the year 1664; he was one of bishop Burnet's early patrons, but latterly had reason to withdraw his friendship from him. Bishop Halliburton was immediately translated from Brechin. A *congé d'élire* was issued to the dean and chapter of Brechin to elect Mr. Robert Douglas, the dean of Glasgow, to this see. Keith says, "he was a lineal branch of Douglas of Glenbervy, in the shire of the Mearns, afterwards earls of Angus, now dukes of Douglas, and was born anno 1626<sup>2</sup>." He must have been consecrated by archbishop Burnet; but Keith omits, as usual, to chronicle that circumstance.

THE KING, with the court, went to Newmarket on the 4th of March, and the duke of York obtained permission to wait on the king there, and he arrived on the 11th, and Burnet says he prevailed on his majesty to give him leave to return and reside at court. A joint letter was written by the Scottish bishops, and signed by the two archbishops, and five of the others, to the archbishop of Canterbury, and entrusted to the lord bishop of Edinburgh, who accompanied the duke of York. It is dated March the 9th, and they say—"His royal highness having passed from hence on Monday last, being called by the king to attend his majesty at Newmarket, we should prove very defective in duty and gratitude, if, upon this occasion, we should forget to acknowledge to your grace how much this poor church and our order do owe to his princely care and goodness, that his majesty and the worthy bishops of England may, from you, receive the just account thereof. Since his royal highness's coming to this kingdom we find our case much changed to the better, and our church and order (which, through the cunning and power of their adversaries, were exposed to extreme hazard and contempt), sensibly relieved and rescued; which, next to the watchful providence of God (that mercifully superintends His church), we can ascribe to nothing so much as to his royal highness's gracious owning and vigilant protection of us. Upon all occasions he gives

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iii. 362, 363. — Fountainhall's Chronological Notes; i. 21

<sup>2</sup> Keith's Catalogue.—Fountainhall's Chron. p. 23.





fresh instances of his eminent zeal against the most unreasonable schism, which, by rending, threatens the subversion of our church and religion, and concerns himself as a patron to us in all our public and even personal interests; so that all men take notice of his signal kindness to us, and observe that he looks on the enemies of the church as adversaries to monarchy itself: nor did we ever propose to offer to his royal highness any rational expedient which might conduce for the relief or security of the church, which he did not readily embrace and effectuate. The peace and tranquillity of this kingdom is the effect of his prudent and steady conduct of affairs, and the humours of our wicked fanatics are much restrained from dangerous eruptions upon their apprehensions of his vigilance and justice; for they dread nothing so much as to see him upon the head of his majesty's councils and forces against them."

THE KING arrived at London from Newmarket on the 10th of April, and the lord mayor and aldermen attended his majesty, and congratulated the duke of York on his arrival from Scotland: and on the 22d the duke accepted an invitation from the artillery company, and dined with them at Merchant Taylors' Hall. His royal highness having received the king's permission to return permanently to court, he embarked in the Gloucester frigate for Leith, on the 3d of May, on purpose to bring up the duchess of York and his family; and on the night of the 5th, the Gloucester struck on a sand-bank, called the Lemon and Ore, about sixteen leagues from the mouth of the Humber. From that fierce hatred which Burnet bore to the duke, he has not scrupled to set down a most malicious and false statement of the circumstances attending this fatal accident. But the accounts of the survivors show that there is no manner of colour for his malicious reflections, and those of his disciples. An extract from a letter written by sir James Dick, of Priestfield, lord provost of Edinburgh, who was on board, and in the duke's suite, will shew the true state of the case.

AFTER mentioning that there was a great retinue of noblemen and gentlemen on board when the ship struck in consequence of the wrong calculation of the pilot, and that the duke and all his retinue were in bed, he says, "when the duke got his clothes on, and inquired how things stood, she had nine feet water in her hold, and the sea fast coming in at the gunports; the seamen and passengers were not at command, every man studying his own safety. This forced the duke to go out at the large window of the cabin, where his little boat was ordered quietly to attend him, lest the passen-



gers and seamen should have thronged so in upon him as to overset his boat. This was accordingly so conducted, as that none but earl Winton and the president of the session, with two of the bedchamber-men, went with them. They were forced to draw their swords to keep the people off. We, seeing they were gone, did cause tackle out, with great difficulty, the ship's boat, wherein the earl of Perth got, and then I went by jumping o' the shrouds; the earl of Middleton immediately after me did jump in upon my shoulders; withal there came the laird of Touch, with several others, besides the seamen that were to row, which was thought a sufficient number for her loading, considering there was going so great a sea by the wind at north-east; and we, seeing that at the duke's boat-side there was one [boat] overwhelmed by reason of the greatness of the sea, which drowned the whole in her, except two men, whom we saw riding on her keel. This made us desire to be gone, but before we were loose, there leaped from the shrouds 20 or 24 seamen in upon us, which made all the spectators and ourselves think we should sink; and all having given us over for lost, did hinder 100 more from leaping in upon us." After describing his difficulties and dangers in the boat before reaching a yacht, which lay about a quarter of a mile distant, he says, that on looking for the Gloucester, he "could only see about a Scots ell-long of the staff upon which the royal standard stood," that is, probably, the mainmast—"for with her striking she had come off the sand-bank, which was but three fathoms, and her draught was eighteen feet. If she had remained half an hour longer, the men might have been saved by boats<sup>1</sup>."

SIR JAMES DICK says there were eighty noblemen, gentlemen, and their servants, on board, and he reckons about 330 persons in all, of whom only about 130 escaped. Burnet accuses the duke of being more solicitous for the safety of his dogs and his priests than of the other persons on board; which has been proved to be a direct falsehood, no priests having been on board, and only one dog, named Mumper, between whom and sir Charles Scarborough was a struggle for the possession of a plank, on which each was endeavouring to save their lives<sup>2</sup>. Lord Dartmouth, in his letter to Mr. Erasmus Lewis, refuted Burnet's calumny as soon as his *Own Times* was published, by saying—"My father was on board the Gloucester, but so little deserves to have the drowning

<sup>1</sup> Letter from Sir J. Dick to Mr. Ellis.—Ellis's Original Letters, iv. 64-73.

<sup>2</sup> Higgin's Historical and Critical Remarks, &c. 235.



150 men (which the bishop has so liberally bestowed upon him) laid chiefly to his charge, that it was in a great measure owing to him that any escaped. After the ship had struck, he several times pressed the duke to get into the boat, who refused to do it, telling him that if he were gone, nobody would take care of the ship, which he had hopes might be saved, if she were not abandoned. But my father, finding she was ready to sink, told him if he staid any longer they should be obliged to force him out. . . . Before he went off he inquired for lord Roxburgh and lord O'Brian, but the confusion and hurry was so great that they could not be found. When the duke, and as many as she would hold with safety, were in the boat, my father stood with his sword drawn, to hinder the crowd from oversetting of her, which, I suppose, was what the bishop esteemed a fault: but the king thanked him publicly for the care he had taken of the duke. . . . I cannot guess what induced the bishop to charge my father with the long-boat's not being sufficiently manned; for if that were true (which I much doubt), it was not under his direction, he being on board in no other capacity but as a passenger and the duke's servant. And I believe his reflection upon the duke for the care of the dogs to be as ill-grounded; for I remember a story (that was in every body's mouth at the time) of a struggle that happened for a plank between sir Charles Scarborough and the duke's dog, Mumper, which convinces me that the dogs were left to take care of themselves (as he did), if there were any more on board; of which I never heard until the bishop's *story-book* was published<sup>1</sup>."

WHEN the crew of the Gloucester, though ready to perish, saw their brave admiral was safe, under whose command the British navy had achieved so much glory, they gave three hearty cheers. Boats from the other men-of-war in company were sent to take off the men; but before they could reach the wreck she had sunk, when all on board perished, except the commander, sir John Berry, who escaped by a rope over the stern into captain Wyburn's boat. Burnet's account is incredible. He asserts that the duke's boat, which was the ship's pinnace, could have held eighty more persons than he would suffer to get into it. The pinnace of a frigate is a very small boat, and supposing there had been twenty persons in it, it is an utter impossibility that it could have held eighty more, that is, a hundred; whereas earl Dartmouth says, he saw her *so deeply loaded* as to be in danger of sinking, and he would

<sup>1</sup> Note by editor of Burnet's *Own Times*, iii. 325.





not go on board himself, but prevented more from getting in, and it is not likely that he and sir John Berry would have suffered a boat that could have contained eighty more persons to put off without getting on board themselves. Nothing, says Bevil Higgons, "can be so astonishing as the implacable malice of this man [Burnet]; though sure to be contradicted, he would sacrifice his own reputation to the indulgence of his revenge. He shows how that passion was so fixed in his nature as not to be eradicated; he must have known that there were thousands alive who could have confuted him in this matter; but he chose rather to poison one man than not be censured by twenty. If he had been more guarded, and carried on his design with greater address and cunning, the mischief that he would have done might have been irreparable; but the wisdom of Providence and nature, who gave him horns, to make good the proverb, thought fit to contract and blunt them <sup>1</sup>."

THE DUKE arrived in Edinburgh on the 9th, and intimated to the council his majesty's pleasure that certain changes should be made in the administration. Lord Haddo, now created earl of Aberdeen, was made lord chancellor, the earl of Queensferry was appointed lord treasurer, and the earl of Perth lord justice-general; and on the 15th of May the duke took his leave of the council. He recommended the council to continue the same steady and firm administration of the laws that had been recently so effectual in suppressing the rebellious field conventicles; and he particularly exhorted them to protect the bishops and clergy in the peaceable performance of their sacred duties, and from the violent "invasions" of their implacable enemies. He then embarked in the *Happy Return* for England, with the duchess of York and the princess Anne. He arrived in the river on the 27th of the same month, and was met at Erith by his majesty in his barge. The lord mayor and aldermen congratulated his royal highness upon his return, and his providential escape from shipwreck; and at night the cities of London and Westminster were illuminated, and bonfires, and other demonstrations of joy, were exhibited <sup>2</sup>.

ONE of the many evils resulting from the principles of the covenanters, was the planting and nourishing a constructive

<sup>1</sup> Higgons' *Historical and Critical Remarks on Burnet's Own Times*, p. 233-236.—Salmon's *Examination of the same*, ii. 901-903.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon's *Chronology*, i. 225.—Burnet's *Own Times*, ii. 326.—Wodrow's *History*, iii. 365.



enmity betwixt them and the established clergy. In the many efforts that the government made to reduce the presbyterians to the rules of peace and order, a clause was inserted in the Test act, which "statuted and ordained that the ministers of each parish [shall] give up, in October yearly, to their respective ordinaries, true and exact lists of all papists and schismatical withdrawers from the public worship in their respective parishes, which lists are to be subscribed by them; and that the bishops give in a double of the said lists, subscribed by them, to the respective sheriffs, &c., to the effect the said judges may proceed against them according to law; as also the sheriffs, &c. are hereby ordained to give an account to his majesty's privy council, in December yearly, of their proceedings against those papists and fanatical separatists, as they will be answerable at their highest peril." This abominable clause in the act compelled the clergy to report those in their parishes to their bishops who absented themselves from church, and the bishops to the privy council; a duty which the clergy very much disliked, and as much as possible avoided. This disagreeable duty is commented on with excusable severity by the presbyterian authors; but they break the rule of charity by representing the clergy as willing instruments of oppression, whereas it was a compulsory duty, which they considered one of the many stabs under the fifth rib which the church so frequently received. I have now before me "the sum, if not the verie words, of a conference betwixt a nobleman and a minister, on the 20th of January, 1682," which took place in consequence of the anxiety of the latter to avoid reporting him as having "withdrawn from church." "I doubt not," says he, "but you have heard how my lord St. Andrews, in obedience to the act of parliament, hath required us that are ministers to send him the names of all those persons in our parishes that are withdrawn from the church, and that before to-morrow night; which we neither can nor will refuse. But yet, before I should give up your lordship's name, I thought it my duty to acquaint your lordship with it, and entreat you may prevent the same." His lordship complained of the harshness and unreasonableness of this law, and of the shortness of the time allowed for consideration; when it was replied, "It was, my lord, with great entreaty we got so much time; but if your lordship will take a longer time to advise, I will take that as a sufficient ground of delaying the inserting of your lordship's name with the rest. And although we be required to take no less than a bond, yet, if you will insinuate so much by your word that ye resolve to



be orderly and keep ordinances, I shall take my hazard. So loth am I that your name should be heard<sup>1</sup>."

As a consequence of these unnatural reports, the sheriff-deputes in the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway summoned the recusants to their courts, and pressed them to sign a bond obliging themselves to a regular attendance at their parish churches, and not to harbour or abet any intercommuned persons or vagrant preachers, under the penalty of an hundred merks. Burnet says, "When the people saw this, they came all to church again; and that in some places where all sermons had been discontinued for many years." This is a result, however, which all his own fine schemes of comprehension and indulgence were never able to effect. But he says, "they came in so awkward a manner that it was visible they did not mean to worship God, but only to stay some time within the church walls; and they were either talking or sleeping all the while. Yet most of the clergy seemed transported with this change in their condition, and sent up many panegyrics of the glorious services that the duke had done their church." No doubt the clergy would be pleased with such a change, and doubtless some who came only to "talk and sleep" would eventually remain to pray; but at all events their sleeping and talking at church prevented their invading the houses and properties of those who always did regularly attend public worship. Burnet libels the presbyterians also, and arraigns their cowardice in submitting to the laws; for he continues, "this compliance shewed how soon the presbyterians could overcome all their scruples, when they saw what they were to suffer for them, so that the enemies of religion gained their point by observing the ill-nature of the one side and the cowardliness of the other, and pleased themselves in censuring both." Now this was the unkindest cut of all, and that too from a friend; but it was happier for the country that they came to church, than that they should exercise their courage upon their defenceless neighbours who were there. "And by this means," he adds, "*an impious and atheistical leaven* began to corrupt most of the younger sort. Thish as since that time made a great progress in that kingdom, which was before the freest from it of any nation in Christendom. The beginnings of it were reckoned from the duke's stay among them, and from his court, which have been cultivated

<sup>1</sup> MS. in the minister's own hand-writing, and published in the *Episcopal Magazine* for September 1835.





since with much care, and but too much success<sup>1</sup>. It seems strange that the duke's residence in Scotland should have infected that kingdom with atheism and impiety, when Burnet represents him as such a bigot to his religion as to sacrifice the lives of a whole ship's crew and passengers, in order to save the lives of one or two priests. So inconsistent is malice; "for surely," says Salmon, "so much malice and detraction was never expressed by one man against another, as our author [Burnet] has shewn in his history towards the duke of York<sup>2</sup>."

THE DUKE OF LAUDERDALE died at Tunbridge Wells, on the 24th August. He was, says Fountainhall, the learnedest and most powerful minister of state in his age; discontent and age [corpulency also, it is said] were the chief ingredients of his death, if his duchess and physicians were free of it; for she abused him most grossly, and had gotten all from him she could expect, and was glad to be quit of him<sup>3</sup>. The author of the Scots Worthies says that he "*went to his own place*;" meaning, like Judas, that he went to Gehenna<sup>4</sup>.

1683.—THE RECENT measures of government had so far subdued the spirit of the covenanters that the field conventicles were mostly discontinued; but many trials of individuals for former transgressions took place during the course of this year. All those who gave utterance to the words GOD SAVE THE KING, had their sentences remitted; but the greater number refused to accept this gentle alternative. Their reason for refusing to use this scripture expression is characteristic, and it is but fair to give it from the dying testimony of James Robertson on the scaffold, who was executed for high treason. When under examination before the privy council, he was asked, "Will you say God save the king?" He evasively answered, "Prayer ought to be gone about with composure and deliberation, and I am not in a composure for it." And on the scaffold he said, "I refused to say 'God save the king,' which we find was the order that was used among the children of Israel at the king's anointing to that office, and used in our nation at the coronation. Now this being due only to a lawful king, ought not to be given but to a lawful king, and so not to him [Charles], being a degenerate tyrant; for if I should, I thereby had said Amen to all that he hath done against the church and liberties thereof, and to all his op-

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, ii. 327.  
Chronological Notes, p. 25.

<sup>2</sup> Examination, ii. 905.  
<sup>4</sup> Appendix. xxx.





pressions by unlawful exactions and raising of armies for no other effect but to deprive us of the hearing of the gospel, and troubling or molesting the subjects both in their consciences and external liberties, and also to their bloodshed and murders made upon the people of God and free subjects of the kingdom; and so bid him God speed, contrary to that in the 2d Epistle of John, v. 10. And seeing it cannot be given unto any that have thus used their power to a wrong end, in such a measure and manner, so much less when they have set him up as an idol in the room of God incarnate. And shall I pray to bless that man in his person and government whom God hath cursed? For it cannot be expected but that he shall be cursed that thus ventureth upon the bosses of the buckler of God Almighty<sup>1</sup>."

THE KING and the duke of York had been residing for some time at Newmarket; but a fire broke out, on the 22d March, in the house in which the king lived, and which consumed half the town, and occasioned his majesty's return to London eight days sooner than he intended. In consequence, the royal brothers escaped assassination at the Ryehouse, by Rumbold, a maltster, who occupied it, and the rest of the republican conspirators, who had a plot of their own, independent of Monmouth and the noble conspirators that met at Sheppard's, a wine-merchant in the city. The Rye was a farm-house near Hoddesdon, in Hertfordshire, through which his majesty usually passed in his road to and from Newmarket. Rumbold, the proprietor, laid a plan of the house and the road before the other conspirators at Sheppard's, and shewed them that by overturning a waggon in a certain place, the king's coach would be stopped, and he proposed that, during the confusion, the conspirators should attack the king and his guards by firing upon them from the outhouses, whilst another party, at the moment when they were separated by the gates, and embarrassed by the enclosures, should fire on them from behind the hedges.

THE DUKE OF MONMOUTH, Shaftesbury, and other conspirators, had prepared a military rising in the city and in the west of England, whilst Argyle had engaged to raise his own clan; and those in Scotland who were in the secret were to hound out the presbyterians, under pretence of establishing Christ's crown and kingdom. Thus the English whigs and the Scottish covenanters went hand in hand in their projects; but the views of the different parties were altogether different. The

<sup>1</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, 182.



presbyterians desired the establishment of their own system, and the operation of the solemn league and covenant, not only at home, but throughout the empire,—the prostration of the church and the extirpation of the bishops. Essex, Sydney<sup>1</sup>, Romsey, Ferguson, a presbyterian minister, and some others, were violently bent on a republic. Monmouth hoped to clutch the crown for himself, while Russell and Hampden were attached to monarchy, and only desired to exclude the duke of York from the succession. Howard and Shaftesbury seemed to have had no other principle than the love of mischief, and the selfish motives of personal gain by the revolution; the latter fled to Holland on the first suspicion of danger, where he very soon died. The correspondence with Argyle, who had also fled to Holland, was conducted by Mr. Carstares, a presbyterian minister, who had a peculiar talent for intrigue. The plot was providentially discovered, through the fears of one of the conspirators of the name of Keilling, a dry-salter, who had arrested the lord mayor of London, at the suit of the ousted sheriffs, and thus became liable to a prosecution. In order to secure his own pardon, he communicated the intelligence of the assassination plot on the 12th of June, to the secretary of state, Mr. Jenkins; but who was for some time incredulous, till the confession of one Barker, an instrument-maker, that had been arrested, corroborated Keilling's revelations.

FROM the trials and confessions of the prisoners, it cannot be doubted that the plan of an insurrection, and the design of an assassination, had been regularly formed; the latter was providentially avoided by the king returning a week earlier than he at first intended, and the former by the information of Keilling. The account of this plot as given by Burnet gives some reason to suspect that he himself was intimately acquainted with it; and he endeavours to make light of it by saying the designs of the conspirators *was but talk—all was but rambling discourse*. It is not much to the credit of the prince of Orange that he protected all the notorious conspirators against the life and crown of his uncle and father-in-law; and gives good reason to suppose that his invasion of England proceeded from other motives than simply the delivery of this nation from arbitrary government and popery<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Fountainhall says, Sydney "was gallant, but so unfortunate as *ever* to be on the *disloyal* side; of republican principles, and was a colonel against the royal martyr, Charles I."—Chron. Notes, p. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Burnet's Own Times, i. 343—391.—Salmon's Chronology, i. 227.—A True



THERE being no probability of the sun of presbytery rising into the ascendant, a number of that persuasion determined to emigrate to the Carolinas, and some of them being at London, negotiating a passage for themselves and friends, fell into correspondence with the Ryehouse conspirators, and by this means the ramifications of the plot were extended to the presbyterian body in Scotland.

THE ULTRA section of the presbyterians, that had called Cameron and Cargill successively "masters," were left as sheep without a shepherd, and were known by the title or the "society people:" since their deaths, the mantle of these extraordinary men, however, had fallen upon James Renwick, who had witnessed the execution of Cargill. Renwick was indebted, as in fact most men are, to the pious care of his mother, whose maiden name was Elizabeth Corsan, for his early and determined zeal in the service of God. O that the sons of God had an equal zeal for His service as the sons of men exhibit; and perhaps the latter will be accepted, whilst the former, for their lukewarmness, may be cast out of the kingdom of glory. Many children had been taken from her before James's birth; when "pouring forth her maternal grief, her husband used to comfort her with declaring that he was well satisfied to have children, whether they lived or died young or old, providing they might be heirs of glory. But with this she could not attain to be satisfied, but had it for her exercise to seek a child from the Lord, that might not only be an heir of glory, but might live to serve Him in his generation; whereupon, when Mr. James was born, she took it as an answer of prayer, and reputed herself under manifold engagements to dedicate him to the Lord<sup>1</sup>." Good Mrs. Renwick will not lose her reward; "for if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not." Her dedication was mistaken, yet her intentions were good and praiseworthy; and happy would it be were her piety imitated, and mothers, like Hannah, would lend their sons unto the Lord, for by Him actions are weighed. Her genuine piety was, however, mixed with much fanaticism, and we are told that this child "aimed at prayer even in the cradle," and that at six years old "some sproutings of gracious preparations exercised him, with doubts and debates above childish apprehensions<sup>2</sup>." He went to Groningen, and

Account and Declaration of the horrid Conspiracy against the late King, by Dr. Spratt, Bishop of Rochester.—Salmon's Examination, ii. 922—935.

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies, 426.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid 427.





studied there for six months, when he was admitted by a classis who took his subscription to the Westminster Confession and Covenant; and then he set out for Scotland. In September he commenced in the fields, among the "society people,"—"taking up the testimony of the standard of Christ where it was fixed, and had fallen at the removal of the former witnesses, Messrs. Cameron and Cargill, which, in the strength of his master, he undertook to prosecute and maintain against opposition from all hands." His first public exhibition was at the Moss of Darnead, where, after stating his own tenets and determination, he declaimed against the defections of the indulged presbyterians from their covenanted work of reformation, and denounced their ministers. Meantime his sudden irruption into the pacified districts, where field preaching had ceased for some time, alarmed the council, and they forthwith proclaimed Renwick a traitor and rebel<sup>1</sup>.

ON THE 12th of July, Andrew Guilan, one of the murderers of the late archbishop, was apprehended whilst at work in the parish of Cockpen; he was pressed to drink the king's health, which he refused. It was only suspected that he was one of the murderers, and he was cautious in his answers; but being off his guard, when the lord advocate, expatiating on the aggravating circumstances of that murder, said that they killed the archbishop whilst he was on his knees praying, Guilan, being touched at this remark, lifted up his hands and eyes, and exclaimed—"O dreadful!—*he would not pray one word, for all that could be said to him.*" On his trial this confession was produced and held to be conclusive. He was executed on the 20th of July. As part of his sentence his right-hand was cut off, and the spirit of delusion was so strong on this wretched felon that he was guilty of blasphemy in the very article of death: "he held up the stump in view of the multitude, saying—'*As my blessed Lord sealed my salvation with His blood, so I am honoured this day to seal His truths with MY BLOOD.*'" He died glorying in his sin, and Fountainhall says, "hardened and insensible<sup>2</sup>." In his written speech, which he gave for circulation, he shewed to what a dreadful state he had been reduced by the delusion of that spirit that is at enmity with God; he said, "I declare I die not as a murderer or as an evil-doer; although their covenant-breaking, perjured, murdering generation lay it to my charge as though I were a murderer, on account of *the justice* that was execute on that Judas that sold the kirk of Scotland for 50,000 merks a-year. And

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies, 426—433.

<sup>2</sup> Chronol. Notes, p. 29.



we being bound to extirpate popery and prelacy, and that to the utmost of our power, and we having no other that were appearing for God at that day, but such as took away his life, therefore I was bound to join with them in defending the *true* religion, and all the land<sup>1</sup>." His glorification took place in the Grass-market; but his carcase was sent to the scene of that tragedy in which he gloried, and hung up in chains; but the saints came some days afterwards and cut his body down, and buried it at the foot of the gallows. It is a singular circumstance that this enthusiast, and Hackston, of Rathillet, were the only men engaged in the archbishop's murder that were ever brought to justice, and it is also remarkable that they were not actual participators in the murder farther than that the one looked on passively and approvingly, and the other held Miss Sharp whilst the murder was being perpetrated. They were, however, as much guilty of the murder as the actual perpetrators; but the escape of the others has been duly proclaimed as an infallible proof of the sanction of heaven upon this sacrilegious murder. And it has been gravely said of Hackston—"Thus fell this *champion for the CAUSE of Christ*, a sacrifice unto prelatric fury, to gratify the lust and ambition of wicked and bloody men. Whether his courage, constancy, or faithfulness, had the pre-eminence, is hard to determine; but his memory is still alive<sup>2</sup>!"

A GENERAL thanksgiving was ordered by proclamation to be observed in all the three kingdoms on September the 9th, for the king's late wonderful "deliverance from the fanatical conspiracy"—"to offer up devout praises and thanksgiving to Almighty God for the eminent and miraculous deliverance granted to us, and in us to our loyal and dutiful subjects." The University of Oxford met in convocation on the 21st of July, and after expressing their detestation of the Rye-house conspiracy, formally condemned those principles, and the books teaching them, which had spread such a principle of rebellion and schism over the three kingdoms. This famous decree condemned no less than eight Scottish publications, and ordered them to be publicly burnt, namely, Buchanan's *De Jure regni*, Knox's History, Calderwood's *Altare Damascenum*, Rutherford's *Lex Rex*, Naphtali, the Apologetical Relation, the History of the Indulgence, and, as a worthy crown to the whole, that master-piece of the jesuits and of all iniquity, THE SOLEMN LEAGUE AND COVENANT. They selected twenty-seven propositions drawn out of these several publications, all teach-

<sup>1</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, pp. 201-203.

<sup>2</sup> Scots Worthies, p. 343-44.



ing the most seditious, treasonable, and heretical principles; and said—"We decree, judge, and declare all and every one of those propositions to be false, seditious, and impious, and most of them also to be heretical and blasphemous, infamous to the christian religion, and destructive of all government in church and state. We further decree, that the books which contain the aforesaid propositions and impious doctrines are fitted to deprave good manners, corrupt the minds of unwary men, stir up sedition and tumults, overthrow states and kingdoms, and lead to rebellion, murder of princes, and atheism itself; and therefore we interdict all members of the university from reading the said books under the penalties in the statutes expressed. We also order the before-recited books to be publicly burned by the hand of our marshal in the court of our schools. . . . Lastly, we command and strictly enjoin all and singular readers, tutors, catechists, and others, to whom the care and trust of education of youth is committed, that they diligently instruct and ground their scholars in that most necessary doctrine, which in a manner is the badge and character of the church of England, of submitting to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be to the king as supreme, or unto governors as unto them that are sent by Him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well; teaching that this submission and obedience is to be clear, absolute, and without exception of any state or order of men."

THE READERS of this history will not fail to have traced much of the rebellions and schisms that afflicted the British empire to the principles inculcated in the publications which the University of Oxford so worthily condemned; but it is to be feared they have taken too deep root to be easily eradicated. The University of Cambridge also, the year before, shewed her loyalty by an address to the king, delivered by Dr. Gower, the vice-chancellor. He congratulated his majesty on the happy situation of his affairs, and said—"we still believe and maintain, that our kings derive not their titles from the people, but from God, that to Him only they are accountable: that it belongs not to subjects either to create or to censure, but to honour and obey their sovereign, who comes to be so by a fundamental hereditary right of succession, which no religion, no law, no fault, or forfeiture, can alter or diminish<sup>1</sup>."

THE OBJECT of the whigs in both kingdoms was the acquisition of power. Shaftesbury, and the party formed by him,





wanted political power; but the tools by whom they worked in Scotland, and whose principles they adopted, thought only of the religious supremacy of their own sect, as it had flourished in the days of the rebellion. So long as the whig party were encouraged at court, they kept the presbyterians in a constant state of excitement and expectation of recovering "Christ's crown and kingdom;" hence their mischievous schemes of indulgences and comprehensions, and their undue severities to provoke and irritate their dupes. The whigs at court cajoled the original whigs in Scotland with the hopes of their arriving at that tyrannical command over the state which had been enjoyed by the commission of the kirk; and persuaded them, nothing loath, that the only way to secure it was by that general turbulence and rebellion which they kept up during the whole of this reign. So long, therefore, as the political whigs were tolerated and trusted at court, and had a prospect of getting the whole government into their own power, neither indulgence nor severity had any effect upon the presbyterians, because they were conscious that their secret friends at court would protect them. The Shaftesbury party were in close correspondence with the rebels in 1679, and bishop Spratt says, "The lord Melville was descended from progenitors of such principles as have been ever against the crown, when they have fancied their kings not zealous for the reformation. This man had the management of the duke of Monmouth's affairs in Scotland many years: and when the duke marched against the rebels near Bothwell Bridge, the said Melville (as the earl of Shaftesbury *had advised*) sent to them to capitulate<sup>1</sup>, assuring them that the duke of Monmouth had orders to give them good conditions; and when they would not submit, Melville was overheard to say—'*that all was lost*:' for the beating of them would lose the said duke with his friends in England<sup>2</sup>." And this negociation was conducted by warrant from the duke of Monmouth, who was engaged in Shaftesbury's intrigues.

THE ROOTS of the Scottish rebellion were fixed at the court of England, and when Charles plucked them up by the dismissal of Shaftesbury and the whigs, comparative peace was restored to his northern kingdom. One of Shaftesbury's plans for effecting the revolution, which was the object of the Rye-house conspiracy, was to hound out the Scottish presbyterians; and so to embarrass the king's affairs in that quarter. As soon

<sup>1</sup> Vide *ante*, vol. iii. ch. xli. p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> True Account and Declaration of the Ryehouse Conspiracy, p. 35.





as their patrons were dismissed from court, the field conventions ceased, and the steady, firm execution of the laws were found sufficient to preserve the peace of the country. But "in all plots and conspiracies," says a contemporary writer, "there are the *upper* and the *under-spur leathers*; there are the *managers* and the *managed*; there are those who act upon the stage, and the prompters who stand behind the curtain. And when these invisible springs are taken away, the play stops, and the whole machine stands still. There is often too a wheel within a wheel, as one plots begets another, or is branched out by several undertakers. Thus the assassination designed at the Ryehouse was formed by lesser men, whom Monmouth and the quality had drawn into their plot, only to seize the guards and the Tower, &c.; not to hurt the king in the least, forsooth! but only to distress him so as that he should change his counsellors, and accept of their lordships in their place<sup>1</sup>. . . . But this was as much treason in the eye of the law, and of reason too, as the Ryehouse itself, of which I believe some of the quality knew nothing. . . . And therefore when Charles II. had purged his court of these, the faction fell before him, without any noise or trouble. . . . If the spring be clear the streams cannot long be muddy, they purge themselves of course; and now it is plainly to be seen that with some men *power* is *conscience*, and *conscience* is nothing else but *power*. What a jest is it to see men of profligate lives cry out *conscience and religion*!"

BURNET insinuates that Monmouth had no share in this conspiracy, but the following note, taken on the duke's surrendering himself, will prove that the bishop's predilections had deceived him. It is dated November 25, 1683.—"Yesterday the duke of Monmouth came and surrendered himself to Mr. secretary Jenkins, and desired to speak alone with the king and the duke; which was granted him. He first threw himself at his majesty's feet, *acknowledging his guilt* and the *share he had in the conspiracy*, and asked his pardon; and then confessed himself faulty to the duke, and asked his pardon; also assured him, if he should survive his majesty, that he would pay him all the duty that became a loyal subject, and be the first that should draw his sword for him, should there be occasion. He then desired his majesty would not oblige him to be a witness, and then gave an account of the whole conspiracy, naming all those concerned in it; which were more

<sup>1</sup> Pountainhall says, "They pretended only to seize the king till he called a parliament, and disinherited the duke of York," p. 30.



than those that had already been mentioned by the several witnesses. He denied any knowledge of the assassination. When he had made an end of his confession, his majesty ordered him to be put into the custody of a serjeant-at-arms; this day admitted him to his presence, and ordered a stop to be put to the outlawry, and promised him his pardon. He further added, *that Drs. Owen, Mead, Griffin, and all the considerable nonconformist ministers, knew of the conspiracy.*"

THE FIRMNESS of the bishops and clergy preserved the whole nation from the contradictory and false swearing of the Test, which the parliament, acting under the secret influence of the jesuits in the duke of York's train, had imposed on it. There was not the least inclination in the clergy of the established church either to popery or to fanaticism; against both of these errors their oaths of supremacy and canonical obedience were sufficient barriers, and they warned their people from the pulpit against the Roman heresies with zealous care. This Test was so ingeniously contrived, that it would have been the cause of division and of alienation to many of the indulged presbyterians, who joined with the established church not only in the public worship, which was at that time the same as the presbyterian, but also in the sacraments. It was calculated to have encouraged popery, and to have disgusted the people, by compelling the clergy to make annual reports of those who seceded from the church, or who were careless in attending divine worship, so that dissenters might be punished by the secular arm; whilst at the same time the king's brother and their lawful sons, who might be papists, were to be excepted from taking this Test. By virtue of the Assertory Act the king could make any changes in the external government of the church that he himself chose, or that a profligate minister might suggest; and no doubt the presbyterians or the papists would have worked it for their own advancement if either party had gained the predominance in the royal councils. The Test rivetted this chain round the necks of the established clergy; but they saw this consequence, and had the christian firmness to expose themselves to suffering and persecution rather than to betray the rights of the church and the christian liberty of their people. Their moral intrepidity not only saved the church from the infliction of the Test, but it relieved the presbyterians also from its pressure. The presbyterians made the same conscientious objections to this "self-contradictory oath," though upon different grounds, that the episcopallians had. They even objected to it after the church had procured the modification of it by the king



and council, and in their own way shewed their opposition, by solemnly burning it; but we hear of none of their indulged ministers having resigned their charges, or having been deprived by the privy council for refusing it. Upwards of eighty of the episcopal clergy, however, suffered in this way, and many more would have been added to that number, had not the government yielded to public opinion, and explained the Test.

ONE OF THE most unpleasant parts of the Test act was the compelling the clergy to report the disorderly people in their parishes, and those who did not keep the church regularly. This, of course, laid them open to much ill will and obloquy, and many lies and false reports were fabricated and circulated against them. But, in fact, they only reported *notoriously bad* characters, and concealed many more than were reported. Dr. Monro says, "What the clergy in the west of Scotland did, I know not; but if I make an estimate of their proceedings against non-conformists, from the practice of our clergymen in other parts of the nation, I declare sincerely to you, I never knew of one of them that prosecuted the dissenters without great reluctance; nay, I knew many of them that interposed with sincere kindness and vigour for their parishioners, frequently and with success too, when they were obnoxious to the laws. But let us suppose that the clergy did prosecute the dissenters according to law, they did nothing in this but what they were *obliged* to do; the peace of the nation was endangered, the legal and lineal monarchy was undermined, and the government, by such frequent shakings, most likely to relapse into its former state of civil war and confusion; and the souls of the people committed to their care were poisoned with dark and enthusiastic principles; speaking evil of dignities took the place of the ten commandments, and a schism unreasonable in its beginnings, and disowned by all protestant churches and the learnedest presbyterians, was propagated in all corners of the nation, with all vigour and diligence<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Apology for the Clergy of Scotland, p. 11.





## CHAPTER XIV

## PRIVACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS

1684.—Deaths, translations, and consecrations of bishops.—Death of archbishop Burnet.—Archbishop Ross translated.—Death of bishop Leighton.—Presbyterians attend the parish churches.—Lord Perth made chancellor.—Charge against the duke of York.—Churchwardens—Baillie of Jerviswood—the evidence—is condemned.—Burnet obliged to abscond.—Prosecutions of the Rye-house conspirators.—A field conventicle—the troops attacked, and minister rescued.—Renwick's preaching.—Apologetical declaration—affixed to market-crosses—its effects.—Opinions of the crown lawyers.—Act of council—its justification.—Distress of the episcopal clergy.—Two gentlemen of the Life Guards murdered in their beds.—Proclamation against the apologetic.—Passports and oaths required.—1685.—Many of the clergy resign.—Rev. Peter Pearson—his murder.—Minister of Anworth “affronted”—an ecclesiastical Court of Inquiry held at Elgin by the earl of Erroll.—Colonel Douglass, action with some Whigs.—Assault on Mr. Shaw.—King Charles's last illness—father Huddlestons's statement—account by the chaplain of the bishop of Ely—the king's last moments and death—his character—his letter to the duke of York.

1684.—THE DEATH of Dr. Young, lord bishop of Ross, and of Dr. Burnet, lord archbishop of St. Andrews, caused a translation of several bishops in the course of this year. The former was afflicted with a calculous complaint, and went to Paris, and there underwent an operation, which he did not survive above a week, but died in that city, aged about fifty-five. He was a man of great worth and moderation. He was succeeded by Dr. Ramsay, lord bishop of Dunblane, who was translated to the see of Ross, by letters patent, on the 14th of April; Dr. Robert Douglass was translated to the see of Dunblane, from that of Brechin, and to him succeeded Dr. Alexander Cairncross. This prelate was the heir of an ancient family, possessing the estate of Cowmislie; but from pecuniary embarrassments was compelled to follow the occupation of a cloth-dyer in the Canongate of Edinburgh for many years, and with such success as to enable him to recover “some part



of the estate which had pertained to his ancestors." After "many years" of successful industry, he took holy orders, and was presented to the parish church of Dumfries; and in this year, by the recommendation of the duke of Queensberry, he was elected by a *congé d'élire* to the bishoprick of Brechin. He was consecrated at St. Andrews by archbishop Burnet on the 19th of June, among the last acts of that prelate's life<sup>1</sup>.

ARCHBISHOP BURNET died on the 24th of August, at St. Andrews, and was buried near the tomb of his illustrious predecessor, bishop Kennedy, in the church of St. Salvador. Fountainhall says, "he died at his house, in the abbey of St. Andrews, 22d of October, and was buried in St. Salvador's church: he was a man of much moderation, especially since he was laid aside in 1669<sup>2</sup>." The ancient stone pavement of this church is now covered over with a deal flooring, and, in the spirit of the Covenant, it covers over any monumental inscription that may have been recorded to the memory of this very worthy prelate. Even the spiteful Burnet, of Salisbury, admits, though with a qualification, that he was "good-natured and sincere;" yet he records his death in four words—"Burnet died in Scotland." Of this excellent prelate Mr. Lyon says, that on account of his submitting to the unjust exertion of the royal supremacy, Wodrow "accuses him first of acting contrary to his 'passive obedience' principles, and then of tamely submitting to the royal sentence of ecclesiastical deprivation. It is very difficult to make writers of that school comprehend the simple scriptural, though unfashionable and unpalatable doctrine, of what is called (. . .) 'passive obedience.' Burnet, on this occasion, acted in strict conformity with it; that is, he dutifully obeyed the *lawful* commands of his sovereign, and he patiently suffered for disobeying his *unlawful ones*. The presbyterians of that age did neither one nor the other. So far from dutifully obeying all lawful commands, they would not obey even the most indifferent, if unsuited to their taste: and, so far from patiently suffering for their disobedience to unlawful commands (or those which they considered to be so), they took up arms to force the government to rescind them." He left a piece of land in the neighbourhood of St. Andrews, for the benefit of the poor of the guildry, for ever, which still goes under the name of "bishop Burnet's Acre." It yields at present an annual rent of £5. 10s. but which has been diverted from its original purpose by the presbyterian corporation, and contributes to the general reve-

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue, *passim*.

<sup>2</sup> Chronological Notes, p. 42.



nue of the burgh, contrary to the will and intention of the donor; so that they have **ROBBED GOD**. Martine, of Claremont, in a dedication to archbishop Burnet, alludes to his "exemplary and inflexible virtues, piety, and honour (as much above flattery as your grace does generally despise it), that have justly raised your grace beyond the reach of their malice, under whose tongues lies the poison of asps<sup>1</sup>."

SOON AFTER the death of the late primate, Arthur Ross, lord archbishop of Glasgow, was translated to the see of St. Andrews, by the king's letters patent, dated the 31st of October. This last of the archbishops was a man of sound judgment and great integrity; and Mr. Lyon shews that he was originally brought to Glasgow by archbishop Burnet on account of his high character and abilities, and who evinces his good opinion of him by requesting him to engage some deserving persons to come to Glasgow to fill up vacancies, and for whom the archbishop promises to provide as Dr. Ross might "think their parts and experience do deserve<sup>2</sup>." But the bishop of Salisbury had some pique at his grace, and is therefore of another mind: he says, "Burnet died in Scotland. And Ross, a poor ignorant worthless man, but in whom obedience and fury were so eminent, that these supplied all other defects, was raised to be primate of that church: which was, indeed, a sad omen, as well as a step to its fall and ruin<sup>3</sup>." It was easy for Burnet to be a prophet, who was so deep in the secrets of courts and plotters, and who could form a tolerably correct guess at coming events, from his intimacy with the court at the Hague.

ALEXANDER CAIRNCROSS, lord bishop of Brechin, was translated to Glasgow, by royal letters patent, dated the 3d of December, and he was elected by the dean and chapter on the 6th of the same month, and the mandate for his confirmation is of the same date. The earl of Perth, the chancellor, recommended his relative, James Drummond, minister of Muthill, to the crown, to be promoted to the bishoprick of Brechin. The king's warrant for his consecration is dated the 6th of December, and he was consecrated by the new primate, in the chapel royal, Holyrood-house, on Christmas day, the 25th of December<sup>4</sup>.

UPON lord Perth's coming to London he expressed to Dr. Burnet a strong desire to see bishop Leighton. Burnet wrote

<sup>1</sup> Rev. C. J. Lyon's History of St. Andrews, &c. ii. 102 — Burnet's Own Times—Keith's Catalogue.

<sup>2</sup> Lyon's Hist. of St. Andrews, ii. 105.

<sup>3</sup> Own Times, ii. 439.

<sup>4</sup> Keith's Catalogue, *passim*.



to him to that effect, and the bishop came up to town. Burnet was amazed to see Leighton, "at above seventy, look so fresh and well; that age seemed to stand still in him: his hair was still black, and all his motions were lively; he had the same quickness of thought and strength of memory, but, above all, the same heat and life of devotion, that I had ever seen in him." It is therefore very strange, and not much to his credit, that he should have deserted his master's service; but, in fact, Burnet killed him by bringing him to London; for he was seized with a pleurisy, and died in two days afterwards, at the Bell Inn, in Warwick-lane. "He used often to say, that if he were to choose a place to die in, it should be an inn; it looked like a pilgrim going home, to whom this world was all as an inn,"—and he had his desire<sup>1</sup>.

A GREAT change had taken place in the religious aspect of the presbyterian districts since the change of men and measures. The men all resorted regularly to their parish churches, but their wives were less constant in their attendance, because they had not been named in the act, and therefore thought themselves at liberty to follow their own inclinations. This flaw in the act was brought under the notice of the council, and it was debated whether or not husbands should be fined for their wives' offences as well as their own, seeing that in law husband and wife make but one person. Lord Aberdeen argued in favour of the literal interpretation of the act; for it only made husbands liable to a fine, if their wives frequented conventicles, but not for abstaining from going to church. Lords Queensberry and Perth were decidedly of opinion that the husbands should be fined for the absence of their wives from church. The dispute was referred to the king, and the earl of Perth was sent up to court for his decision; but the king was most likely biassed by lord Perth's opinion, and decided against the ladies; which, Burnet says, "was thought very indecent." There were violent disputes in the cabinet betwixt lords Aberdeen and Queensberry, which ended in the dismissal of the former, and the appointment of lord Perth to the chancellorship<sup>2</sup>. Bishop Burnet seizes on the advancement of the earl of Perth to attack the character of the duke of York, whom he represents as a most cruel and remorseless tyrant, and one who delighted in the sight of the sufferings of prisoners in the torture of the Boot. This drew from Mr. Lockhart a letter, in which he remarks, that Burnet's accounts do not correspond with the character given by all other au-

<sup>1</sup> *Own Times*, ii. 436-438.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* 425-423.





thors of the duke's natural temper; and he gives it as his opinion, that if the duke had acted as Burnet represents him to have done, it was impossible but that others must have seen and heard of it, as well as Burnet, and would also have reported it. "We see what a clamour was made on the idle-grounded story of his favouring his dogs when shipwrecked [a story wholly of bishop Burnet's making]; and such an extraordinary instance of his cruelty and barbarity, in so public and conspicuous a manner [as putting Mr. Spreul to the torture of the Boot], could not have been unknown to all the world but the bishop; and it nevertheless was, I may safely aver, seeing that no part of this calumny was ever so much as suggested, or laid to the duke's charge, by any one of his many inveterate enemies before or since the Revolution<sup>1</sup>."

IN APRIL the king issued a proclamation, by virtue of the powers vested in the crown by the Assertory act, commanding and empowering the clergy to give in lists, to their bishops, of such persons in their respective parishes as they considered fit to serve as elders or churchwardens. By that perverseness which actuated the presbyterians, they immediately raised a cry of persecution against the bishops, and complained that "this proclamation was undoubtedly designed to force country people and heritors to join in with the episcopal ministers in the exercise of discipline; and was another handle of persecuting not a few." How that could be is not so easy to perceive, inasmuch as, unless the clergy had been madmen, they would never have selected presbyterians for that office. The clergy were to nominate the *fittest persons*, and these, again, were to be approved of by their bishop: so that it is hardly possible that any but known episcopalians would be appointed; but the cry of persecution must be supported by some plausible circumstances, and if the reader's judgment is not called into operation, that now related might pass current.

THE RAMIFICATIONS of the Rye-house conspiracy were most extensive, and the whole presbyterian interest in Scotland, with their affiliated brethren in Holland, were most extensively implicated in it. In consequence, the whole of this year was occupied in searching for, examining, and trying the multitude of the better sort of the presbyterians that were more or less engaged in the plot; and the due execution of the laws is called by a presbyterian author<sup>2</sup>, "the last and bloodiest period of the persecution." But the trial of Baillie, of Jerviswood, has made the most noise, because he was the most

<sup>1</sup> Lockhart Papers, p. 600.

<sup>2</sup> Hetherington, p. 161.



deeply implicated. His trial displayed the extent of Argyle and Sydney's, and lord Russell's conspiracy. The earl of Tarras deposed, that Baillie went to London, in order to urge the English conspirators to enter upon action. Alexander Monro deposed, that Baillie solicited the English traitors to supply Argyle with money. Robert Martin deposed, that at a meeting in Baillie's lodgings, in London, it was agreed to send the deponent to Scotland, to report in what condition the Scots were, and to direct them not to rise or stir till there should first be a rising in England. William Carstares deposed, that about the end of the year 1682, James Stuart, brother of the laird of Coltness, wrote to him from Holland, to the import, that if any considerable sum could be procured from England, something of importance might be done in Scotland. That he communicated this to Mr. Sheppard, of Abchurch-lane, at whose house Monmouth and the other conspirators met, who informed him he had communicated the contents of the letter to colonel Sydney, and that colonel Danvers was present: that colonel Sydney was averse to employ the earl of Argyle, or to have any connection with him. That the deponent saw and conversed with the earl of Argyle in Holland, who said that less than £30,000 would not be sufficient to equip a thousand horse. The next day after his return to England, he acquainted sir John Cockrane with the earl's demand, who took him to lord Russell, to whom the deponent made the proposal of raising £30,000, but who declined to enter into the transaction with a perfect stranger. Afterwards, however, Carstares met lord Russell accidentally at Sheppard's, who had gone to speak about the money wanted by Argyle, and there reiterated his former proposal for the money and dragoons; the lord Russell told Carstares "they could not get so much money raised at the time, but if they had £10,000 to begin with, they would draw people in, and when they were once in they would soon be brought to more; but as for the thousand horse and dragoons, he could say nothing at the present, for that must be concerted upon the borders."

CARSTARES communicated the conspiracy to Dr. Owen, Mr. Griffin, and Mr. Mead, of Stepney, nonconformist ministers, who all concurred in its promotion. Baillie informed Carstares that it was impossible to raise the money for the use of Argyle, when he and sir John Cockrane lamented the disappointment. Upon Baillie's jury there were two noblemen and thirteen gentlemen of rank, who *unanimously* found him guilty of high treason, although a bare majority would have been sufficient. The evidence given on the trial is such a con-



firmation of the guilt of the English conspirators, as cannot, by any sophistry, be confuted. The facts having been proved beyond all dispute, the crown of martyrdom which all presbyterian authors have awarded to this convicted traitor proceeds as much from the love of the "good old cause" for which he suffered, as for that "wisdom that is from above, [which is] first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy, and good fruits." They all dwell most movingly upon the hardships and ill usage in prison that Baillie and the other prisoners underwent, and the barbarous circumstances attending their executions, in order to excite compassion, and to draw attention away from their guilt. Prisons at that time were a disgrace to humanity for filth and inconvenience; and the chopping off the hands with an axe previous to their execution, was a cruel and unnecessary punishment. But as it was the known and established custom of the country, and its being awarded to Baillie and others at this time, does not mark the government with any inherent or unusual cruelty of disposition. "Baillie, of Jerviswood," says Mackenzie<sup>1</sup>, "was executed for being accessory to, and concealing of a design of raising 20,000 men, and of seizing the garrisons of Berwick and Carlisle, and the officers of state. Nor would the advocate raise an indictment, until sir George Lockhart, one of the learnedest of the present judges, did declare that the point of law and probation were both most clear, and therefore concurred in the process—(concealing of treason is beyond all debate punishable as treason in our law),—and some of the witnesses were his own relations, who swore plainly and positively against him." It was well known that Gilbert Burnet was not ignorant of the plans of the conspirators, and an occasion was seized, from his preaching a political sermon at the Rolls Chapel, to dismiss him, and as he was considered disaffected to government, he feared they might not be satisfied with the slight punishment of preventing his preaching treason; he therefore prudently set out on a "ramble about Europe<sup>2</sup>." Though, says lord Fountainhall, the government could not directly reach Burnet for the Rye-house plot, yet the bishop of London suspended him from preaching at St. Clement's, because he had been active in penning the dying speeches of the conspirators, and "he got liberty from king Charles II. to go off the kingdom, and put on grey clothes, when he wrought muckle mischief against the

<sup>1</sup> Vindication, p. 21.<sup>2</sup> Own Times, ii. 450-52.





king and his successor king James VII. at Rome, and other foreign courts<sup>1</sup>."

DURING the whole course of this year scarcely any thing occurs but the prosecution of the underspur leathers in Scotland of the Rye-house plot; and every arrest, examination, and committal of the guilty parties, are denominated *religious* persecutions; although religion was no farther concerned in it than that with the presbyterians; rebellion and religion were so intimately related, that they might be called convertible terms. The ordinary test by which they were known was their answers to the questions, Whether or not the assassination of archbishop Sharp was murder?—the rising of Bothwell-bridge, rebellion?—or whether or not they would say, God save the king? The answers to all of which were invariably in the negative. Many of the soldiers were assassinated; and on one occasion five soldiers, who were conveying a prisoner to Glasgow, were attacked by seven Whigs, who killed one of the guards, and rescued the prisoner<sup>2</sup>. Burnet says, "that the severity which the presbyterians formerly had used, forcing all people to take their Covenant, was now returned back on them in this Test [the above questions] that they were forced to take<sup>3</sup>."

THE MONOTONY of the state prosecutions, however, was broken up by several incidents that illustrated the character of the presbyterians; the first of which was, a meeting of that body near Drumlanrig Castle, in the stewartry and diocese of Galloway. It was very numerous, and there were sixty sentinels, with firelocks, planted at proper distances, and scouts were out, besides, in all directions, to give timely notice of *the enemy*. It was not long before an alarm was given that two parties of dragoons were approaching; the old and unarmed men, with the women, dispersed and went homewards; but the sentinels having fallen back, the main body presented a determined front of three hundred men well armed with firelocks, and advantageously posted on a hill, where the cavalry could not act. It being impossible to attack them in this position, the dragoons spread and pursued the retreating multitudes, and seized several of them, and among others the minister who had been preaching.

THEY CARRIED him to Dumfries, whence he was sent, under the charge of a lieutenant and his guard of cavalry, to Edinburgh; but the covenanters were determined to rescue their

<sup>1</sup> Fountaiahall's Chronological Notes, p. 34.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 29, 30.

<sup>3</sup> Own Times, ii. 425.



minister at all hazards; and, crossing the country, they intercepted the party at a dangerous pass. The Entrekine is a hill three or four miles northward of Moffat, and has been so graphically described by the Great Unknown, in his novel of "Redgauntlet," that it cannot be more minutely sketched. The road at that time, for more than a mile, wound by a gradual ascent along the side of this hill, and on the right hand going upwards there is a deep and nearly perpendicular ravine, called the Devil's Beef-barn, and the hill on the opposite side rises also nearly perpendicular. The roads then were neither Macadamized, nor were they so broad as the modern highways; and if the unfortunate traveller had slipped over the edge of this road, he would have been precipitated to the bottom of the "Devil's," or the "Johnston's Beef-barn," as sir Walter Scott calls it. Just as the military party were at the steepest and most dangerous part of this pass, and riding in a straggling manner, and at some distance from each other, they were challenged by the leader of the covenanters from the hill-top on their left. The day was foggy, and the rebels being concealed, their numbers were not discovered: their commander ordered the dragoons to halt, and deliver up their minister. The officer in command resolutely refused to comply; "at which, the leader of the countrymen fired immediately, and aimed so true at him, that he *shot him through the head*, and he immediately fell, and his horse fluttering a little with the fall of his rider, fell over the precipice, rolling to the bottom, and was dashed to pieces." The rest of the covenanters had levelled their pieces, with the intention to fire upon the soldiers, when the surviving officer called to them to desist, and desired a truce. The dragoons were now in the greatest possible danger, and had the countrymen fired, they might have been all cut off; and to add to their consternation, they found the road in their front in the possession of a strong body of the insurgents, ready to dispute the passage. The officer then delivered up his prisoners, upon the insurgents engaging not to fire upon his men, and to withdraw<sup>1</sup>. The surviving officer was afterwards tried by court-martial, and very undeservedly broke for cowardice.

MR. RENWICK'S field-preaching did not escape the notice of government; for few besides him ventured to violate the laws. He was proclaimed a rebel and traitor, and intercommunicated; yet he still continued his "vagrant" preaching, "which made the [indulged] ministers inform against him, as if he had

<sup>1</sup> De Foe's *Memoirs of the Church of Scotland*, pp. 188-193.



intruded on other men's labours<sup>1</sup> ;” and sir George Mackenzie says, one of these informers gravely solicited him to hang Renwick, because he divided their kirk ! He had many hair-breadth escapes from capture after he had been proclaimed, “in which perplexity, having neither a possibility to flee, *nor ability to fight*, they were forced to publish an apologetical representation of the *approved* principles and practices, and covenant engagements, of our reformers<sup>2</sup>.” On the 15th of October, at one of their meetings, his followers proposed to publish a declaration “against the wickedness of the severities used by their persecutors.” Renwick was at first averse to this dangerous step ; but having been vehemently urged, and pretending that “the necessity of the case admitted of no delay,” he drew up what was called “the APOLOGETICAL DECLARATION, and Admonitory Vindication of the True Presbyterians of the Church of Scotland.” It commences—“Albeit we know that the people of God in all ages have been cruelly persecuted, &c. . . . therefore, as hitherto, we have not been driven to lay aside necessary obliging duties because of the viperous threatenings of men . . . so we declare our firm resolution of constant adherence to our covenants and engagements . . . and to our faithful declarations, wherein *we have DISOWNED the authority of CHARLES STUART, and all authority depending upon him* . . . and wherein also *we have DECLARED WAR against him and his accomplices* . . . yet we do hereby declare unto all, that whosoever stretches forth their hand against us by shedding our blood, actually either by authoritative commanding, such as bloody councillors . . . especially that called justiciary, general of forces, adjutants, captains, lieutenants, and all in civil and military power, who make it their work to embrue their hands in our blood ; or by obeying such commands, such as bloody militia men, malicious troopers, &c., likewise such gentlemen and commons who . . . ride and run with the foresaid persons, or who deliver any of us into their hands to the spilling of our blood. . . . informers . . . such as viperous and malicious bishops and curates . . . who raise the hue and cry after us . . . we say all and every one of such shall be reputed by us as enemies to God and the covenanted work of reformation, *and punished as such*, according to our power and the degree of their offence. . . . Therefore all those aforesaid persons be admonished of their hazard . . . we desire you to take warning . . . for the sinless necessity of self-preservation, accompanied with holy zeal *for Christ's*

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies, 433.<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 434.





*reigning in our land* [the dominion of presbytery] and suppressing of profanity, will move us not to let you pass unpunished."

THIS TREASONABLE apologetic was formally fixed to the market-crosses and church doors of several burghs during the night; and even Wodrow admits that "it wanted not its designed effect." For "the most venomous malignants were affrighted, informers and intelligencers in the west and south for some time were deterred from their trafficking, and the most virulent and persecuting of the curates in Nithsdale and Galloway thought fit to retire for some time to other places," even before some dreadful murders startled the whole kingdom at the atrocious principles which this document developed. The privy council met, and submitted the following query to the judges, crown lawyers, and several advocates: "whether any of his majesty's subjects being questioned by his majesty's judges or commissioners, if they own a late proclamation, in so far as it declares war against his sacred majesty, and asserts that it is lawful to kill all those who are employed by his majesty, refusing to answer upon oath, are guilty thereby of high treason, and art and part in the said treasonable declaration?" It was answered—"It is the unanimous opinion of the lords of council and session that a libel in the terms of the said query is relevant to infer the crime of treason, as art and part of the said treasonable declaration against the refusers<sup>1</sup>."

THE ANSWER to this query was made the basis of an act of council, more tyrannical and atrocious than any thing that had hitherto proceeded from the privy council; but which sir George Mackenzie vindicates upon the principle of retaliation. "It being put to the vote in council, whether or not any person owns, or does not disown, the late traitorous declaration upon oath, whether they have arms or not, should be immediately killed before two witnesses, and the person or persons who are to have instructions from the council for that effect? Carried in the affirmative. The lords of his majesty's privy council do hereby ordain any person who owns or will not disown the late treasonable declaration upon oath, whether they have arms or not, to be immediately put to death; this being always done in presence of two witnesses, and the person or persons having commission from the council for that effect<sup>2</sup>."

SIR GEORGE MACKENZIE attempts to justify this terrible act by alleging the dreadful condition of the country, and the many murders committed by the presbyterians: he says, "As to the

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 154.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. iv. 155.





act made in council, allowing soldiers to kill such as refused to own the king's authority : it is answered, that there being many proclamations issued out by the dissenters declaring that the ' covenant was the original contract betwixt God, the king, and the people ; and therefore king Charles II. having broken it, forfeaulted his crown, and being to be considered only as a private subject, and enemy to God, they declared war against him, and that it was lawful to kill him and all who served him : ' *many*, accordingly, *being killed*, it was thought necessary by some (upon fresh news of murdering some of the king's horse guards at Swyne-abbey, in their beds) *to terrify* them out of this extravagancy, by allowing the soldiers to use them as in a war in which, if any call—' for whom are ye ? ' and the others owning—' that they were for the enemy, ' it is lawful then to kill : and thus they felt their folly and the necessary effects of their *principles* ; but still it was ordered that none should be killed except those who were found *in arms owning* that principle of assassination, and refusing to clear themselves of their having been in accession to the declaring of *war which they had then begun* ; nor were these killed, but when their deliberate refusal could be proved by two witnesses. But that it may appear plainly that no more was intended in all this by the governors, but to secure the public peace by terrifying those assassins who had so manifestly invaded it, secret orders were given, that this should not last above a fortnight, and that none should be killed except those who were found in the publicly printed list, declared rebels, who may be killed by the laws of all nations ; and but very few even of those rebels were killed, though this has been made the foundation of *many dreadful lies*. This mischief was intolerable in itself, and we desire to know how it could have been otherwise remedied, for the law must find cures for all mischiefs, and those who *occasionea* them should of all others be least allowed to complain<sup>1</sup>."

AFTER THE publication of the Apologetic Declaration, the presbyterian districts became uninhabitable by the episcopal clergy and their people, and many of the clergy, from the effects of terror, were obliged to remove from their charges into towns for protection ; for Mackenzie observes, " no man who served the king could know whether or not his murderer was at his elbow, and that they had reason to look upon every place as their scaffold." Two soldiers, or " gentlemen of the life-guards," were barbarously murdered by the adherents of the apologetic on the night of the 20th of November, in their beds ; the par-

<sup>1</sup> Vindication, pp. 15-16.



ticulars of which were not known, for the fanatical murderers escaped detection. Kennoway, one of the victims, was much employed against the presbyterians, and was perhaps the prototype of serjeant Bothwell, in Scott's novel of the Covenanters, and both he and Stewart, the other man, had incurred much odium among the presbyterians by their activity. They were quartered at a place called Swyne-abbey, in the parish of Livingstone, county of Linlithgow, and diocese of Edinburgh; and the former had a list of the names of persons whom he was directed to arrest. Wodrow says this atrocious murder "shows how righteous Providence was that this wicked man is cut off in the midst of his days and prospects<sup>1</sup>." The council ordered a strict search to be made for the murderers, but they were never discovered; but provision was made for the widows and children of the murdered men.

ON THE 30th of December, the council published a proclamation against the Apologetic Declaration, in which they assert that the rebels having at last "pulled off the mask under which they formerly endeavoured to disguise their bloody and execrable principles, and . . . declared that they have disowned us and our authority, and have declared war against us; and . . . that it is a duty to kill and murder all who do any manner of way serve us or bear charge under us, &c. . . . Therefore we do hereby ordain that whosoever shall own the said most execrable and treasonable declaration or assassinations therein mentioned, and the principles therein specified, or whosoever shall refuse to disown the same, in so far as it declares war against his sacred majesty, and asserts that it is lawful to kill such as serve in church, state, army, and country, shall be tried and executed to the death. . . . And since these rebels, after declaring their hellish intentions, for the better performance of their mischievous designs, do lurk in secret, and are never discerned but in the acts of their horrid assassinations, and passing up and down unknown amongst our loyal subjects, take opportunity to murder and assassinate, and it being necessary to provide a remedy against so imminent a danger . . . we hereby command and require all our subjects—both men and women past the age of sixteen years—not to presume to travel without testificates of their loyalty and good principles," of which a form was given; but this restriction was entirely confined to the counties within the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway, with the capital; the other parts of the kingdom which were free from presbyterian prin-

<sup>1</sup> History, iv. 153.



ciples enjoyed the same freedom of locomotion as formerly. It was also declared that those who travelled without one of these passes were to be "holden and used as concurreurs with the aforesaid execrable rebels, and as guilty of the aforesaid treasonable declaration, and accessory to the designs therein." The pass was in words of similar import to the following oath, which all were required to take before they could be entitled to receive their passport, and all military men were authorised to administer the oath:—"I, A B, do hereby abhor, renounce, and disown, in presence of the Almighty God, the pretended declaration of war, late affixed to several parish churches, in so far as it declares a war against his sacred majesty, and asserts that it is lawful to kill such as serve his majesty in church, state, army, or country."

1685.—IT IS IMPOSSIBLE to contemplate the horrible state to which the principles of the covenant had at this time reduced the southern parts of the kingdom, without shame and sorrow. Their own madness and murderous designs, and which were adopted as *a principle of religion*, produced retaliatory cruelties and restrictions on liberty in those parts of the kingdom that were afflicted with their presence; and it is an extraordinary symptom of delusion that those severities which they may be said to have extorted from the government are looked upon as unprovoked persecution, and the execution of convicted traitors as martyrdom. If the jesuits could feel either shame or compunction, the fruit produced by their instrument, the covenant, would move them to both; but in this covenant, which murdered both souls and bodies, they thought they were doing service to Him whose attribute is LOVE. Whereas their works, but especially the covenant, are chiefly calculated to advance the kingdom of him who was both a LIAR and a MURDERER from the beginning of time.

THE ESTABLISHED CLERGY in the southern counties were kept in constant terror of their lives, and even Wodrow admits that their treatment by his friends was "*uncivil and rude enough*," and that in consequence many of them were driven to the necessity of resigning their cures and removing out of the country; upon the principle that "when they persecute you in this city, flee ye unto another." One of a more intrepid character than the others, Mr. Peter Pearson, incumbent of the parish of Carsphairn, in Galloway, met the fate designed for others, had matters been allowed to proceed. He was unmarried, and lived at his house quite alone; but, according to the policy of the time, he had been compelled to attend the court held by the military commander, and to accuse





or else to excuse his parishioners. For his own protection, he kept firearms and other means of defence in his house, and it seems he had provoked the whigs by saying that he was not afraid of them. He taught the catholic doctrines of the church, which were fiercely denounced, as they have ever been, and ever will be by Calvinists, as popery and arminianism, and Wodrow calls this an "unwarrantable provocation!" Some of the whigs, therefore, entered into a combination to compel him to desist from what they called persecution, and to teach more orthodox doctrines, according to their standard of divinity. Two of them gained admission to his house at night, some say after he was in bed, when he prepared for defence, but the others coming to the door, he incautiously went out to reason with them, as he now saw his peril was imminent, and he was shot dead on the instant. "Several of his brethren," says Wodrow, "about the time of the society's declaration, had the caution *to retire* for a little, but he would needs brave it out," and murder was the reward of his courage; and he continues, "in his narrower sphere, he came the nearest to the primate who met with the same fate."

ALTHOUGH he pretends to abhor and detest murder in the abstract, yet he most circumstantially and apologetically relates all the circumstances connected with this sacrilegious murder, and protests against its being laid to the charge of the whigs; but it *is* chargeable on their *principles*, and particularly on their apologetic declaration. The council ordered the whole parish to be pursued for the murder done on their minister; and likewise the parish of Anwoth, in the same diocese, for *affronts* done to their minister. I cannot find any account of what were the nature of the "affronts" done to the clergyman of that parish, but it is probable they were short of murder.

THE COUNCIL wrote to the lord bishop of Moray to advertise all his clergy to meet at Elgin on the 22d January, to attend a court to be held by the earls of Erroll, Kintore, and some others, and to bring with them lists of "persons guilty of church disorders, or suspected of disaffection to the present established government in church or state." This is the fruit of the former insane practice of having banished the whig ministers from the diocese of Glasgow into Morayshire. Wodrow very justly says, "the seed sown by the banishments, after the first introduction of prelacy, of Mr. D. Dickson and Mr. R. Bruce, and others; and more lately by ministers and gentlemen banished thither by the high commission, and by the labours of Messrs. Hogg, M'Gilligie, and others,



were not yet worn out from that country." To inquire into the disorders which a few presbyterians introduced and kept up in that diocese, the council sent these noblemen as commissioners, and their report states that the lords sent a "vagrant preacher to Edinburgh; and cleansed the country of all outed ministers and vagrant preachers, and banished four of them for not taking the oath of allegiance, keeping conventicles, and refusing to keep the kirk." The commissioners seem to have restored order amongst the few delinquents in Moray, without having resorted to any very harsh measures; except in the cases of Grant of Grant and Brodie of Brodie, both of whom were heavily fined. They appealed to the king in council, but their fines were confirmed. They report also, that "the bishop and clergy of the diocese of Moray attended the lords in a body, and gave them their hearty thanks for the great pains and diligence they had used to the good and encouragement of the church and clergy in that place, and begged the lords would allow them to represent their sense and gratitude thereof to the lords of his majesty's most honourable privy council<sup>1</sup>."

GRAHAM of Claverhouse had traversed the stewartry of Galloway in the end of the preceding year; but had failed in entirely suppressing the field conventicles. Colonel Douglass, with two hundred men, was sent into the stewartry, and on the 23d of January he came upon six men at Caldunes, a farmhouse in the parish of Minnigaff, when, Wodrow affirms, without any other provocation than that of their being engaged in prayer, and without any process, he shot them all dead! This is not true; but this falsehood served to "aggravate the crimes of his enemies," and to keep up local prejudices against both the church and the king's government. Lord Fountainhall relates, that Douglass was in the fields on that day with eight men, and accidentally encountered these fanatics, "who killed two of his men and captain Urquhart, and had very nearly shot Douglass himself dead, had not the whig's carbine misgiven, whereon Douglass pistoled him presently." Instead of having shot six men at prayers without any process, it thus appears, upon undoubted authority, that the six men at prayers shot three of the king's life-guards in the execution of their duty. His lordship adds, some companions of these whigs came to Kirkcudbright and killed two men, "and caused a minister, called Mr. Shaw, to swear he would never

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 194-196.



preach again in Scotland." This oath was extorted from him under the threat of instant murder, but yet he was so tender of his oath that he preached no more in Scotland.

HIS MAJESTY king Charles II. was seized with a fit of apoplexy on Monday, the 2d of February; on the 4th, hopes were entertained of his majesty's recovery, but growing worse, he died on Friday the 6th, at Whitehall, in the 55th year of his age and the 37th of his reign, about twenty-five years after the Restoration<sup>1</sup>. Burnet alleges that one Huddlestone, a priest of Rome, administered the sacrament and extreme unction to the king previous to his death; and Huddlestone published a "Brief Account of particulars occurring at the happy death of our late sovereign lord king Charles II. in regard to religion; faithfully related by his then assistant, Mr. John Huddlestone." That paper is now before me, in which the priest says, "The king then declared himself, 'that he desired to die in the faith and communion of the holy Roman catholic church; that he was most heartily sorry for all the sins of his life past, and particularly for that he had *deferred his reconciliation so long*; that through the merits of Christ's passion, he hoped for salvation; that he was in charity with all the world; that with all his heart he pardoned his enemies, and desired pardon of all those whom he had anywise offended; and that, if it pleased God to spare him longer life, he would amend it, detesting all sin<sup>2</sup>.'"

BISHOP BURNET's account of the last hours of the king partakes of all that malignity and misrepresentation which run through his whole history; but fortunately we have another account by one who was present in the room, and who was chaplain to Dr. Turner, bishop of Ely. It is in a letter addressed to the Rev. Francis Roper; but the signature was torn away. It is preserved among the Ellis Papers, dated Ely House, February 7th, 1684-85:—

"REVEREND SIR,—Yesterday noon, I do believe the most lamented prince that ever sat upon a throne, one of the best kings, after near five days' sickness, left this world; translated, doubtless, to a much more glorious kingdom than all those which he has left behind him, now bewailing of their loss. It was a great piece of providence that this fatal blow was not so sudden as it would have been if he had died on Monday, when his fit first took him, as he must have done if Dr. King had not been by chance, and let him blood. By these

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, 232.

<sup>2</sup> Deutera Eikon Basilike, 317.





few days' respite he had opportunity (which, accordingly, he did embrace) of thinking of another world; and we all prepared the better to sustain so great a loss. He shewed himself, throughout his sickness, one of the best-natured men that ever lived; and by abundance of fine things he said, with reference to his soul, he shewed he died as a good christian; and the physicians, who have seen so many leave this world, do say they never saw the like as to his courage, so unconcerned he was at death, though sensible to all degrees imaginable to the very last. He often, in extremity of pain, would say he suffered, but thanked God that he did so, and that he suffered patiently. He every now and then would seem to wish for death, and beg the pardon of the standers by and those that were employed about him, that he gave them so much trouble; that he hoped the work was almost over; he was weary of this world; he had had enough of it, and he was going to a better. There was so much affection and tenderness expressed between the royal brothers, the one upon the bed, the other almost drowned in tears upon his knees, and kissing of his dying brother's hand, as could not but extremely move the standers by. He thanked our present king for having always been the best of brothers and of friends, and begged his pardon for the trouble he had given him from time to time, and for the several risks of fortune he had run on his account. He told him now he freely left him all, and begged of God to bless him with a prosperous reign. He recommended all his children to his care *except* the duke of Monmouth, whom he was not heard so much as to make mention of. He blessed all his children, one by one, pulling them to him on the bed; and then the bishops moved him, as he was the Lord's anointed and the father of his country, to bless them also, and all that were there present, and in them the whole body of his subjects. Whereupon, the room being full, all fell down upon their knees, and he raised himself on his bed, and very solemnly blessed them all. This was so like a great good prince, and the solemnity of it so very surprising, as was extremely moving, and caused a general lamentation throughout; and no one hears [of] it without being much affected with it; being new and great.

"It is NOT to be expressed how strangely every body was concerned when they perceived there was but little hopes. To all appearance, never any prince came to a crown with more regret, with more unwillingness, because it could not be without the loss of one he loved so dearly, than did our gracious sovereign (whom God preserve). He joined as heartily as any of the company in all the prayers the bishops offered





up to God. He was as much upon his knees as any one, and said Amen as heartily ; and no one doubts but he as much desired God would hear their prayers as any one of all that prayed.

"THE QUEEN, whom he [the king] had asked for the first thing he said on Monday, when he came out of his fit (she having been present with him as long as her extraordinary passion would give her leave, which at length threw her into fits, not being able to speak while with him), sent a message to him to excuse her absence, and to beg his pardon if ever she had offended him in all her life. He replied, 'Alas ! poor woman ! she beg my pardon ? I beg hers, with all my heart !'

"THE QUEEN that now is was a most passionate mourner, and so tender-hearted as to think a crown dearly bought with the loss of such a brother. There was, indeed, no one of either sex but wept like children.

"ON FRIDAY morning all the churches were so thronged with people to pray for him, all in tears and with dejected looks, that for my part I found it a hard task, and so I do believe did many more, to go through with the service ; so melancholy was the sight, as well as were the thoughts of the occasion of it.

"THE BISHOP of Bath and Wells [Kenn] watching on Wednesday night (as my lord [Dr. Turner, bishop of Ely] had done the night before), there appearing then some danger, began to discourse to him as a divine ; and thereupon he did continue the speaker for the rest to the last, the other bishops giving their assistance, both by prayers and otherwise, as they saw occasion, with very good ejaculations and short speeches, till his speech quite left him ; and afterwards, by lifting up his hand, expressing his attention to the prayers, he made a very glorious christian exit, after as lasting and as strong an agony of death almost as ere was known<sup>1</sup>."

THE CHARACTER of this prince has been altogether misrepresented, by the malignity of bishop Burnet and the prejudices of presbyterian authors, who, mistaking their own sins of rebellion for true and laudable service, have represented him as a monster of iniquity and tyranny. But better and less prejudiced judges give him a very different character. Dr. Charlton says, his majesty's natural endowments were highly improved by a numerous train of accidents commonly unknown to other princes ; his mind was adorned by such virtues as might, if they had continued, have proved a perpetual

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, iii. 333-338. Published 1824.



source of happiness to himself and kingdom, as justice, fortitude, temperance, clemency, and sobriety. Sir William Temple says, no prince had more qualities to make him loved, with a great many to make him esteemed, and all without a grain of pride and vanity in his constitution: nor could he suffer flattery of any kind, growing weary upon the first approaches of it. Echard says, the king's own clemency was apparent and remarkable; and it was the king's opinion, both before and after his restoration, that the best means to restore the decayed body of the kingdom to its former health, was not to cure one part by afflicting the other, but to heal those wounds, which were already festered, by their proper lenitives, and to remove all causes of future animosity. And that he never intended to have enslaved his people, as Burnet maliciously insinuates, is evident from his voluntarily passing by two favourable opportunities: first at his restoration, and next in the latter end of life, when he reigned so entirely in the hearts of his subjects, always excepting, however, the presbyterians, that they would have denied him nothing that he could have asked from them<sup>1</sup>. Hume says of him, "though not endowed with the integrity and strict principles of his father, he was happy in a more amiable manner and more popular address. Far from being distant, stately, or reserved, he had not a grain of pride or vanity in his whole composition; but was the most affable, best bred man alive. He treated his subjects like noblemen, like gentlemen, like freemen; not like vassals or boors. His professions were plausible, his whole behaviour engaging; so that he won upon the hearts even when he lost the good opinion of his subjects, and often balanced their judgments of things by their personal inclination. In his public conduct likewise, though he had some times embraced measures dangerous to the liberty and religion of his people, he had never been found to persevere obstinately in them, but had always returned into that path which their united opinion seemed to point out to him. And upon the whole, it appeared to many, cruel, and even iniquitous, to remark so rigorously the failings of a prince who discovered so much facility in correcting his errors, and so much lenity in pardoning the offences committed against himself<sup>2</sup>."

It was frequently remarked of Charles, "that he never *said* a foolish thing, nor ever *did* a wise one," a severe and unjust censure; but when it was related to the merry monarch, he readily accounted for it by saying that nothing could be more

Saimon's Examination, i. 438-442.

<sup>2</sup> Hist. of Eng. viii. 121.



reasonable than that, "for his discourse was *his own*, whereas his actions were his ministers'." Lord Fountainhall says of him, that "he was certainly a prince (whose weak side was to be carried away with women, which had wasted his body, being only fifty-five years old when he died) endued with many royal qualities, of whom the divine providence had taken an especial care: witness his miraculous escape at Worcester battle; his treatment in the royal oak, when thousands were rummaging the fields in quest of him; his restoration without one drop of bloodshed, so that the Turkish emperor said that if he were to change his religion he would only do so for that of the king of Great Britain's God, who had done so wonderful things for him. His clemency was admirable; witness his sparing two of Cromwell's sons, one of whom had usurped his throne. His firmness in religion was evident, for in his banishment great offers were made to restore him if he would turn papist, which he altogether slighted<sup>1</sup>."

HIS RELIGIOUS firmness is confirmed by the following letter, which he wrote to the duke of York with his own hand, to prevent his apostacy, and which corresponds with his own conduct before embarking for Scotland<sup>2</sup>. It is dated Cologne, November 10th, 1654:—

"DEAR BROTHER,—I have received yours, without a date, in which you mention that Mr. Montague has endeavoured to pervert you in your religion. I do not doubt but you remember very well the commands I left with you at my going away, concerning that point, and am confident you will observe them; yet the letters coming from Paris say that it is the queen's purpose to do all she can to change your religion; which, if you hearken unto her or any body else in that matter, you must never think to see England or me again; and whatever mischief shall fall on me or my affairs from this time, I must lay all on you, as being the only cause of it: therefore consider well what it is, not only to be the cause of ruining a brother that loves you so well, but also of your king and country. Do not let them persuade you either by force or fair promises; for the first, they neither dare nor will use; for the second, as soon as they have perverted you, they will have their end, and will care no more for you. I am also informed there is a purpose to put you into the jesuits' college, which I command you, on the same ground, never to consent unto; and whenever any body will go to dispute with you in religion, do not

<sup>1</sup> Chronological Notes, p. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Vide *ante* ii. ch. xxiv. p. 320.





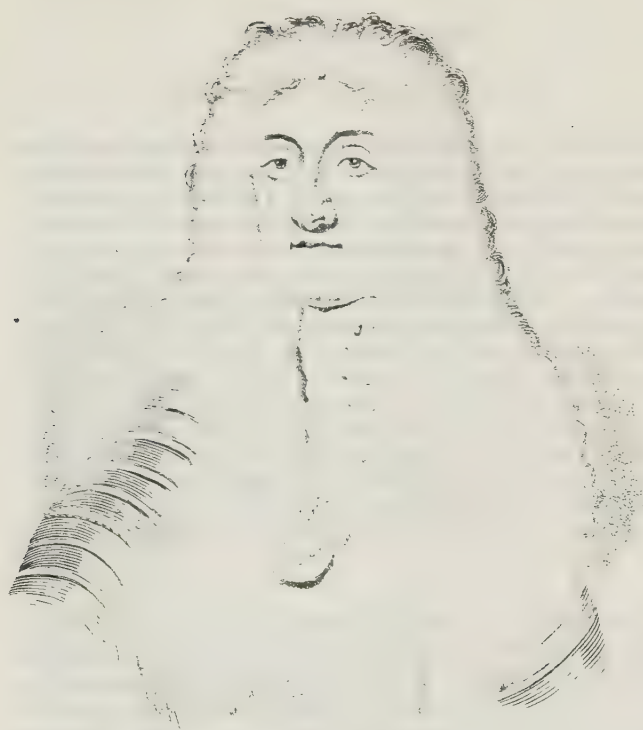
answer them at all ; for though you have reason on your side, yet, they being prepared, will have the advantage of any body that is not upon the same security that they are. If you do not consider what I say to you, remember the last words of your dead father, which were, to be constant to your religion, and never to be shaken in it. Which, if you do not observe, this shall be the last time you will ever hear from your affectionate brother,

“ CHARLES R.”

BURNET most mendaciously asserts that the proclamation of king James's accession was a heavy solemnity ; few tears were shed for the former, nor were there any shouts of joy for the present king<sup>1</sup>. Few princes have descended to the grave more generally lamented than Charles II. ; he was a most popular sovereign, and was beloved by all his subjects, except the whigs, who were in constant plots both against his crown and his life. Mr. archdeacon Echard says, “ sure it is that since the murder of his father, *there never was a deeper sorrow, nor more tears shed in England*, than appeared upon the first news of the death of this beloved monarch, king Charles II., which was looked upon as the greatest misfortune and calamity that could befall the nation.” Burnet's malicious insinuation, that there were no shouts of joy at the proclamation of king James, is equally unfounded : Mr. Welwood says, that “ upon king Charles's death, James, duke of York, mounted the throne ; all the former heats and animosities against him, and even the very memory of a bill of exclusion, seemed to be now quite forgot, amidst the loud acclamations of his people at his accession to the crown.”

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, iii. 5.







## CHAPTER XLVI.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1685.—Proclamation of James II.—his speech in council.—Archbishop San-  
croft's address.—King goes publicly to mass—sets up the popish ritual at  
Holyrood-house.—Charles II.'s prophecy—king Charles buried.—James VII.  
proclaimed at Edinburgh.—Bishops' address to the king—did not take the  
coronation oath.—An action with the covenanters.—Free pardon to preachers  
and others.—Renwick in the field—refuses to join Argyle.—The Sanquhar  
Declaration.—Meeting of parliament—king's letter—duke of Queensberry  
commissioner, his speech—the chancellor's speech—act for the security of the  
protestant church—against the covenant—other acts—act for the clergy.—  
Argyle's movements—arrives at Orkney—bishop of Orkney arrests his officers  
—arrives in Kintyre—issues a declaration—the declaration—makes a descent  
on the lowlands—is defeated—and captured.—Address of parliament.—Argyle  
ordered to be beheaded.—Monmouth lands at Lyme—proclaimed king at  
Taunton—writes to the duke of Albemarle—defeated at Sedgemoor—beheaded  
—his fanaticism—his declaration—Argyle's prophecy—his behaviour on the  
scaffold.—Rumbold executed.—A thanksgiving ordered.—Dispensing with  
the laws.

1685.—ABOUT four o'clock in the afternoon of the same day on  
which king Charles II. died, James the Second was proclaimed  
at London with the usual solemnities, with great acclamations  
of the people, "together with a decent concern for the loss of  
so good a prince." At night the council met, and his majesty  
made a very gracious declaration, wherein he assured the lords  
that he should endeavour to follow his brother's example, es-  
pecially in his great tenderness and clemency to his people;  
that though he had been reported to be a man bent on arbitrary  
power, yet he should invade no man's property, but endeavour  
to support the government both in church and state, as it was  
by law established. I know, he said, the principles of the  
church of England are for monarchy, and that the members  
of it have shewn themselves good and loyal subjects, and there-  
fore I shall always take care to defend and support it. He re-  
peated the same assurance to the lord bishop of Ely, with  
solemn protestations that he would not in the least disturb the



established government of the church, "either by toleration or any other way whatever." The next day archbishop Sancroft and some of the bishops had a private audience of his majesty in his closet, when the archbishop made a very eloquent speech, by way of thanks, in the name of the whole clergy, for his majesty's gracious declaration in council, "giving him all assurances of loyalty in the clergy, as what he might depend upon, as it is both the doctrine and practice of our church, beyond any church in the world<sup>1</sup>." His majesty again repeated his former declaration, and added, moreover, that he would never give any sort of countenance to dissenters.

ON THE 8th of February, king James went publicly to mass at St. James's chapel; and the Romish ritual was ordered to be established in the chapel royal, Holyrood-house! This infatuated king thus early laid the foundation of his own ruin, and the verification of the late king's prophecy, as related by sir Richard Bullstrode, a papist, in his Memoirs. He had been the resident at the court of Brussels, and he says, "about two years before the death of king Charles II. he gave me leave to come into England, and sent the Katharine yacht to Ostend for me. Some days after my arrival at Whitehall, he commanded me to walk with him to Hyde-park, and as I walked with him, the rest of the company keeping at a good distance, he told me that I had served him very well at Brussels, and that his brother had given him a very good account of my carriage there. . . . And after having asked me many questions about the nobility of those countries, he said, that during his exile abroad he had seen many countries, of which none pleased him so much as that of the Flemings, who were the most honest and true-hearted race of people that he had met with: and then added, *But I am weary of travelling, I am resolved to go abroad no more: but when I am dead and gone, I know not what my brother will do. I am much afraid that when he comes to the crown he will be obliged to travel again. And yet I will take care to leave my kingdoms to him in peace, wishing he may long keep them so. But this hath all of my fears, little of my hopes, and less of my reason; and I am much afraid, that when my brother comes to the crown, he will be obliged again to leave his native soil.*" This idea must have made a strong impression on the king's mind, for he remarked to the prince of Orange, that "he was confident, whenever the

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, iii. 338-39.—Salmon's Chronology, 234.—The Life of King James II. late King of England, anonymous, p. 74, 2d edit. London, 1703.





duke should come to reign, that he would be so restless and violent, that he would *not hold it four years* to an end<sup>1</sup>:" little did the king think, however, that this prince, who was James's son-in-law, was to send him on his travels.

ON THE 14th, king Charles was buried privately from the painted chamber at Westminster in Henry VII.'s Chapel in the Abbey; "but hardly was ever a crowned head so obscurely interred, he having not so much as the Blue-coat boys to walk before him<sup>2</sup>."

ON MONDAY evening, the 9th of February, the news of the late king's death reached Edinburgh, and the privy council assembled immediately, and after expressing their grief, they resolved to proclaim the duke of Albany and York the following day as James VII. At eight o'clock next morning they again met, and the lord chancellor, having first taken the oath of allegiance, the test, and the oath of a privy councillor, administered them to all the other members. Then they all signed the order for proclaiming the new king, and went to the cross, where they were met by the lord provost and magistrates in their robes and insignia, and the lords of session, with such of the lords spiritual and temporal as were in town. The lord chancellor ascended the cross, and read the proclamation amidst the shouts and acclamation of the people; and afterwards the privy council despatched a letter to the king with an account of their proceedings. At the same time the archbishops and bishops sent an address to the king, in which they expressed their deep sorrow for the death of their late sovereign Charles II., but which was mitigated by the happy and peaceable succession of his majesty to the throne. They also congratulated his majesty on his accession "with all the marks of joy imaginable;" and requested that his majesty would be pleased to permit the archbishop of St. Andrews to wait upon his royal person, that he might express his own and his brethren's sense of duty and affection more fully than could be done by letter. On the 16th, king James was proclaimed in Ireland by the duke of Ormond with equal splendour, and with every mark of loyalty<sup>3</sup>.

IN THE proclamation an oath is inserted of adhesion to James's heirs: "and we hereby give our oaths with uplifted hands that we shall bear true and faithful allegiance unto our said sacred sovereign James VII. king, &c., and to his *lawful heirs* and successors." But it is remarkable that the king had

<sup>1</sup> Note by editor of Burnet's Own Times, ii. 415.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 234.—Life of King James, 75.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. 75-76.



no coronation oath for Scotland tendered to him ; and Wodrow sneeringly remarks, " the loss was not very great to Scotland, since his religion, which led him to keep no faith with heretics, could have furnished him with a dispensation from his oath, though he had taken it ;" as the covenant furnished a dispensation to his subjects from their oath of allegiance to him at the revolution. On the 13th of February, colonel Buchan defeated eighty of the covenanters who had assembled in arms, killed one of them, and took three prisoners. And the lord advocate was ordered to prosecute the parishioners of Irongray, in the diocese of Galloway, for one of those frequent invasions of the clergyman's manse, and an attack on his person ; which Wodrow delicately calls " an abuse," and adds, " I know no more about it." On the 2d of March, the king published an indemnity, with some exceptions, in which he freely pardoned and indemnified all his Scottish subjects, under and below the degree of heritors, &c.—including " vagrant preachers, of all rebellions, seditious, insurrections, reset, intercommuning, fire-raising, &c., in any time preceding the date of this our royal proclamation." Out of this indemnity, however, the murderers of archbishop Sharp and Mr. Pearson were excepted. Extensive as this indemnity was, yet it failed to gratify the party that derived the greatest benefit from it ; for, says Wodrow, " it is so narrow, that it scarce deserves its name, and very much agrees with the nature of those favours protestant subjects may expect from a popish prince. The king is made to commend his brother's clemency as what aggravated what is *now called* rebellion. I am apt enough to suppose, that king Charles's government might have been *much more easy* than it was, *had it not been for the duke and the bishops*<sup>1</sup>." It is in this way that such inveterate prejudices have been instilled into the minds of the people of Scotland. The bishops had nothing to do with the measures of government, but the people were taught to believe that they had, and the traditional feeling of hatred and malice has been transmitted with such intense repugnance also to their sacred office, that it seems almost to be invincible.

BY A DESPATCH from the council to the officer commanding in the south, we learn that Renwick held a conventicle in Clydesdale, that might be considered a military muster. " May 25th, the lords of his majesty's privy council, being this day certainly informed, that there was a considerable meeting of persons hearing that supposed preacher (a disturber of the peace

<sup>1</sup> History, iv. 205.



and of all honest men), Mr. James Renwick, between the King's-hill and Durmond, upon the borders of Carluke and Cambusnethan parishes, in Clydesdale, where there were an hundred armed men, who were exercised betwixt sunrising and eight of the clock in the morning upon Friday last, and then after sermon, began again and continued the rest of the day. At which meeting there were several persons made their repentance for their offences in taking the oath of abjuration, the test, and hearing and communicating with indulged ministers; and so were by him received into their society, and some were delayed till a new occasion, their offences being many<sup>1</sup>." But this was not enough, "Mr. Renwick's spirit was stirred within him at the proclamation of king James, a professed papist," and therefore he "could not let go this opportunity of witnessing against that usurpation of a papist upon the government of the nation, and his design of overturning the covenanted work of reformation, and of introducing popery. Accordingly, he and about 200 men went to Sanquhar, May 28, 1685, and published that declaration, afterwards called the Sanquhar Declaration<sup>2</sup>." The council sent orders to the lord Carmichael to examine all suspected persons, to secure their arms and horses throughout the county of Ayr, to prevent their joining Argyle, whose invasion was now daily expected.

RENWICK was strongly solicited to unite his armed followers, who had been in training at the last conventicle, with those of Argyle; but as that traitor had not given his testimony against the designs and defections of the times with sufficient explicitness to satisfy Renwick, he refused. He chose to make war on antichrist in his own way, and he thereby incurred the wrath of those ministers that came over with Argyle, one of whom wrote and published a most vindictive letter against him; and one Cathcart protested in the name of the presbyterians against Renwick's preaching, or even conversing within their jurisdiction<sup>3</sup>." The following is an abstract of the Sanquhar Declaration:—

"IT HATH pleased the holy and wise God to exercise the church of Scotland now of a long time with wrestling under the yoke of cruel oppressions . . . all this . . . we have met with as just upon the Lord's part, though unjust upon man's, for our manifold sins and iniquities; and in a special manner for our *not purging* our judicatories and armies, when the power was in our hands, of men disaffected to the cause and interest

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow, iv. 209-10.

<sup>2</sup> Scots Worthies, Life of Renwick, p. 435.

<sup>3</sup> Scots Worthies, Life of Renwick, 436.





of Christ [*i. e.* to presbytery] . . . and for inordinate affection to, and lusting after, the deceased tyrant Charles II., and advancing him to the royal throne, even when known . . . to retain his heartenmity at the covenanted work of reformation. . . . And howbeit . . . when we were brought to a very small remnant, we did, by open declaration, disclaim his *pretended* authority ; . . . *all which we do hereby ratify and approve.* . . . So now . . . a few wicked and unprincipled men having . . . proclaimed James duke of York, though a professed papist and *an excommunicate person* . . . to be king of Scotland, &c. . . . We, the contending and suffering remnant *of the true presbyterians*, . . . do hereby deliberately, jointly, and unanimously, protest against the aforesaid proclamation . . . in regard it is the choosing a murderer to be a governor who hath shed the *blood of the saints* . . . the height of confederacy with an idolater . . . contrary to the declaration of the Assembly, July, 1649, and to many wholesome and laudable acts of parliament . . . and inconsistent with the safety, faith, conscience, and christian liberty of a christian people, to choose *a subject of antichrist* to be . . . their supreme magistrate. Also conceiving that this pretended parliament is not a lawful parliament . . . and further, seeing bloody papists, the subjects of antichrist, are become so hopeful, bold, and confident, under the perfidy of the said James duke of York, and popery itself . . . like to be intruded again . . . upon these covenanted lands, and an open door being made thereunto, by *its accursed and abjured harbinger, PRELACY, which these three kingdoms are equally sworn against* [and to *extirpate*]. We do, in like manner, protest against all kind of popery, in general and particular heads . . . abjured most explicitly by our national covenant, abrogated, annulled, and rescinded by our acts of parliament, and against its entering again into this land, and against every thing that doth, or may, directly or indirectly, make way for the same, disclaiming likewise all sectarianism, *malignancy*, and any confederacy therewith."

THE GOVERNMENT had the good sense to take little notice of this Declaration, and it passed off harmlessly. The parliament met on the 28th of March, the same day that the king and queen were crowned at London. The king's letter was read, which, among other things, said—"That what he had to propose to them at that time was this, which was both necessary as well for his safety as service, and had a greater tendency towards their securing their own privileges and properties than the aggrandising his power, which, however, he was resolved to maintain in its greatest lustre ; that he might be the better



enabled to protect and defend their religion established by law, their rights and properties, against fanatical contrivances, murderers and assassins, which only the steady resolutions of his brother, and those employed by him, could have saved them from. That nothing had been left undone by these inhuman traitors to overturn their peace; and therefore he hoped they would be wanting in nothing to secure themselves and him."

THE DUKE OF QUEENSBERRY was sent down as royal commissioner, and after the king's letter had been read, his grace spoke, among other things, as follows:—My lords, his majesty certainly expects from the prudence and loyalty of this parliament that effectual ways will be fallen upon for destroying that desperate, fanatical, and irreclaimable party, who have brought us to the brink of ruin and disgrace, and are no more rebels against the king, than enemies of mankind, wretches of such monstrous principles and practices, as past ages never heard, nor those to come will hardly believe: what indemnities and acts of grace and clemency have they not contemned? and all the use they made of them, has still been to pardon and confirm them in their execrable villainies: and how inconsiderable soever they appear, assure yourselves they ought not absolutely to be contemned, *for if they had not support and correspondence not yet discovered*, it is not to be supposed they could have so long escaped the care and vigilance of the government."

THE EARL OF PERTH, the lord chancellor, said:—"To encourage us to do all we can towards the service and the honour of our gracious monarch, let us consider him in all his personal advantages; whether in what relates to war or peace, where has the world afforded such another? One whose natural endowments have been improved by his great experience at home and abroad, in armies and in courts, by the greatest trials of the most differing kinds—those of prosperity and success, and of adversity and opposition; of hazards and toil, and of authority and command. Did ever man shew so exact an honesty in the strictest adhering to his word, such temperance and sobriety, so indefatigable a diligence in affairs, so undaunted a courage upon all occasions, and so unwearied a clemency towards the most obstinate malicious offenders?" Wodrow calls the chancellor's speech "a very remarkable discourse;" and what he says of the king was very true, and his speech is not less remarkable for its plainness respecting "a new sect sprung up amongst us from the dunghill, the very dregs of the people, who killed by pretended inspiration, and instead of the temple of the Lord, have nothing in their



mouths but the word of God, wresting that blessed conveyance of His holy will to us, to justify a practice suggested to them by him who was a murderer from the beginning, who having modelled themselves into a commonwealth (whose idol is that accursed paper the Covenant, and whose only rule is to have none at all), have proceeded to declare themselves no longer his majesty's subjects, to forfeit all of us who have the honour to serve in any considerable station, and will be sure to do so ere long by this great and honourable court. It is, how to rid ourselves of these men, and of all who incline to their principles, that we are to offer to his majesty our advice, concurrence, and utmost assistance. These monsters bring a public reproach upon the nation in the eyes of all our neighbours abroad, while in their Gazettes we are mentioned as acting the vilest assassinations and the horriddest villainies; they render us unquiet and insecure at home, they bring reproach upon our religion, and are our greatest plague. Let us, for the sake of our allegiance, for his majesty's honour, for our reputation abroad, for the vindication of our religion, and for our own peace and tranquillity, make haste to get ourselves cured of it."

THE ANSWER to the king's letter was an echo of the king's own words; and they next proceeded to act agreeably to his instructions. Their first enactment was "for the security of the protestant religion," as follows:—"Our sovereign lord, with consent of his estates in parliament convened, ratifies and confirms all the acts and statutes formerly passed for the security, liberty, and freedom of the true church of God, and the protestant religion presently professed within this kingdom, in their whole strength and tenor, as if they were here particularly set down and expressed." Their *second* act was for annexing and uniting the excise of foreign and inland commodities to the crown of Scotland for ever;—the *third* ordained, that all such persons as being cited in cases of high treason, field or house conventicles, or church irregularities, and who shall refuse to give testimony, shall be liable to be punished as guilty of these crimes respectively in which they refuse to be witnesses;—the *fourth* made a dutiful offer to the king of £260,000 yearly during his life;—and the *fifth* act was passed without the least opposition, and Wodrow says, "*nemine contradicente*, and all of them . . . were that same day touched with the sceptre, to the lasting reproach of this parliament, and as evidences what men, protestants and presbyterians in particular, may expect under a popish prince." It declares "Our sovereign lord and estates in parliament do hereby de-





clare, that the giving or taking the NATIONAL COVENANT, as explained in the year 1638, or the LEAGUE AND COVENANT (so commonly called), or writing in defence thereof, or owning them as lawful or obligatory upon themselves or others, *infer the crime and pains of treason*<sup>1</sup>."

THE DEPLORABLE state of the clergy in the presbyterian districts was such, that they lived in continual apprehension for their lives and properties. Many of them had been obliged to resign their livings; and one of them, more courageous than his brethren, had been murdered on his own threshold. It therefore became necessary for the parliament to pass an act for their protection, entitled, "An Act for the Clergy," on the 13th of June. It ratifies all the former acts for their protection, and ordains, that the assassigators and murderers of bishops and clergymen should be punished, and that the parishioners, where the attempt is made, shall pay such sums to the wives and heirs of murdered clergymen as the council shall think fit. It ordained also, that the attempt to break into or rob the houses of the clergy should be punished with death.

THE PROSPEROUS commencement of James's reign was interrupted by the consummation of the Rye-house plot of the last reign. Some of the conspirators had made their escape to Holland, then the head-quarters of all the presbyterian and Whig malcontents in both kingdoms. These plots were connived at by the prince of Orange, although he did not make any appearance of countenancing them; and to save appearances, he ordered the duke of Monmouth to leave the United Provinces. The duke retired in displeasure to Brussels, and this circumstance precipitated the meditated invasion earlier than was intended. The earl of Argyle, who had lived in Friesland, where he had purchased a small estate, came now to Amsterdam, where he met with the conspirators, some of whom formed a council, something like *the Tables* in Charles the First's reign. On the 17th of April a sum of £10,000 was raised, and Argyle with his friends embarked in three small war-vessels on the 1st of May, at the Vlie, and sailed with a fair wind for the Orkneys, where he arrived on the 5th. He had got possession of four brass guns and a considerable quantity of ammunition and the firearms that Donald and Michael Cameron had purchased in the year 1679, and were on the point of shipping to their friends, when they heard of their defeat at Bothwell, "whereupon they put them up in a secure

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 259-271.—Life of James II.—Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 425.—Salmon's Chronology, i. 235.





place in Amsterdam, until there should be occasion for them<sup>1</sup>."

He sent two of his officers on shore to collect information, and to ascertain the inclinations of the inhabitants; but by the vigilance of the bishop of Orkney, they were arrested and sent to Edinburgh. This was a great disappointment, and Argyle proposed to storm the town of Kirkwall, in order to recover his friends and punish the loyal inhabitants. He was, however, persuaded to proceed on his voyage; for, says Wodrow, "so much of the late imposed oaths corrupted the generality, and so great was the influence of the managers [the government], that there appeared a very general opposition against the earl's attempt." The expedition sailed, after losing some days at Kirkwall, and after many days arrived in Kintyre, a remote district of the county of Argyle, and there he sent through the fiery cross amongst his clan, when about a thousand of his clansmen joined his standard; and at Campbellton, its chief town, his lordship published his declaration and apology. But "the furnace had not altogether healed the rents and breaches among the presbyterians; and the party who were in arms wandering and hiding in the fields, too many of them were gone to those heights which did not permit them to join with any frankness in this design, and the rest were miserably borne down and frightened with the soldiers and militia; and most of the honest country gentlemen were either in prison or forfeited, and so scattered, as they could do nothing in favour of the earl. And above all, *the self-conceit- edness, cowardice, ignorance, and miserable differences* among some of them who were embarked in the design, *spoiled all*."<sup>2</sup>

THEIR DECLARATION had been drawn up in Holland, and approved by their council there. It was the composition of "James Stewart, that arrant rogue (after advocate to Queen Anne), son of that nefarious villain, sir James Stewart [of Coltness], some time provost of Edinburgh<sup>3</sup>." It narrated the great advantages that had accrued to the protestant religion by the success of the rebellion against Charles I., which was ascribed to the blessing of God and the goodness of the cause; it extolled the loyalty of the covenanters, and accused the parliaments of both kingdoms of having repealed the ordinances made during the grand rebellion; it denounced the whole reign of Charles II. as a constant uniform course of perjury, apostacy, and violence, begun with open rebellion against God, and the cruel shedding of protestant blood; it

<sup>1</sup> Smith's Information affixed to Bishop Spratt's Rye-house Plot, p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 281.

<sup>3</sup> Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, 57.



accused the government of putting men to death contrary to the law, and of desolating the churches, changing the ordinances of God into the inventions of men, of conniving at papists, and keeping up standing forces; the exalting the king's supremacy, and the stifling of the detection of popish plots. It declared against the accession of the king, as deprived by the exclusion bill [which was never passed, and consequently was not law], calling him barely James duke of York, and against the English parliament, as illegally elected; for which reasons the rebels rejected submission to James duke of York and his accomplices, whom they stiled their unknown enemies. It declared that the end and design of the rebellion was the restoring and settling the true reformed protestant [presbyterian] religion, the suppression and perpetual exclusion of antichristian popery, with all its idolatrous superstitions and falsehoods, as also its most bitter root and off-spring prelacy, with its new and wicked head the supremacy and all their abuses, and the restoration of all men to their just rights and liberties. And, finally, that such had been the treachery, perfidy, &c. of the present government, the rebels would enter into no treaty, capitulation, or agreement with James duke of York, but proceed in the prosecution of the war till their ends were attained, and assured all that joined them of indemnity against a persecuting tyrant and an apostate party.

THIS DECLARATION, which was "full of sound and fury," made no impression; for Argyle had deeply offended the presbyterians by voting for the death of Cargill; besides, they had a little war of their own on their hands, and union in any shape is not an attribute of presbytery. In short, Argyle began to find that "all was but faint probabilities." Although Barclay, the quaker, assured him that every effort had been made to dispose the country to befriend him, yet few or none joined his standard, and even his own vassals were extremely backward in obeying his summons. He suffered himself to be persuaded to make a descent on the lowlands, and with difficulty he transported his followers to Cowal, thence to Greenock, where they dispersed some militia, and procured provisions; but none of the people would join his standard, and he recrossed the Clyde, and returned to Cowal. An indecisive skirmish took place betwixt the rebels and the king's troops, under the duke of Athole. Argyle then crossed the river Leven, a little above Dumbarton, but found the local militia ready to oppose him. He took up a strong position, and kindled watch-fires. The earl of Dumbarton kept the militia



under arms all night, in expectation of being attacked; but the rebels retreated during the night, and their guides having mistaken the way, they fell into a morass, in which many perished, and the rest were put into complete disorder, when they were attacked and dispersed by the loyal militia. It being now impossible either to rally the fugitives or to raise more men, as the presbyterians distrusted him, he disguised himself as a countryman, and crossed the Clyde, and went straight to the water of Inchinnin, where he was stopped by a party on the 17th of June, who overpowered and captured him. The laird of Greenock recognised and took him to Glasgow, and delivered him to the earl of Dumbarton<sup>1</sup>.

As soon as parliament heard of the landing of Argyle, they passed a loyal address to the king, promising to stand by his majesty with their lives and fortunes without reserve; but, says Mr. Skinner, "not meaning thereby to introduce a blind slavery, as has been maliciously pretended, but merely to exclude those treasonable *limitations* of obedience invented by the covenanters, contrary to standing laws, and on purpose to seduce people into rebellion<sup>2</sup>." This rebellion is a lively commentary on Argyle's limitation to his allegiance at the time of the imposition of the Test, and perhaps he might have contemplated this rebellion at the time when he refused to take it. On the 10th of June the parliament passed an act against "the hereditary and arch traitor Archbald Campbell, sometime earl of Argyle," wherein they enact, that the earl's family, the heritors, ringleaders, and preachers that joined him, should be for ever declared incapable of mercy, and of bearing any honours or estate in the kingdom. He was brought to Edinburgh, and committed to the castle; and the council wrote to the king, requesting to know his pleasure respecting his disposal. The king, in reply, ordered Argyle to be executed on his former sentence within three days after their receipt of his majesty's letter; but he left the manner of his execution to their own decision. On the 29th of June, therefore, he was brought to the bar of the high court of judicatory, "who intimated his old former sentence to him, and ordered him to be beheaded the next day, and his head to be set on the Tolbooth, and fixed on a high pole, which was done accordingly<sup>3</sup>." Upon this inevitable consequence of his treason and rebellion, good Mr. Skinner has the following remarks:—"This early piece of justice immediately opened the

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II.—Woorow's History.—Burnet's Own Times.

<sup>2</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 496.

<sup>3</sup> Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, 54.





mouths of the secret malcontents, and awakened the remembrance of the prosecutions for the late plot, which in the next reign the successful party magnified with great bitterness, and to this day exclaim against, as flagrant instances of the cruelty and sanguinary tyranny of the two Stuart brothers. These people would do well to remember what happened not many years before to the two marquisses of Huntly and Montrose, to president Spottiswood, to the laird of Haddo, and hundreds of gentlemen more, many of whom fell a sacrifice to the resentment of this very Argyle's father in the bloody days of the Covenant, besides the many thousands who died in the civil war, *the guilt of which lies on them that raised it*, and never made the least profession of repentance for it<sup>1</sup>."

IT WAS supposed that upon Argyle's descent all the troops would have been withdrawn from England into Scotland, and that Monmouth would thereby find an easy victory; but Burnet despondingly says, that he "had as yet made no preparations; so he was hurried into a fatal undertaking before things were in any sort ready for it<sup>2</sup>." And lord Fountainhall says, "the prince of Orange prompted Monmouth to come over, that *he might fall* in the expedition, and thereby make way for his *usurpation* of the crown of England, which he knew he could never obtain whilst he lived<sup>3</sup>." The duke landed at Lyme Regis, in Dorsetshire, with about 150 followers, and 5,000 stand of arms. He published a declaration reviling the king, and charging him with having introduced popery and arbitrary power; and having collected about 3,000 men, he took possession of Taunton on the 18th, and was there proclaimed king on the 20th June. On the 22d he published another declaration, in which he set a price upon king James's head, under the title of the duke of York, and declared the parliament then sitting a seditious assembly. The king sent a message to both houses of parliament, to acquaint them with the duke of Monmouth's landing, and they waited upon his majesty with an address of thanks for the intelligence, and offered to stand by him with their lives and fortunes against the duke and all other rebels and traitors, and all his majesty's enemies whatsoever. A bill of attainder against the duke passed both houses, and received the royal assent on the 16th of June<sup>4</sup>.

MONMOUTH assumed the style and title of king, and wrote on the 23d from Taunton to the duke of Albemarle—"Whereas we are credibly informed that there are some horse and foot in

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 496.    <sup>2</sup> Own Times, iii. 24.    <sup>3</sup> Chron. Notes, 62.

<sup>4</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 237.



arms under your command for James duke of York, which are purposely raised in opposition to us and our royal authority. We thought fit to signify to you our resentment thereof, and do promise ourself, that what you have transacted therein is through inadvertency and mistake, and that your grace will take other means, when you have received information of our being proclaimed king, to succeed our royal father lately deceased," &c.; and signed himself, "JAMES R." The duke of Albemarle acknowledged the receipt of his letter, and said, "Since you have given yourself the trouble of invitation, this is to let you know that I never was, nor ever will be, a rebel to my lawful king, who is James the Second, brother to my late dear master, king Charles II. If you think I am in the wrong, and you in the right, whenever we meet I do not doubt but the justness of my cause shall sufficiently convince you that you had better have let this rebellion alone, and not to have put the nation to so much trouble." And he addressed it, "For James Scott, late duke of Monmouth<sup>1</sup>."

THE REBELS were defeated at Sedgemoor, near Bridgewater, on the 6th of July, by the earl of Feversham and the lord Churchill, and the duke himself and lord Grey were taken two days afterwards. His capture was thus announced in the Gazette:—"Whitehall, July 8, at 12 o'clock at night. His majesty has just now received an account that the late duke of Monmouth was taken this morning in Dorsetshire, being hid in a ditch; and that he is in the hands of lord Lumley." After the battle of Sedgemoor, which is in the diocese of Bath and Wells, bishop Kenn took particular pains and trouble to relieve the prisoners that were taken after the battle, and to assist the wounded men, both out of his own pocket and by moving the wealthy in their favour. "He thought it no excuse to his charity that they were taken in open rebellion, and had forfeited their lives to the laws. Let the law then judge them; but whilst God preserves life He gives space of repentance, and charity will assist to preserve that life which God gives. Nor did his master, king James, take this ill from him, or reprove him for supporting of rebels against his majesty<sup>2</sup>."

MONMOUTH does not appear to have had any trial, but merely the attainder passed in parliament; and the Gazette says, "This day the duke of Monmouth, being attainted of high treason by act of parliament, was beheaded on a scaffold erected for that purpose on Tower-hill." He was beheaded on the 15th of July, and was attended by the bishops of Ely

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, iii. 341, 342.

<sup>2</sup> Lesly's Rehearsals, iv. 218, 219.



and Bath and Wells, Dr. Tennison, Dr. Lloyd, and Dr. Hooper, who laboured to make him profess the doctrine of non-resistance, and confess his crime of living in adultery with the lady Harriet Wentworth, but all to no purpose. He said, "I declare that she is a very virtuous and godly woman; I have committed no sin with her; and that which hath passed betwixt us was very honest and innocent in the sight of God." He persuaded himself he was innocent, and said, when he died, "he was sure he should go to God<sup>1</sup>." The bishops and clergymen who attended him on the scaffold could not move him to any thing more than to a *general* repentance; neither would he own his crimes of rebellion and adultery, and seems to have been a fanatic in religion, although he professed to die "a protestant of the church of England." He wrote in the Tower the following declaration, and to which he referred on the scaffold—"I declare that the title of king was forced upon me; and that it was very much contrary to my opinion when I was proclaimed. For the satisfaction of the world, I DO DECLARE that the late king told me he was never married to my mother. Having declared this, I hope that the king who is now, will not let my children suffer on this account. And to this I put my hand this 15th day of July. (Signed) MOXMOUTH." And it is attested as having been written in their presence by the signatures of Francis Ely, Thomas Bath and Wells, Thomas Tennison, and George Hooper<sup>2</sup>.

THIS EARL OF ARGYLE is also considered a martyr for presbytery, and he is enrolled among the "Scots Worthies;" he was also a prophet, such at least as many of their worthies were; that is, he could foretel that which he perfectly knew had been previously determined upon by those who had nourished all the British traitors, and had connived at, and secretly assisted, the present rash and ill-concerted rebellion. On the morning of his execution he said to a friend, "Though I will not take upon me to be a prophet, yet having strong impressions thereof upon my spirit, I doubt not but *deliverance* will come very suddenly." This was a dark prognostication of the prince of Orange's designs; but he was more particular on the day on which he was taken prisoner. At Renfrew he presented Mr. Crawford, of Crawfordsburn, with a silver snuff-box, as a token of friendship, and then said, "Thomas, it hath pleased providence to frown on *my* attempt; but remember, I tell you, that

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 238.—Ellis's Original Letters, iii. 347.

<sup>2</sup> Somers' Tracts, pp. 216 to 221.





ere long *one shall take up this quarrel* whose shoes I am not worthy to carry, who will not miscarry in his undertaking<sup>1</sup>."

It is a curious circumstance that, notwithstanding his fanaticism, he desired to be attended in his last moments by Dr. Annand, dean of Edinburgh, and Mr. Charteris, whose discourse and prayers with him, even the writer of the Scots Worthies asserts, "on this tragical occasion were very pertinent and becoming." On the scaffold he said, "I freely forgive all men their wrongs and injuries done against me, as I desire to be forgiven of God." The dean repeated these words after his lordship, in a louder tone, to the people, and added, that "this nobleman dies a protestant." The earl then stepped forward again, and said, "I die not only a protestant, *but with a heart-hatred of popery, prelacy, and all superstition whatsoever*<sup>2</sup>." And in summing up, Wodrow makes the following characteristic "observe:"—"Father and son, indeed, in the style of the late times, were sufferers *for rebellion*; but that language is *now out of doors*, and I hope ever shall; and to all persons of consideration and reflection, they both shine brightly as martyrs for religion, liberty, and their country<sup>3</sup>."

COLONEL RUMBOLD, who was the lessee of the Rye-house, and who undertook to murder the late and present kings, was taken among other prisoners after the rebels were dispersed, and their leader taken. This vanquished traitor and rebel is called by Wodrow "*a gallant and good man*." He was tried and convicted, and executed the same afternoon, the 26th of June. Lord Fountainhall says, "he was a man of much natural courage; his rooted, ingrained opinion was for a republic against monarchy, to pull which down he thought a duty, and no sin . . . and that, if every hair in his head was a man, he would venture them all in that cause." Burnet and the friends of the cause say that Rumbold denied the intention of murdering the king; but all that he denied was, that all the measures of the conspirators were not concerted at the Rye, which is true, but which does not make his guilt any the less. But, says Salmon, "the good bishop did well to make haste out of England on the news of Argyle's landing, for if half the evidence had appeared against him of his correspondence with the rebels which he acknowledges in his History, it might have been difficult for his holiness to have escaped the halter, how light soever he may make of that matter<sup>4</sup>."

THE PARLIAMENT of 1691 had voted a certain sum for the erection of a church in the Grass-market, of which there was then much need, and now there is still greater; and the money

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 299, 301.

<sup>2</sup> History, iv. p. 306.

<sup>3</sup> Scots Worthies, 548, 549.

<sup>4</sup> Examination, ii. 999.





was lodged in the hands of the magistrates. By a letter from the king, of the 14th July, the provost and magistrates were ordered to apply the money, with the interest accruing upon it, to the erection of a manse or residence for the bishops of Edinburgh. But even this does not appear to have been done, as there is no house in that city that is known to have been built or appropriated to the bishops of that see. The council issued a proclamation for the observation of the 14th October as a day of thanksgiving, being his majesty's birth-day; and they farther "recommend it to the right reverend the archbishops and bishops, that they cause the ministers in their respective dioceses for this year and yearly hereafter, upon the said fourteenth day of October, with the people at divine service in the church, devoutly to give solemn thanks to Almighty God, and celebrate his holy name, for his so signal goodness and protection to our said gracious sovereign, and in him to these his kingdoms."

THE KING commenced in England with dispensing with the laws in favour of men professing the popish religion, but was firmly and respectfully opposed by archbishop Sancroft. He extended this power to Scotland through the privy council, which was more obsequious to his will, by a letter dated Whitehall, the 7th of November, in which he says, "there is a clause ordaining all the commissioners therein named to take the oaths and test appointed by law, which clause we judge fit for our service to require you to put vigorously in execution, *excepting* to these in the list here enclosed, whom we have dispensed with for taking the same, and such as we shall hereafter dispense with under our royal hand. For doing whereof this shall be your warrant." And then followed the names of a number of popish noblemen and gentlemen, who were to be admitted to offices without taking the Test.

MR. ANDREW CANT, one of the ministers of Edinburgh, and the principal of the university of Edinburgh, died on the 4th of December. "He was a stout enemy of papists and arminians,"—that is, he maintained the dogmas of Calvin, and considered the catholic doctrine of the church to be merely the opinions of Arminius; but, on the other hand, the opinions of Calvin to be sound doctrine. "And Dr. Monro (an excellent man) was chosen in his place, being then professor of divinity in St. Andrews<sup>1</sup>."

KING JAMES had been under the influence and direction of the jesuits from the time that he disregarded his brother's command, and fell into the idolatrous communion of Rome. The order of jesuits was founded for the express purpose of com-

<sup>1</sup> Fountainhall's Chron. Notes, p. 65.



bating and overturning the Reformation; and they have ever since been its most subtle, powerful, and implacable enemies. They have fulfilled their wicked destiny beyond expectation; for, under the pretext of religion, they have zealously endeavoured to extinguish the light of truth, and to obstruct the progress of civil liberty throughout the world. They were the soul that animated the Holy League against Henry III. of France, and of all the plots and conspiracies and the religious dissensions in England, during the reigns of Elizabeth and James I. They took advantage of the religious animosities in the reign of Charles I. by originating the *Covenant*, which has been ever since a fruitful source of calamity both to the church and state; and they produced the stubborn obstinacy of the presbyterians, with all the divisions and animosities which existed among them in the late reign. They were now driving James on to his ruin, and they induced that unhappy sovereign to break all the solemn and voluntary promises which he had given to the established churches of both kingdoms, of his protection and of the maintenance of their rights and privileges, which were so intimately connected with the liberties of his people. James was known to have been a man of integrity, and his word alone was received in both kingdoms as a sufficient guarantee for the tranquillity of both the national churches. But his gracious promises were made in the first moment of his elevation, and before he had time to consult with and to receive the instructions of his jesuits, whose morality disregarded even an oath, much less a mere verbal promise made in a moment when his heart was momentarily affected by his change of position.

"ON ALL occasions," says Hume, "the king was open in declaring that men must now look for a more active and more vigilant government, and that he would retain no ministers who did not practise an unreserved obedience to his commands. We are not, indeed, to look for the springs of his administration so much in *his council* and chief officers of state, as in his own temper, and in the character of *those persons* with whom he *secretly consulted*. The queen had great influence over him; a woman of spirit, whose conduct had been popular till she arrived at that high dignity. She was much governed by the priests, *especially the jesuits*; and as these were also the king's favourites, all public measures were taken *originally from the suggestions of these men*, and bore evident marks of their ignorance in government, and of the violence of their religious zeal<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> History of England, ciii. 219.



## CHAPTER XLVII.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1686.—Fears entertained of the advance of popery.—The chancellor perverted.  
 —A riot—ring-leader executed.—State of the presbyterians.—Preliminary measures for admitting papists to office.—Clergy preach on the controverted popish doctrines.—Synod of Aberdeen—address to their bishop.—Synod of Edinburgh.—Meeting of parliament.—King's letter—the answer.—Bishops opposed to the repeal.—Bishop of Edinburgh.—Bishop of Ross censured.—Papists defeated.—Parliament prorogued.—Ambassador sent to the pope.—Dispensing with the laws.—Opinion of the judges.—Court of high commission.—Archbishop Sancroft.—Bishop of London suspended.—Scottish bishops present a paper to the king.—Bishop of Dunkeld deprived.—Dr. Hamilton elected.—1687.—Letter of a jesuit.—King's letter to the council.—Laws against papists suspended.—Alarm of the nation.—Indifference of the presbyterians—their manner of preaching.—Clergy preach against popery.—Edict of Nantz revoked.—Public liberality to the French refugees.—Note.—Exertions of the clergy.—Dr. Canaries—his sermon—is prosecuted—goes to London—publishes his sermon.—Archbishop of Glasgow examined—deprived.—Bishop of Edinburgh elected to Glasgow.—Death of bishop of Moray.—Dr. Rose elected bishop of Moray.—King's declaration.—Presbyterians irrevoluble.—A third toleration.—Commencement of the great schism.—Renwick opposed to the toleration.—Address of the presbyterians to the king.—Renwick protests against it.—Refugees in Holland.—Exercise of the prerogative.—Prospects of the church.

1686.—IT HAS BEEN justly remarked by Mr. Archdeacon Echard, "that the king, to feel the pulse of his subjects in England, resolved to raise a superstructure of arbitrary power in Scotland, in which he had laid the foundation by his popularity, and public dissembling his religious designs, when he was lord commissioner for his brother." The church now generally began to entertain fears of the king's sincerity in his declarations of support and protection; but what first created alarm in the minds of the bishops and clergy, and of the people generally, was the open profession of popery by the lord chancellor, the earl of Perth. He was a man of only moderate capacity, but of infinite ambition, and was treated with





considerable contempt by the earl of Queensberry, who had long suspected that he and his brother, lord Melfort, meditated a compliance with the court religion. This produced a quarrel betwixt Queensberry and the two brothers, at whose instigation, and on account of his opposition to the establishment of popery, James deprived him of his office. The people became alarmed at the designs of the court, and on the 31st of January there was a riot at Edinburgh against the popish priests, who were now beginning to celebrate mass publicly. The rabble seized one of the priests, and placing a dirk at his breast, with a threat of plunging it in, compelled him to swear the Test on his knees, and to renounce popery. In this riot there were three men killed<sup>1</sup>. The earl of Perth had set up a private chapel in the court for mass, but many frequented it; this roused the mob's fury, and they broke into it, and defaced all the idolatrous gear and furniture, and the earl of Perth himself escaped with difficulty and in disguise. The military dispersed the mob; some were taken, and the ringleader was executed. He told Mr. Malcom, one of the city clergy who attended him, that he was offered his life by the chancellor if he would accuse Queensberry of having instigated the riot; but he said he would not save his life by so false a calumny. He charged Mr. Malcom to make what he had just communicated to him public, but he neglected to call the by-standers on the scaffold as witnesses; "but in the simplicity of his heart, he went from the execution to the archbishop of St. Andrews, and told him what had passed." The primate acquainted Queensberry with it, who wrote to court and complained of it; and the king ordered the affair to be investigated. But Mr. Malcom, whom Burnet calls "an honest, but weak man," having no witnesses to attest what had been said, was declared the forger of a calumny, and was turned out of his living. "But," Burnet observes, "how severely soever those in authority may handle a poor incautious man, yet the public is apt to judge true; and in this case, as the minister's weakness and misfortune was pitied, so the earl of Perth's malice and treachery was as much detested<sup>2</sup>."

Wodrow informs us, that at this melancholy time "a good many [of the presbyterians] complied in some things, and now, and then heard some of the better sort of the established clergy, especially such who shewed themselves hearty protes-

<sup>1</sup> Fountainhall's Chron. Notes, 66.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, iii. 111.—Fountainhall's Chron. Notes, 159.



tants by opposing popery, now coming in so fast. In short, except as to church irregularities, there was not much ground for the persecutors to work upon<sup>1</sup>." This account is confirmed by bishop Sage, who says, "I take my rise from the death of that great prince, king Charles II. He left this church of Scotland in more peaceable condition than it had been for a long time before: generally all Scotchmen were of one communion; for those of the popish persuasion were scarcely one to five hundred. The quakers were not one to a thousand. The presbyterians, a good time before, were divided into two sects; one (but by far the smaller) was against all indulgences given by the king; the other had taken the liberty which he had several times granted, but which was then retracted. This party had for the most part returned to the church's unity; their preachers were generally become our hearers, attended duly our public assemblies, and many of them participated of the same sacraments with us. There were no separate meetings kept (at least publicly), but very rarely, and only by that other party now commonly known by the name of Cameronians<sup>2</sup>," and who were at this period under the leadership of Renwick.

BEFORE THE parliament met, several eminent persons were called up to London to concert measures for granting ease to the papists in the matter of the Test, so as to admit them to parliament and to offices under government. The duke of Hamilton and sir George Lockhart, then president of the court of session and the greatest lawyer in the kingdom, the archbishop of St. Andrews, and the bishop of Edinburgh, were the parties pitched upon. The court did not find these to be such willing instruments as it was expected they would have been. "They made a condescension [representation] too," says Sage, "which afterwards was very much talked of, but I can assure you, sir, it was nothing so odious in itself as it was represented to be: I have seen and considered it; it did not go the length (by far) of pensionary Fagel's letter; and to tell the truth freely, so far as I can comprehend things, they had great reason to go so far as they went; and I doubt not it shall be sometime published to the world and fully vindicated<sup>3</sup>." The advice of these gentlemen being disagreeable to the king, he determined to hold another session of the "episcopal parliament," as Sage calls it; and he appointed

<sup>1</sup> History of the Sufferings, iv. 353.

<sup>2</sup> An Account of the present Persecution of the Church in Scotland, in several Letters, pp. 7, 8. Original edit. 4to. Lond. 1690.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. p. 9.



the earl of Moray, who had also turned papist, his high commissioner. Wodrow asserts that all former parliaments, since the Restoration, had, "in all their acts relative to church affairs, been *tools to the prelates*;" but it is now refreshing to find that, instead of "aggravating their faults," he positively *commends* them for having "had the honour to make the first gallant stand to the court measures, at least in point of *our* holy religion and reformation, that hath been since the return of king Charles II.<sup>1</sup>" And this candid acknowledgment is in some sort a proof of bishop Sage's assertion above, "that *generally* all Scotchmen were of one communion."

WODROW "is well informed" that "several of the inferior [established] clergy, in a good many places in the country . . . did begin to preach upon the popish controversies, and warn their people of the hazard the protestant religion was in." He is obliged to qualify his admiration, however, with the senseless declamation that they were "deeply tinctured with arminianism and other errors, and several, either through ignorance or something worse, were running headlong into a great many popish tenets. . . . The body of the clergy were a fixed company, and some few of them made a stand in parliament." The truth is, calvinists, ever since that doctrine was broached, have denounced the catholic doctrines of the church as arminianism and popery; and this very accusation shews the truth of bishop Sage's assertion,—that "since the restitution of episcopacy, our divines have had better education, have been put on better methods of study, than ever they were before. They have learned to lay aside prejudice, and to trace truth ingenuously, and to embrace it where they find it. With our predecessors, especially in the times of presbytery, the *Dutch divinity* was only in vogue. The Dutch common-place men were the great standards, and are still so to that party; and whoever stepped aside one hair's breadth from their positions, was forthwith *an heretic*. But the present generation [of the clergy], after the way of England, *take the SCRIPTURES for their rule*, and the ancients and right reason for their guide for finding the genuine sense of that rule. I confess philosophy was never less practised; but for that we may thank the presbyterians. Do not think this a slander; for if they, during their twenty-four years' usurpation, had not made many things *jure divino*, such as rebellion and presbytery; if they had not baffled people's credulity by making all the extravagancies of the late times *God's own work*, and the *cause*

<sup>1</sup> History, iv. 358.





*of Christ*; and if they had not made it their chief work since, to create and cherish divisions and schisms amongst us; I doubt not, the gospel (with God's blessing) would have had more desirable success than it has had in this kingdom<sup>1</sup>." Bishop Sage here meant that the episcopal clergy of Scotland plainly and seriously recommended to their people the reformation of their lives according to the christian standard; for christian morality, in its true extent and latitude, is nothing else but evangelical obedience and holiness, without which, we are told, no man shall see the Lord.

THE SYNOD of Aberdeen again took the lead in defence of the church against the approaching danger. The synod met in April, "and after some struggle with a party who were for boating with every wind and tide," they agreed on the following address to Dr. Haliburton, their bishop, "as their commendable testimony against the attempt to be made in parliament." It is addressed "to the right reverend father in God, George, lord bishop of Aberdeen, the humble address of the diocese of Aberdeen:"—

"MAY IT PLEASE YOUR LORDSHIP,—We look upon it as a favourable providence that we have this opportunity of meeting with your lordship, before your going to parliament. The constancy of our loyalty, both as to our principles and practices, is known to all, and, God willing, we shall continue it. We need not tell your lordship what apprehensions there are of the hazard of the true protestant religion in the church, seeing there is so great fear of losing the legal securities of it, by taking off or weakening the force of the penal statutes against the papists, which we look upon as one of the hedges thereof. We cannot persuade ourselves that your lordship, or any other of the governors of the church, will consent thereunto, were it no more; but when we consider the great obligations that lie upon all persons in public capacity, by the late solemn oath and Test, wherein they and we have lifted up our hands to the eternal God, and sworn, not only to adhere to the protestant religion all the days of our life, but never to consent to the alteration thereof, or any thing contrary thereunto; as also to the utmost of our power to maintain the privileges of his majesty and his lawful successors, which cannot but be highly prejudiced if the nation should be leavened with popish principles. But whatever any may do, we judge

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 4to. 45, 46.





ourselves humbly obliged in conscience to entreat and obtest your lordship, that, as you tender the honour of Jesus Christ, the interests of our holy religion, your duty to the king and his lawful successors, the obligation of your office and trust, and the reputation of your order, *not to give consent to any such alteration*. The eye of God is upon you, and the eyes of the world also, at this juncture of time; and we have just ground to presume that your standing vigorously for the preservation of the established laws may be of great consequence for the end foresaid; but whatever may be the issue, we shall have peace in this, we have discharged our own consciences, leaving this humbly to your lordship's consideration; and it is and shall be our earnest prayer to Almighty God to direct your lordship, and all concerned in this weighty affair."

THE DIOCESAN synod of Edinburgh met on the 13th of April. In the sermon *ad clerum*, toleration was much pressed to those who were opposed to the present evident views of the crown and ministry, and "insinuating a charitable accommodation to papists." The bishop of Edinburgh told his clergy in his speech that the king was resolved to defend the established episcopal church; but he craved for himself, and for all of his persuasion, the privilege of exercising in private the rites and ceremonies of the popish religion, without any hazard from the laws. And this, the bishop significantly added, "could not be denied him, because he might take it by his prerogative," and from the powers vested in him by the vile Assertory Act. In fact, James's whole procedure with regard to the church rested on that most infamous and most pernicious act. He farther informed the synod that the king had given an ample commission to him and to the archbishop of St. Andrews to suspend and deprive any that preached what was then construed into sedition, even "although they should be bishops." Dr. Strachan also preached before the synod, and urged *moderation* strongly upon his brethren, which alarmed many of them, because it was thought that he was too much inclined to favour the politics of the court. His sermon had a contrary effect on the minds of the clergy, and made many of them more zealous than before against popery; "and it was said the bishop of Edinburgh [and several noblemen, who are named], who appeared for toleration, would have been against it, which is a tacit acknowledgment that they blushed to own avowedly what they did . . . some talked of staging Patterson for saying in his last synod [1685] 'that God had set a



popish king over us for a punishment ; which, if true, we cannot pray for the continuance or long life of a judgment<sup>1</sup>."

THE SECOND session of James's only Scottish parliament met on the 29th of April. The two archbishops and nine of the bishops were present, and there was a numerous meeting of the other two estates of the realm. It was evident to all men diligently studying the signs of the times, that the principal object of this parliament was to repeal the penal statutes, which had accumulated since the Reformation, against the papists, and which had even received a sort of ratification in the first session of this parliament. At their first meeting the lord commissioner presented the king's letter, which was read by the proper officer. Among other things it contained the following paragraph—"We have considered the trouble that many are put to daily, by prosecutions before our judges, or the hazard that they lie under for their accessions to the late rebellions ; and to shew the world (even our greatest enemies themselves) that mercy is our inclination, and severity what is by their wickedness extorted from us, we have sent down to be passed in your presence, our full and ample indemnity for all crimes committed against our royal person and authority : and whilst we shew these acts of mercy to the enemies of our person, crown, and royal dignity, we cannot be unmindful of others our innocent subjects, those of the Roman catholic religion, who have with the hazard of their lives and fortunes been always assistant to the crown, in the worst of rebellions and usurpations, though they lay under discouragements hardly to be named : them we do heartily recommend to your care, to the end that as they have given good experience of their true loyalty and peaceable behaviour, so by your assistance, they may have the protection of our laws, and that security under our government which others of our subjects have, not suffering them to lie under obligations, which their religion cannot admit of<sup>2</sup>."

IN THEIR answer to the king's letter, the following paragraph is all the return made to the above recommendation. After thanking his majesty for his intention to remove some barriers to the extension of the trade and manufactures of the kingdom, they say—"As to that part of your majesty's letter, relating to your subjects of the Roman catholic religion, we shall, in obedience to your majesty's commands, and with tenderness to their persons, take the same into our serious and dutiful



consideration, and go as great lengths therein as our conscience will allow, *not doubting* that your majesty will be careful to secure the protestant religion established by law." The commissioner spoke to the same effect as the king's letter, and urged the repeal of the statutes against the Romanists; but without avail. A bill was brought under the consideration of the lords of the articles, of which some of the bishops were always members; but it was thrown out, and never was brought into parliament. "The penal statutes were still kept on foot by that episcopal parliament (pardon the phrase, it is ordinary in this kingdom), and some of the bishops, too, were active in the matter. This is to let you see whether the episcopal party in this kingdom can be said to be inclined to popery<sup>1</sup>."

AT THIS crisis the bishops were divided in opinion. As a branch of the legislature it might have made them unpopular to have concurred in the removal of laws which had been repeatedly confirmed as necessary barriers to the constitution, whereas, on the other hand, it might be considered contrary to christian charity to oppose the extension of lenity and compassion to the few that were obnoxious to the operation of severe statutes. Those who were chosen of the spiritual estate, as the lords of the articles, effectually opposed the measure, whilst some of the others withdrew for the time being from the house. Dr. Aitken, lord bishop of Galloway, "an old man, made a noble stand, and died shortly after; otherwise probably he had been turned out." Dr. Bruce, lord bishop of Dunkeld, had a remarkable sermon at this time against popery, and the proposed repeal that was generally much commended, but which brought down the royal vengeance upon him. The bishop of Ross used great freedom with the commissioner in private upon this all-absorbing subject. And Wodrow says, "That prelate, who was heartily against papists being admitted to places of trust, happened to be with the earl of Moray in his closet, and after much home reasoning against taking off the penal statutes, came at length to use an argument *ad hominem*, and took the liberty to tell his grace, that he was surprised to find him so keen in pushing that affair; and with some peremptoriness assured him, a project was already laid to turn his lordship out of his post as secretary, as soon as the parliament was up, and to bring in a papist to it. The earl essayed to pump him upon that subject, and the bishop opened himself, and let him know all he had heard upon that head, scarce expecting his grace would

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution, p. 9.





have propaled what he had said to him alone, and as a friend. Upon what reasons the earl best knew, he was pleased very soon to give a full account of the bishop's conversation with him to chancellor Perth, who meditated revenge, and would not be satisfied till the bishop was brought under a censure for what had passed in private and friendly conversation; and so far did the chancellor push the matter, that he gave in a representation to the primate. He stated the whole conversation, and concluded, 'And this being prejudicial to his majesty's service, and the honour and interest of the persons concerned, it is therefore desired that his grace, with advice of such of the clergy as he thinks fit, may take notice of it, and do therein as by the rules and customs of the church is usual in such cases, or such a crime deserves<sup>1</sup>.'

IT DOES NOT appear that the primate had taken any steps in this extraordinary case farther than perhaps a private admonition, for bishop Ramsay continued his opposition as resolutely as before. After considerable opposition the lords of the articles transmitted to the house on the 27th of May a draught of an act in favour of the papists, but which was very far from reaching the point desired by the court. It was, therefore, remitted back to the lords of the articles to be amended; but the amendments were still more decisively protestant than before, and therefore the chancellor withdrew it entirely. The Test was still to be exacted, and the popish worship in *public* was sternly prohibited. On these heads the majority were inflexible, and the king's popish counsellors had the mortification to witness the complete discomfiture of their scheme. As soon as the king heard of this disappointment, he sent an express to the earl of Moray to prorogue the parliament, which was accordingly done. Such of the ministers as were opposed to this popish plot were dismissed from their offices. The earls of Mar, Lothian, Dumfries, Kintore, and the lord Ross, made way for the duke of Gordon, the earls of Traquair and Seaforth, and other papists. Sir George Mackenzie, the king's advocate, an able lawyer, and a most loyal subject, was dismissed, and his office bestowed on sir John Dalrymple, eldest son of lord Stair, late president of the court of session. This appointment surprised the public, because he inherited his father's principles, who was at that moment engaged in the conspiracy which had long existed in Holland.

THE EMPHATIC words of the late emperor Napoleon might with equal, or perhaps greater, truth be applied to the jesuits;

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow iv. 304-65.



that "the political economists would grind a kingdom to powder although it were made of adamant." From the moment of his ascending the throne James shewed decided symptoms of monomania, and attempted to execute all the illegal and arbitrary projects, to which the jesuits secretly stimulated him. In the course of this year he sent the earl of Castlemain as his ambassador extraordinary to the pope, in order to offer his obeisance to that prelate, and to make advances for a reconciliation of his kingdoms to the obedience and jurisdiction of Rome. Any communication with the court of Rome had been made treason. Dr. Burnet "had wrought muckle mischief" at the court of Rome, and had prejudiced the pope against James, and that prelate treated Castlemain with great coolness, and even neglect; for he had sagacity enough to foresee that a scheme that was conducted with so much precipitation and indiscretion could never be successful.

HIS SECRET advisers now pushed him on to the fatal step of dispensing with the laws; but he first cautiously demanded the opinion of the twelve judges, whether or not his majesty could dispense with any person from taking the oath and test, before he were admitted to hold any office or place of trust in the kingdom. After a considerable debate all the judges, except one, returned the following answer:—"1st, that the king was an independent prince; 2d, that the laws of the kingdom were the king's laws; 3d, that the kings of England *might dispense with all laws* that regarded pains and punishments, as often as necessity required; 4th, that they were judges and arbitrators, who had power to judge of the necessity which might induce him to make use of those dispensations; and, lastly, that the kings of England could not renounce the prerogatives annexed to the crown<sup>1</sup>."

THE DELIVERY of these opinions was a mighty step towards the accomplishment of James's views; and it threw open the door for the admission of the Romanists to place and power. The king's first exertion of the prerogative was on the 3d of August, when he established a commission of ecclesiastical affairs, or Court of High Commission, "by force of our supreme authority and prerogative royal." "And we do by these presents give full power and authority unto [those named in this commission], or any three or more of you, . . . whereof the lord chancellor to be one, by all lawful ways and means . . . during our pleasure, to inquire of all offences, contempts, &c., done and committed contrary to the ecclesiastical laws of this our realm

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II. 145.



. . . and of all and every the offenders therein, and them and every one of them to order, correct, reform, and punish, *by censure of the church*. And also . . . to inquire of, search out, and call before you, every ecclesiastical person or persons, of *what degree or dignity soever*, as shall offend in any of these particulars before mentioned; and them and every of them to correct and punish . . . by suspending or depriving them of all promotions ecclesiastical, and from all functions in the church, and to inflict such other punishments or censures upon them, according to the ecclesiastical laws of this realm<sup>1</sup>."

ARCHBISHOP SANCROFT refused to act, but the bishop of Chester was substituted, and the court was opened immediately after. The archbishop's refusal was made by letter, in which he shewed his majesty his sense of its illegality, and that he was wide awake to the object contemplated in its erection. The first fury of this court fell upon Dr. Compton, bishop of London, who modestly excused himself in a letter addressed to the earl of Sunderland, from suspending Dr. Sharpe, rector of St. Giles, for having preached against popery, which the king considered a reflection on his government. The bishop was cited before this court, and the lord chancellor Jeffries desired a positive and direct answer—"Why he had not suspended Dr. Sharpe, when the king had sent him express order so to do, and had told him it was for preaching seditiously, and against his government." After several delays and adjournments, to give the bishop time for his defence, he was with some difficulty allowed the assistance of counsel; but they failed to make any impression on this arbitrary court. The substance of his sentence was—"That Henry, lord bishop of London, being convened before the commissioners of ecclesiastical affairs, for his disobedience and other contempts, and being fully heard, upon mature deliberation of the matter, was by them declared and pronounced *suspended* from the function and execution of his episcopal office." An order was immediately sent to the dean of St. Paul's, commanding him to cause the said sentence to be affixed upon the door of the chapter-house, and the south door of the same cathedral, that public notice might be taken of the said suspension<sup>2</sup>.

THE SCOTTISH parliament would only consent to a suspension of the penal laws during the king's life; but Burnet says, "the king despised this." To mitigate the king's displeasure the archbishop of St. Andrews and the bishop of Edinburgh

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II., 145-151, where the whole commission may be seen.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 151-157.





went to court, where they drew up a paper, intended for the king, in which they said, "It seemeth reasonable and dutiful to grant what his majesty desireth may be done for him; viz. to take off the sanguinary laws concerning religion, in so far as they infer the pains of death or forfeiture against those of his persuasion merely for their religion, and that the papists have an ease and immunity from the execution of the other penalties, civil or criminal, contained in the laws, merely and allinarily for their religion, and exercise of their worship in private houses. This seemeth to us, who are not lawyers, to be equitable and reasonable to be done, considering that the execution of sanguinary laws has fallen into an absolute dis-suetude for many years past; and since upon doing hereof his majesty is so gracious as not to intend or desire the repealing of any laws already made for the security of the protestant church, but is willing further to establish and confirm the same by any other laws or acts of parliament that can be made for that end. Nor do we see any danger or insecurity arising to our established protestant religion by so doing, but rather an apparent benefit, by his majesty consenting to a more full and ample security thereof. And this is but our own private opinion; for we cannot undertake to say that this would be the opinion of others. For as we are clearly determined, by God's grace, to continue firm and constant in the reformed protestant religion to our lives' end, so also are we to serve our most gracious sovereign, and to comply with his proposals and desires, as far as they do consist with the safety of our consciences and religion, upon which we assure ourselves his majesty's grace and goodness will never impose<sup>1</sup>."

THIS SUBMISSIVE paper neither pleased those in whose name it had been written, nor would it have mollified the king's wrath had it been presented; but Burnet says they shewed this paper to the earl of Middleton, who persuaded them to return home without presenting it<sup>2</sup>. James was so displeased at the bishops for daring to oppose his will, that he wrote to the privy council, and commanded them to deprive the bishop of Dunkeld, who both by his speeches and sermons opposed the popish bill with great spirit, and this order was immediately put in execution. The bishops of Ross and Galloway had also been marked out as victims, but the tempest lighted on Dr. Bruce, bishop of Dunkeld, "who, it seems, had either been more active in his opposition, or had fewer friends than his brethren<sup>3</sup>. Although great care had been taken to shut up

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 499, 500.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, iii. 116.

<sup>3</sup> Keith's Catalogue, 99.—Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 500, 501.





the press, yet many bold papers were published at this time against the dispensing power, the exercise of which was anticipated. "It may be argued," say some of these writers, "that by refusing to consent to this moderate ease to papists, a most dangerous, and almost incurable, blow and wound may be occasioned to the protestant church and religion; for if the king please, (and if he be irritated and provoked, it is hard to say what his majesty will do,) he may, *without violating of any law*, at one stroke, remove all protestant officers and judges from the government of the state, and all protestant bishops from the government of the church; and so the whole government, both of church and state, may come to be lodged in the hands of such as cannot be judged so friendly to the protestant interest: and is not the extrusion of protestants from all power and authority, either in church or state, a greater hurt and prejudice to our religion, than any thing that can ensue upon a few papists enjoying their estates and lives?"

THE CHURCH was indebted to presbyterian influence in the council for this evil, which was prognosticated by the manner of the first Indulgence and the Assentory act, which laid the church at the king's mercy. The prediction of sir Roger L'Estrange, in the above quotation, was in part quickly verified; for a letter came from court, in which the king declared, that his consulting the parliament about repealing the penal statutes did not arise from any doubt that he entertained of his not being able to effect it by virtue of his own prerogative, but merely to give his subjects an opportunity of shewing their loyalty. The letter adds, "We have also thought fit to let you know, that we have performed our part in supporting those of the protestant religion; the professors thereof are perfectly under our royal protection; so we resolve to protect our catholic subjects against all the insults of their enemies and severities of the laws made against them heretofore; notwithstanding all which, we hereby allow to them the free private exercise of their religion in houses, in which we authorise and require you to support and maintain them, as under our royal protection, in all things, as well their persons as estates; and we hereby do discharge any sentences to be given against any of them, for the things above allowed of us. Willing and requiring you to make intimation hereof to all our judges, civil and criminal, as well as to ecclesiastics; and declaring that the allegiance of this shall be a sufficient defence against any pursuit, civil or criminal, for the exercise of the Roman Catholic religion, profession thereof, or using any of the rites



and ceremonies of that church, or doing what by any law or act of parliament is called *trafficking* in all time coming. And we further require our judges to do herein according to our undoubted right and prerogative, as they will answer the contrary. And to the end Catholic worship may with the more decency and security be exercised at Edinburgh, we have thought fit to establish our chapel within our palace of Holyrood-house, and to appoint a number of chaplains and others, whom we authorise and require you to have in your most special protection and care, as persons whom we are resolved to maintain in their just rights and privileges, and to secure under our royal protection. You are likewise to take care that there be no preachers or others suffered to insinuate to the people any fears or jealousies, as if we intended to make any *violent* alteration, and if any shall be so bold, you are to punish them according to law; for it is far from our thoughts to use any violence in matters of conscience consistent with our authority and the peace of our ancient kingdom. We are also resolved to maintain our bishops, and the inferior clergy, in their just rights and privileges, and the professors of the protestant religion in the free exercise of it in their churches, and to hinder all fanatical encroachments upon them."

THE SAME letter that brought the king's arbitrary order to deprive bishop Bruce, contained a *congé d'élire* to the chapter of Dunkeld to elect Dr. Drummond, bishop of Brechin, to the see of Dunkeld; but that worthy prelate refused to accept of the translation, and bluntly said, "he knew of no vacance" in that bishoprick. When it was found that bishop Drummond was not to be cajoled into taking possession of another man's vineyard, the Rev. John Hamilton's name was substituted for the bishop of Brechin's in the *congé d'élire*, and the chapter was ordered to proceed to the election; but many of the clergy demurred to elect another while their own lawful bishop lived. One of their number then threatened those who were of this resolution with a prosecution of treason for questioning the king's prerogative. The lord chancellor also, in anticipation of such an independent course, had received a command from court to commit to prison any of the clergy who should oppose the election. Dr. Hamilton was elected, therefore, on the 19th of October, and consecrated by archbishop Ross, at St. Andrews, on St. Andrew's day. This prelate was lineally descended from archbishop John Hamilton, the last Roman Catholic primate of Scotland, through his illegitimate son, William Hamilton, of Blair. Our prelate's



mother was Barbara Elphinston, daughter of James, the first lord Balmerino by his second wife. Sarah Mentieth. On the same day, the 30th of November, the papists, who were now in the ascendant, re-consecrated the chapel royal of Holyrood-house with all the pomp and circumstance attending their gorgeous ritual<sup>1</sup>.

1687.—IN THE BEGINNING of this year a startling discovery was made through the phenomenon of *ingenuousness* in a jesuit. Bishop Burnet asserts, that the jesuits of Liege wrote a letter to those of Fribourg, in Switzerland, giving them a long account of affairs in England. He says they shewed the letter to a protestant minister, on whom they were taking great pains to convert, and thought him worthy of being trusted. He obtained permission to take a copy of this letter, which he sent to a Mr. Heidigger, professor of divinity at Zurich, who shewed it to Burnet when he was on his rambles through Europe. The bishop's testimony would not weigh very heavily against the known prudence and mysterious proceedings of the jesuits; but archdeacon Echard has given the whole letter in his history. It is dated February 2, 1687, and commences with stating the favourable reception that father Keynes, a jesuit, had from king James; who was closeted with the king whilst earls and dukes were waiting in the anti-room. The king asked him how many candidates for orders and students he had at his college? Keynes answered, they had about fifty. The king replied, there would be occasion for double or treble that number to effect what he designed for that society's performance, and ordered that they should be all exercised in the art of preaching; for now, said he, "England has need of such." In an audience given to father Clare, a French jesuit, when their business was finished, the king entered into a familiar conversation, and among other things he said, "that he would either convert England or die a martyr, and he had rather die the next day and convert it, than reign twenty years piously and happily, and not effect it." It would appear from this letter, that the priestridden king had joined the society of the jesuits, as Louis XIV. is said to have done. "Finally, he called himself '*a son of the society*, of whose good success,' he said, 'he was as glad as of his own.' And it can scarcely be expressed how much gratitude he shewed when it was told him 'that he was made partaker, by the most reverend our provincial, of all the merits of the society,' out of which he is

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue of Scottish Bishops, p. 100.—Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, pp. 194-195, 202.





to nominate one for his confessor . . . many are of opinion, that father Edward R. Petre, who is chiefly in favour with the king, will obtain an archbishoprick, but more believe it will be a cardinal's cap. To him was granted, within this month or two, all that part of the palace in which the king used to reside when he was duke of York, where there is not a day but you may see I know not how many courtiers waiting to speak to his eminence, for so they say he is called. For the king advises with him, and with many catholic lords, who have the chief places in the kingdom, to find a method to propagate the faith without violence. Not long since some of these lords objected to the king, 'that they thought he made too much haste to establish the faith.' To whom he answered, 'I am growing old, and must take large steps, else if I should happen to die, I might perhaps leave you in a worse condition than when I found you.' When they asked him 'why, then, he was so little concerned about the conversion of his daughters, who were the heirs of the kingdom,' he answered, 'God will take care of that; leave the conversion of my daughters to me. Do you, by your example, convert your own tenants and others to the faith.'"

IN THE END of last year the king recommended his popish subjects in Scotland to the protection of the privy council, as a feeler preparatory to his grand design. On the 12th of February he sent down a proclamation of Indulgence, enclosed in a royal letter, the purport of which was, that he had informed them by his letter of the 21st of last August of his design of easing his Roman Catholic subjects, to which he had their dutiful answer soon afterwards. He now thought fit to publish these his royal intentions, and to give additional relief to those of *tender consciences*, to convince the world of his inclination to moderation, and to be an evidence that those of the clergy who have been regular, were his most particular care. Although he had given some ease to those whose principles he could with most safety trust, yet he had at the same time expressed his highest indignation against those enemies of christianity as well as government and human society, the field conventicles, whom he recommended to them to root out with all the severity of law. He doubted not but the other particulars of the proclamation would appear as just and reasonable to them as they did to himself, and that they would therefore assert and defend his royal rights and prerogatives, which he was resolved to maintain in that splendour and greatness which would alone make them safe for him, a support to his friends, and a terror to his enemies. He said, it



was evident that he did not encroach upon the consciences of any, and what he would not do he was resolved he would not suffer in others<sup>1</sup>.

THE PROCLAMATION is very long, and is to the same effect as the royal letter; but there are some peculiar expressions in it. The prologue sets forth, that having taken into his royal consideration the many and great inconveniences in his ancient kingdom, through the different persuasions in the christian religion, and the great heats and animosities among the professors thereof, to the decay of trade and the extinguishing of charity; and being resolved, as much as in him lay, to unite the hearts and affections of his subjects, he thought fit, by virtue of his sovereign authority, prerogative royal, and absolute power, which all his subjects were to obey without reserve, to grant his royal toleration to the several professors of the christian religion, &c.; viz. the *moderate presbyterians*, meeting in their houses, and willing to embrace his indulgence, and so as they did not build meeting-houses, nor make use of out-houses or barns—quakers—and papists, “in favour of whom *he did suspend, stop, and disable all laws or acts of parliament* made or executed against them.” They were, however, confined in the exercise of their religion to their houses or chapels, and no where else. He also discharged them from all oaths whatsoever by which they were disabled from holding offices or employments in the kingdom; instead of which he required them to take an oath embodied in the proclamation. He indemnified the papists and quakers for whatsoever they had done contrary to the laws or acts of parliament in times past; and for the encouragement of the protestant bishops and regular clergy, he declared that he would protect them in their functions, rights, and properties. He also promised to use *no invincible necessity* to force his subjects to change their religion<sup>2</sup>.

THE WORDS *invincible necessity* clearly flowed from the pen of a jesuit, and betokened a determination to make some change in the established religion of the country, else there was no necessity for introducing them; but the words *moderate presbyterians* are perhaps as ambiguous as could have been devised, as we have seen none of them in the course of this history. In some judicious reflections on this proclamation, it is remarked, “There are a sort of people there tolerated that will be very hardly found out, and these are the

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II. 168.—Burnet's Own Times, iii. 181.—Wodrow, iv. 417.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow—Life of James II.



*moderate* presbyterians. Now as some say that there are very few of those people in Scotland that deserve this character, so it is hard to tell what it amounts to; and the calling any of them *immoderate* cuts off all their share in this grace. Moderation is a quality that lies in the mind; and how this will be found out I cannot so easily guess. If a standard had been given of opinions or practices, then one could have known how this might have been distinguished; but as it lies, it will not be easy to make the discrimination; and the declaring them all *immoderate*, shuts them out quite<sup>1</sup>. But it is singular how the quakers are classed along with the papists, which looks as if that hypocritical sect had been the pioneers to their parent popery: and Wodrow says, "not a few of the leading men among them *were in close friendship with the jesuits*." The council returned an answer to the king's letter on the 20th of February, acquainting him with their obedience, and their resolution to prosecute the object of the proclamation. Among those who signed the letter are the names of the archbishop of St. Andrews and the archbishop *elect* of Glasgow. The duke of Hamilton, the earls of Panmure and Dundonald, refused to sign it; and by a royal letter of the 1st of March they were turned out of the privy council<sup>2</sup>.

No PARTY in the kingdom were more astonished at this Indulgence than the presbyterians, and they frankly confessed their surprise; there were, however, sagacious men among them, who clearly foresaw the consequences that would naturally flow from it; and at first they had nearly resolved not to accept the benefit of it. At all events, "this all know," says bishop Sage, "that for some months after the publication of it, no considerable breach was made; they still continued in the *same communion* with us<sup>3</sup>." The proclamation, however, had quite another effect upon the papists. Such a strong public avowal of the king's inclination in their favour, with the chancellor's countenance and protection, and the revocation of the edict of Nantz, intoxicated them with visions of power and *supremacy*, and emboldened them to emerge from their obscurity, to propagate their tenets, and to establish their idolatrous worship in all the corners of the kingdom. Their insolence alarmed the whole nation; and the clergy, as faithful watchmen, preached zealously everywhere on the controverted doctrines, and on the idolatry and superstition of the Roman schismatics. Popish priests overspread the whole kingdom, and made the most strenuous exertions to gain converts, com-

<sup>1</sup> Sect. v.<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, iv. 416-423.<sup>3</sup> Account of the Persecution, 4to. 9.





passing even sea and land to make proselytes; but the presbyterian ministers never uttered a word against popery. "Whether," says Sage, "it was that they thought it indiscreet to fall on their brethren, who stood upon the same bottom with themselves, or they had received it amongst their injunctions from the court party, not to meddle with those of the Roman church; or they did not understand the controversies (which seems the most probable), and so found themselves obliged, in prudence, to let them alone, I am not concerned to determine. It is certain it was so *de facto* (for once to make use here of that term), and I have twenty times heard it confessed by their constant auditors. Nay, to this very day (though now they make bold with popery, without the hazard of giving the present court a displeasure, and it might be expected they should do it, for very obvious reasons), they very rarely meddle with it. Their great work is to batter down 'antichristian prelacy and malignancy. Prelacy [they say] has been the cause of all the calamities this nation has groaned under for so many years: king Jesus has been banished, the gospel has not been preached in this land these twenty-seven years bypast.' Upon my word, sir, I am serious; there is nothing more ordinary in their sermons than such cant; and though their texts are commonly taken from the Old Testament, yet they are all pat and home to the purpose<sup>1</sup>."

"WHILE in these conventicles popery was so kindly forborn, in our [established] churches these controversies were our most frequent subjects; especially in those places where [popish] priests were setting up. This is well known all over the kingdom; some suffered, and many were terribly threatened for it." Lord Fountainhall fully corroborates this statement, and mentions in particular the case of the Rev. Alexander Ramsay, one of the clergy of Edinburgh, who was silenced by bishop Patterson for speaking against popery and preaching upon the points in dispute with the papists; he was, however, restored to his church afterwards<sup>2</sup>.

MOST of the bishops had done their utmost in opposition to the designs of the jesuits, supported by the whole power and influence of the crown, except bishop Patterson, of Edinburgh, who seems to have been a good deal of a time-server. But the inferior clergy throughout the country were most zealous, not only in preaching against popery, but in exerting their influence with their parishoners, in truly stating to them

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 13.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 13.—Chron. Notes, 163.





the nature of the battle which they were now called upon to fight. The usual insolence of the papists themselves, when they have any probable prospect of recovering their supremacy, gave alarm and dreadful note of the oppression that might be expected from them should they in reality attain to it. This alarm was considerably increased by the perfidious and unexpected revocation of the Edict of Nantz. Henry IV. had granted the free and undisturbed exercise of their religion to the French protestants, or Huguenots, as they were called, and this Edict, which had been passed at Nantz, had been ratified and confirmed by his successor, and by Louis XIV. himself, among the first acts of his life. "Louis peremptorily required the protestants in France to sign a declaration of submission and strict obedience to his royal orders; and that they should promise to attend the mass, and entirely omit their own religious meetings; for otherwise they should forfeit, not only their lands and all other property, but also their personal liberty; the men being doomed to slavery in the king's galleys for life, and the women to be shut up for life wherever their enemies should choose to immure them<sup>1</sup>." It is supposed that in the course of this persecution about a million of protestants preserved their lives by quitting their country, and taking shelter in England, which they enriched by their industry; and at least 100,000 individuals suffered death in various ways<sup>2</sup>."

YET JAMES'S private conduct on this occasion is somewhat inconsistent with his public declarations and transactions, and shews that his public conduct was entirely under the control of the jesuits; whereas, when left to his own good disposition, he acted with that charity that became a man and a christian. He gave large sums of money himself, and liberally granted several briefs through the three kingdoms, for the relief of these unhappy refugees, the French Huguenots, when

<sup>1</sup> Sharpe's Inquiry into the Description of Babylon, 39.

<sup>2</sup> Faber's Dissertation on the Prophecies, ii. 273; who says—"They that lead into captivity, and they that kill with the sword," is so general and comprehensive an expression, that it seems necessarily to include, not only the *secular* instruments of papal persecution, but likewise the *ecclesiastical promoters* of it: accordingly, both Daniel and St. John connect the fate of the 'Beast' with that of the 'little Horn, or the false prophet.' We have beheld, then, in France, the descendant and successor of those, whose memory has been rendered infamous by the diabolical crusade against the protestants of Provence, by the blood-stained night of St. Bartholomew, by the perfidious revocation of the Edict of Nantz, himself led into captivity and slain with the sword. We have beheld numbers of his papal clergy crowded together into *galleys* and put to death [in 1792]. We have beheld the sovereign pontiff, that *man of sin*, who had led so many thousands captive, himself go into captivity."



they sought for the protection and hospitality of England. He made no objections to their being protestants and presbyterians, and as it was declared in the Westminster Confession of Faith, that *no difference* in religion could deprive him of the right of succession, so he concluded that no difference in religion should shorten or contract his charity and liberality. The large contributions also of the bishops and clergy, and of the episcopal nobility and gentry, upon that occasion, given to professed presbyterians, shews that they thought that their charity ought not to be confined to those only who were of their own communion<sup>1</sup>.

THIS BREACH of national faith, so characteristic of the papal church and of the influence of the jesuits, occurring at the same time as the unconstitutional proceedings of king James at home, himself a member of the same church, and governed by the same unprincipled society, tended greatly to increase the fears of the episcopalians. "It looked like a designed combination between the two monarchs to distress, and even to *exterminate*, their protestant subjects: and while the Romish priests here were, under the support of so favourable a conjuncture, exerting themselves to propagate their doctrines and make proselytes, it was not to be thought, neither would it have been justifiable, that the established clergy could or would be slack in defending the dignity or purity of their religion by any method which the laws allowed them<sup>2</sup>." Dr. Canaries, rector of Selkirk, in the diocese of Glasgow, made the most powerful assault upon the papal array of any his brethren. He preached in the high church of Edinburgh on the 14th of February, 1686, before the privy council, the judges, and many of the bishops, from Galatians, v. 6.—"For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but *faith which worketh by love*." In this sermon he pointed out and argued against the various and great corruptions of popery, and shewed the dates at which these corruptions arose. He then warned and exhorted his audience to beware of them, as they tendered their eternal welfare, and not to allow themselves to be perverted to a religion which is so defiled with idolatry and superstition, and so contrary to the spirit and so destructive of the great design of the gospel<sup>3</sup>.

THIS POWERFUL sermon created a great sensation in his auditory, and highly incensed the lord chancellor, who was a papist. He sent for Dr. Canaries next day, and threatened

<sup>1</sup> Leslie's Rehearsals, iv. 219.    <sup>2</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 501.

<sup>3</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 50<sup>o</sup>



him with pains and penalties for having so vigorously assaulted the court religion; and he even used abusive and scurrilous language. Finding he could not draw the preacher from his determined purpose of exposing the Romish tenets, he ordered the archbishop of Glasgow to punish him for his presumption by deposition; and threatened the archbishop with the royal vengeance if he allowed Dr. Canaries to escape without punishment. The Assertory act, and the exercise of the king's uncontrolled prerogative, gave the chancellor such extensive powers, that he might have put his threats in execution according to law. But as Dr. Canaries had really committed no ecclesiastical offence, but had, on the contrary, ably performed a duty, which was also executed with more or less ability by all his brethren, the archbishop recommended the doctor to go out of the way for a little, till the storm should subside. He accordingly went to London, under pretence of making friends at court, and shewed his sermon to Dr. Turner bishop of Ely, and several others. It was highly approved of, and the bishop recommended Dr. Canaries to publish it, under the title of "Rome's Additions to Christianity," with a long letter, by way of vindication, prefixed to it. This inflamed the chancellor and the popish party still more against both the archbishop and the rector of Selkirk, and menaces of deprivation from his see were communicated to the timorous archbishop. "To save appearances, therefore," says Mr. Skinner, "he summoned the doctor before the synod of Peebles, and having in vain tampered with him to demit, for preventing worse consequences, laid a kind of inhibition on him, not to use his ministry for some time." The chancellor saw through this compromise, and was indignant at the partial censure, which he considered rather in the light of approbation than of punishment. "In short, the contention about the sermon and the doctor's errand to London, which the chancellor exclaimed bitterly against, as injurious to him, was kept up after a strange manner for some months, till in the end, the affair reaching the king's ears, orders came down in December [of 1686] to have the archbishop and Canaries confronted together, and examined by the chancellor, in presence of the primate and other two bishops<sup>1</sup>."

THE ARCHBISHOP, having been cross-questioned by the chancellor, was declared by the court to be highly blameable, for having played the politician too much, and bishop Keith says, "deservedly, if all be true which Dr. James Canaries, minis-

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 503.





ter of Selkirk, relates in the letter prefixed to his sermon." The archbishop now declared his readiness to enter into the views of the court, and in favour of popery; but his advances were rejected by the chancellor and the popish party. The king was unhappily advised by his jesuit counsellors to fall back upon the Assertory act, and deprive the archbishop summarily; he wrote, accordingly, to the privy council, on the 13th of January, and that body passed an act on the 20th, in which they "Declare and enact, the said Alexander, *late* archbishop of Glasgow, removed from that metropolitical see, and deprived of any right, title, benefit, or privilege, which he had or enjoyed of the said archbishoprick any manner of way; and that from the day and date of his majesty's letter, recorded in their books; and appoint intimation of this act to be duly made to the said *late* archbishop." This, bishop Keith quietly records as "a very irregular step, surely; the king should have taken a more canonical course<sup>1</sup>."

THE SAME messenger that brought the king's letter ordering the deprivation of Dr. Cairncross, brought also a *congé d'élire* to the dean and chapter of Glasgow, to proceed to the election of Dr. John Patterson, bishop of Edinburgh, to be their metropolitan. Accordingly, on the 21st of January, the dean of Glasgow, with Dr. Fall, the convener of the synod, and eighteen clergymen, of whom the chapter consisted, met, not in their proper place in the cathedral of Glasgow, but in St. Giles's church, Edinburgh, and there, in conformity with the king's letter, nominated the bishop of Edinburgh to be their ordinary. He had been removed from the privy council in the year 1684, owing to a "bad impression" that the ministers of the crown had given to king Charles; but he now took his seat in council as *the elect* of Glasgow, with his proper place and precedence as archbishop, on the 23d of February<sup>2</sup>.

DR. COLIN FALCONER, bishop of Moray, died at Spynie Castle, near Elgin, on the 11th of November, 1686, in the 63d year of his age; and his remains were deposited in the south aisle of the parish church of St. Giles, in the city of Elgin, at the bottom of the tower, towards the east. It was a noble gothic structure, and stood in the centre of the main street, in the form of a cross, and which the writer is old enough to have seen; but it was pulled down a few years ago, and a modern Grecian kirk has been built on its foundation. On the 17th of December, the dean and chapter of Moray received a

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue, p. 269. — Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 503.

<sup>2</sup> Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, 211.



*congé d'élire* to elect Dr. Alexander Rose on the king's recommendation ; and he was chosen accordingly<sup>1</sup>. His father was the protestant titular prior of Monymusk, in Aberdeenshire, a monastery formerly possessed by the Culdees, and dedicated to St. Mary the blessed Virgin, and it was annexed to the impoverished bishoprick of Dunblane, by king James VI. This illustrious prelate took his degree of M.A. at Aberdeen; but afterwards studied divinity, under that "notorious rogue," as Fountainhall calls him, Dr. Burnet, at Glasgow. He was presented to the church and parish of St. John's, Perth, and on the resignation of Burnet he was appointed professor of divinity at Glasgow. On the 22d of October, 1686, he was appointed by the king principal of St. Mary's College, in the University of St. Andrews. He was consecrated on the 8th of March this year, but he never took possession of the see of Moray, having been translated to the bishoprick of Edinburgh in the month of September<sup>2</sup>.

THE SCOTTISH papists enjoyed the utmost liberty of conscience, and the free exercise of their rites and ceremonies; and as his dispensing with the laws in Scotland had not excited any very violent opposition, he pursued the same system in England. On the 4th of April a proclamation was issued, being his majesty's "Declaration for liberty of conscience," in order, he said, "to make his subjects happy, and unite them to us by inclination as well as duty." The subjects here meant, however, were the popish dissenters, and he cunningly united the protestant sects along with them, just to save appearances, and to unite their *interests*. Several of the presbyterian ministers in London and its neighbourhood waited on the king with an address of thanks; to which he replied, that—"It hath been his judgment of a long time that none has or ought to have any power over the conscience, but God," and he solemnly protested "he had no other design in his declaration, but the easing and pleasing his subjects, and *restoring* to God the power over conscience<sup>3</sup>." This paved the way for a second declaration to the Scottish dissenters; for the first one had not the designed effect with the presbyterians. They stood amazed, as much as other men, at this new and unconstitutional power which the king assumed, and saw the evil consequences of disunion at that time. "This, themselves frankly confessed at the beginning; and I know," says Sage, "it was therefore once very near to a general resolution amongst them, never to take

<sup>1</sup> Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, p. 237.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid.—Keith's Catalogue, *passim*.

<sup>3</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 425-6.



the benefit of it." This agrees with Wodrow's statement, who says, "the presbyterian ministers refused to accept of a liberty with the former clogs." "This," continues Sage, "all know, that for some months after the publication of it, no considerable breach was made; *they still continued in the same communion with us.* You will easily believe this grated the popish party; they saw, evidently, if the unity of our church was not broken, *their interests* would advance but very slowly; so pains were taken with the presbyterians to make them separate. And because, perhaps, they might scruple at the oath contained in the first edition of the Toleration, a second edition, without that oath, was obtained and published. Whether the arguments which were made use of to engage them, prevailed with them, or by that time the second edition came out, they had considered the *strength* of their party, and found they would be able *to make a figure*; or they had got secret instructions from Holland, to comply with the dispensing power, in subserviency to the ensuing Revolution (for which I know there be very strong presumptions), I shall not readily determine<sup>1</sup>."

THE DISPENSATION formerly given to the papists made them quite easy; but it was necessary to break up that union and communion that the wise measures of the late king had effected, and accordingly, says Wodrow, "for reasons known to himself, and without any application from the presbyterian ministers or their friends, he saw good to cast the liberty in more general terms, and not to connect it with that to papists, nor restrict them to private houses, or clog his favours with oaths<sup>2</sup>." The king's proclamation for a third toleration was dated at London the 28th of June, and at Edinburgh the 5th of July; and its design was the same as that intended by the first. Upon a comparison of the two proclamations there was found to be no material difference, only that in the second the obnoxious oath is omitted. They both maintained the king's power of repealing the laws, and required that whosoever would have the benefit of this toleration must acknowledge the king's absolute dispensing power by which it was granted. The oath in the first had not been rigidly enacted but it had been entirely removed by the king's dispensation contained in his letter to the council of the 31st March: "so that it can never be pretended as a reason why they

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, pp. 9-10.

<sup>2</sup> History, iv. 426.





[the presbyterians] did not separate for three months hereafter<sup>1</sup>."

THUS THE great schism commenced, and when once begun it was carried on with wonderful celerity: "Toleration was its parent, and that was the child of the dispensing power." All of a sudden the presbyterians laid hold of it, and within a few weeks began to build meeting-houses in many places, especially in the two dioceses where their strength lay; and there the churches were drained, pulpits were set up against altars, and the pretended presbyter against the bishop. "All arts were now used to increase their party, and to render the regular incumbents contemptible; people were not left to their own choice to join or not to join with them, but all methods of compulsion, except downright force, were taken to engage them. If any man went to church (whither all had gone very lately), he was forthwith out of favour with the whole gang; if he was an husbandman, his hap was good if his neighbour's cattle were not fed amongst his corn in the night-time; if he was a tradesman, no employment for him; if a gentleman of an estate (a laird, as we call them), his own tenants would abuse him to his face, and threaten him with twenty violences; in short, nothing was left untried that had the least probability of weakening our hands or of strengthening their own<sup>2</sup>."

MR. RENWICK alone and his followers refused to accept of this dispensation; and he "found it his duty not only to declare against the *granters*, but also against the *acceptors* of this toleration; warning also the people of the hazard of their accession to it. At which the indulged were so incensed, that no sooner was their meeting well settled than they began to shew their teeth at him, calling him an intruder, a *jesuit*, a white devil going through the land, carrying the devil's white flag; that he had done more hurt to the church of Scotland than its enemies had done these twenty years<sup>3</sup>." On the other hand, the presbyterian ministers held a meeting at Edinburgh on the 20th of July, and after considerable dissension among themselves, they agreed, on the 21st, to the following address, accepting the benefit of the toleration, and thanking him for this liberty so surprisingly granted them, even although it was granted in the face of unrepealed acts of parliament, and solely by an exercise of the king's prerogative. "At that

<sup>1</sup> Present Persecution, 10.

<sup>2</sup> Present Persecution, 11, 12.

<sup>3</sup> Scots Worthies, 437-38.





time," says Wodrow, "some exceptions were made against it in conversation, as containing *a little too much* from presbyterians to a popish prince<sup>1</sup>:"—

"WE, YOUR MAJESTY's most loyal subjects, the ministers of the presbyterian persuasion in your ancient kingdom of Scotland, from the deep sense that we have of your majesty's gracious and surprising favour, in not only putting a stop to our long sad sufferings for non-conformity, but granting us the liberty of the public and peaceable exercise of our ministerial function without any hazard; we bless the great God, who hath put this in your royal heart; do withal find ourselves bound in duty to offer our most humble and hearty thanks to your sacred majesty, the favour bestowed being to us, and all the people of our persuasion, valuable above all our earthly comforts; especially since we have ground from your majesty to believe that our loyalty is not to be questioned upon the account of our being presbyterians; who, as we have amidst all former temptations endeavoured, so are firmly resolved still to preserve an entire loyalty in our doctrine and practice (consonant to our known principles, which, according to the Holy Scriptures, are contained in the Confession of Faith, generally owned by presbyterians in all your majesty's dominions), and by the help of God so to demean ourselves as your majesty may find cause rather to enlarge than to diminish your favours towards us; thoroughly persuading ourselves, from your majesty's justice and goodness, that if we shall at any time be otherwise represented, your majesty will not give credit to such information until you take due cognition thereof; and humbly beseeching that those who promote any disloyal principles and practices (as we disown them) may be looked upon as none of ours, whatsoever name they may assume to themselves. May it please your most excellent majesty graciously to accept this our humble address as proceeding from the plainness and sincerity of loyal and thankful hearts, much engaged by this your royal favour to continue our fervent prayers to the King of kings for divine illumination and conduct, with all other blessings, spiritual and temporal, ever to attend your royal person and government; which is the greatest duty can be rendered to your majesty by, &c.<sup>2</sup>"

THIS SAME king, whom they were now thanking and blessing, had been *excommunicated* by one of their body not many

<sup>1</sup> History, iv. 428.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 428.



years before this ; and never had been *relaxed*, as they say, from it ; and we have seen the sort of loyalty to the crown of which they now boast. It is true, many of them were ignorant of the conspiracy that was then maturing in Holland ; but it is certain that the most eminent among them that had been in Holland were in close correspondence with the traitors who had taken shelter there. " Now," says Mr. Skinner, " what appellation belongs to these men, who could either frame or allow their consent, tacit or open, to such a deceitful address to a king, or indeed to any one, whom they were at the time caballing to ruin, may be referred to every conscientious protestant, who hates the infamous practice of jesuitical equivocation with the same zeal with which his christianity teaches him to condemn the doctrine of it<sup>1</sup>."

WODROW puzzles himself to defend this address, and one still more fulsome, from the presbyterians residing in Edinburgh ; and at last he fairly gives them up as " not the deed of the body of presbyterians, but the proper fact of the signers of them<sup>2</sup>." Renwick, however, more honestly, denounced both the granters and the acceptors of the toleration ; and he lodged a " testimony" against both in the hands of HUGH KENNEDY, the moderator of the meeting, and he afterwards published it as the protest of the " suffering remnant" against

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 503.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, iv. 429.—MAY IT PLEASE YOUR MOST SACRED MAJESTY, we cannot find suitable expressions to evidence our most humble and grateful acknowledgements for your majesty's late gracious declaration, by which we are happily delivered of many sad and grievous burthens we have long groaned under, and (all restraints to our great joy being taken off) are allowed the free and peaceable public exercise of our religion, a mercy which is dearer to us than our lives and fortunes. Could we open our hearts, your majesty would undoubtedly see what deep sense and true zeal for your service, so surprising and signal a favour hath imprinted on our spirits ; for which we reckon ourselves highly obliged (throwing ourselves at your majesty's feet) to return your most excellent majesty our most humble, dutiful, and hearty thanks ; and we desire humbly to assure your majesty, that as the principles of the protestant religion, which, according to our *Confession of Faith*, we profess, obligeth us all the days of our lives to that entire loyalty and duty to your majesty's person and government, that no difference in religion can dissolve ; so we hope, and through God's assistance shall still endeavour, to demean ourselves in our practice in such manner as shall evidence to the world the truth and sincerity of our loyalty and gratitude, and make it appear that there is no inconsistency betwixt true loyalty and presbyterian principles. Great sir, we humbly offer our dutiful and faithful assurances, that as we have not been hitherto wanting in that great duty which our consciences bind upon us, to pray for your majesty, so this late refreshing and unexpected favour will much more engage us in great sincerity to continue still to offer up our desires to the God of heaven, by whom kings reign and princes decree justice, to bless your royal majesty's person and government, and after a happy and comfortable reign on earth, to crown you with an incorruptible crown of glory in heaven ; which is most ardently prayed for by, &c.



their hypocritical brethren<sup>1</sup>. So, says bishop Sage, "was the schism circumstantiate; but before I proceed to shew how it was carried on, let me remark one thing: it is, whatever *now* they may pretend, it was no ways any principle of conscience which made them separate from us on *that* occasion. My reasons are these: they lived in *communion with us* for some months before the first edition of the Toleration, viz. till they got the second; at least, very few broke off in that interim. While they lived in communion with us, they acknowledged their *consciences allowed them*; indeed, what sort of christians had they been if it had not been so? Many thanked God that they were reconciled to us, and frequently protested all the world should never again engage them in the schism. Nay, some of the ablest of their preachers (within a very few weeks before they embraced the toleration) said to some of the regular clergy, they should never do it; they were resolved never to preach more in their life-time. Further yet, some of them, even after the second edition, continued for a long time resolved never to engage in it; and it cost their brethren much pains before they could overcome that resolution: yea, they tell us, to this very day, if they were deprived of their liberty, they could return to us again. Can there be clearer evidences for any thing than these are, that *it was not conscience*, but *some other interest*, that involved them in such a general apostacy from one of the greatest concerns of christianity—the *unity of the church*? Indeed, how could ever conscience be pretended in the matter? We had not the least sinful condition in our communion. We still maintained with themselves the same articles of faith; we worshipped after the same manner: there is no imaginable difference between them and us in the administration of the sacraments; if the orders of the church of England be valid, so are ours. All that was ever controverted amongst us was the point of church government. It is true we use the Lord's Prayer and the Doxology, and commonly require the Creed in baptism, which they do not; if these can justify a separation, we are guilty; but if they can, let the world judge. And now these things being so, I would only ask any man this question,—whether, when they make such clamours now concerning their by-past sufferings, it can be said *that ever they suffered for conscience sake?*"<sup>2</sup>

HOLLAND, says Mr. Carstares, "swarmed with British re-

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies. 438.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 10, 11.





fugees; the prince's court was their asylum, where nothing was to be heard but the murmuring and complaints of an injured people calling for redress<sup>1</sup>." William was certainly deeply implicated in all the plots and conspiracies during both these reigns, and he protected such of the British subjects as found it inconvenient to remain in their own country. Monmouth's and Argyle's conspiracies were well known to the Dutch government; and when James's ambassador expostulated with the pensionary Fagel for such unfriendly conduct, lord Fountainhall says they issued an order to stop the supply of arms, *after they had fully supplied them*, and when it was too late. And Smith, who has been already cited, says he had seen several of the "whig ministers" at Rotterdam, some of whom he had seen at Bothwell Bridge, where they had meetings in houses for sermon. These sermons were disloyal and seditious in the highest degree; and at a private meeting at Thomas Hogg's, a fanatic preacher, he heard the proposal made to assassinate king Charles, "and that being done, they doubted not but they could soon overcome the duke, and all others that would oppose them." This language, however, "they speak only among their confident friends, for they make the common sort of people believe that there was no such thing as fanatic plots; but that the raising of that report was a contrivance of the papists to make use of false witnesses for taking away the lives of true protestants."

THE OPINION of the English judges, that James could dispense with the laws, was the commencement of his arbitrary proceedings in Scotland. He had remodelled his privy council, and placed as many papists and popishly inclined members in it as enabled him to try the experiment of superseding all the fundamental laws in the kingdom. The parliament, although sufficiently pliable in many things, were inflexible in maintaining the protestant church; and as he could not accomplish his designs through the vote of the legislature, he therefore resorted to his prerogative. And here the presbyterian dagger that had smitten the church under the fifth rib—the ASSERTORY ACT—enabled him to assail her without infringing any law. That act placed the church at the king's mercy, and enabled both Charles and James to deprive bishops of their jurisdiction at their own caprice. During all the period of her captivity to the state, even at the time of her greatest apparent prosperity, she was in a state of persecution, not only by the presbyterians, but by those who ought to

<sup>1</sup> M'Cormick's Life of Carstares, 32.



have been her nursing fathers. By virtue of this act, James could have *legally* removed all the protestant bishops, and have placed popish prelates in their sees; and, to all appearance, measures in Scotland were ripening to that object. He had deprived two prelates, for the performance of their duty in preaching against the withering blight of popery, which was then making such rapid strides; and he threatened others with the same vengeance. Few of the writings of the clergy of that period have come down to our time; but even their adversaries admit that they both preached and wrote powerfully against the Roman schism. It was their faithful boldness in their official duties that brought many of them into trouble with the court, and the popish ministry were not slack in prosecuting them; so that, in fact, they were now called on to endure a new species of persecution.

NEITHER were the clergy in England negligent of their duty at this trying season, nor did they escape the tender mercies of the crown, now entirely in the hands of jesuits. It is said the see of York was kept two years vacant, that James might place his jesuit confessor, father Petre, in it. "To their immortal honour, they [the English clergy] did more to vindicate the doctrine of their own church, and expose the errors of the church of Rome, both in their sermons and in their writings, than ever had been done, either at home or abroad, since the reformation; and in such a style, and with such an inimitable force of reasoning, as will be a standard of writing to succeeding ages. The discourses and other writings which were then composed, form collectively, perhaps the most powerful bulwark against those adversaries which has ever been produced<sup>1</sup>."

THE SCOTTISH reformed catholic clergy have been accused by their presbyterian enemies of having preached the doctrines of non-resistance and passive obedience; but we have seen the disastrous effects of the contrary doctrines, that were taught by the presbyterian ministers. The catholic clergy preached none other than the true christian doctrines, which can never be overthrown by all the attempts of papists and presbyterians conjoined. They maintained that in every government there must be a supreme legal tribunal, from whose decisions there can be no appeal on earth, and that this supreme tribunal was not to be resisted; and that the frequent insurrections of the presbyterians, and their constant disobedience, was rebellion in its most rigorous conception. But presbyterian resis-

<sup>1</sup> Dr. D'Oyley's *Life of Sancroft*, 132.



tance and rebellion arises from their setting up their own independency and supremacy over the crown; for there cannot be two supreme powers in one kingdom. Wherever the supreme tribunal may be resisted and controled, there the party so resisting and attempting to control is superior to the supreme power, which is an absurdity; and this was the point at which the presbyterians have always aimed. The sovereign is supreme over all estates of men, and, by the advice and assistance of parliament, makes laws which are binding on every man; to these the church always inculcated obedience, according to her warrant in holy scripture. But the presbyterian general assemblies have, even in modern times, set both the sovereign and the parliament at open defiance, and enacted or repealed the laws of the land according as it suited their own convenience. This is an assumption of papal supremacy over the crown, which has had the most disastrous effects ever since the days of Andrew Melville, when presbytery was first introduced into Scotland. This is a doctrine which would overturn every government, and which undermines the foundations of all civil society. The struggle for mastery between the king as supreme, and the presbyterians who desired to be supreme, created all the bloodshed and confusion, and occasioned all the severities of the preceding century; for "the crowning of king Jesus," and "Christ's crown," meant nothing else than their own supremacy over king, parliament, and laws; and therefore, whatever name the resistance of the presbyterians may receive from their partizans, it is decidedly rebellion. The Romish clergy never pleaded their exemption from the secular powers more violently and factiously than the presbyterian ministers did; and it is remarkable that the latter always watched the political embarrassments of the affairs of the king, and whenever they found him perplexed with either foreign or domestic troubles, then they always commenced tumults, riots, and insurrections.





## CHAPTER XLVIII.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1687.—Meeting-houses erected.—English universities.—Arrival of the Pope's nuncio.—Perplexities of the nobility.—Consecration of Popish bishops.—Magdalen College, Oxford.—A general meeting of the presbyterians.—Petre the jesuit sworn of the privy council.—1688.—General thanksgiving.—Another Indulgence.—Deaths, translations, and consecrations of bishops.—Renwick—arrested and condemned.—Position of the clergy.—Birth of the Prince of Wales.—Action betwixt the presbyterians and the king's troops.—Declaration for liberty of conscience—the English prelates refuse to read it.—Their petition to the king—their interview with the king—their petition declared a libel, and themselves committed to the Tower.—Behaviour of the people.—Prelates' conduct in the Tower.—Dissenting ministers wait on them.—The bishops brought to Westminster Hall—admitted to bail, and acquitted—joy of all ranks, and of the army.—Proclamation for liberty of conscience—another, announcing a Dutch invasion.—King's retrograde movements.—King sends for the archbishop of Canterbury—his speech.—Prince of Wales' baptism.—William's preparations—his manifesto.—Address of the University of St. Andrews to the king—address of the bishops to the king—the king's answer.—The prince of Orange—Correspondence with the prince.—A formal invitation given to William.—Sunderland's treachery.—Prince of Orange embarks—lands at Torbay—his declaration.—The king sends for the bishops—his military preparations—deserted by his army—offers to treat with William—consults with Petre—resolves to retire to France—his departure—put ashore at Feversham.—Mob of London's exploits.—Alarm of a popish massacre.—Meeting at Guildhall.—King returns to Whitehall—receives orders from the Prince of Orange to retire.—He finally departed and arrived in France.—His letter to lord Feversham.—Remarks.

1687.—IN THE PRESBYTERIAN districts the liberty now granted was speedily accepted, and the presbyterians began to build meeting-houses; and Wodrow asserts, what is *not truth*, that the churches were emptied of all the parishioners, and all that the curates could muster was their own families. This is not truth; but it is true that the presbyterians erected meeting-houses, and were permitted to meet in them without molestation. The king pressed popery faster upon his English





even than he did upon his Scottish subjects. In April his majesty published a declaration, allowing liberty of conscience to all his English subjects. He suspended and dispensed with the penal laws and tests, and even with the oaths of allegiance and supremacy on admission into offices, civil or military. All the different sects of dissenters made haste to return thanks for this unexpected and jesuitical favour, and vied with each other in the most abject and slavish professions of loyalty and gratitude. James had his own views in caressing the dissenters and in persecuting the church. The vice-chancellor and senate of Cambridge were summoned before the High Commission court in April, to answer to whatsoever might be objected to them. On the 11th the king sent a mandate to Magdalen College, Oxford, commanding them to elect Anthony Farmer, a papist, their president, and on the 27th of April sentence of deprivation was passed against Dr. John Peachall, the vice-chancellor, for not having admitted the said father Francis without taking the oaths; and the senate was reprimanded, and ordered to send up copies of their statutes. They refused to elect Farmer, and elected Mr. John Hough; they were therefore cited before the court of High Commission on the 6th of June, to answer for the said refusal, and consequent election of Mr. Hough. The court declared Mr. Hough's election to be void, and suspended Dr. Aldworth from being vice-president, and Dr. Fairfax from his fellowship, for their contempt in not electing Mr. Farmer<sup>1</sup>.

EARLY IN JUNE, signior Fernando d'Adda, titular archbishop of Amasia, arrived in London, as nuncio from "the protestant pope," as he was called. James did not think it safe to receive him in London; but he thought it due, both to his own person and to the pope's dignity, to give him a public reception. This placed many of the nobility in a most unpleasant position, for the law made all intercourse with the pope treason. The duke of Somerset, as a lord of the bed-chamber, was included in this unusual ceremonial. He therefore consulted with his legal advisers, who informed him that he could not with safety do those duties in this ceremonial that his office required him to fulfil. The duke of Somerset informed lord Lonsdale, "that the nuncio might have all the honours done that was possible; it was resolved that a duke should introduce him. The matter was therefore proposed to the duke of Somerset. He humbly desired of the king to be excused; the king asked him his reason: the duke told him

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 212, 43.



he conceived it to be against law ; to which the king said, he would pardon him. The duke replied, he was no very good lawyer, but he thought he had heard it said, that a pardon granted a person offending, under the assurance of obtaining it, was void. This offended the king extremely ; he said publicly, he wondered at his insolence, and told the duke he would make him fear him as well as the laws. To which the duke answered, that as he was his sovereign, he should ever have all the duty and reverence for his person that was due from a subject to his prince ; but whilst he was no traitor or criminal, he was so secure in his [majesty's] justice, that he could not fear him as offenders do. Notwithstanding the extreme offence this matter gave his majesty, yet, out of his goodness, he was pleased to tell the duke that he would excuse him<sup>1</sup>."

DURING the brief remainder of this reign, the nuncio resided openly in London. Four individuals were publicly consecrated after the popish ritual, in the chapel royal, St. James's, and sent throughout England as the pope's vicars apostolical. They published ostentatiously pastoral letters to the laity of their own communion, which were printed and dispersed by the king's express allowance ; and their priests and dignitaries appeared at court in the habits of their order. Some of these men were so indiscreet as to boast that, in a little time, they hoped to walk in public procession through the streets of London.

THE KING sent a second mandate to Magdalen College, requiring them to choose the bishop of Oxford their president, but which they refused. After the public reception of the pope's nuncio, the king made a progress through the west of England, and on coming to Oxford, on the 4th September, he threatened the fellows of Magdalen College for their contempt in refusing to elect the bishop of Oxford. On the 16th November following, sentence of expulsion was pronounced against the fellows, by visitors whom his majesty had appointed to visit that college ; and the court of high commission disabled them from holding any ecclesiastical preferments in England. On the 10th November, father Petre was sworn of the privy council ; which, says Mr. Skinner, but without giving his authority, " we are told his Italian queen, popish as she was, begged on her knees, though to no purpose, might be forborne<sup>2</sup>." In a short time, these arbitrary

<sup>1</sup> Note to Burnet's Own Times, iii. 189.

<sup>2</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical Hist. ii. 497.—Salmon's Chronology, i. 242-44.



proceedings alarmed and disgusted all Englishmen, and produced that alienation from James and his family, that terminated in the revolution.

THE ARCHBISHOP of St. Andrews went to court on the 16th June; and a letter was, about the same time, received from the king, ordering an indictment to be preferred against Dr. Burnet, whom lord Fountainhall calls "a notorious rogue, who had been undermining the king, as also his brother, king Charles II., at several foreign courts," for converse with Argyle and other traitors in Holland. The town council placed popish priests in Herriott's Hospital, contrary to the statutes of the founder, under pretence of teaching the children to sing, but in reality to pervert them from the faith of Christ crucified, to the worship of the blessed Virgin and the crucifix. The presbyterian ministers had a meeting at Edinburgh, at which they drew up and agreed to certain rules of discipline, and for providing ministers to preach in their meeting-houses; and they received letters from several places, craving ministers to be sent to them. This is a sure symptom that presbytery was neither in the prosperous condition that its advocates pretend, nor that it was by any means the favourite of the people, on which its establishment was founded at the revolution. "Mr. James Kirkton being designed by the meeting to be one of the ministers in Edinburgh, finding it a great toil to one of his age to lecture and preach every Sunday and once every week, and having an invitation to Newbattle, declined it; and they resolving to use authority, [he] protested against their power, and that his former parishioners of Morton were not cited or acquainted. This made some animosity among them," and shews the inefficiency of the presbyterian discipline to compel obedience, when the parties that ought to obey have no inclination to yield obedience<sup>1</sup>.

1688.—THE COUNCIL appointed a day of general thanksgiving for the queen's pregnancy, to be observed at Edinburgh on the 17th, and throughout the other parts of the kingdom on the 29th of January; but the presbyterian ministers did not keep it. The king published another proclamation for liberty of conscience in Scotland, commonly called the Fourth Indulgence; against which Renwick and his "suffering remnant" still stood out and testified. The popish priests established a school near Holyrood-house, which they dignified with the title of the royal college, and where they taught the children of the poor gratis, so as to in-

<sup>1</sup> Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, 214, 216, 226, 227,





veigle them into compliance with their doctrines; notwithstanding, that schism made no progress then nor at any time since, in Scotland, till now that the non-intrusion mania has drawn a number of jesuits into that kingdom, and it is said they are at the present time making a number of proselytes among the presbyterians.

DR. MURDOCK MACKENZIE, lord bishop of Orkney, died at Kirkwall in the month of February, at the advanced age of one hundred years; nevertheless, he enjoyed the perfect use of all his faculties until the last. From some motive, either of shame or remorse, the king rehabilitated Dr. Bruce, the deprived bishop of Dunkeld, to the exercise of his ministerial functions, by a royal dispensation through the privy council, and bishop Keith most justly calls it, "a right strange paper, truly!" "The king perceiving the disagreeableness of such proceedings," sent down a *congé d'élire* to the dean and chapter of Orkney, and recommended them to elect bishop Bruce to be their ordinary; and his lordship was accordingly elected on the 4th of May. Dr. James Aitken, bishop of Galloway, died at Edinburgh, of apoplexy, on the 28th of October the preceding year, in the seventy-fourth year of his age. His lordship was one of those who most zealously opposed the removal of the penal statutes from the papists, and was consequently marked out for the vengeance of the court, but by some unexplained means he escaped, and he lived not to see the destruction of the church. The celebrated Dr. Pitcairne wrote his epitaph, and he was buried within the Greyfriars church. Dr. John Gordon, chaplain to his majesty at New York, was elected to this see, and was consecrated by bishop Patterson, at Glasgow, on the 4th of February<sup>1</sup>. A *congé d'élire* was brought down by Mr. Blair of Blair Drummond, for Dr. Rose, bishop of Moray, nephew to archbishop Ross, to be bishop of Edinburgh; and a Mr. Hay, minister of Perth, to be bishop of Moray. The bishop of Moray, Dr. Rose, was translated to the bishoprick of Edinburgh; and lord Fountainhall says, "The chapter of Edinburgh, by the king's letter, and Mr. Andrew Cant, minister of the college kirk of Edinburgh, having the vote next to Dr. Robertson, he declared he only elected Rose, bishop of Moray, to be bishop of Edinburgh in obedience to the king's letter, and the rest followed his way of voting. At which the archbishop of St. Andrews, his [bishop Rose's] uncle, took exceptions, as a reflection and a mark of their siding with Patterson, arch-

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue, *passim*.



bishop of Glasgow, against him; there having arisen great animosities betwixt the two archbishops, because St. Andrews had so far eclipsed Glasgow at court, and got his nephew to be bishop of Edinburgh, contrary to his designs, and, which was worse, contrary to the forms ever observed before, viz. that his majesty did never recommend any by his *congé* till he had an approbation of his person by four or five bishops at least; and here there were three bishops in a band received without advice, viz. Rose to Edinburgh, Hay to Moray, and Gordon to Galloway, who is Glasgow's suffragan, and yet is borne in upon him without his knowledge; and though a Scotchman, yet he is bred in England, and knows not our ecclesiastical laws and customs; and Edinburgh is a stranger to the clergy he is come amongst (although afterwards he was well acquainted with them); and so the earl of Balcarras, or any one who has access to the king, may make a bishop in time coming without examination what he is<sup>1</sup>."

NOTWITHSTANDING all the encouragement given by a popish king, acting by the secret council of the jesuits, Mr. Renwick and his "suffering remnant" would neither accept nor acknowledge the present reiterated toleration. He, Shiells, and Houston, railed incessantly in their sermons against their brethren who had taken advantage of it. These unmanageable and bold men created alarm in the minds of their tolerated brethren, lest they might be the cause of curtailing the liberty that they now enjoyed, and they renounced all connection with them. "In the meanwhile, the persecution against Renwick being so furious, that in less than five months after the toleration fifteen most desperate searches were made for him; to encourage which a proclamation was made, October 18th, 1687, wherein a reward of £100 sterling was offered to any one who could bring in the persons of him and some others, either dead or alive. On the 29th of January he preached his last sermon at Borrowstoness; and then came into Edinburgh, and lodged at the house of a friend in the Castle hill, who was a smuggler, or, as his biographer delicately calls him, "a dealer in un-customed goods." He was discovered, not having used his ordinary circumspection, and "his time being come," he was arrested on the 1st of February, but not before he had discharged a pistol at his assailant. He was examined before the council, and committed to close prison, where he was put in irons. That the fanatical man was sincere, there can be little doubt; for in gaol he "made a free offer

<sup>1</sup> Chronological Notes, 137-141.



of his life to God, requesting for thorough bearing grace, and that his enemies might be restrained from torturing his body; all which requests were signally granted, and by him thankfully acknowledged before his execution<sup>1</sup>." Although Renwick thus devoted himself to God, yet his brethren of his own communion had now become so courtly that they offered him up as a sacrifice to propitiate the popish propensities of the sovereign, and petitioned a known fanatic, sir John Dalrymple, the king's advocate, "to *hang* the man because he was likely to divide their church!" Whether or not the advocate complied with their request, or the laws in force were sufficient to condemn him, I cannot say, but it is certain that a jury found him guilty of high treason. He was assaulted in prison by popish priests, for the purpose of turning him to their religion; but he would not listen to their arguments, and in his dying testimony he recommended his followers to "beware of the ministers that have accepted of this toleration, and all others that bend that way, and follow them not, for the sun hath gone down upon them<sup>2</sup>." Archbishop Patterson often visited him, and on his last visit declared "his sorrow for his being so tenacious," and said, "it had been a great loss he had been of such principles, for he was a pretty lad<sup>3</sup>;" meaning a man of talent.

THOSE VERY MEN who alone reaped the benefit of the king's indulgences were the first to lift up their heel against him; whilst the established clergy, who were really the sufferers, attempted in quietness to explain to their people the true nature and the real sin and danger of schism and heresy. And, says Mr. Skinner, "it was repeatedly observed at the time, that while the churchmen, who were the only sufferers by this indulgence, were in their station vigilant and zealous against the threatening increase of popery, the presbyterians, though they knew this was the design at the bottom, were generally silent upon that delicate point, as not choosing to give offence to those on whose account they had met with so much favour. Indeed, the situation of the established clergy at this time, in the discharge of their functions, was of a most ticklish and embarrassing nature. On the one hand, any particular appearance of zeal against the errors and corruptions of the church of Rome, was considered as affronting the king and exposing them to the severity of that legal power which had already chastised the bishops of Glasgow and Dunkeld. On the other hand, the presbyterians, taking hold of the comprehensive in-

<sup>1</sup> Scots Worthies, 438.<sup>2</sup> Cloud of Witnesses, 328.<sup>3</sup> Scots Worthies, 413.





dulgence, gave the parochial ministers all the disurbance they could, by trumping up accusations against them, and fomenting malicious inquiries into their moral character. Such was the posture of our established church between the weight of popish jealousy upon the office, and the insults of presbyterian malevolence upon the reputation of her clergy; and all the support they had under these different attacks, which the laws could not screen them from, was the maintenance of a good cause, and the comfort of a good conscience<sup>1</sup>.

A PROCLAMATION was issued, announcing the birth of the "most serene and high-born prince, the PRINCE AND STEWARD OF SCOTLAND," which event took place on the 10th of June. The days appointed for a public thanksgiving were the 21st of June for the diocese of Edinburgh, and the 28th for the other parts of the kingdom; and Wodrow congratulates himself that the presbyterians were not called on to observe it<sup>2</sup>.

THE LAST ACTION that the presbyterians had with his majesty's troops was on the 20th of June, at Carbelly-path, in Ayrshire, and the diocese of Glasgow. David Houston, one of the "vagrant preachers," had gone over to Ireland, and was there arrested, and sent back to Ayr; and as a party of military were conducting him to Edinburgh, "a good number" of presbyterian rustics collected, and resolved to rescue him. They attacked the soldiers, several of whom were killed, and others severely wounded; a great many also of the presbyterians were killed, among whom "was a singularly pious man."

THE KING issued another declaration, for liberty of conscience in England, on the 27th of April, in which that of the preceding year was recited; and on the 4th of May he passed an order in council, commanding this declaration to be read in all churches and chapels in the kingdom; and further, he ordered the bishops to cause it to be sent and distributed throughout their several dioceses, to be read accordingly. The effect of father Petre's admission into the privy council was the insulting and degradation of the clergy of the church of England. On this occasion Petre used very contumelious expressions towards them in the exultation of his joy at making them instrumental to their own degradation, by actively concurring in forwarding a measure to which they felt conscientious objections. The clergy "highly disapproved of the declaration; they had given great offence to James by the activity they had shown in their writings and discourses, in

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 510-11.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 441.





opposing the dissemination of popery; and by their influence and exertions they opposed the most effectual obstacles to the success of his designs. The device, therefore, of making them instrumental in forwarding a measure to which they were known to be decidedly adverse, seemed calculated, above every other, to gratify his resentment against them, and to humble them in the eyes of the people<sup>1</sup>."

THE ORDER was published in the London Gazette, but it was not conveyed in the usual manner, through the archbishops and bishops, to their clergy; "the eyes of the whole nation were fixed on the prelates," to see how they would act in this extraordinary crisis. Burnet says, "The archbishop of Canterbury, Sancroft, resolved, upon this occasion, to act suitably to his post and character." He found that the bishops and clergy were all agreed not to read the declaration; and the bishops of St. Asaph, Ely, Chichester, Bath and Wells, Peterborough, and Bristol, met at Lambeth Palace, besides a number of the London clergy. After full consideration it was resolved, that the order for reading the declaration should not be complied with; but that a petition should be presented to the king, shewing him the reasons that determined them not to obey the order in council. The exercise of the dispensing power created so much alarm, that even the non-conformist ministers in London laid aside their hostility to the church, and urged the clergy to make a firm stand for religion and liberty. After long consultation a petition was drawn up, and signed by the archbishop and the six bishops who were present. It is as follows:—

"THAT THE GREAT averseness they find in themselves to the distributing and publishing, in all their churches, your majesty's late declaration for liberty of conscience, proceedeth not from any want of duty and obedience to your majesty, our holy mother, the church of England, being both in her principles and constant practice unquestionably loyal, and having (to her great honour) been more than once publicly acknowledged to be so by your gracious majesty, nor yet from any want of due tenderness to dissenters, in relation to whom they are willing to come to such a temper as shall be thought fit, when that matter shall be considered and settled in parliament and convocation; but among many other considerations, from this especially, because the declaration is founded upon such a dispensing power as hath often been declared illegal in parliament, and particularly in the years 1662 and 1672, and

<sup>1</sup> D'Oyley's Life of Sancroft, 153.



in the beginning of your majesty's reign; and it is a matter of so great moment and consequence to the whole nation, both in church and state, that your petitioners cannot in prudence, however, or conscience, so far make themselves parties to it as the distribution of it all over the nation, and the solemn publication of it once and again, even in God's house, and in the time of divine service, must amount to in common and reasonable construction. Your petitioners therefore most humbly and earnestly beseech your majesty, that you will be graciously pleased not to insist upon their distributing and reading your majesty's said declaration<sup>1</sup>.

HIS MAJESTY was very much displeased with this paper, and called it a standard of rebellion, and said it was a great surprise to him. They all disclaimed with horror the thoughts of rebellion; but the king insisted it was nothing else. Bishop Kenn said—"Sir, I hope you will give *that liberty to us* which you allow to all mankind;" the bishop of Peterborough said—"Sir, you allow liberty of conscience to all mankind; the reading of this declaration is *against our* conscience." The king made no answer to this appeal, but said he would keep the paper, for it tended to rebellion. He added, that he had been informed of their designs before, but did not believe it, neither did he expect such usage from the church of England, especially from some of the petitioners there; however, if he changed his mind they should hear from him; if not, he expected his commands to be obeyed, and they should be made to feel what it was to disobey him. They answered, "*God's will be done!*" The lord chancellor Jeffreys told the king, after the departure of the bishops, that the petition might be adjudged tumultuous, consequently a seditious libel, and therefore liable to a legal prosecution. In pursuance of the chancellor's advice, the bishops were sent for to the council on the same day, the 9th of June, and because they refused to enter into recognizances to appear in the court of King's Bench to answer the misdemeanour in framing and presenting the said petition or libel, as it was called, they were committed to the Tower.

"IN THE MEANTIME," says Dr. D'Oyley, "the bishops were cheered by the expressions and approbation which reached them from every quarter, for the firmness and spirit they had displayed." Evelyn states, "that the behaviour of the bishops was universally applauded, and reconciled many adverse par-

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II. 179. — D'Oyley's Life of Sancroft, 159. — Salmon's Chronology, i. 244. — Owen Times, iii. 226.



ties, the papists only excepted, who were exceedingly perplexed." Hume has best described the extraordinary excitement of all ranks of the people upon this unprecedented scene: he says—"The people were already aware of the danger to which the prelates were exposed, and were raised to the highest pitch of anxiety and attention with regard to the issue of this extraordinary affair. But when they beheld these fathers of the church brought from court under the custody of a guard, when they saw them embarked in vessels on the river, and conveyed towards the Tower, all their affections for liberty, all their zeal for religion, blazed up at once, and they flew to behold this affecting spectacle. The whole shore was covered with crowds of prostrate spectators, who at once implored the blessing of those holy pastors, and addressed their petitions towards Heaven for protection during this extreme danger to which their country and their religion stood exposed. Even the soldiers, seized with the contagion of the same spirit, flung themselves on their knees before the distressed prelates, and craved the benediction of those criminals whom they were appointed to guard. Some persons ran into the water, that they might participate more nearly in those blessings which the prelates were distributing on all around them. The bishops themselves, during this triumphant suffering, augmented the general favour by the most lowly submissive deportment; and they still exhorted the people to fear God, honour the king, and maintain their loyalty; expressions more animating than the most inflammatory speeches. And no sooner had they entered the precincts of the Tower than they hurried to chapel, in order to return thanks for those afflictions which Heaven, in defence of its holy cause, had thought them worthy to endure<sup>1</sup>."

THE SECOND lesson appointed for that day's evening service, the 8th of June (the 6th chapter of the Second Epistle to the Corinthians), was peculiarly applicable to the present case of the imprisoned prelates, and by many people it was thought a special interference of providence—"I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation I succoured thee: behold, *now is the accepted time*; behold, *now is the day of salvation*. Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed; but in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, *in imprisonments*." On the following day persons of all ranks, from the highest to the lowest,

<sup>1</sup> History of England, viii. 269, 270.





went in crowds to condole with the imprisoned prelates, to express their gratitude for their patriotism, and to exhort them to persevere in the course they had so nobly commenced. But what is most remarkable, a deputation of ten of the non-conformist ministers waited on them, in admiration of their christian meekness and fortitude, and to encourage them to a firm perseverance. This so incensed the king, that he sent for the ministers, and condescended to reprimand them; but they answered, that they could not but adhere to the bishops, as men constant to the protestant religion. Mackintosh states, that Jeffries and the popish lords used every argument to persuade the king that the birth of the prince of Wales afforded a favourable opportunity for signalling that season of national joy by a general pardon, which would comprehend the prelates in the Tower, without involving any apparent concession on the part of the crown. The king would have been glad to have extricated himself so easily from this difficulty, but his secret advisers, Petre and others, prevailed over sober and rational counsels. The bishops were imprisoned on the 8th, and the prince of Wales was born on the 10th; and thus the customary official attendance of the archbishop of Canterbury was effectually prevented. The Whig party had circulated a rumour, that the birth was supposititious, and the public now suspected that the king had purposely contrived his imprisonment, to prevent the archbishop's attendance, and in order to preclude the detection of the fraud<sup>1</sup>.

ON FRIDAY, 15th of June, the seven bishops were brought up by writ of *habeas corpus*, from the Tower to the bar of the King's Bench. During their passage on the water they were greeted with acclamations and prayers for their safety by the people on both sides of the river; and the multitude formed a lane for them from the waterside to Westminster Hall, and kneeling as they passed, begged their blessing. The archbishop laid his hands on those who were nearest to him, all of whom were dissolved in tears, he exhorted them to continue stedfast in the faith and in their loyalty. They pleaded Not Guilty to the information laid against them, and they were admitted to bail, on giving their own recognizances to appear from day to day till legally discharged; the archbishop in £200, and the other bishops in £100 each. Their trial was appointed for the 29th of June, which is St. Peter's day, and some thought it ominous, because they feared St. Peter's successors might prevail; whereas others said the trial was, whe-

<sup>1</sup> D'Oyley's *Life of Sancroft*, 174, 175.



ther or not St Peter's *doctrine* should continue among us<sup>1</sup>. With one exception the jury were unanimous. Arnold, the king's brewer, dissented from the verdict, and occasioned considerable delay, because he was afraid to join in a verdict against the crown, lest he should lose his appointment!<sup>2</sup> In consequence of this man's sin of avarice and inordinate self-affection, the verdict was not given till the next morning, and the jury were shut up all night: their verdict was, NOT GUILTY. This occasioned unusual rejoicings, not only in London, but in the army, and also in the navy; and the king having ordered mass to be said on board the fleet, the priests ran considerable danger of being thrown overboard<sup>3</sup>.

THE KING hoped that the verdict would have been quite different, and he went on the morning of the acquittal to the camp at Hounslow, to overawe the army by his presence, as the soldiers were in a state of the utmost excitement. The general joy and satisfaction soon reached the camp, and the soldiers gave three hearty cheers, which astonished the king, who was then in the general lord Feversham's tent. He sent the earl to inquire the occasion of such an unexpected signal of mirth: on his return the earl informed his majesty, that it was nothing but only the soldiers' joy at the acquittal of the bishops. Their joy, and the general's indifference, were very displeasing to the king, and he said, "and call you this nothing?" The king deprived sir Richard Holloway and sir John Powell, judges of the King's Bench, for having given their opinions in favour of the bishops, and against the Court. The Court of High Commission issued an order to all archdeacons, commissaries, and officials, to inquire in what churches and chapels his majesty's declaration had been read, and to transmit an account of them against the 16th of August next; whereupon the bishop of Rochester refused to act any longer on the commission. On the 24th of August the king declared his resolution, in council, to call a new parliament, and writs were issued to be returned on the 27th of November. The king could not now rely on the army. He proposed to the officers and men to sign a writing, in which they were to engage, to the utmost of their power, to procure the repeal of the test and penal laws. This was ordered to be offered to every regiment singly, and the first on which the experiment was tried was the earl of Litchfield's. The major having opened the matter to them, commanded all those who would not com-

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, iii. 233.<sup>2</sup> Note to Own Times, iii. 236.<sup>3</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 245.



ply with his majesty's desire to lay down their arms. To the king's astonishment, who was present, the whole regiment grounded their arms, except two captains and a few soldiers, who were papists. After a short pause the king ordered them to take up their arms again, remarking, that for the future he would not do them the honour to ask their advice; and dreading a similar result, the matter was dropt, and no other regiment was tried; but six Irish regiments were immediately transported to England<sup>1</sup>.

THE KING published a proclamation on the 21st of September, in which he declared that he intended to give a legal establishment, by act of parliament, to liberty of conscience; that he would inviolably preserve the church of England; and that he was contented that the papists should remain incapable of sitting in the House of Commons. On the 23d he received certain intelligence, that the military preparations going on in Holland were intended against England. He therefore issued a proclamation on the 28th, announcing the expected invasion, and requiring all persons, civil and military, to prepare for the defence of their country; and the writs that had been issued for calling a parliament were revoked. Next day a general pardon was proclaimed, and the bishop of London's suspension was removed. He now, when it was too late, made haste to undo all his former illegal and arbitrary proceedings; he restored the city of London's charter; dissolved the High Commission Court; displaced the popish magistrates, and replaced the protestants, whom he had deprived of office; he issued an order to restore Magdalen College to its rights, and gave directions for restoring corporations to their ancient charters, liberties, rights, and franchises. He also commanded the primate to compose a form of prayer, to be used during the apprehension of an invasion. Viscount Preston was made principal secretary of state, and the earl of Sunderland was dismissed, it having been found that he had betrayed the secrets of state to the prince of Orange<sup>2</sup>.

THE KING now found that his secret counsellor, Petre, had pushed him to the verge of a precipice. With the view, in this state of alarm, of extricating himself, he sent for the archbishop of Canterbury and some other bishops, and anxiously asked their advice. On their being admitted to the royal presence, the primate addressed his majesty with becoming meek-

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 244.—Burnet's Own Times.—D'Oyley's Life of Sancroft.—Life of James II.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 245, 246.





ness, gravity, and courage, to the following effect:—requesting his majesty that he would annul the Court of High Commission; that the king should restore all things to the state in which he found them at his accession, by committing all places of trust to protestants, and to redress such grievances as were most complained of; that he would refrain from exercising the dispensing power; that he would restore the universities to their rights and privileges; that he would suppress the schools established by the jesuits; that he would inhibit the four Romish vicars apostolic from exercising their functions in England; that he would issue no more *quo warrantos* against corporations; that he would immediately fill the vacant sees in England and Ireland; that he would no more exercise the dispensing power; that he would restore their charters to the corporations, and summon a new parliament; and that his majesty would permit some of his bishops to lay such arguments before him, as, through the blessing of God, may bring his majesty back to the communion of the church of England, into whose Catholic faith he was baptized, in which he was educated, and to which it was their daily prayers to Almighty God that his majesty might be reunited. The king thanked the bishops for their advice, and promised to comply with it; and he soon gave proofs of his sincerity; but his concessions to the necessity of his affairs came too late, and they had not the desired effect<sup>1</sup>.

ON THE 15th of October the prince of Wales was baptized in the chapel royal, St. James's, by the Romish ritual, by the name of James Francis Edward. The pope was his godfather, and was represented by his Nuncio Ferdinando D'Adda, titular archbishop of Amasia; and the queen dowager was his godmother. At the same time the deposition, of forty persons of honour were taken as to the certainty of his birth, and enrolled in Chancery, of whom twenty-three were protestants<sup>2</sup>. But, says archdeacon Echard, "to such a poor ebb was the unhappy king's credit reduced at this time, so that the body of his subjects would neither believe what he said himself, nor any of those who swore in his favour<sup>3</sup>." Bishop Burnet has disgraced himself by a number of inconsistent falsehoods respecting the birth of the prince of Wales. First, he asserts that the queen was not pregnant; then that she miscarried; and again, that a child was supposed to have been

<sup>1</sup> D'Oyley's Life of Sancroft, 204-207.—Echard's Revolution, 143.—Life of James II. 201-203.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 246.

<sup>3</sup> History of the Revolution, pp. 147-148.





introduced into her majesty's bedchamber in a warming-pan. Fourthly, perhaps no child to have been carried from the bedroom into the next room. Fifthly, the child seen by all in that room to have died. Sixthly, a substituted child to have died. Thus, as Swift observes, we have three children; the new-born infant seen in the next room by all, the substituted child, and the prince of Wales. It is lamentable that such a man as Burnet should have disgraced himself by the recital of these stupid and inconsistent falsehoods<sup>1</sup>.

NONE IN SCOTLAND were acquainted with the preparations making in Holland, except a few presbyterian ministers who were in correspondence with their brethren in that country. The prince of Orange still kept up appearances with his father-in-law and uncle, and James first received intimation of the prince's views from the French court. Mr. M'Cormick says, "That consummate politician, who well knew that the success of an invasion would depend upon the secrecy with which it was conducted, and the expedition with which it was executed, had fully digested the whole project in his own mind, had formed his resolution, had begun, had almost finished his preparations, whilst he appeared with reluctance to hearken to the invitations he daily received, or to suffer any mention of it in his presence. Under various pretexts, which the situation of affairs then afforded, an army was ready to embark, and a fleet prepared to receive them, before William published his intentions, or the world began to suspect them. And the infatuated James scarcely saw the cloud gathering, when it burst with vengeance on his head<sup>2</sup>."

IN OCTOBER it began to be surmised in Scotland that the prince of Orange meditated an invasion of the British dominions, and the privy council of Scotland sent up on the 3d an offer of their lives and fortunes to his majesty, and asked for direction how to act. He thanked them for their offer, and directed them to arrest all suspected persons, to levy forces, and bestow commissions in the militia. About the middle of October, William's manifesto made its appearance in Scotland. All the faults and arbitrary proceedings of the government of both Charles and James were ostentatiously pointed out and aggravated; and his wife's proximity to the crown afforded him a plausible pretext for inquiring into the birth of the prince of Wales, whom he pretended to believe was a surreptitious child. It of course made great professions of regard for the interests of Great Britain, and disclaimed all intention of seiz-

<sup>1</sup> Note to Burnet's *Own Times*, iii. 257.

<sup>2</sup> *Life of Carstares*, 32.



ing the crown; but only of mediating betwixt the king and his people. It was in substance declared, that he and the princess laid no claim to the crown *at present*: that the design of this expedition was, that the late king's murderers be brought to trial in parliament; that the impostor [the prince of Wales] be sent back to his natural parents; that the succession to the crown be secured by the administration of six peers under the king, whereof the lord Halifax to be one; that the dispensing power be left to the parliament; that the ecclesiastical commission be examined and tried in a free parliament; that the church of England, as by law established, be confirmed and restored to her freedom; that all offenders be brought to their trial and punished; that liberty of conscience be given to all dissenters except to papists; that there be a free parliament; that papists be excluded from all public trust, offices, and employments; and that the charge of the present expedition be paid by the king. In consequence the council issued a proclamation for raising and rendezvousing the militia, and setting up beacons on North Berwick-law, Arthur's Seat, the Bass, St. Abb's Head, and other places; and directed the bishops to cause their clergy to read this proclamation from their pulpits. Immediately on the certainty of the prince of Orange's movements being known, the whole of the regular army was marched into England to reinforce the army there.

THE NEWS of the prince's invasion diffused universal delight among the presbyterians, whose secret correspondents in Holland had long prepared them for it; but the members of the established church were proportionably cast down and alarmed. The University of St. Andrews prepared a loyal address to the king, which was signed by archbishop Ross, as chancellor, and by all the heads of colleges and the professors, testifying in strong language, and with abundance of argument, their stedfast adherence to the christian principles of loyalty and obedience to their lawful sovereign. They advert to the constant liberality of the royal family of the Stuarts to their church and university; they expatiate on the nature and principles of government generally, God, not the people, being the only source of power—absolute power, they say, must reside somewhere in every regularly constituted society; they shew the superiority of an hereditary monarchy over every other form of government, and that more evil is to be feared from popular excesses than from absolute power; the monarchy never to be resisted, and to be disobeyed only when it opposes Scripture. And, in conclusion, they say—"And we dare, with the sincerest boldness of our honest hearts, assure your ma-



jesty, that the just and never unfashionable notions of our duty, with the entire trust and confidence which we repose in your majesty, shall ever preserve us from being diverted or frightened from our love and obedience, and shall excite our perpetual prayers for the happiness of your majesty and your kingdoms<sup>1</sup>."

THESE WERE NOT mere words of course; they were the genuine sentiments of the church catholic, in all times and places, from the days of St. Paul<sup>2</sup>, and will be "till the last syllable of recorded time," except where she has been polluted by the popish and presbyterian heresies. As soon as the primate had signed this address, he hurried to the capital, and there finding all the bishops, he assembled them on the 3d of November, and they signed the following loyal and affectionate address. Wodrow, of course, calls it flattering and time-serving, and compares it with the petition of the seven bishops of England, which, he says, was "heartily against popery," whereas he asserts that the Scottish prelates were "time-servers, court flatterers, and ready for any thing, to fall in with popery itself, to please the king, and keep their benefices." Our readers will, however, have observed that more than one of them were sufferers for their opposition to popery, and two of them were actually deprived of their bishopricks for not falling in with that heresy.

"MAY IT PLEASE YOUR MOST SACRED MAJESTY,—We prostrate ourselves to pay our most devout thanks and adoration to the sovereign majesty of heaven and earth for preserving your sacred life and person, so frequently exposed to the greatest hazards, and as often delivered, and you miraculously prospered with glory and victory in defence of the rights and honour of your majesty's august brother, and of these kingdoms; and that by his merciful goodness, the raging of the sea and the madness of unreasonable men have been stilled and calmed, and your majesty, as the darling of heaven, peaceably seated on the thrones of your royal ancestors, whose long, illustrious, and unparalleled line, is the greatest glory of this your ancient kingdom. We pay our most humble gratitude to your majesty for the repeated assurances of your royal protection to our national church and religion, as the laws have established them, which are very suitable to the gracious countenance, encouragement, and protection, which your majesty

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow.—Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 512.—Lyon's History of St. Andrews, ii. 106.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xiii. 1-7.





was pleased to afford to our church and order, whilst we were happy in your presence amongst us. We magnify the divine mercy, in blessing your majesty with a son, and us with a prince, whom we pray, heaven may bless and preserve to sway your royal sceptres after you, and that he may inherit with your dominions the illustrious and heroic virtues of his august and most serene parents. We are amazed to hear of the danger of an invasion from Holland, which excites our prayers for an universal repentance to all orders of men, that God may yet spare his people, preserve your royal person, and prevent the effusion of christian blood, and to give such success to your majesty's arms, that all who invade your majesty's just and undoubted rights, and disturb or interrupt the peace of your realms, may be disappointed and clothed with shame, so that on your royal head the crown may still flourish. As by the grace of God, we shall preserve in ourselves a firm and unshaken loyalty, so we shall be careful and zealous to promote in all your subjects an intemperate and steadfast allegiance to your majesty, as an essential part of their religion, and of the glory of our profession, not doubting, but that God, in his great mercy, who hath so often preserved and delivered your majesty, will still preserve and deliver you, by giving you the hearts of your subjects, and the necks of your enemies. So pray we, who, in all humility, are—Arthur St. Andrews, John Glasgow, Alexander Edinburgen, John Gallovidien, John Dunkelden, George Aberdonen, William Moravien, James Rossen, James Brechinen, Robert Dunblanen, Archibald Sodoren, Andrew Arcaden, Andrew Caithness, Alexander *elect* of Argyle."

THIS LOYAL and affectionate address of these confessors for the truth calls forth the insolent remark of a modern non-intrusionist, and the eulogist of a murderer—"Our only regret is, that *a door so wide* was ever opened to the entrance of such men into the revolution church [the present establishment]. To *this* I am disposed to ascribe most of the evils which soon sprung up in our church; and an accommodating policy has from that period to the present aggravated the mischief<sup>1</sup>." Dr. Cook also, from whom we might have expected better things, in his remarks on this address, shews that he inherits all the genuine sentiments of the covenant, although the forms of modern civilization require him to give utterance to the principles of the covenant in smoother language than in that

<sup>1</sup> Burn's Note on Wodrow, iv. 469.



of the Camerons and Cargills of former days. To the foregoing address the primate received from lord Melfort the king's answer, dated at Whitehall, November the 15th:—

“JAMES R.—Right, &c., We have received your most dutiful letter of the third day of November, in which we are glad to see, that you are far from being of the number of those spiritual lords by whom the prince of Orange pretends to have been invited: as we have likewise had repeated assurances from all the bishops of England, of their innocency in that and duty to us; we have now by this, thought fit to tell you, how sensible we are of your zeal for our service, and for the dutiful expressions of your loyalty to us, in a time when all arts are used to seduce our subjects from their duty to us. We do likewise take notice of your diligence in your duty, by your inculcating to those under your charge, these principles which have always been owned, taught, and published by that protestant loyal church you are members of: we do assure you of our royal protection to you, your religion, church, and clergy, and that we will be careful of your concerns, whenever there shall be a suitable occasion offered to us: you and every one of you, being most perfectly in our royal protection and favour, &c.”

THE PRINCE OF ORANGE was one of those uncommon men who, in the good providence of God, are raised up at extraordinary times, either as scourges or blessings to mankind, as the case may be. At the present juncture he was destined to check the ambition of the French king, who grasped at universal dominion. He appeared at the head of the counsels of Europe against France; for to him war and activity both of mind and body were his greatest delight. But still, says the historian of the Revolution, “he had a peculiar felicity from the present situation of affairs, that whatever might possibly be the effects of temper and ambition, seemed purely the result of accident and necessity; and the high pretensions of restoring the balance of power and the invaded liberty of oppressed nations, must at least give *a beautiful varnish* to all his undertakings<sup>1</sup>.” One of these felicitous circumstances was the death of the archbishop of Cologne just at this precise nick of time. The succession to this palatinate was likely to involve France and Austria in war. This gave William a reasonable pretext for increasing and concentrating his army; and when the British ambassador remonstrated with him, he

<sup>1</sup> Archdeacon Echard's History of the Revolution, p. 120.



led him to believe that he intended to invade France. It is a curious fact that the most bigotted of the popish governments, nay, even Rome itself, concurred in the protection of the protestant church of England from the measures of her own sovereign to papalize her, and at this particular juncture the *court* of Rome was in opposition to the *church* of Rome. The ambition of the French king, and his invasion of Germany, "opened a new scene of action, and brought a new turn or affairs, that proved highly necessary, or wonderfully commodious, for the relief of England<sup>1</sup>." It appears from cardinal D'Estrees's two letters, published by Dalrymple in the appendix to his Memoirs, that the pope highly approved of the league against France, and that the intended alteration of the English government was spoken of at Rome *near a year* before it took place<sup>2</sup>.

A GREAT NUMBER of the nobility and gentry applied to the prince, and a secret correspondence was maintained for some time betwixt them and the court of the Hague. In the month of July, one Flight brought over eight score of letters to as many of the nobility and gentry, and carried back answers, with the greatest despatch and safety; and this correspondence was facilitated by lord Dunblane, who commanded a frigate. He betrayed his master's interest, and crossed and recrossed the sea to carry despatches and resolutions. The earl of Shrewsbury, also an eminent convert from popery, mortgaged his estate for a large sum, and went over to the prince with the offer both of his sword and his purse. Yet William pondered long on the hazard as well as on the grounds for this invasion before he finally resolved upon it; and when pressed by the English at his court, he said "he must satisfy both his honour and conscience before he could enter upon so great a design, which, if it miscarried, must bring ruin both to England and to Holland. He protested that no private ambition, nor particular resentment, could prevail upon him to make a breach with so near a relation, or to engage in a war, of which the consequence must be of the last importance both to the interests of Europe and to the protestant religion: therefore he expected more formal and direct invitations." But when he was told of the danger of trusting such a secret to great numbers, he replied, "that if such a number of men as might be supposed to understand the *sense of the nation*, would do it, he would acquiescè in it." After the trial of the bishops and the birth of the prince of Wales, such a number, alleging they understood

<sup>1</sup> Echard, ii. 125.  
VOL. III.

<sup>2</sup> Editor's Note to Burnet's Own Times, iii. 196.  
2 Y





the sense of the nation, did give him the wished-for invitation, and he acquiesced, nothing loath. His confidential agent, Zuytlestein, brought him, besides, such advices from England of the fermentation of the nation, and the discontent, almost amounting to mutiny, in the army and navy, as fully and finally fixed him in his purpose. The same persons who invited the prince made application to the states general, who very graciously listened to their arguments<sup>1</sup>. The royalist party charged lord Sunderland with having betrayed the king's counsels to the traitors in Holland, and to the prince of Orange; that he had diverted the offer of the assistance of 30,000 men from France, and generally with assisting the prince. Lord Dartmouth says, "The duke of Chandos told me, as a thing he knew to be true, that the king of France wrote to king James, to let him know that he had *certain* intelligence that the king's design was upon England, and that he would immediately besiege Maestricht, which would hinder the states from parting with any of their forces for such an expedition; but that the secret must be kept inviolably from any of his ministers. Soon after the states ordered 6000 men to be sent to Maestricht; upon which the king of France desired to know if king James had revealed it to any body, for he himself had to none but Louvoy, and if he had betrayed him, he should treat him accordingly. King James's answer was, that he never told it to any body *but lord Sunderland*, who, he was very sure, was too much in his interest to have discovered it. Upon which the king of France said, he saw plainly that king James was a man *cut out for destruction*, and there was no possibility of helping him<sup>2</sup>." The treachery must lie betwixt Louvoy, whom the king of France trusted, or Sunderland, whom the British king trusted; but the greater probability is that the *latter* nobleman was the traitor.

AFTER WILLIAM had persevered with the utmost diligence and the most profound secrecy, and James had permitted himself to be deceived by treacherous advisers into a fatal security, if not to the most demented infatuation, his mad attempt to papalize his dominions vanished "like the baseless fabric of a vision." On the 19th of October the prince of Orange sailed from the Brill, with 50 men of war and 300 transports, with about 15,000 land forces, accompanied by a number of English noblemen and gentlemen. The small amount of the force that he carried with him evidently shewed that he did not depend

<sup>1</sup> Echard's Revolution, 126, 128.

<sup>2</sup> Editor's Note to Burnet's Own Times, iii. 315.





on them alone for the conquest of three mighty kingdoms; but that the amount of his friends was so great as to render opposition impossible. The fleet was driven back by a terrible storm; and in order to deceive the infatuated British king, it was announced that many of the vessels had been lost, some thousands of the troops drowned, that an epidemic had got among the remainder, and that it would be impossible to proceed with the expedition till next spring. The damage in reality was very inconsiderable, and the fleet sailed again on the first of November, and when approaching Dover, intelligence was brought to him that the English fleet lay at the Nore. He then tacked and stood down channel, and on the fifth of November disembarked his army at Torbay, and marched directly to Exeter, of which city he took possession, and lodged in the dean's house. Next day, in a full auditory, his declaration was read, which was in substance—to vindicate the religion and liberties of England from popery, and from the arbitrary and dispensing power which had lately been assumed; to assert the succession to the crown; to inquire into the birth of the pretended prince of Wales; and, briefly, to redress all other irregularities in ecclesiastical, civil, and military things, which, he said, were so great that the nation was in danger of being ruined by them<sup>1</sup>.

ON THE 1st of November, king James again sent for the bishops, and demanded whether or not they had invited the prince of Orange into the kingdom, as he asserted in his declaration. The bishop of London, who had joined in that invitation, although the others had not, evasively answered—"I am confident the rest of the bishops would as readily answer in the negative as myself." The archbishop denied all knowledge of it in the strongest terms; but they all refused to sign a paper declaring their abhorrence of the invasion, unless his majesty would join as many temporal lords with them as could be called together. The Scottish bishops, however, readily signed a paper expressing their abhorrence at the prince's invasion of the kingdom. The king was again urged to call a free parliament; but this he declined, saying, justly, how could it be *free* when a foreign enemy had possession of part of the kingdom, and could influence most of the elections?<sup>2</sup>

KING JAMES shewed a firm resolution to beat back the prince. He had ordered up the whole of the standing forces from Scotland, and his English army was ordered, with a large train of

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II. 205-6.—Salmon's Chron.

<sup>2</sup> Life of James II.—Salmon's Chron. i. 246.



artillery, to march from Hounslow Heath, and the earl of Tyrconnel, lord lieutenant of Ireland, sent 3000 men over to his assistance. The army rendezvoused at Salisbury, and on the 19th the king joined it there, and lodged at the bishop's palace. The lord Cornbury, son of the earl of Clarendon, with three regiments of infantry, deserted to the prince; and his example was followed by the king's nephew the duke of Grafton, son of the late king by the duchess of Cleveland, the lord Churchill, and several other persons of eminence, with a large body of the king's troops. Lord Cornbury had been bred at Geneva! and when his father, the earl of Clarendon, heard of his desertion, he exclaimed—"O that my son should be a rebel! the Lord in his mercy look upon me, and enable me to support myself under this most grievous calamity<sup>1</sup>." The king published a proclamation offering a pardon to all the deserters, provided they would quit the prince of Orange's service and return to their duty. Besides these desertions the king was informed that several of the nobility were raising forces in his rear, with the view of joining the invader. He therefore returned to London, when he received the mortifying intelligence that his son-in-law, the prince of Denmark, his daughter, the lady Anne, the duke of Ormond, and others, on whose fidelity he depended, had also deserted to the enemy<sup>2</sup>.

HE SENT the queen and the young prince over to France; and on the 8th of December he sent the marquis of Halifax, the earl of Nottingham, and lord Godolphin, to the prince's head-quarters at Hungerford, to offer to call a parliament to settle all the differences that had arisen betwixt him and his people. William's answer was in the language of a conqueror. He dictated terms to his majesty which virtually dethroned him, but with which the king thought it inconsistent and dishonourable for a crowned head to comply. On the evening of the 10th of December, the king sent for the lord mayor of London, and charged him with the care and protection of the city, and ordered the privy council to meet the next morning. In this time of trouble and dismay his majesty was confounded and perplexed betwixt good and bad advice, harassed in his body, disordered in his mind, and disheartened with ominous apprehensions, the effects perhaps of consciousness, as well as superstition<sup>3</sup>.

THE KING entered into a deep consultation with his evil genius, father Petre, and his other popish councillors, who had

<sup>1</sup> Editor's Note to Burnet's Own Times, iii. 331.

<sup>2</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, iv.

<sup>3</sup> Echard's Hist. of the Revolution, 174.



brought him to this crisis. They abhorred the thought of a *free* parliament, well knowing that such a parliament would propose laws that would effectually bar the return of popery; but they shewed that they were resolved to sacrifice both their sovereign and the liberties of their country, rather than forego the establishment of popery. They represented to his majesty the dishonour of submitting to the terms dictated by the prince of Orange, and magnified the power and zeal of the king of France. They persuaded him to break faith with his people, and not to summon a parliament, contrary to his solemn promises; but rather to trust to the arm of flesh, and fly to France, than to submit to a victorious prince and an offended parliament. Their advice prevailed, and his majesty resolved to hear no more proposals, but to abandon his subjects, and to throw himself into the arms of that prince whose offer of thirty thousand men he had declined. It has since appeared that this advice had been resolved on a fortnight before, and was sent in writing to the king, at Salisbury, by the jesuits and priests, who had wrought his ruin. The king paid no attention to it at the time when he was at the head of a gallant army that might have driven the Dutchmen into the sea; but when the soldiers dishonoured their military oaths and character, and deserted their sovereign in the hour of his utmost need, the plan recurred to his thoughts, and on the night of the 10th of December, without consulting any one, he adopted their fatal advice: "In which little compass," says Mr. Echard, "he brought about *four* things that can hardly be paralleled in history. The *first* was his sending a letter to his general, the earl of Feversham, encouraging him to disband his army, which took effect. The *next* was, the ordering all the writs to be burnt that were not sent out for the calling of the parliament, and entering a caveat against those that were already sent out; the *third* was throwing the broad seal into the Thames; just as he was finishing the *fourth*, his leaving his palace and making the best of his way towards France<sup>1</sup>."

APPREHENSIVE of falling into the hands of his enemies, and having the bloody fate of his father, and of his predecessor Richard II., before his eyes, his majesty communicated his intentions to none of the jesuits, who still clung to him as to their last support; but of his own voluntary act, withdrew himself from the government. Between two and three o'clock of the morning of the 11th of December, his majesty took barge at the Privy Stairs, accompanied only by sir Edward

<sup>1</sup> History of the Revolution, 190.





Hales, Mr. Sheldon, and Labaddie, who the night before had conducted the queen with the prince of Wales to her vessel. He went on board a small ship, which immediately put to sea; but having been forced by foul weather upon the coast of Kent, he was put ashore at Feversham on the 14th, where, being suspected to be a jesuit, he was seized by a rude rabble, who used his majesty with great indignity, and rifled him of all his money and some jewels that he had concealed about his person. Some one, however, recognised his majesty, and informed the mob of his rank; when they shewed, in their rude manner, the utmost sympathy with fallen greatness, expressed their penitence, and offered to return his property. James was affected at their rude loyalty, and with princely generosity forgave their sin of ignorance, and accepted the jewels, but desired them to keep the money. Here seems to be the end of the Revolution; for what the king did afterwards was forced, and therefore not to be compared to this voluntary act, any otherwise than as it was a confirmation or reiteration of the same thing<sup>1</sup>.

As soon as it was known that the king had withdrawn, the mob of London fell furiously upon the newly-erected mass-houses, pulled them down, and utterly destroyed them. They likewise made an indiscriminate gaol delivery, and the felons mixing with their deliverers, committed many robberies, especially in the houses of the papists, and even some of the ambassadors' houses did not escape pillage. From interested motives, the friends of the prince of Orange raised a false alarm, simultaneously throughout England and Scotland, of a general massacre being at that moment perpetrated by the Irish troops. It was alleged that they were burning towns, cutting the throats of all the protestants, and worse; that death was the least evil to be expected, for saws, gridirons, protestant bridles, and numberless unmentionable instruments of torture, were said to be provided to destroy those that would not turn papists. This false report put the city of London into the utmost state of alarm, and every man provided arms to defend himself from the Irish papists. This fabrication was intended to prejudice the public mind against the king, and to excite an abhorrence of popery<sup>2</sup>.

WHEN IT became public that the king had taken this fatal

<sup>1</sup> *Life of James II.* 212.—Echard's *Revolution*, 174.—Salmon's *Chronological Historian*, 247.

<sup>2</sup> *Ellis's Letters*, vol. iv.—Salmon's *Chronological Historian*, i. 247.—Echard's *Revolution*, 174.



step of withdrawing from the kingdom, a number of lords, spiritual and temporal, met at the Guildhall, and sent a Declaration to the prince of Orange, suggesting to him the propriety of assembling a parliament as soon as possible. And having received information of the king's detention at Feversham, "they thought it convenient to send certain persons there to attend him, and to signify their earnest desires that he should be pleased to return to his royal palace at London." But before their arrival, the earl of Winchelsea had, with some difficulty, persuaded his majesty to return; he said to his lordship, "the best service you can do me, is to facilitate my departure, and procure means to carry me beyond sea." He was at last prevailed on to stay, but more by constraint than by inclination. This, says Echarde, "was an accident that seemed of no great consequence, yet it begun that turn to which all the difficulties that afterwards disordered the English affairs may justly be imputed." "The manner," he says, "of this departure was surprising to all men of all parties; and it was the conclusion of all the breaches of faith in this reign, particularly that of the promise of his stay and of a free parliament. All this was done without any public reasons given; so that it appeared to the world a voluntary, open, and unforced desertion of the government of England, at least as much as was consistent with a secret and incompatible desire to retain it, and at a time when thousands in the nation would have been glad to have seen an accommodation. And thus in a moment was an army in effect disbanded without money, parliament writs destroyed, the broad seal thrown away, and the people left without a governor, like sheep without a shepherd. And if ever there was a real desertion of a kingdom, and ever a people left to take care of themselves, this was certainly the time<sup>1</sup>."

THE KING arrived at London on the 16th, and was escorted by the inconstant mob, in a triumphal manner, to Whitehall, with acclamations and the greatest demonstrations of joy; and the same night his majesty issued a proclamation against tumults and the demolishing and plundering of houses; and THIS WAS THE LAST REGAL ACT HE EXECUTED IN ENGLAND. There were bonfires and other demonstrations of popular joy, but the infatuated king went *next day publicly to mass*, which was solemnized by the Spanish ambassador's priests; and thus it may be said he sacrificed three crowns for a mass. On the 17th, the Dutch troops took possession of all the posts about

<sup>1</sup> Echarde's Revolution, 190-192.—Salmon's Chronology.—Life of James II.



Whitehall and St. James's; and the same day the king received a communication from his son-in-law, signifying that it would be very convenient, both for the quiet of the city and the safety of his person, that he should remove his court to Ham, where he should be attended by Dutch guards, but perfectly at liberty. When the marquis of Halifax, with other two noblemen, arrived at Whitehall with this delicate message, his majesty had gone to bed; nevertheless, they were admitted to his bed-side. After reading the prince's letter, the king replied that his order should be complied with; but upon second thoughts, his majesty wished, with the prince's permission, to remove to Rochester. He asked if he must get out of bed and travel immediately; but they had the decency to say he might remain till morning. Mr. Dell, however, says, when the prince heard of the king's having been at mass, he "sent the lords Macclesfield and Delamere with a *very sharp letter* to his majesty, signifying that *he expected his immediate departure* to Ham; nor were the peers wanting in expressing their resentment of that action in so improper a conjuncture." The prince was overjoyed at his majesty's having chosen Rochester for his retreat, as he suspected that it was with a design to facilitate his escape out of the kingdom; for he instantly sent an order for his removal to Rochester. No circumstance since his landing at Torbay had so annoyed the prince, or disconcerted his secret intentions, as the king's return from Feversham. As one of the extraordinary signs of the times, tending to develope William's views, he arrested the earl of Feversham for *high treason*, who had been sent by the king, under a flag of truce, with a kind message to invite him to St. James's palace! The princess Anne, in a letter to Mr. Ellis, says, "the king went accordingly [the next day, the 17th], at one o'clock, and lay that night at one Mr. Eckinse's house, an attorney in Gravesend, and about ten next morning set forwards for Rochester. His majesty's barge was followed by ten or twelve boats of the prince's soldiers<sup>1</sup>." At Rochester the king took up his residence at the house of sir Richard Head; and in the afternoon of the same day the prince of Orange arrived at St. James's, attended by Scomberg and a number of nobility and gentry.

THE KING remained several days at Rochester, and on the 23d of December withdrew himself entirely out of the kingdom. He secretly and cautiously passed over to Dover, and

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, vol. iii. 352, 353; iv. 179.—Life of James II. 214.—Salmon's Chronology, 248.





there embarked for Calais, and was kindly received by the king of France. He was accompanied only by Mr. Sheldon and Mr. Delabaddie; but, before leaving, he wrote to lord Feversham, stating, that if he could have relied on his troops, "he might not have been put to the extremity he was then in, and would at least have had one blow for it." He likewise left a paper, written with his own hand, and which he desired might be published, which cannot be read without some emotion.

"THE WORLD cannot wonder at my withdrawing myself this second time. I might have expected somewhat better usage after what I writ to the prince of Orange, by my lord Feversham, and the instructions I gave him. But instead of an answer, such as I might have hoped for, what was I to expect after the usage I received, by the making the said earl a prisoner, against the practice and law of nations; the sending his own guards, at eleven at night, to take possession of the posts at Whitehall, without advertising me in the least manner of it; the sending me at one of the clock at midnight, when I was in bed, *a kind of order*, by three lords, *to be gone out of my own palace* before twelve the same morning? After all this, how could I hope to be safe, so long as I was in the power of one who had not only done this to me, and invaded my kingdoms without any just occasion given him for it, but that did, by his own Declaration, lay the greatest aspersion on me that malice could invent, in the clause of it that concerns my son? I appeal to all that know me, nay, even to himself, that on their consciences neither he nor they can believe me in the least capable of so unnatural a villainy, nor of so little common sense to be imposed on in a thing of such a nature as that. What had I, then, to expect from one who, by all arts, hath taken such pains to make me appear as black as hell to my own people, as well as to all the world besides? What effect that hath had at home, all mankind hath seen, by so general a defection in my army as well as in the nation, amongst all sorts of people."

JAMES concludes that paper with these words:—"And I appeal to all men, who are considering men, and have had experience, whether any thing can make this nation so great and flourishing as LIBERTY OF CONSCIENCE. Some of our neighbours dread it." To hear a bigotted papist speak of liberty of conscience has a very suspicious appearance; it is not natural to the papal system—it is like Satan reproving sin. But this liberty was only designed for dissenters in both kingdoms; for it is perfectly evident, from his treatment of the bishops, that no liberty of conscience was intended for the





members of the church. Liberty of conscience, as suggested by father Petre, could mean nothing else than popish supremacy and enthralldom of conscience. Upon this subject, James had a monomania; and his prejudices were so strong, and the consequences resulting from them so disastrous, as amounted to what archbishop Sancroft called *deliricy*. "And not without reason; for there are many delirious persons who rave only on one topic; and hardly any raving could be more delirious than was the conduct of James, who, though no *apostle* or *missionary* even from Rome, endeavoured to *compel* his subjects to adopt a mode of worship which their consciences abhorred." James was unhappily surrounded by evil counsellors, whose advice he more eagerly adopted than that of his constitutional advisers; and, with the cunning of the serpent, they adopted *liberty of conscience* as a watch-word, in order to raise up the prejudices of the dissenters in both kingdoms against the established churches. When some one remonstrated with James for hurrying the nation on to popery too fast, he replied, that to bring back his kingdoms to the obedience of Rome would be his greatest glory, and for which he could submit to martyrdom; that he was old, and therefore had but short time in which to accomplish it.

HIS SECRET advisers brought him to ruin, and then counselled him to remove himself out of the kingdom; by which means he parted with his birthright, through fear, and want of confidence in God. Nevertheless, his faults do not excuse the sin of rebellion, of which the nation was then guilty; for although it may be said that he voluntarily withdrew, and left the throne vacant, yet there was *a real force* upon him, even in the *first* flight; but unquestionably so in his final retreat. "But it were in us but hypocrisy to use these pleas, and justify the action of our forefathers, to say, that when a sovereign retreats from his kingdom before an advancing foreign enemy, his servants arrested, and his guards displaced, he is other than deposed; that they that join herein are not guilty of rebellion; and that they who, in a self-called convention, made the prince of Orange king, did not act against their allegiance to the sovereign, to whom they had plighted their faith. The misconduct of one justifies not the sin of another. David, though of God anointed, lifted not his hand against him who had been once anointed by God, though now his princely spirit was taken from him, and 'an evil spirit from the Lord came upon him;' and so, while we thank God, we should humble ourselves, and pray Him not to remember our sins, or the sins of our forefathers."



Had not a foreign prince invaded his kingdom, and had not his army and nobility deserted their colours and gone over to the enemy, there was no necessity for deserting his throne and kingdom. Had his army been faithful, he might have made the Dutch invaders prisoners; but it was otherwise permitted, and at this distance of time it is visible to us that the sceptre had departed from him; that God had given his kingdom to another. He attempted to introduce an idolatrous worship into the churches of these kingdoms, the abomination that maketh desolate, the accursed thing that had defiled the land, but which had been excommunicated from the empire for a hundred years,—the setting up of the Blessed Virgin as the mediatrix betwixt God and man. This would have been a real dethronization of the one only Mediator, and a giving of His glory to saints and angels, who, although the former enjoy that rest which is promised to the people of God, yet both are but our “fellow-servants.” But God here interposed for the preservation of his church in England through means that in the actors was rebellion, though perhaps they did not entertain the thought of dethroning their sovereign when they at first encouraged William’s ambitious design of seizing his father-in-law’s crown. There can be no doubt but that his affections were placed on the crown from the first; for it is not consistent with worldly policy to have run such imminent risk, and with such a paltry force, for the charitable purpose of delivering a foreign nation from arbitrary power, and a church, of which he was not a member, from papal supremacy.



## CHAPTER XLIX.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

## THE RABBLING AND PERSECUTION OF THE CLERGY.

1688.—A proclamation.—Prince of Orange's declaration—its tendency.—A riot—attack on Holyrood-house—Proceedings of the council.—A persecution commenced.—A rumour of a popish massacre.—Alarm at Hamilton.—Rabbling commenced on Christmas-day.—Case of Mr. Russell—of Mr. Finnie—of Mr. Simpson—of Mr. Milne—of Mr. White—of Mr. Brown—of Mr. Ross—of Mr. Guthrie—of Mr. Skinner—of several other clergymen—of Mr. Stirling—of Mr. Bell—of Mr. Dalgleish—of Mr. Chrichton—of Mr. Macintosh.—A representation by some clergymen.—1689.—Case of Mr. Gregory.—Bishop Rose's letter.—Two bishops sent to court.—Bishop Rose's interview with archbishop Sancroft—and bishop Stillingfleet—with bishop Compton—with bishop Turner.—Convention of Scottish peers and others—earl of Arran's speech—address to the prince.—Ambiguous meaning of the word *protestant*.—Writs issued for a convention.—Bishop Rose's difficulties—interview with the bishop of London—and with sir George Mackenzie.—Bishop Compton's speech—bishop Rose's reply.—Bishop Rose introduced to William—their conversation—bishop Rose's reflections.—Rabbling.—The clergy of Glasgow—riot at the cathedral.—Case of Mr. Milne—of Mr. George.—Threatening letter to the clergy of Glasgow.—Presbytery of Paisley.—Case of Mr. Taylor.—Riots at Eastwood—Kilbarchan.—Distress in the presbytery of Dunbarton—and of the province of Glasgow.—The clergy send Dr. Fall to court—got no redress.—A proclamation.—A presbyterian Interdict.—Riot on Sunday in Glasgow—public worship disturbed—riot in the church.—Case of Mr. Leslie.—Reflections.

1688.—ON THE VERY DAY that the Dutch invaders landed at Torbay, the king sent a despatch to his Scottish privy council desiring them to issue a proclamation against spreading of false news; and admonishing all men, of whatsoever degree, not to publish, disperse, or repeat treasonable papers or declarations, particularly that in the prince of Orange's name. But no attention was paid to this order by the presbyterians; for the prince's declaration was altogether addressed to them. It dwelt chiefly upon the evil counsellors that had advised the king, and rehearsed all the complaints and grievances of the presbyterians, and in one place says—"upon these grounds it





is that we cannot any longer forbear to declare that to our great regret we see, that those counsellors, who have now the chief credit with the king, have overturned the religion, laws, and liberties of those realms, and subjected them in all things relating to their consciences, liberties, and properties, to arbitrary government, and that not only by secret and indirect ways, but in an open and undisguised manner." The presbyterians immediately discovered their natural propensities; and in all the burghs in the province of Glasgow they read the prince's declaration at the market-crosses, and on the last day of November some of them burnt the effigies of the pope, and the archbishops of St. Andrews and Glasgow, in the latter city.

THE PRINCE had either been suspicious that the Scottish clergy would not transfer their allegiance to him, or his advisers, who were chiefly presbyterians, so persuaded him. For, says bishop Sage, "the declaration for the kingdom of Scotland we found to be purely presbyterian. I am confident Dr. Burnet did not pen it; otherwise the act of Glasgow had not been put into it as a *grievance*. He knows very well upon what reasons it was made, and if he pleases can easily justify it; neither had the clergy of the west (for they must be the men) been so generally pronounced scandalous and ignorant. He was better acquainted with many of them than so; I had rather think the doctor had never seen that declaration until it was published. But what although he had, and, for reasons of state, thought fit to let it go as it was? It is no great matter." O, but Gilbert did see it, although he did not write it; for he himself says, "There was another declaration prepared for Scotland. But I had no other share in that, but that I corrected it in several places, chiefly in that which related to the church: for the Scots at the Hague, who were *all presbyterians*, had drawn it so, so that by many passages in it the prince by an *implication* declared in favour of presbytery. He did not see what the consequences of those were, till I explained them. So he ordered them to be altered. And by the declaration that matter was still entire<sup>1</sup>." "As I said, it was down right presbyterian, and presaged no good to us; but God be thanked, it found us generally in good preparation for suffering persecution, for we had cast up our accounts before, and had foreseen that possibly we might be exposed to trials: though we had not much reflected that it was to be by the hands of protestants. We were confirmed further yet in our

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, iii. 302.



suspensions, when we found that those who were engaged in the presbyterian interests were flocking up to London, and making the most numerous as well as active appearances about his highness's court; that they *only* had his ear, and seemed to be the chief persons, who (upon his majesty's retirement), transferred the government of this kingdom upon him. By these steps we began to see further, too, into the politics of our brethren, and upon what designs they had carried on the schism so vigorously the year before; yet we never dreaded that such horrid barbarities would be our lot as afterwards were put in execution<sup>1</sup>."

IT HAS BEEN already mentioned, that the Scottish standing army had been called to England to meet the invader, and there was not a soldier left in the kingdom "but an independent company under captain Wallace, at the Abbey<sup>2</sup>." On Sunday, the 9th of December, some idle people, returning from their walk in the park, found the usual passage through the quadrangle of the palace shut up, and the sentinels directed them to go round by the carriage road. This being reported with mighty exaggerations, tradesmen and apprentices collected and commenced a riot, attacked the provost's house, and demanded the keys of the gates, with threats of burning his house. They next forced open the door of the cross, and from the usual place proclaimed an offer of £400 sterling to any one who should bring in Perth or Melfort dead or alive. Next day the town council ordered, by proclamation, all parents and masters to keep their servants and children within doors. This proclamation was torn down as soon as it was read; and lord Perth, the chancellor, left the Abbey, and retired no one knew where. The town remained tranquil till towards night, when a mob began to collect in the Cowgate, and, marching up the Bow with drums beating, went down the High-street towards the palace. The city guard at the Canongate saluted them as they passed. When they reached Holyrood-house, Wallace with his company advanced to oppose them; to whom they sent a regular summons for admission to the Abbey, which being, of course, refused, they rushed on the soldiers with loud shouts. Wallace now ordered his men to fire, when several were killed, and about forty wounded, some of whom died afterwards. The mob then fell furiously upon the military, two of whom were killed, and the remainder were forced into the palace, when the gates were shut. The dead bodies

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution of the Church in Scotland, 4to. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Wodrow, iv. 473.



having been carried up the street created a violent sensation, and a quorum of the privy council sent down two heralds, with their coats displayed, to summon Wallace to surrender, with orders to force him if he did not. Some firing took place, without much damage on either side, and Wallace would have defended his charge resolutely had not some of the trainbands gained admission by an unguarded back entry. Wallace and some of his men then fled, and the mob killed fourteen of the soldiers who had not been able to make their escape. An author, who would deal very tenderly with his friends the mob, says, "whether they got liberty, as some of my accounts say, from the town captains, I know not, but they fell presently to rife the chapel and schools, and brought the timber-work and library, with every thing that came in their way, to the close, and burnt them. It was some time before they could fall upon the images, to destroy which was their end in making the attack. At length they found them in an oven, with an old press set before it to cover its mouth. Those they took out, and carried them up to the town in procession through the streets, and back again to the Abbey-close, and there burned them. They entered the church, burned the new work there, and turned up the marble pavement, and rifled the chancellor's lodgings, and some others in the Abbey; but none of the youths or apprentices laid their hand on any thing to carry it off, but all was burned. Next day they gathered again, *there being no power to restrain them*, and went through the houses of all papists they could hear of in the town, and required their books, beads, crosses, and images, which they burnt solemnly in the street. When the people were civil, they took what they gave upon their word, and if rude, they effectually searched their houses. Some took occasion to mix in for pillage, but the youths took all to the flames<sup>1</sup>."

THE COUNCIL met on Friday, the 14th of December, and it would appear that with the chancellor all the popish members had fled also; for the council issued a proclamation ordering all sheriffs and magistrates to search the houses of papists within their jurisdictions, and to seize and secure all arms and ammunition that shall be found therein; but at the same time they ordered the same authorities to protect their persons and properties. On the 24th of December the council made another proclamation, requiring all protestant subjects to put themselves in a posture of defence for securing their religion, lives, liberties, and properties, for their own security against

<sup>1</sup> Wodrow's History, iv. 474.





the attempts of papists; and heritors are called on to meet well provided, at their county towns, under the command of certain individuals who are named in the proclamation.

AND NOW the northern hail-storm commenced its desolating blast; and a scene of persecution ensued such as the Scottish nor any other branch of the catholic church had ever before experienced; and to make their malice the more profane and detestable, the presbyterians commenced what was called *rabbling* the clergy on CHRISTMAS-DAY; the anniversary of that day on which the Lord of Glory vouchsafed to be born of a pure virgin, and to tabernacle among men for their salvation. The government, which had been almost entirely in the hands of papists, was now dissolved, and the whole of the military was removed to England, so that there was no protection for the parochial clergy. The Revolution came upon the church like a thunder-clap, not being in the secret, and not having the least suspicion of danger. Thus, says an anonymous writer, "the Revolution found us: the crown in full possession of its ancient hereditary rights and power, and able to exert itself; the church as fully settled as laws and acts of parliament could possibly do it, and filled with a great many orthodox, learned, and loyal clergymen; the subjects sworn by allegiance to their hereditary monarchy in the person of king James VII., their king *de jure* and *de facto*, being without competitor, and in full and quiet possession; and the ancient constitution, by which they enjoyed as much liberty as they were the better for, and had their property secured by excellent laws; particularly the bishops had a full right to their revenues *for life*; courts of law were filled with judges learned in the law, and very just in their decisions. There was profound peace all over the kingdom, and the *far greater*, and much every way the better part of the nation, were very well contented with their circumstances, and not at all desirous of change. The heat of some new converts to popery, in king James's time, pushed that prince into some measures which his other loyal subjects, and *even the old papists*, were sorry for; but yet were passive, and would not rebel<sup>1</sup>."

"IT PLEASED ALMIGHTY GOD (to whose providence it becomes us humbly to submit in all conditions) to permit that we should have a trial of the cross; whereof God forbid we should

<sup>1</sup> A Short History of the Revolution in Scotland, in a Letter from a Scotch gentleman in Amsterdam to his Friend in London. London, printed and sold by the booksellers of London and Westminster, MDCCXII.





ever be ashamed ; and for that end to give us up to the malice of our enemies, that they might thrust us into the furnace. For carrying on which glorious work, this was their opportunity ; when the certain accounts came of the prince of Orange's resolutions to come into England, all our standing forces were called thither : so that this kingdom was left destitute of such means as were necessary to secure the peace, if any disturbance should happen to arise amongst us when the prince landed. King James being deserted by his army, and soon after disowned by his subjects, was put upon the necessity of leaving Britain : and here in Scotland his council very soon *dissolved of its own accord*, so that in effect the nation was in a manner *without government*, by whose fault I am not now to inquire. Upon his majesty's sudden abdication, and the voluntary dissolution of his council, our brethren found it seasonable for them to turn serious with us. But it was expedient to project how their game might be successful before they began to play it. Therefore a *stratagem* was contrived ; a general massacre of the protestants was pretended and alleged to be intended by the papists. But how to be effectual, seeing their numbers were so very few, especially on the south side of the Forth, which was to be the chief scene of the tragedy ? For that, this salvo was at hand. So many thousands of Irishmen were said to be landed in Galloway, had already burnt the town of Kirkcudbright to ashes, and put all to the edge of the sword, young and old, male and female ; only three or four persons (like Job's nuncio) had escaped ; and those savages were posting hard to be over the whole kingdom, &c. The story flew at the rate of a miracle ; for within twenty-four hours, or so, it was spread everywhere through the greater half of the kingdom. Nobody doubts now but that people were appointed at several posts to transmit it everywhere at that same time, for it ran like lightning ; and wherever it went, it was so confidently asserted to be true, that he was forthwith a papist, and upon the plot, who disbelieved it. At first we all wondered what it might mean ; but it was not long before we learned by the effects what was the politic ; for immediately in the western shires, where the fiction was first propagated, tumultuary rabbles knotted, and went about searching for arms everybody's house whom they suspected as disaffected to their interests. The pretext was, that the country might be put in a posture of defence against the Irish : but the real purpose was, that all might be made naked, who were inclinable to retard them in the prosecution of their designs upon the clergy. Especially they were sure no minister should have sword or pistol



(as, indeed, few had any) or any other weapon, that might be useful for his defence, if an attempt should be made on him. When they had thus made their preparations for the work (and you would wonder how speedily, and yet how dexterously it was done) they fell frankly to it<sup>1</sup>."

ANOTHER ACCOUNT says—"In the month of December, 1688, a sudden and surprising report was spread all over Scotland, that 10,000 papists were landed from Ireland, with strange instruments of death, for despatching protestants; concerning which a letter was writ from the mayor of the city of Glasgow, to the magistrates of the town of Hamilton, bearing that they had already burnt down the town of Kirkcudbright, and were come within two-and-twenty miles of Hamilton, in order to use them at the same rate. This letter came to hand upon Friday night, immediately before Christmas; and all the night after the citizens' wives were running about with their children in their arms, with hideous cries, 'what should become of them and their poor young ones!' Upon Saturday, the contrivance being speedily and warmly managed, against eleven of the clock there were got together, in Douglass moor, some 6,000 presbyterians, well armed, upon pretence of defending the country from these invaders. But their design was quickly discovered; for by three of the clock in the afternoon they were all divided into small detachments of two or three hundred in a company, whose business it was to disarm all that were disaffected to their cause, and which actually they did<sup>2</sup>."

"It was on Christmas day," the author before quoted continues, "(the day which once brought good tidings of great joy to all people;) that day which once was celebrated by the court of Heaven itself, and whereon they sung, Glory to God in the highest, on earth peace, and good will towards men; that day which the whole christian church ever since has solemnized for the greatest mercy that ever was shewn to sinful mortals; that day I say it was (to the eternal honour of all, especially of Scotch presbyterians), on which they began the tragedy; for so were matters concerted amongst them, that upon that very day different parties started out in different places, and fell upon the ministers<sup>3</sup>."

ABOUT SIX o'clock on Christmas evening, a party of presbyterians belonging to his own parish, and to some of whom he had done many acts of kindness, assaulted the rev. Gabriel

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution, 15-16.

<sup>2</sup> The Case of the Episcopal Clergy of Scotland truly represented. Folio, p. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Account of the Persecution, 16.—Case of the Episcopal Clergy, p. 1.



Russell, minister of Govan, close to Glasgow, in the manse. They beat his wife and daughter, and himself, so inhumanly, that it endangered his life. They carried off the poor's box and the communion plate; and when they departed they threatened greater severity and insult if he should ever again presume to preach in the church of Govan, to which he had been legally inducted. About eleven o'clock the same night another party forcibly entered the manse of Cathcart, but Mr. Finnie was then from home. The weather is naturally cold at Christmas, but this year there was a very "vehement frost," yet they thrust his wife, with five small children, out of doors, and then broke and destroyed his furniture, and threw it out of the windows. It was not till after half an hour's entreaty, that the unhappy gentlewoman, with her tender infants, were permitted by the inhuman rabble to shelter themselves among some straw in the stable, without fire or covering of any sort. The severity of the cold, and the fright, threw the younger children into fevers. Next Sunday a presbyterian preacher took forcible possession of Mr. Finnie's pulpit.

ANOTHER PARTY of the presbyterian reformers attacked Mr. Simpson, the incumbent of Galston, took him also out bare-headed, and caused his sexton substitute his morning gown for his canonical robe, and to tear it from his shoulders. He had hid his robe, so as it could not be found; they took his dressing-gown, as it seems it was necessary that a gown should be torn. After this insulting ceremony they broke the ice, and forced him to wade through the river Irvine, for a considerable time, at a deep place, and then, turning his face northward, bid him begone to his own country, and never venture, on peril of his life, to return there. The rabbling continued for several days, and another party of presbyterians attacked the manse of Calder, in Lanarkshire, but Mr. Milne, the incumbent, happening to be from home, they took his gown, and carried it in a mock solemn procession to the church-yard, where one of the godliest of them made a long harangue, expressive of their zeal for the glory of God and the good old cause; after that a *long prayer*. After these preliminaries they rent the gown in fragments, and fired a volley of shot over it, to shew their hatred for prelacy; but therein they dishonoured God; for although they could not reach His minister, as they intended, yet they put the greatest mark of contempt on such robes as were used in His service, "for glory and for beauty." At Ballantrae the Whigs entered the minister's house, and a mean pedlar struck the rev. Mr. White on the face with the butt-end of his musket, because he kept his cap





on his head whilst he spoke to the sovereign people, and endeavoured to persuade them to more christian conduct. Another of these reformers thrust at his breast with a sword, and wounded him; "though such was the good providence of God, what through the throng that was in the room, and what through the distance the miscreant stood at, who made the thrust, the wound was not dangerous." They rudely beat and abused his wife, and frightened her into a premature confinement<sup>1</sup>.

THE WHIGS took the rev. Mr. Brown, of Kells, but who was then residing in New Galloway, out of his bed at four o'clock in the morning, and in that state, during a snow-storm, tied him to a cart with his face to the weather, and there left him exposed naked to the frost and snow, and where he would certainly have perished, had not a poor woman compassionately thrown some clothes about him, and then untied him. The Whigs in Renfrew attacked the house of the rev. Francis Ross, the incumbent, and after beating and insulting him, they forced his wife, with her tender infant, out in the snow, on the third day after her confinement, and when both mother and child might have perished, but for the humanity of some neighbours, who took her into their house. The presbyterians in the parish of Keir, in Nithsdale, beset the manse, and beat Mr. Guthrie, the parish minister, turned his wife and three of his children out of doors, although two of them were ill of small-pox, and the other sick of a fever: in consequence of this treatment, two of the children shortly afterwards died. They broke and destroyed his furniture, and ended by making a bonfire of it.

THE PRESBYTERIANS in the parish of Daly, in Ayrshire, attacked the manse, and abused Mr. Skinner, the incumbent, in such a shocking manner, that what between fright and brutal usage, his daughter, a young lady about twenty, was thrown into a fever. A few days afterwards, when she was in the height of it, the rabble returned again, and turned her out of her bed, under pretence of searching for arms. This inhuman conduct drove her raving mad, and she died in a day or two, repeating, "O, these wicked men will murder my father!"<sup>2</sup> A body of ninety armed presbyterian reformers attacked several of the ministers, and proceeded through Ayrshire with similar atrocities to those above narrated, and the system was the same in all cases, although they may differ in some particulars; the same desolating rabblement was carried

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution, pp. 16, 17.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 16, 19.



on in all the presbyterian districts; that is, in the two dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway. In general, when they had completed their insults and injuries to the clergymen themselves, they carried off the key of the church door; and when any of these ministers were so courageous as to ask by what rule, either of religion or morality, they could justify such excesses, they usually replied, "By the rule and law of the Solemn League and Covenant, by which they were bound to *extirpate* prelacy, and bring *malignants* to condign punishment<sup>1</sup>."

UPON CHRISTMAS DAY, about ninety armed men forced the minister of Cumnock out of his chamber into the churchyard, where they discharged him to preach any more there under his highest peril. They ordered him to remove immediately from his manse and glebe, and never to receive the stipend. After this "they rent his gown in pieces over his head; they made a preface to their discourse to this purpose, that this they did not as statesmen, but by violence and in a military way of reformation. In this manner, in the same place, and at the same time, used they the minister of Auchinleck, who dwelleth in Cumnock." From this village they marched the same day to Mauchline, "and missing the minister himself, were rude beyond expression to his wife; and finding the English Liturgy, burnt it as a superstitious and popish book: thereafter they went to the churchyard, where they publicly discharged the minister from his office and interest there . . . . Upon the 27th of December they went to Rickarton, whence they brought the minister of the place to Tarbolton, where they kept for a whole night the ministers of these two parishes under a guard, and next morning brought them to the churchyard of Tarbolton, where they rent the minister's canonical coat, and put the one-half of it about each of the ministers' necks, commanding the church officer of the place to lead them thereby *per vices* as malefactors, discharging them from all exercise of the ministry, and from their houses, glebes, and stipends, under the highest peril<sup>2</sup>."

ON THE same day a party of presbyterians violently broke into the manse of Baldernock, in Stirlingshire, about nine o'clock, and threatened Mrs. Stirling and her servants in a

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 517.

<sup>2</sup> Case of the present Afflicted Clergy of Scotland truly represented. To which is added, for probation, the attestation of many unexceptionable witnesses to every particular; and all the public acts and proclamations of the Convention of Parliament relating to the Clergy. By a Lover of the Church and his Country. London: printed for J. Hindmarsh, at the Golden Ball, over against the Royal Exchange in Cornhill. 1690. First Coll. of Papers, p. 2.



barbarous manner. With horrid imprecations they threatened to cut off her popish nose, and to rip up her prelatical belly; but they were prevented from putting their threats in execution by the arrival of some friends, who protected her. The rev. Walter Stirling was not at home at the time.

1689.—ON THE 11th of January, Mr. Gregory, the first minister of Ayr, received a paper, commanding him and all his brethren to leave their ministry against the 15th of the month, under pain of death; and because he did not regard this order, “there came to his house, upon the 15th, about eight o’clock at night, eleven armed men of them, who commanded him, under pain of death, to preach no more in the church of Ayr till the prince’s further order; and at the same rate did they treat his colleague that same night. Much about the same time these armed men, with their associates, went through all the ministers’ houses within that presbytery [of Ayr], and discharged them any more to exercise their ministry, and appointed them to remove from their manses, or parsonage houses and glebes, and discharged them to meddle with their stipends, under the penalty aforesaid. So that now the most of the clergy, through force and violence, have left the country; none in it undertaking their protection, but all the rabble of it in arms against them. And to complete their miseries, those who are indebted to them refuse to pay even so much as may carry them to places of shelter; which exposes them to the greatest hardships imaginable.

“TO OBIVATE the impudent denial of these things, the undersubscribers are able, and shall (if called) in due time, produce sufficient proof of the whole, and that both by writing and witnesses.—Given under our hands at Edinburgh, upon the twenty and sixth day of January, one thousand six hundred eighty-nine years. Signed, J. Gregory, parson of Ayr; Will. Irvine, minister of Kirkmichael; Fran. Fordyce, parson of Cumnock<sup>1</sup>.”

THE TREATMENT of the rev. Robert Bell, parson of Kilmarnock, upon the 26th of December, written by himself, requires longer notice, and it shall be given chiefly in his own language. Mr. Bell having been requested by his neighbour minister at Rickerton to celebrate the marriage of two persons at that church, in the minister’s necessary absence, as he was walking thither, he was seized by two armed men, who came from a great party which he saw at some distance. One of them, as he came near to him, presented a musket at his head;

<sup>1</sup> Case of Afflicted Clergy, First Collection of Papers, 1-3.





whereupon he told him he was his prisoner, and would go where he had a mind to carry him. He having recovered his musket, placed Mr. Bell betwixt himself and his companion in arms; in this posture he was brought to the minister of Rickerton's house, where he was commanded to pull off his hat, calling him rogue and rascal at the same time, and otherwise treating him very rudely. The good gentlewoman set before them abundance of food, and when they had plentifully regaled themselves their passion and rancour wore a little off. Mr. Bell then asked the commander of the party by what rule or law they proceeded, in their appearing thus in arms; he replied, 'by the rule and law of the solemn league and covenant; by which they were obliged to *extirpate* prelacy, and bring all *malignants* to condign punishment.' Mr. Bell then said, they would do well to take care that those their proceedings were justifiable by the word of God, and conformable to the practice of Christ, his apostles, and the primitive church, in the propagation of the christian religion. The presbyterian answered him, 'that the doom of all malignants is clearly set down in the word of God, and their appearing thus in arms was conformable to the practice of the ancient church of Scotland.' From this house the minister was carried prisoner to Kilmarnock, and in his journey thither, the laird of Bridgehouse, who having come to meet him, took courage to tell the party that their appearing in arms and abusing the clergy in this hostile manner were but insolent outrages against all the law of the nation, and that they would do well to remit their illegal forwardness, together with their pretended grievances, unto the parliament that was now very quickly to be assembled. They answered him 'to stand off, and forbear giving rules to them, for they would take none from him or any man, and that they would not adhere to the prince of Orange, nor the law of the kingdom, any further than the solemn league and covenant was fulfilled and prosecuted by both.' By this time they were come near the town, and they commanded Mr. Bell to pluck off his hat, which order he obeyed; yet, in the same breath, they threatened to throw him into the river. When they came to the bridge, they met the whole of the aforesaid party returning from the market-place, where they had compelled the church officer to deliver up the keys of the church. Then they discharged, by way of proclamation, the minister, whom, in an opprobrious manner, they called the *curate* of Kilmarnock, from all intromission with the benefice and casualty of the church, or the least exercise of the ministerial function. Mr. Bell could see nothing





in their faces but the most insulting joy, nor find any thing in their discourses but the most reproaching language that ever the greatest criminal in the world was treated with. After a long consultation among themselves, one of their chief commanders came and asked him if he had a Book of Common Prayer. Mr. Bell desired to know of him why he asked that question; he answered, 'that sure he could not want that book, since he had been educated at Oxford, and trained up in all the superstition and idolatry of the church of England.' Mr. Bell told him that perhaps he had half a dozen of Common Prayer Books; but all they wanted was one of them, 'for that would do their business.' From this place they carried him back to his house, and there compelled him to deliver into their hands the Book of Common Prayer of the Church of England. After this, they led him as a prisoner, bareheaded, betwixt four files of musketeers, through a great part of the town unto the market-place, where the whole party, which appeared to be about the number of two hundred, was drawn up in Battalia. They were armed with firelock muskets and pistols. The market-crosses were large upright shafts placed on a flight of circular steps. On the uppermost step these rude guards placed Mr. Bell, with two of their number, one on each hand, and others ranged themselves downwards on the other steps. They called for fire, when one of their commanders made a speech to the people, whom curiosity in some and malignity in others had collected round the cross. He said, 'that they were assembled there to make the curate of the place a spectacle of *ignominy*, and that they were obliged so to do by virtue of the solemn league and covenant; in obedience to which they were to declare here their abhorrence of prelacy, and to make declaration of their firm intentions and designs to fulfil all the ends of that oath: the propagation of the discipline and the government of the church of Scotland, as it is expressed and contained in the aforesaid league and covenant. And all this they attempted to do, not by virtue of any civil or ecclesiastical authority, but by the military power, and the might of the posture they were in.' These are the very words of this speech. After this, another of their commanders, taking the Book of Common Prayer, read the title of it, and, elevating his voice very high, told the people 'that in persuasion of the aforementioned league and covenant, they were now publicly to burn this Book of Common Prayer, which is so full of superstition and idolatry;' and then throwing it into the fire, and blowing the coals with a pair of bellows, and catching it from amidst the flames, he



fixed it on the point of a pike, and lifted it up amidst the shouts of the conspirators, 'Down with prelacy, idolatry, and superstition of the churches of England and Scotland.' After all these indignities and impudent reproaches offered to the most reformed and best constituted churches in the world, they turned themselves to the minister again, and, in a very rude and menacing manner, asked him 'if he was an episcopal minister's man, and of the communion of the churches of England and Scotland?' He answered, he was, and did there make full confession of it to the whole world. Then they tore his gown, one of the guard first cutting up the skirt of it with his sword and throwing it under their feet, telling him it was *the garment of the whore of Babylon*. A promise was demanded of him never to preach nor exercise the office of a minister any more; but he refused, telling them that such a promise lay not within the compass of his own will, and could not be extorted by force; and that though they should tear his body, as they had done his gown, they would never be able to reach his conscience. Well, well, said the presbyterian, do it at your peril! Mr. Bell answered, that he would do it at his peril. This is an instance of christian courage and intrepidity, under very trying circumstances, which is rarely to be met with, which in some degree provoked their admiration, for they ceased to persecute him any farther, and only asked him what he had to say to them. All this time they kept him uncovered. He meekly answered them, 'he was extremely sorry to see protestants so ungratefully exasperated against the best protestant church in the world, that had done such eminent service to our common religion and interest against popery;' "and withal praying God to forgive them, and not to lay these things to their charge." So they dismissed the minister, telling him he was an ignorant obdurate curate and malignant. "This is a true copy of that account of those indignities and affronts that were done unto me, Robert Bell, by the presbyterians now in arms in Scotland!"

UPON THE 27th and 28th of December, Mr. John Dalgleish, minister of Evandale in Lanarkshire, was taken out of his house by a company of armed men, who carried him bare-headed to the kirkstile, where many people were collected: the leader railed against him with many opprobrious and insulting insinuations, and commanded his beadle to tear his gown over his head. The beadle refused to execute this insult, when they threatened to kill him; and they treated

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, First Coll. of Papers, 33-36.



him in such an inhuman manner, that Mr. Dalgleish compassionately desired him to comply with their commands. They prohibited Mr. Dalgleish from either preaching, or residing within his own parish, on peril of his life. Another party of presbyterian legislators treated Mr. James Chrington, minister of Oilbridge, in the presbytery of Hamilton, in the same way, only with this difference, that they tore and burnt his dressing-gown instead of his canonical one, and then compelled him to deliver up the keys of the church with all the communion plate, and made him promise to remove all his furniture and property out of the parish within a week, which he did; and they beat and otherwise ill used his wife to such an extent that she miscarried the same day. A party attacked the manse of Stenhouse, or Steenson, in the presbytery of Irvine, in the county of Ayr. Mr. Angus Macintosh, the incumbent, was from home; but the vagrant covenanters took his gown, discharged their pieces into it, trod it under their feet, and then burnt it. These three cases are attested by Dr. Robert Scott, dean of Glasgow, Mr. George Leslie, minister at Blantyre, and Mr. John Denniston, minister at Glasgow, on the 23d January, 1689<sup>1</sup>.

THE CLERGY in the presbytery of Irvine had been so miserably and sadly persecuted, since the beginning of December, by the violent conduct of armed men and furious women, who had banded together in a most barbarous confederacy against them, that they had been forced to fly, and lurk so secretly, that they were unable to meet together in such a full number as to be able particularly to represent all their grievances, and which daily increased. Three or four contrived to meet and draw up the representation from which this is taken, and "do, from their own proper knowledge of what they have felt, and from certain accounts from the rest of their brethren, declare that *all of their houses have been invadea* by these armed men, not only in the day-time, but for the most part under the silence of night; and so many of the ministers as did not secretly escape were most disgracefully taken to the market-crosses and other public places, and their gowns torn in pieces over their heads, and discharged with greatest threatenings of cruelty ever to enter their churches and preach again. They have also turned many of their wives and children out of doors, and are still proceeding to do so to others, exposing them to the extremity of the winter cold and to perish for want of bread, when the ministers themselves durst not

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, First Coll. of Papers, 36-39..





come near them for their relief. The particular instances are so lamentable, and the circumstances of them are so many, as that it would be a long work to enumerate them particularly, only this in the general is so well known over all the country that there needs neither particular evidences to prove it, nor more to be said to move the pity of any that are capable to remedy it, and we undersubscribers are content to prove what is here said. Witness your petitioners at Edinburgh, 25th January, 1689, Charles Littlejohn, minister of Largs; Alexander Laing, minister of Stewartown<sup>1</sup>."

ON THE 27th December, Mr. Hugh Blair, minister of Rutherglen, had all his furniture broken and burnt, and the keys of the church and the communion plate carried off. Mr. Gabriel Muschat, minister of Cumbernauld, was treated in the same manner. Some parishioners in the parish of Calder, near Glasgow, defended the manse, and prevented the presbyterians from attacking Mr. David Milne, the clergyman, otherwise he would have received the same treatment as his unfortunate brethren<sup>2</sup>.

WE HAVE not yet done with the rabbling work, but it is necessary to take up some proceedings of the bishops that occurred in the conclusion of the last year and commencement of this; and as the fall of the church cannot be better told than in the simple language of the lord bishop of Edinburgh, Dr. Rose, I shall cite a letter of his addressed to the hon. and right rev. Archibald Campbell, which describes the reception of the former at court, and the hints that were administered to him by the new powers. This letter is dated October 22d, 1713.

WHEN, in October 1688, the Scots bishops came to know of the intended invasion by the prince of Orange, a good many of them being then at Edinburgh, meeting together, they concerted and sent up a loyal address to the king [which has been already given]. Afterwards, in November, finding that the prince was landed, and foreseeing the dreadful convulsions that were like to ensue, and not knowing what damages might arise from thence both to the church and state, they resolved to send up two of their number to the king, with a renewed tender of their duty; instructing them also to wait on the bishops of England for advice and assistance, in case that any unlucky thing might possibly happen to occur with respect to our church. This resolution being taken, it was represented by the two archbishops to his majesty's privy coun-

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, 39.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 39.



cil (in which the lord Perth sat as chancellor), and it was agreed unto and approved by them; whereupon, at the next meeting of the bishops it was not thought fit, even by the archbishops themselves, that any of them (though they were men of the greatest ability and experience) should go up, as being less acceptable to the English bishops from their having consented to the taking off the sanguinary laws against papists; and so that undertaking was devolved over upon Dr. Bruce, bishop of Orkney, and me, he having suffered for not agreeing to that project, and I not concerned, as not being a bishop at that time. And accordingly a commission was drawn and signed for us two, the 3d of December, 1688. The bishop of Orkney promising to come back from the country in eight or ten days' time, that we might journey together, occasioned my stay. But when that time was elapsed, I had a letter from him signifying that he had fallen very ill, and desiring me to go up post so soon as I could, promising to follow so soon as his health could serve. Whereupon I took post; and in a few days coming to Northallerton, where, hearing of the king's having left Rochester, I stood doubtful with myself whether to go forwards or to return. But considering the various and contradictory accounts I had got all along upon the road, and that in case of the king's retirement matters would be so much more dark and perplexed, I resolved to go on, that I might be able to give just accounts of things to my brethren here from time to time, and have the advice of the English bishops, whom I never doubted to find unalterably firm to their master's interest. And as this was the occasion of my coming to London, so, by reason of the bishop of Orkney's illness, that difficult task fell to my share alone.

THE VERY NEXT day after my arrival at London I waited on the archbishop of Canterbury (to whom I had the honour to be known some three years before), and after my presenting, and his grace's reading of my commission, his grace said that matters were very dark, and the cloud so thick or gross that they could not see through it. They knew not well what to do for themselves, far less what advice to give to me; that there was to be a meeting of the bishops with him that very day, and desired me to see him the week thereafter. I next waited on the then bishop of St. Asaph [Dr. Stillingfleet], being of my acquaintance also, who treated me in such a manner that I could not but see through his inclinations; wherefore I resolved to visit him no more, nor address myself to any others of that order, till I should have occasion to learn something farther about them. Wherefore, the week there-



after I repaired to Lambeth, and told his grace all that had passed betwixt St. Asaph and me; who, smiling, replied, "St. Asaph was a good man, but an angry man;" and withal told me that matters still continued dark, and that it behoved me to wait the issue of their convention, which he suspected was only that which would give light and open the scene; and withal desired me to come to him from time to time, and if any thing occurred he would signify it unto me.

IN THAT wearisome season (wearisome to me, because acquainted with few save those of our countrymen, and of those I knew not whom to trust), I waited on the bishop of London, and entreated him to speak to the prince to put a stop to the persecution of our clergy, but to no purpose. I was also with the then Dr. Burnet, upon the same design, but with the same success; who told me, *that he did not meddle in Scots affairs* [!]. I was also earnestly desired by the bishop of London, and the then viscount of Tarbat and some other Scots peers, to wait upon the prince, and present him with an address upon that head. I asked whether I or my address would readily meet with acceptance or success, if it did not compliment the prince upon his descent to deliver us from popery and slavery? They said that was absolutely necessary. I told, that I neither was instructed by my constituents to do so, neither had I myself clearness to do it; and that on these terms I neither could nor would either visit or address his highness. In that season also I had the honour to be acquainted and to be several times with the worthy Dr. Turner, the then bishop of Ely, whose conversation was very useful to me and every way agreeable; and besides these bishops already mentioned, I had not the honour to be acquainted with any other. And thus the whole time of the convention passed off, excepting what was spent in necessary duties and visiting our countrymen, even until the day that the dark scene opened by the surprising vote of abdication, on which very day I went over to Lambeth; and what passed there betwixt his grace and me (being all in private), it is both needless, would be very tedious, and perchance not so very proper to write it. In the close, I told his grace that I would make ready to go home, and only wait upon his grace once more before I took my journey<sup>1</sup>.

THE EPISCOPAL clergy in Scotland had not the same reason to rejoice in the revolution that their brethren in England shewed; for they now had to take up the cross of persecution,

<sup>1</sup> Keith's Catalogue, 65-69.





and to endure those afflictions that Dr. Burnet insinuates they all along deserved. They had been deserted by their civil governors, and left to be plundered, abused, and dispossessed by the rabble, without the form or semblance of law. Nevertheless, Wodrow calls this revolution "*adorable*, and never to be forgotten;" and it certainly never was forgotten, by the patient sufferers in the province of Glasgow. Mr. Echard says, "as the prince shewed himself active and vigilant with respect to the affairs of England, so he shewed a suitable regard to those of Scotland and Ireland. On the 7th of this month [January] he assembled all the Scotch peers and gentlemen that were about the town, and by a proper application to them he obtained from them an address, begging him to take upon him the full administration, as he had done in England<sup>1</sup>." On this occasion about thirty peers and eighty commoners attended the prince's summons, in the council chamber at Whitehall, and chose the duke of Hamilton their president. The prince solicited their advice respecting the security of the protestant religion and the restoration of the laws and liberties of Scotland, agreeable to his Declaration; he then retired, and left them to deliberate. After they had deliberated, and just before the meeting broke up, the duke's eldest son, the earl of Arran, moved an amendment that was unanimously rejected, and by none more vehemently than by his own father, that they should move the prince to desire the king to return and call a free parliament:—"I have all the honour and deference," he said, "*imaginable for the prince of Orange*; I think him a brave prince, and that we owe him great obligations for contributing so much to our deliverance from popery: but while I pay these praises, I cannot violate my duty to my master. I must distinguish betwixt his *popery* and his *person*: I dislike the one, but *have sworn* and do *owe* allegiance to the other, which makes it impossible for me to sign away that which I cannot forbear believing is the king's my master's right; for his present absence from us in France cannot more affect my duty, than his longer absence from us [in England] has done all this while. And therefore, as the prince has desired our advice, mine is, that we should move his majesty to return and call a free parliament, for securing our religion and property; which, in my humble opinion, will at last be found the best way to heal all our breaches<sup>2</sup>."

THIS AMENDMENT embodied nearly the sentiments of the whole Scottish church, but as matters now stood it was an impossibility to comply with it, for the prince had got *posses-*

<sup>1</sup> History of the Revolution, 220.

<sup>2</sup> Skinner's Eccles. Hist. ii. 519.





sion of the whole power of the crown, although the *title* of king had not yet been bestowed upon him. Next day the same parties met again in the same place, and agreed upon an address to the prince, thanking him for his pious and generous undertaking, and desiring him to assume the administration of the government of Scotland, and to summon a convention of estates to meet at Edinburgh on the 14th of March next. They also recommended that the electors and members of the said convention be protestants, without any other exception or limitation whatsoever. The duke of Hamilton presented the address to the prince, who thanked his grace for it; and on the 14th signified his compliance with it, assuring them that they should always find him ready to concur in every thing that may be found necessary for securing the protestant religion, and for restoring the laws and liberties of the nation. The earls of Crawford and Lothian, who arrived in London subsequent to the meeting, waited on the prince, and desired permission to sign the address, which was granted<sup>1</sup>. It may be observed, that both in the address and in the prince's answer there is an ambiguity and vagueness about the word *protestant*, that boded no good to the Scottish branch of the Catholic church. And the fact of their not summoning this prelate, who was a member of one of the estates of the kingdom, to attend their meeting, gives strong reason to suspect that their intentions were unfriendly to the church; besides, we know that they were all from the presbyterian districts, had been the secret abettors and instigators of all their tumultuary and rebellious proceedings, and at that very moment were secretly encouraging the *rabbling* of the clergy, and concealing the truth from William. Both the addressers and the prince might employ the word protestant in any sense that might afterwards be found convenient; and from the proceedings of the convention of estates they evidently intended it to mean the presbyterian faction. This meeting, however, was an unauthorised body: they were not called together by any lawful authority; for granting the prince's power to have been made subsequently lawful, he was neither recognised, nor had he accepted the government of Scotland at that time, and they had no delegation from the people in any way whatsoever; so that their offering the crown to William was in every sense an unauthorised act, and his accepting such an offer only shews that he wanted but a colourable pretext for his usurpation.

<sup>1</sup> Cruikshank's History, ii. 491.



AS SOON AS this complimentary farce had been enacted, William ordered writs to be issued in his own name, though he was a foreigner, and not recognized in law, for a convention of estates to meet at Edinburgh, but which he was not entitled to do according to law, for James was still acknowledged as king, and writs ran in his name. Hearing how matters stood, and being a legal member of the convention, bishop Rose determined to return home; and, he continues—While I was making my visits of leave to my countrymen, I was surprisingly told, that some two or three of them attempting to go home without passes, were the first stage stopt on the road, and that none were to expect passes without waiting upon the prince. Whereupon I repaired again to Lambeth, to have his grace's advice, who, considering the necessity of that compliment, agreed to my making of it. Upon my applying to the bishop of London to introduce me, his lordship asked me whether I had anything to say to the king? (so was the style in England then). I replied, that I had nothing to say, save that I was going for Scotland, being a member of the convention; for I understood that without waiting on the prince (that being the most common Scots style). I could not have a pass, and that without that I must needs be stopped upon the road, as several of my countrymen had been. His lordship asked me again, saying, seeing your clergy have been and are so routed and barbarously treated by the presbyterians, will you not speak to the king to put a stop to that, and in favour of your own clergy? My reply was, that the prince had been often applied to in that matter by several of our nobility, and addressed also by the sufferers themselves, and yet all to no purpose: wherefore I could have no hopes that my intercessions would be of any avail; but that if his lordship thought otherwise, I would not decline to make them. His lordship asked me farther, whether any of our countrymen would go along with me, and he spoke particularly of sir George Mackenzie. I replied, that I doubted nothing of that; whereupon his lordship bid me find him out, and that both he and I should be at court that day, against three in the afternoon, and that he should surely be there to introduce us. All which (having found sir George) I imparted to him, who liked it very well, and said it was a good occasion, but wished that several of our nobility might be advertised by us to be there also. To which I replied, that I doubted much whether coming in a body to the prince, he would give us access, and that our nobility would be much offended with us, if, coming to court upon our invitation, access should be denied them; and there-



fore I thought it best that we alone should meet the bishop at the time appointed, and advise with him what was fit to be done, which was agreed to; and upon our meeting with the bishop, sir George made that overture to his lordship, which he closing with very warmly, said he would go in to the king, and see if he would appoint a time for the Scots episcopal nobility and gentry to wait upon him in favour of the clergy of Scotland, so sadly persecuted. Whereupon, the bishop leaving us in a room of Whitehall, near adjoining to the place where the prince was, stayed above a full half hour from us, and upon his return told us that the king's answer was, that he would not allow us to come to him in a body, lest that might give jealousy and umbrage to the presbyterians [!]; neither would he permit them (for the same reason) to come to him in numbers; and that he would not allow above two of either party at a time to speak to him on church matters.

THEN THE BISHOP, directing his discourse to me, said—' My lord, you see that the king having thrown himself upon the water, must keep himself a-swimming with one hand, the presbyterians having joined him closely, and offered to support him, and therefore he cannot cast them off, unless he could see how otherwise he could be served. And the king bids me tell you, that he now knows the state of Scotland much better than he did when he was in Holland; for while there he was *made believe* that Scotland generally all over was presbyterian, but now he sees that the *great body* of the nobility and gentry are for episcopacy, and it is the trading and inferior sort that are for presbytery; wherefore he bids me tell you, that if you will undertake to serve him to the purpose that he is served here in England, he will take you by the hand, *support the church* and [your] order, and *throw off* the presbyterians.' My answer to this, was—' My lord, I cannot but humbly thank the prince for this frankness and offer;—but withal I must tell your lordship, that when I came from Scotland, neither my brethren nor I apprehended any such revolution as I have now seen in England, and therefore I neither was, nor could be, instructed by them what answer to make to the prince's offer; and therefore what I say is not in their name, but only my private opinion, which is, that I truly think they will not serve the prince so as he is served in England; that is (as I take it), to make him their king, or give their suffrage for his being king. And though as to this matter I can say nothing in their name, and as from them, yet for myself I must say, that rather than do so, I will abandon all the interest.





that I have, or may expect to have, in Britain.' Upon this the bishop commended my openness and ingenuity, and said, he believed it was so; for, says he, all this time you have been here, neither have you waited on the king, nor have any of your brethren, the Scots bishops, made any address to him. *So the king must be excused for standing by the presbyterians.*

IMMEDIATELY upon this the prince going somewhere abroad, came through our room, and sir George Mackenzie takes leave of him in very few words. I applied to the bishop, and said—'My lord, there is now no farther place for application in our church matters, and this opportunity of taking leave of the prince is lost; wherefore I beg that your lordship would introduce me for that effect, if you can, next day, about ten or eleven in the forenoon;' which his lordship both promised and performed. And upon my being admitted to the prince's presence, he came three or four steps forward from his company, and prevented me, by saying—'My lord, are you going for Scotland?' My reply was—'Yes, sir, if you have any commands for me.' 'Then,' he said, 'I hope you will be kind to me, and follow the example of England.' Wherefore, being something diffculted how to make a mannerly and discreet answer, without entangling myself, I readily replied—'Sir, *I will serve you so far as law, reason, or conscience shall allow me.*' How this answer pleased I cannot well tell; but it seems the limitations and conditions of it were not acceptable, for instantly the prince, without saying anything more, turned away from me, and went back to his company. Considering what had passed the day before, I was much surprised to find the prince accost me in those terms; but I presume that either the bishop (not having time) had not acquainted him with what had passed, or that the prince purposed to try what might be made of me by the honour he did me of that immediate demand: and as that was the first, so it was the last time I had the honour to speak with his highness, when the things I now write were not only upon the matter, but in the selfsame individual words that I have set them down.

WHETHER what the bishop of London delivered as from the prince was so or not, I cannot certainly say, but I think his lordship's word was good enough for that; or whether the prince would have stood by his promise of casting off the presbyterians, and protecting us, in case we had come into his interest, I will not determine, though this seems the most probable unto me, and that for these reasons: he had the presbyterians sure on his side, both from inclination and interest,



many of them having come over with him, and the rest of them having appeared so warmly, that with no good grace imaginable could they return to king James's interest. Next, by gaining, as he might presume to gain, the episcopal nobility and gentry, which he saw was a great party, and consequently that king James would be deprived of his principal support. Then he saw what a hardship it would be on the church of England, and of what bad consequence to see episcopacy ruined in Scotland, who, no doubt, would have vigorously interposed for us, if we, by our carriage, could have been brought to justify their measures<sup>1</sup>.

WE MUST now return to the rabbling, which went on at this time with great fury; and as the popish government had dissolved itself and fled upon the abdication of James, there was now no administration to protect them from "the pelting of this pitiless storm."

TILL ABOUT the middle of January the clergy in the city of Glasgow suffered little save personal rudeness and incivility from the rabble; only they received letters ordering them to forbear the exercise of their ministry, and the houses of some of them were searched for arms. On every Thursday it was their custom to have prayers and a sermon in all the churches. On Thursday, the 17th of January, a multitude, chiefly women, surrounded the cathedral, with the design to have dragged Mr. Milne, the clergyman, out of the pulpit. He endeavoured to escape without going into the church, by the advice of some of his brethren; but the brutal women caught him, tore his gown off with his other clothes, stript his shirt off, and were proceeding to remove his small clothes, when he begged of them, for the sake of decency, to be allowed to retain them. They beat him most severely, and "used him in such an indecent manner as is not fit to be named; but it cost him his life." He had been one of the clergy of Glasgow for twenty-four years; but he sunk under this species of martyrdom, and died shortly afterwards. The same day the mob broke open the house-door of Mr. Alexander George, incumbent of the Barony parish, with sledge hammers, and although he was confined to bed by a dangerous fever, they rudely entered his chamber, and were proceeding to administer the discipline of the Covenant to him, when the provost and an armed party rescued him from their murderous hands. On the next Sunday, the 20th, the voice of prayer and praise had

<sup>1</sup> The Bishop of Edinburgh's Letter to Bishop Campbell, cited in Keith's Catalogue, 65, 72.



entirely ceased, the sanctuary was closed, and "the abomination that maketh desolate" was supreme over the whole city. There was no divine service in any of the churches<sup>1</sup>.

A COPY of the following letter was sent on the 22d of January to each of the clergy in Glasgow:—"We are credibly informed that our pretended provost, Walter Gibson, and his malignant associates, are upon a design of having you restored to your churches some time this or the next week, but if you will take advice and prevent your own trouble, and perhaps ruin, do not listen to their motion, for they are but laying a snare for you, without reflecting upon their own being taken in it themselves: therefore consider what you are doing, and if you desire safety, forbear to attempt any thing suggested upon that head, for assure yourselves that it will not be now the female rabble you will have to engage with, but must resolve in all time coming for such a guard as will be sufficient and diligent to protect you, not only in the church (which even we doubt of), but also in your houses, and that both by night and by day: if you take this warning, you will both save yourselves and prevent the effusion of much blood, but if not, *stand to your peril*, which in all probability will be *more formidable* than that of Mr. Milne. Let this be a sufficient warning to you, from those who by this desire to exoner themselves<sup>2</sup>." This alarming letter, and the case of Mr. Milne, are attested on the 26th by Mr. Alexander George, minister of the Barony, and MR. JOHN SAGE, one of the ministers of the city of Glasgow, who say—"We doubt not but there are other instances of the aforesaid violence within our bounds before this time; but because of our present dispersion, we cannot give any more particular accounts; only as to the instances above named, we can make them fully appear when called to it<sup>3</sup>."

THE OUTRAGES committed in the presbytery of Paisley in January were equally atrocious as some of those that have been narrated already. On Saturday, the 12th of January, several better sort of tradesmen of Paisley, with a rabble at their heels, went to the beadle's house and treated him very cruelly, and wounded him, although he was an old man upwards of seventy, and took the keys of the church from him; by which means they prevented the clergymen from officiating the next day. They never returned the keys to the lawful owner. On Thursday, the 17th, a party of armed men went to Mr. Taylor, the clergyman's house, and required him to quit the parish, and deliver up the manse within two days, threatening him with

<sup>1</sup> Case, &c. 39-40.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 40.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. 41.





personal maltreatment if he did not comply, or if he ever attempted to preach within the parish again. On Sunday, the 13th, Houston, one of the ministers attached to the late Renwick's "suffering remnant," usurped the pulpit of the parish of Eastwood, near Paisley, whose lawful incumbent had been several times warned to remove, under threats similar to those already detailed. On Monday, the 14th, about 200 men and women, armed with clubs, went to the manse of Kilbarchan in a tumultuary manner about eight o'clock at night. Three only of them entered the house, the minister being from home; they insulted and ill-used his wife, and ordered her to remove herself and family from the manse; and directed her to inform her husband never to preach in that parish on peril of his life. "And, to omit more particulars, all the several ministers in the above-mentioned bounds are now forced for the *safety of their lives* to fly from their several habitations, and leave their wives and children exposed to their [the rabble's] cruelty; and to add to their calamity, their parishoners (a very few discreet persons only excepted) refuse to pay them any part of the stipend, or any other debts they may owe them, by which cruel usage many of our number are reduced to extreme necessity<sup>1</sup>." This document was signed by JOHN FULLERTON, moderator; J. Taylor, minister in Paisley, commissioner.

IN A LETTER dated 14th of February, there is a statement drawn up by four clergymen, which embodies all the cases above enumerated, and in conclusion they say—"The whole presbytery of Dunbarton are banished from their charges. In Glasgow the ministers are *not secure of their lives*, for some nights ago they beat Mr. Milne in the street *the second time* . . . . Sir, we who are here are patiently waiting for the effects of the prince's Declaration, which was solemnly proclaimed over the cross on Wednesday last. If it quiet the country, we are resolved to return to our charges; a little time will inform us. We had almost forgot to tell you, that on Sunday last the [presbyterian] meeting-house preacher at Douglass caused them to break open the church doors there, and went in and preached. We have wrapped up things in as narrow a compass as was possible: we have written nothing but truth in *matter of fact*, and which, upon legal trial, shall be made good. Sir, besides all this, they have robbed the minister of Stratton's house, and left him nothing. And they have carried away the minister of Kirkmichael's presentation, decret of locality [for his stipend], and all his other papers,

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy., pp. 41, 42.





with the communion cups. Signed, George Gregorie, Francis Fordyce, William Irvine, minister of Kirkmichael, James Hogg, minister of Ochiltree<sup>1</sup>."

IN THIS SUDDEN calamity that had befallen that part of the church which was comprised within the two dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway, the rabbled clergy sought shelter in Edinburgh and Glasgow. Whilst the barbarous rabbling was in progress, the clergy applied to such of the noblemen that were privy councillors, and had not gone to London; but they could bring no relief in the present interregnum, whilst the old government was dissolved, and the new had not yet assumed the regal authority. This resource failing, they sent up private letters to their friends at London, entreating them to make their afflictions known to the prince. But this expedient had been foreseen by their enemies, and they "had their instruments ready to run down all private letters as the blackest lies and forgeries; and we were called all the infamous things that could be: our design, they said, was to work mischief, and breed disturbances. We were said to be popishly affected; and the politic of such reports was to hinder the settlement of the peace, and establishment of the [new] government. In a word, they said we were mortal enemies to the prince of Orange, and all his glorious designs for securing the protestant religion. They alleged that they received letters to the quite contrary; sure they were, their correspondents were men well acquainted with whatever passed; and besides, they were men of [tender] conscience, and undoubted integrity. They would not conceal the truth, far less would they write lies and falsehoods; yet they said their accounts bore daily that there were no such persecutions of ministers, no tumults, no rabbles, &c. They alleged the kingdom was in the most profound peace, and every man had all imaginable security, *especially* the clergy! With such bold affirmations as these, they persuaded his highness, on whom was transferred the government of this kingdom, *that all our accounts were most false and villainous*, and he ought not to believe them; only by them he might believe what a pack we were<sup>2</sup>."

SOME FRIENDS at court gave the clergy intimation of the way in which they were represented to William. In this dismal condition, therefore, the rabbled and dispossessed clergy of the seven presbyteries of Glasgow, Hamilton, Lanerk, Ayr, Irvine, Paisley, and Dumbarton, all within the diocese of Glasgow, where this horrible persecution had first fallen, and

<sup>1</sup> Case, &c. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 19.



lay most heavily, "communicated counsels," and came to the resolution of sending up Dr. Fall, then dean of Glasgow, and principal of the University, to London. Living in the midst of these horrors he was well acquainted with the particulars; and the rabbled clergy drew up a petition begging William's protection for their persons, for of property few of them had any, together with a commission to himself to act to the best of his judgment in his brethren's name. That the evidence with which he was furnished might be the more unquestionable, he carried up attested accounts from all these presbyteries, under the hands of their moderators, some of which have already been given, and which they undertook to prove on their highest peril. What more could be done to convince unprejudiced minds of the horrible persecution that the episcopal clergy were enduring? Yet when Dr. Fall arrived in London he found that the prince's ear was preoccupied by the scandalous falsehoods of the presbyterian party, which alone possessed his confidence. William listened, however, to Dr. Fall's representations, and seemed shocked at the barbarities that he related, and appeared willing to protect the clergy. He ordered a proclamation to be made for the preservation of the peace of the kingdom, dated the 6th of February; but Dr. Fall was disappointed at not getting some clauses inserted that would have been very useful to the clergy. They had the greater reason to expect protection, as in his declaration from Holland the prince faithfully promised to preserve the episcopal church, as then established by law, *from any alteration*, and even said it was the chief end of his invasion. But all the satisfaction he now gave to the distressed clergy was this proclamation, and to refer them to the convention of the estates, which was to meet on the 14th of March<sup>1</sup>.

BY THIS PROCLAMATION all persons whatsoever were strictly forbidden, under the highest pains, to molest, disturb, or by any manner of way to interrupt or hinder the clergy in the exercise of their ministry, and the peaceable possession of their livings, they demeaning themselves as it became peaceable and good men. For those who had already suffered, this proclamation came too late; but it was of no service even to those who had escaped the "rabbling," as this persecution was called. Upon the promise of protection and the keeping of the peace required, many of the principal inhabitants of Glasgow solicited their clergymen to resume their functions, and to officiate as formerly in the churches. The parson of

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 20.



Glasgow accordingly ventured to the pulpit in the Cathedral on Sunday, the 17th of February, after the presbyterians had laid an *Interdict* upon the public service since the 1st of January ! But for the greater security, the magistrates thought it prudent to wait upon Thomas Crawford, the captain of a guard of presbyterians that had assumed this post since the troubles began, and "that keep up themselves in contempt of the law of the kingdom and the prince's Declaration, to the terror of the magistrates and all good and peaceable people in this place." Baillie, or alderman James Gibson, went to Crawford, and requested him to dismiss his company, assuring him that the magistrates would provide for the peace and security of the town in obedience to the prince's Declaration. Crawford peremptorily refused to comply with this request ; and therefore Gibson protested against his usurpation of this force upon the municipal authorities, and how far the said pretended captain of the guard despised both the prince and the provost's authority. After this intercourse between Gibson and Crawford, "both those parties of the presbyterians that go to the hills and the meeting-houses began to whisper about their illegal and bloody designs against the ministers of the town, and *that great body of the people* that keep still very steadfast in frequenting the assemblies of the church, threatening publicly all kinds of persecution unto them in the legal exercise of their religion<sup>1</sup>."

ON SUNDAY morning, the 17th of February, a promiscuous rabble took possession of the street, and hindered the ringing of the bells ; but unfortunately the magistrates thought it best to wink at this insolence, which had the effect of encouraging the rabble to greater audacity. The respectable inhabitants were hooted and insulted as they went to the different churches, and threatened to be buried under their ruins. One of the clergy they attacked in the street, but he happily escaped their fury, and got into a house. The magistrates in all the burghs walk formally to church with the burgh officers carrying halberds before them ; upon this occasion it was found necessary to make these halberdiers clear the street the whole way from the Guildhall to the Cathedral. The rabble attacked them with sticks ; but the officers cleared the streets, and effected an entrance for the magistrates and the respectable part of the congregation into the Cathedral, "seating themselves according to their ranks and qualities in the usual postures of devotion in which the service of God is performed in our church. "After

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 21.—Case, &c. 50-51.





prayers were ended," says the attested account of this sacrilegious uproar, "towards the middle part of the sermon, the forementioned Thomas Crawford, the pretended captain of the guard, came into the church, and cried aloud to the people that 'the town was in arms.' He was answered—'that five or six hundred people of the best quality in town were assembled in church to the service of God, according to law and the prince's last Declaration; that they were naked men without arms, or the least intention to make any resistance; and if the town was in arms, he was more concerned to look to it than they, he being the pretended captain of the guard.' And likewise he was told—'that if the people in the church had designed any opposition to such as might disturb them in the exercise of their religion, they would have appeared in an armed posture (which, out of a due respect to the house of God and the prince's Declaration, they did forbear to do); and then he should have found them too strong for any party that durst have assaulted them: but they came not thither to fight, but to serve God.' The parson continued preaching until he finished his sermon;" an instance of moral courage that has only been paralleled by the late bishop of Bristol during the sacking and burning of that city by the patrons of the Reform Bill. "Towards the latter end of the prayers after sermon, the meeting-houses being dismissed and joining the hill party that appeared by this time in arms upon the streets, [another account says this junction was formed at the desire of the presbyterian ministers from their pulpits before they dismissed their congregations], and together with the company that was upon the guard, they formed themselves in a great body, and then marched off under the conduct of the laird of Carsland, taking their way straight to the Cathedral church; when they came to it, they fired both upon the people that had fled to the pinnacles and buttresses of the church, and through the door, where there was a little boy dangerously wounded on the face; but at last they broke open the doors of the church, and searching diligently for the parson, they found him. They were desired by the magistrates to dismiss the armed men and go in peace, but they refused it, telling—'they would have out those people that beat off the women and the men from the church door upon the first uproar.' They were answered—'That the disorders were begun by the rabble against the prince's Declaration; and that the magistrates could not, without doing infinite injury to the service of God, the honour of the prince, and the authority of government, forbear commanding the officers and town servants to beat off the rabble



that opposed their entry into the church.' But 'that if they would lay down their arms, or go home in peace, and forbear the encouraging and protecting of the rabble in those uproars, they would return in the same peaceable way from the church that they came into it.' But this they absolutely refused to do, telling us—'They would not desert their sisters, the women, that by this time were assembled in great numbers upon the streets, and in the churchyard.' After this they took up the names of the people of the best quality in church, and then they hurried us out by fives and sixes at several doors of the Cathedral, and so exposed us to the fury of the rabble,' which we might have escaped if they had permitted us to go out in a body. Others of us they pretended to conduct by guards, but carried us no farther than into the very middle of the rabble. The whole congregation being thus maliciously dissipated, very few of them did escape without wounds or blows; and particularly the lord Boyd was rudely treated, and had his sword taken from him. Sir John Bell had above a hundred snow-balls thrown at him. The laird of Barrowfield and his lady, together with his two brothers, James and William Walkingshaw, were five or six times beaten to the ground. James Corbett was very dangerously wounded in the head by the stroke of a scythe. George Graham, one of the late bailies, was deeply cut in the head in two places. Dr. Wright and his lady, and her mother and sisters, and several other women, were very roughly handled and beaten. Mrs. Anna Patterson, the archbishop's daughter, Mrs. Margaret Fleming, and several other gentlewomen, were cruelly pinched after their clothes were torn off them. There were scores of others severely beaten and bruised, which would be tedious to make mention of here, but only this we must observe, there was a certain carpenter, who was very dangerously wounded by four armed men that promised to conduct him through the rabble, and to whose protection he innocently committed himself. This is a true account of what passed upon Sunday last, the 17th of February, 1689, which I, as magistrate of Glasgow, in absence of my lord provost, give under my hand as truth. Signed, James Gibson. For the further testification of the premises, we, under-subscribers, attest the same. Jo. Gillhagie, Patrick Bell<sup>1</sup>."

UPON the authority of the same Declaration, the rev. James Little, minister of Tinwald, in Nithsdale, with Trailsflat annexed, resolved to repossess himself of his church, but was

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, Second Collection of Papers, 50-53.



exercised most inhumanly by a rabble of females, who not only tore his gown and coat, but also his shirt from him. He was warned by six presbyterians belonging to his parish to desist from the exercise of his ministry at these two churches. He demanded their authority, and warned them of the prince's Declaration, which they laughed at, and informed him that the obligations of the covenant were their authority. He preached the two succeeding Sundays at Tinwald, but it was his turn to preach at Trailsflat the third Sunday. When he went there, he was attacked by about fifty women with clubs, who beat him therewith severely, and then tore his gown from his shoulders and rent it into rags; they tore his coat and vest, and his shirt also, and were proceeding to strip his breeches off, when he prevailed on them to leave that article of dress upon him. He reminded them that the prince had commanded all violences to cease till after the Convention of Estates; they answered, they could not obey man's law, but only the laws of their king in heaven, and that their present outrage must be acceptable to Him. They kept him in this naked state for two hours, exposed to the severity of the cold, all the time pinching and slapping him with their hands. Then they took him to the church door, and ordered him to confess all his wickednesses—such as preaching under a popish and tyrannical king, and informing against those who did not keep the kirk. To this address Mr. Little meekly answered, "God Almighty forgive you and me all our wickednesses, and if you will have the patience, I shall preach a sermon to you, wherein I will shew you upon what *ground* you and I may build the forgiveness of all our wickednesses, because every one that *asks* forgiveness *does not obtain it*." They then pelted him with mud, and left him in that naked state to find his way home. They took possession of the keys of the church, and carried them off<sup>1</sup>.

WHEN THE sufferers pleaded with these fanatic ruffians of both sexes, the prince's Declaration, they readily answered that his declaration was all a sham, and published merely for form's sake; they knew his highness's mind and resolutions better than to think he was opposed to their godly work. Repeated and unanimous answers to this effect at length opened the eyes of the episcopalians, and they began to see more clearly the nature of the presbyterian intrigues than they had hitherto done; then they began to discover that the rabble had, in the first instance, been hounded out upon them by the whig

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution, 20.—Case, &c. 58, 59.





gentry ; and, says bishop Sage, "it required no great skill, either in logic or politics, to conclude that they had got their instructions from their agents at London to continue in their laudable zeal, notwithstanding that Declaration<sup>1</sup>." In the meantime, an account of this outrageous contempt of authority was despatched to the prince by the magistrates of Glasgow, by an express ; but no notice whatever was taken of it, farther than to refer their complaint to the meeting of the estates which was now at hand, and when the prince's authority would cease for a time.

DURING the interval betwixt the dissolution of the government in Scotland and the assumption of the sovereign power by the prince of Orange, the principles of the covenant had full scope to exercise their antichristian sway over the minds of its followers. No sooner was the just and salutary pressure of lawful government removed by the desertion of the popish members of the government, and to whom, in fact, alone had the government been recently entrusted, than the mob yielded to all the natural evil propensities of the unrenewed heart. History, it is said, teaches by example ; and here is the most unequivocal testimony to the blessings of regular and lawful government ; for the same *obligations* to extirpate the church were upon the presbyterians during the late reigns, as they now felt suddenly called upon to execute, but the season was not then propitious ; they were not in a *condition* to fulfil its obligations ; the arm of lawful government was extended to suppress their turbulence and to protect the weaker vessels. The principles inculcated in the covenant were bad, and the practice of its disciples was no better. Those men who, only a short time before, were most vociferous for liberty for their own consciences, and expressed thankfulness in words full of the most abject and fulsome flattery, when they were suffered to exercise power, tyrannised over both the persons and consciences of men who were quietly, legally, and inoffensively performing their duties to God according to the dictates of well-informed consciences. In no country, not even among heathens, was persecution conducted in the way that these presbyterian barbarities were pursued. In all former persecutions, law and supreme power have always exercised dominion, goaded on and stimulated by the bigotted priesthood of either pagan or of papal Rome ; but in this Scottish presbyterian persecution, it was conducted by what the psalmist calls "the beasts of the people," or in the

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Present Persecution, 21.





language of the times, the "*rabble*." It will be evident to the meanest capacity, after reading this account of popular excesses, how dangerous it is to suffer the madness of the people to remain unchecked by the salutary restraints of supreme power; but how much more dangerous it is to *encourage* the profane vulgar in their violence! The heart whose sins have not been washed away in holy baptism needs only the absence of restraint to shew how desperately wicked it is, and how ready it is to break out into all the savage lawlessness of the worst passions, and to bring forth all the fruits of the flesh.

AGAIN, on the other hand, had it not been for the furnace of affliction through which the suffering clergy passed, their names would altogether have been unknown to fame. Their moral courage, their christian resolution and christian forbearance, stand out in bright contrast to the turbulent and audacious contemners of all human laws, the presbyterian ministers, who formerly drew down the anger of a justly incensed government for their invincible principles of sedition and schism. Yet the latter have been praised as the founders of our civil and religious liberties; whereas the former were the real sufferers, not from any misdirected execution of the law, not for their alleged crimes, nor for the neglect of their sacred duties, but from the fiendish malignity, the emulation and hatred, engendered by the covenant and the principles of the presbyterian religion. The extirpation of episcopacy was the object of this rabbling persecution: that is, the destruction of that office which GOD INCARNATE exercised in his own person on earth, and now sustains in heaven, and that which his apostles exercised and conveyed to their successors, to be maintained and transmitted to the end of the world, when the CHIEF BISHOP shall come again to judgment. It was therefore for this principle that the clergy in the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway were persecuted, and for which they had the christian fortitude to suffer the loss of all their worldly goods,—to be willing to lay down their lives—to resist even unto blood; and some of them actually did so, for the truths of those doctrines which came down from Heaven, and for the beauty of those offices, that they had taught had descended from the beginning. But what will these ruthless persecutors of God's church say, when the last trumpet shall thunder through the mighty abyss, and summon them to judgment, and when they shall find that a bishop, the BISHOP OF BISHOPS, shall be their judge—when the original bishops, who were consecrated by our Lord's own hands, shall be sitting on thrones, judging



the twelve tribes of Israel? Perhaps He may then say to these persecutors as He said to Pilate—those who delivered Him, in the persons of his representatives, unto them, namely, *the jesuits* who laid these heavy burthens upon their souls, have the *greater* sin. These meek sufferers for conscience sake had much occasion to mourn; but they, having passed through much tribulation, rest from their labours, and are in joy and felicity in Abraham's bosom. They were persecuted for righteousness sake, for which a blessing is promised; they endured afflictions, they fought the good fight, and suffered for the christian cause, like good soldiers; they finished the race that had been set before them, and they kept *the faith*. And no faithful son of that persecuted church will doubt that the crown of righteousness is laid up for them, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will give to them, "at that day," as well as to all those who, along with them, faithfully adhered to the cross of Christ, when both they and their persecutors shall be called on to answer for the "deeds done in the body." St. Paul defines saving faith to be one that worketh by love; not that speculative faith which distinguishes the devil, but an honest and sincere *obedience* to all God's commandments, which, by putting the cause for the effect, the gospel calls *faith*. If a man love Christ, he will keep His commandments. This rabbling of the clergy, the sacrilegious desecration of the house of God, and the stealing of the communion plate, which had been expressly consecrated and used in His service, cannot be called keeping the commandments of God; therefore the Covenanters did *not hold the true faith*.

THE RABBLING of the clergy took place *only* in the presbyterian districts; a few samples of which, out of a much greater number on record, have been given. That rabbling which we have described from the *attested* accounts of the sufferers, and which are all drawn up with remarkable modesty, are called by Dr. Cook "incidental ebullitions of popular sentiment!" and he attempts to perpetuate the false witness which he and others have borne against the episcopal clergy, by saying, "improper as were these excesses, how *light* were they, when put in the balance, against the enormities which, under prelacy, had been perpetrated." But if any enormities had been perpetrated, they were not inflicted because of their religion, but *purely* and *solely* on account of their invincible sins, and enormities of *rebellion, murder, and sedition*. However, he is compelled to bear witness to the good conduct of the episcopalians "in the north of Scotland; for he says, where, from the prudence and mildness of the bishops, or from the inclination of the people,



there had been little persecution, the prospect of the change in the ecclesiastical polity excited no ferment<sup>1</sup>." And Hetherington, in giving vent to his malignant exultation at the triumph of presbyterian principles, says, "they resolved to take that opportunity of expelling the prelatic curates from the parishes which they had so long *polluted* with their presence, and *devastated* with their cruelty. They accordingly seized upon these *wretched men*, turned them out of their *usurped* abodes, marched them to the boundaries of their respective parishes, and sent them away, without offering them any further violence<sup>2</sup>!" Presbyterian authors entirely cover over the enormous atrocities that disgraced their sect at the period of the Revolution, under a few general sentimentalisms. But while affecting to call "these excesses improper," they never forget to give the last stab to the characters of these confessors for Christ, who has Himself pronounced a blessing on those who suffer as they had been made unjustly to suffer:—"Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you *falsely*, for my sake. Rejoice and be exceeding glad, for *great is your reward* in Heaven."

<sup>1</sup> History, iii. 438.

<sup>2</sup> History, &c. 173.





## CHAPTER L.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

## CONTINUED RABBLING AND PERSECUTION OF THE CLERGY.

1689.—An order for the meeting of a Convention in England.—NATIONAL DEBT commenced.—Convention.—Resolution of ABDICATION.—William and Mary declared king and queen—proclaimed.—Several bishops refuse the oaths.—The prince's declaration—and for Scotland.—Movement of the rabble.—College of justice take arms.—Foot-note.—The rabbling proceeds—at Manse of Livingstone—at Bathgate—Midcalder—a general description of their treatment.—Convention of estates—manner of its election.—Prince of Orange favourable to episcopacy.—Prince's letter read.—King James's letter—answer to the prince's letter.—A committee of estates.—Covenanters brought into Edinburgh—their conduct.—CLAIM OF RIGHT.—Allegiance transferred to William.—The prince and princess of Orange proclaimed king and queen.—Convention turned into a parliament.—William accepts the crown.—The oath.—Petition of the presbyterians.—Proclamation.—Vote of thanks to the rabble.—Effects of the proclamation—not read in Edinburgh.—Irregularity in sending the proclamation to the clergy.—Presbyterian ministers did not read the proclamation.—Committee of estates cite the clergy.—Dr. Strachan—his defence.—William and Mary take the oath.—Rabbling.—Mr. Macmath.—Burgess.—Mackenzie.—Hamilton.—Selkirk.—Spence.—Mowbray.—Presbytery of Stranraer.—Mr. Ramsay.—Scott.—Alison.—Gillis.—Mackgill.—An affray.—Craig and Buchanan.—Remarks.—The liturgy.

1689.—IMMEDIATELY on receiving intelligence of king James's departure from the kingdom, the prince of Orange published an order requiring all those who had served as members in any of the parliaments held in the reign of king Charles II. to meet him at St. James's on the 26th December the preceding year, together with the aldermen and common council of London. Some of the lords spiritual, and the lords temporal, assembled at Westminster on Christmas-day, and addressed the prince, requesting him to summon a Convention to meet on the 22d of January; and the commons concurred in the same request. The prince returned an answer, saying that he would endeavour to secure the peace of the nation, and issue his letters for assembling a convention, as they desired. To remove any apprehensions of a design to alter the disci-



pline of the established church of England, the prince received the sacrament from the bishop of London on the 30th of December. The same day, he issued a declaration, authorising all officers and magistrates, except papists, to continue to act in their respective offices and places till the meeting of the convention. On the 10th of January *he laid the foundation of the NATIONAL DEBT*, by borrowing £200,000 from the City of London; so that, however glorious or bloodless it was at the time, it has not been a cheap revolution, but has since cost the nation much blood and treasure to maintain it.

THE CONVENTION assembled at Westminster on the 22d of January; the marquis of Hastings was chosen speaker by the Upper House, and Henry Powle, esq. by the Commons. A letter was then presented by the prince of Orange, wherein he recommended to them the settlement of the kingdom, the condition of the protestants in Ireland, and, above all, despatch and unanimity in their resolutions. The archbishop of Canterbury, with some of the other bishops, did not attend this convention, although he was urgently pressed by several of his friends. He considered the meeting to be illegal; nevertheless, he ought to have attended it, if it had only been to have maintained the rights of his absent sovereign, and to have recorded his protest. Both houses addressed the prince, and returned thanks to his highness for delivering them from popery and arbitrary power, and for his care in the administration of the public affairs, which they desired him to continue. King James hearing of this convention, sent a letter addressed to the lords of his late privy council, asserting that his absence was *involuntary*, and only temporary; and he recapitulated his complaint against the late proceedings of his son-in-law. Notwithstanding this letter, the House of Commons agreed, on the 28th, to the following resolution:—"That king James II. having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of the kingdom, by breaking the original contract between king and people, and by the advice of jesuits and other wicked persons, having violated the fundamental laws and withdrawn himself out of the kingdom, hath *ABDICATED* the government, and that the throne is thereby vacant."

THIS RESOLUTION was carried up to the Lords by Mr. Hampden, for their concurrence, to which the peers agreed, with these amendments: that instead of the word *abdicated*, the word *deserted* should be inserted, and the words *the throne is thereby vacant* should be wholly left out. The Commons peremptorily declined to admit of these amendments, and therefore sent to the Lords to desire a conference, which was agreed



to, and a committee was appointed to manage it. The Lords were anxious to substitute the word *desertion*, but the Commons would not agree to it, for their managers said desertion implies fear and compulsion, and they would not admit that coercion had been used, but that the king had made a free and voluntary abdication of the throne. The conferences continued till the 7th of February, when the peers sent a message to the Commons, saying that their lordships had agreed to their vote without any alterations<sup>1</sup>.

THE PRINCESS OF ORANGE arrived from Holland at Whitehall on the 12th of February. Both houses of the convention attended the prince and princess of Orange at Whitehall, with a declaration asserting the rights and liberties of the subject, and with a resolution,—

“THAT William and Mary, prince and princess of Orange, be, and be declared, king and queen of England, France, and Ireland, to hold to them during their lives, and the life of the survivor of them; and that the sole and full exercise of the royal power be only in, and executed by, the said prince of Orange, in the names of the prince and princess during their joint lives. Remainder to the heirs of the body of the princess Anne of Denmark, and the heirs of her body; remainder to the heirs of the body of the prince of Orange.”

THE PRINCE refused the crown upon these conditions, unless the *power* as well as the *name* of king was conferred upon him, and he insisted that the princess should have no share in the government. If they would not yield to this demand, he threatened to withdraw his army and return to Holland, and leave the kingdom to the mercy of their exasperated sovereign. This threat silenced all opposition; and on the 13th, William Henry and Mary, prince and princess of Orange, were proclaimed king and queen at the usual places and with the customary solemnities. It is a curious coincidence, that William was born on the 4th November, 1650; married on the 4th November, 1677; and landed at Torbay on the 4th November, 1688. His household and ministry were immediately formed, and bishop Burnet observes that there was a majority of whigs, both in the council and among the great officers of state. On the 1st of March, the archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of Gloucester, Ely, Norwich, Bath and Wells, and Peterborough, refused to take the oaths to king William;

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II. 221-277; where a full account of the Conference is given.—Salmon's Chronological Historian, i. 248, 249.—D'Oyley's Life of San-croft.





1794. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.





and it is a remarkable circumstance, that four of these bishops were of the seven that had been sent to the Tower, and tried for disobeying king James's illegal orders.

IN HIS additional declaration the prince of Orange said—  
“We are confident that no persons can have had such hard thoughts of us as to imagine that we have any other design in this undertaking than to procure a settlement of the religion and of the liberties and properties of the subjects upon so sure a foundation, that there may be no danger of the nation relapsing into the like miseries at any time hereafter.” Yet the whole of his actions tended to shew that he had long fixed his firmest affections on the crown. He alleged several points that require to be proved before they can be admitted, but which were entirely forgotten as soon as he had secured the object of his ambition and of his expedition—that the prince of Wales was a supposititious child—that king James made a league with the king of France for the destruction of his protestant subjects—that Charles II. had been poisoned—and that the earl of Essex had been murdered. These are such heavy accusations, grievous charges, and horrid crimes, that they require to be proved before they can be believed; for if it were enough *to accuse*, there would not be an innocent person found. Although the jesuits into whose hands James had resigned himself were capable of any atrocity to serve the end that they had in view, and whose principles are such as to create a deserved detestation of popery, yet “to see a father setting up a pretended son against the interest of his own undoubted children; to behold a king bargaining for the destruction of his own subjects; to represent to our minds one brother preparing the deadly cup for the other, who yet ventured his crown rather than he would exclude him from the hopes of it in *reversion*; to look upon the same royal person plotting and managing the assassination of a captive and helpless peer; are such dismal sights and melancholy scenes, so full of horror and barbarous cruelty, that they must needs make sad impressions on the hearts even of the boldest spectators<sup>1</sup>,” and they require better proof than the mere declamation that has been hitherto produced for them, to make them credible.

IN THE PRINCE'S declaration for Scotland there was a clause commanding all parties then in arms, except garrisons and the company of foot kept up by the city of Edinburgh, instantly to be disbanded, and forbidding any one either to continue in arms or to take them up. This appears a very innocent

<sup>1</sup> Somers' Tracts, 319.—The earl of Essex committed suicide in the water-closet



order; but there was more meant than met the ear. After the successful rabbling in the west, but especially in the city of Glasgow, the few presbyterians in Edinburgh took courage, and formed the resolution of following the example of the west country rabble; and they were also animated in their patriotic intentions by the solicitations and the correspondence of their friends. The magistrates of Edinburgh received an intimation that it was his intention of the western rabble to proceed to the capital, to reform the church in that city; and, in fact, they were daily pouring into it. The magistrates determined to defend their city and clergy from the insults of these ferocious reformers, and in addition to their own powers, they invited the College of Justice to join them. The College of Justice means all the gentlemen of Edinburgh connected with the supreme courts of judicature<sup>1</sup>; and these, "to their eternal glory," readily complied with the invitation, took up arms, formed themselves into a regiment, and kept guard for several days, according to military discipline. This intrepid body soon daunted the courage of the covenanters, and they complained of this opposition to their malevolence as a part of their *sufferings* and of their *persecution*! But the military posture of the College of Justice was "certainly a most generous action; an undertaking becoming good patriots (thus to appear against tumults and rabbles, the greatest plagues of society, and enemies to the peace of mankind), and deserves to be transmitted to posterity with the highest encomiums." But it was a mighty disappointment to the presbyterians, who thought to have carried the reign of terror into the capital; for if any tumult had arisen, these gentlemen would very soon have put it down. The presbyterians, therefore, sent up grievous complaints to their friends at court, who entirely en-

<sup>1</sup> In the year 1657 a judgment was given by the Court of Session which decided the question of whom the "College of Justice" was composed; and the following persons were declared by this important judgment to be the privileged members of this very numerous body:—The lords of session—advocates—clerks of session—clerks of the bills—writers to the signet—deputies of the clerks of session, who serve in the outer house; and their substitutes for registrations, being one in each clerk's office—the three deputies of the clerks of the bills—the clerks of exchequer—the directors of the chancery, their depute, and two clerks thereof—the writer to the privy seal, and his depute—the clerks of general registers of seisms and homings—the macers of the session—the keeper of the minute book—the keeper of the rolls of the inner and outer house. But comprehensive as this list is, the privileges are not confined solely to them; the following personages are included:—One actual servant of each lord of the session—one servant of each advocate—four extractors in each of the three clerks, offices of the session—two servants employed by the clerk of the register in keeping the public registers—and the librarian of the advocates, library.—*Author's Book of the Constitution*, p. 459.



grossed the prince's ear, and they easily imposed a plausible account upon him, and thereby procured that clause to be put into the declaration. The prince ordered "all persons to lay down their arms, and therewith their animosities and cruel resentments, ordaining also that all ministers that had been violently ejected *should return* to their respective charges, and *so continue*, without molestation, until the settling of the government by the convention of estates; and, in a word, that all things of that nature should be restored as they were in the month of October preceding<sup>1</sup>."

THE GENTLEMEN of the College of Justice, accustomed to shew all deference to the least shadow of authority, immediately laid down their arms; and the clergy imagined that the presbyterians would do the same, albeit contrary to their principles. On the contrary, they not only continued in arms, but became more audacious than before, and the riot in Glasgow already mentioned was the first-fruits. After the presbyterian government was established, a committee was appointed to cite and examine several of the advocates for having taken up arms at the call of the magistrates, and for the protection of the clergy from the attack of the rabble. "But it seems (whether it was from shame, or some other cause, I know not) they thought fit to let it fall, for they have not yet proceeded farther; yet, on the other hand, the western rabble were *never called in question*; on the contrary, they were still encouraged, as you shall hear incontinent<sup>2</sup>."

THE RABBLING still went on, notwithstanding the prince's order; for the presbyterians said they knew his mind better; they said he only pretended to protect the clergy, but in reality required them to *purge* the kirk of all malignants. Accordingly they attacked the manse of Livingstone, in the county of Linlithgow, and robbed it of all the valuables, insulted the clergyman, and alarmed his wife, who had recently lain in; and on the following Sunday they prevented the performance of divine service, and forcibly ejected Mr. Honeyman from his cure, threatening him with death if he should ever venture to exercise his ministry there again. Another strolling party (for it was remarked that it was not their parishioners who engaged in these sacrilegious affrays) attacked Mr. William Mann, minister of Bathgate, in the same county, carried off the keys of the church and the communion plate, then took and tore his gown over his head, and burnt it. A strolling rabble attacked

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, 6, 7.—Account of the Persecution, 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Ut supra*.





the house of Mr. Norman Mackinney, minister of Midcalder, broke open the doors in his absence, insulted his wife, burnt his gown, destroyed his furniture, and carried off the communion plate.

IT IS SHOCKING to humanity to relate every individual case of rabbling of the clergy performed by the presbyterians: in most cases the process was pretty nearly the same: a rabble in arms attacked the clergy in their houses generally at night, beat them, destroyed their furniture, generally robbed them of portable articles of value, and always of the communion plate; took away the keys of the church, and ordered them to remove from the parish under threats of worse treatment, or even of death. The names and cases of a multitude of these Confessors for Christ are now before me, all of whose depositions it would be impossible to give; for it was ascertained that the whole clergy of the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway were served in a similar manner, and with many others in the diocese of Edinburgh. There were upwards of 300 clergy ejected or rabbled out of their churches, and thrown entirely out of bread. "Upon all this, the afflicted ministers saw clearly there was nothing left for them but to *suffer patiently the good will of God*, which they have done, without the least public complaint, waiting with all christian submission for a reparation of their wrongs from the justice of God, and till those in power shall be graciously pleased to commiserate their condition, since they and their poor families are in very hard and pinching circumstances, having been turned out of their livings and properties in the midst of a hard winter, and suffered not only the spoiling of their goods, but some the loss of their children, and many marks and bruises in their own bodies; and now are in a state of desolation, not knowing where to lay their heads, or to have bread for themselves or families<sup>1</sup>."

THE PRESBYTERIANS in the western districts held a numerous meeting at Lesmahago on the 3d of March, where they renewed the Solemn League and Covenant, and at the same time took a solemn oath to stand to the defence of his highness the prince of Orange.

THE CONVENTION OF ESTATES sat down on the 14th of March, at Edinburgh, to whom the present persecution of the clergy had been referred. The adherents of king James in it were few in number. There were present seven bishops—the archbishop of Glasgow, the bishops of Dunkeld, Moray, Dunblane, Ross, the Isles, and Orkney—forty-two peers, forty-nine barons or

<sup>1</sup> Case, &c., p. 8.



members for counties, and fifty burgesses or members for the burghs. The bishop of Edinburgh said prayers; and prayed for the safety and restoration of king James. The duke of Hamilton was chosen president. Among their first transactions they laid aside the Lords of the Articles, who till then had ever been thought an essential part of the constitution of a Scottish parliament<sup>1</sup>.

BEFORE recounting the proceedings of the convention, it will be necessary to notice the manner in which the meeting had been called, the number of the nobility that were absent, the scruples of many, and the manner of the elections. At the time when the prince of Orange issued out writs he was in the eye of the law a *foreigner*, for he had not then assumed the sovereign authority. Many of the nobility were in consequence afraid to attend the convention, and the gentry to permit themselves to be elected, as they were summoned by no legal authority, but in opposition to the known will of James, who was still acknowledged as the sovereign. If this revolution had miscarried, and James had recovered his crown, their meeting without his writ would unquestionably have been considered high treason. For the same reason, many who did come to attend the convention went away again as soon as they discovered that the convention was not to act by James's authority, and others entered their protests against the legality of the meeting. "All these things," says an anonymous writer, "gave the presbyterians an opportunity of managing their own designs with much the less opposition. For such a number of people, from their scruples, either not coming to, or afterwards leaving, the convention, soon gave the presbyterians the majority into their own hands, which they being once possessed of, contrary even to their own expectations, were not such fools as to part with it, though some who had left them had got over their scruples, and were willing to return; but then, no *right* nor reason could induce them [the presbyterians] to admit any amongst them who were not altogether the same as themselves: and the truth is, that the people who staid in the convention, and voted there, were *so few*, that they looked *more like a small committee*, than the representatives of the nation, and *several of them were persons under the sentence of forfeiture and banishment for high treason*; and yet there they sat and voted in the most considerable points before them, *before* they were restored to their blood, or indemnified or had remissions from any mortal; and

<sup>1</sup> Crookshanks, ii. 492.



it was not till after the convention was turned into a parliament that their forfeitures were rescinded!

"THE WHOLE estate of burghs who were members of that convention were chosen in such an [illegal!] manner as was never before heard of or known in Scotland, entirely different from what our law and practice did direct. For the prince of Orange ordered the burghs in particular and expressly to choose each its commissioner *by the poll*; and they were accordingly *chosen by the mob*, who chose anybody they were *directed* to choose, and who they were told would be favourable to his interest who had invested them with a new power they never had before and were fond of. This, however necessary some thought it, cannot be denied to be a plain breaking in upon our constitution in a matter of great importance, and a manifest violation of our three standing laws and customs in such elections, and such as even the king could not have made, at least without a parliament<sup>1</sup>."

THIS EXTRAORDINARY care for securing a majority in the convention is confirmed by M'Cormick, who says—"By the advice of lord Stair, and the activity of his son, the elections for representatives were so conducted, that the friends of king James could not avail themselves of that influence which he had acquired in the burghs; and at the same time as the members were returned, according to this plan, *by a poll of all the inhabitants*, what *they* determined was considered as the voice of the people!<sup>2</sup>" The viscount of Dundee, and some others, betook themselves to arms, and most of the royalists retired home to their country houses. "But certain it is," says Mr. Lockhart, "had they [the loyalists] been unanimous among themselves, they were strong enough to have opposed the fanatic party, and crossed them in most of their designs with relation to both church and state. The opinion, likewise, that matters could not long stand in the present posture, induced many of the royalists to shun being elected members of that convention, not desiring to homologate any of the prince of Orange's actings, and thereby many more of the fanatics came to be elected than otherwise would have been<sup>3</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Short History of the Revolution in Scotland.—The burgh members were always elected by the magistrates and town council of every royal burgh, and not by the people. This custom continued till the Reform Bill altered the whole constitution of the kingdom.

<sup>2</sup> Life of William Carstares, prefixed to State Papers and Letters addressed to William Carstares, confidential secretary to king William during the whole of his reign; afterwards principal of the University of Edinburgh, p. 37.

<sup>3</sup> Lockhart Papers, 4to. vol. i. p. 40.





THE PRINCE OF ORANGE shewed his anxiety to induce the bishops to transfer their allegiance to him, by the instructions that he gave to the duke of Hamilton; and bishop Rose was of opinion that if they had complied with his desire, he would have vigorously supported them, and maintained the establishment of the church. "And I am," says the bishop, in that letter which has already been cited, "the more confirmed in this, that after my down-coming here, my lord St. Andrews and I taking occasion to wait upon duke Hamilton, his grace told us, a day or two before the sitting down of the Convention, that he had it in special charge from king William, that nothing should be done to the prejudice of episcopacy in Scotland, in case the bishops could by any means be brought to befriend his interest; and prayed us most emphatically, for our own sakes, to follow the example of the Church of England. To which my lord St. Andrews replied, 'that both by natural allegiance, the laws, and the most solemn oaths, we were engaged in the king's interest, and that we were, by God's grace, to stand by it in the face of all dangers, and to the greatest losses:' subjoining, that 'his grace's quality and influence did put it in his hands to do his master [king James] the greatest service, and himself the surest honour; and if he acted otherways, it might readily lie as a heavy task and curse, both upon himself and family<sup>1</sup>."

ON THE SECOND DAY, a letter from king James was offered to the house; and at the same time another was presented from the prince of Orange. This occasioned a debate whether or not the letters of James or William should be first read; but it was carried by a considerable majority that the preference should be given to the latter. In it William expressed his sense "of the kindness and concern that many of their nation had evinced towards him and his undertaking, and of the confidence they had in him. He recommended them to enter with all speed upon such consultations with regard to the public good, and to the general interests and *inclinations* of the people, as may settle them on sure and lasting foundations of peace<sup>2</sup>." It also recommended the union of the two kingdoms. Before king James's letter was read, the following minute was entered upon the books of the assembly:—"Forasmuch as there is a letter from king James VII. presented to the meeting of the estates, they, before entering thereof, declare and enact, that notwithstanding of any thing that may be contained in that letter for dissolving them or impeding their procedure, yet they

<sup>1</sup> Vide Keith's Catalogue, 65-72.

<sup>2</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 524.





are a free and lawful meeting of the Estates, and will continue undissolved, until they settle and secure the protestant religion, and the government, laws, and liberties of the kingdom<sup>1</sup>.”

THE LETTER from king James was dated in Brest harbour, on board the *St. Michael*, March 1st, requiring them to stand by him, and to own his authority.—“Whereas we have been informed that you, the peers and representatives, . . . of our ancient kingdom . . . were to meet . . . by the usurped authority of the prince of Orange: we think fit to let you know, that as we have at all times relied upon the faithfulness and affection of you our ancient people, so much that in our greatest misfortunes heretofore we have had recourse to your assistance, and that with good success to our affairs, so now again we require of you to support our royal interest, expecting from you what becomes faithful and loyal subjects, generous and honest men, that will neither suffer yourselves to be cajoled nor frighted into any action misbecoming true-hearted Scotsmen. . . . And you will likewise have the opportunity to secure to yourselves and your posterity the gracious promises which we have so often made, of securing your religion, laws, properties, and rights, which we are still resolved to perform, as soon as it is possible for us to meet you safely in the parliament of our ancient kingdom . . . We further let you know; that we will pardon all such as shall return to their duty before the last day of this month inclusive, and that we will punish with the rigour of our laws all such as shall stand in rebellion against us or our authority<sup>2</sup>.”

JAMES's letter was read in silence, and no member proposed to make any answer to it; and Mr. Crane, an English gentleman, who brought it, was first put under arrest, and then dismissed with a passport instead of an answer! But on the 23d the convention returned an answer to William's letter, in which they congratulated him on the success of his expedition, thanked him for taking upon him the administration of public affairs, and assured him they would come speedily to proper resolutions for the establishment of the government, the laws, and their liberties, upon the solid foundation of the inclinations of the people! The conclusion of this letter was very refreshing to those of the rabbled clergy who were then at Edinburgh, and excited a hope that their case would soon be taken into consideration; for they were as good protestants as the presbyterians, and they had also rights and liberties as-

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's *Ecclesiastical History*, ii. 524.—Guthrie's *Gen. Hist.* x. 284.

<sup>2</sup> *Life of James II.* 287, 288.



serted by the laws, which ought to have been settled and secured as much as the rights and liberties of their persecutors. But their hopes and expectations were not of long continuance. As we have already mentioned, the constitutional body, called the Lords of the Articles, was set aside; so on the 26th of March a *committee* was appointed, which boded no good to the established church. A certain number of the bishops were legally entitled to be chosen members of the Articles; but the bishops were excluded; and for this committee of estates there were appointed nine peers, nine knights of the shires, and nine burgesses. This indication of the views of the convention disheartened the clergy, and excited an apprehension in their minds that the chief object of those who appeared so zealous for the revolution and the protestant religion was more for the destruction of the episcopal order, than with any design to settle the kingdom on its just and ancient basis. Their apprehensions became stronger when they observed that the convention did not take the clergy of the province of Glasgow under their protection that had been ejected by the rabble from their parochial cures.

THE PRESBYTERIANS in the western counties had rendered such important services to the cause, that it was considered a judicious movement to bring them into Edinburgh, to overawe those members of the convention who were attached to king James. Accordingly, about a thousand of these ardent and godly reformers were marched into Edinburgh, and placed under the command of the earl of Leven, and put under military discipline. Their disorderly conduct was connived at. They placed themselves in groups round all the entrances to the house of parliament, insulted those of the nobility and gentry who stood for episcopacy, and outrageously abused the bishops on their entering and leaving the house. This riotous conduct had the effect desired, for most of the nobility, and all the bishops, refrained from attending a convention where their lives were in danger from excited and bigoted partizans. In consequence, the presbyterian party had every thing their own way; for it immediately placed them in the majority, and, as the author already cited justly observes, the whole convention was now reduced to so small a number as to appear more like a committee than the representatives of the nation. Still farther to serve political purposes, a body of regular troops from England was marched into Edinburgh, under the command of general Mackay, consisting of four regiments of infantry and one of cavalry.

THE BUSINESS of transferring their allegiance to William



was managed in the committee, and sir John Dalrymple proposed it to the house. After ridiculing the debates in the English parliament upon the word **ABDICAT**ION, where their throne was declared **VACANT**, he made the following motion:—"The estates of the kingdom of Scotland find and declare that king James the Seventh, being a professed papist, did assume the royal power, and acted as a king, without ever taking the oath required by law; and had by the advice of evil and wicked councillors invaded the fundamental constitution of this kingdom, and altered it from a legal and limited monarchy to an arbitrary and despotic power; and had governed the same to the subversion of the protestant religion, and violation of the laws and liberties of the nation." Here follows a long list of those acts of maladministration of which they accuse him, and then the same clause is repeated; and the paragraph strangely concludes with—"All which are utterly and directly contrary to the known laws, statutes, and freedom of this realm Therefore the Estates of the kingdom find and declare that king James the Seventh . . . hath **FORFEITED THE RIGHT TO THE CROWN**, and the throne is become **VACANT**. And whereas, &c. . . . that by the law of this kingdom, no papist can be king or queen of this realm, nor bear any office whatsoever in it; nor can any protestant successor exercise the regal power until he or she swear the coronation oath. . . . That **PRELACY**, and the superiority of any office in the church above presbyters, is and hath been a great and insupportable grievance and trouble to this nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people ever since the reformation (they having reformed from popery by presbyters), and therefore ought to be abolished . . . Having an entire confidence that his said majesty, the king of England, will perfect the deliverance so far advanced by him, and will still preserve them from the violation of their rights, which they have here asserted, and from all other attempts upon their religion, laws, and liberties, the said estates of the kingdom of Scotland do resolve, that William and Mary, king and queen of England, France, and Ireland, be and are declared king and queen of Scotland, &c.," and the remainder of the paragraph is an exact copy of the English declaration.

**THIS DECLARATION** is commonly called the **CLAIM OF RIGHT**. It was carried by a large majority, there being only nine negative voices, of whom seven were bishops. It is said, coming events cast their shadows before them; and this saying was verified in this convention. The son of the late earl of Argyle, who was beheaded for high treason, and attainted, now





assumed his father's title, and sat in the convention as earl of Argyle; most likely on an understanding, before he left Holland, where the revolution was planned, that his blood and title would be restored as soon as William had attained the object of his ambition. Argyle, sir James Montgomery, and sir John Dalrymple the lord advocate, were despatched to London with the Claim of Right, and tender of the crown to William and Mary, which they very readily accepted, and Argyle administered to them the coronation oath. On the 11th of April they were proclaimed at Edinburgh king and queen, with the usual formalities<sup>1</sup>.

THE EARL OF CRAWFORD moved that a clause should be inserted in their letter, requesting William to turn this convention of estates into a parliament. In answer to this motion the duke of Hamilton declared that king William had been pleased to appoint him his commissioner, and that he was empowered to give the king's consent to an act for turning this meeting into a parliament, and that the earl of Crawford was appointed its president. It is highly probable that these two noblemen understood each other before this subject was broached, and were prepared with an act to transmute this convention into a parliament, when it was immediately prorogued. This was a greater stretch of the prerogative, and an act of more arbitrary power, than ever James had attempted; for the members of the convention were unconstitutionally elected in the first place, and now, without giving the people the freedom of choosing their own representatives, the convention, by the exercise of the prerogative alone, was created a parliament. "And as they had *created* him their king, so in return he would not be short of them in civility; *he created them* his first, and, indeed, his *only* parliament; being so fond of them, that he continued them all his life, and also took care that they should outlive himself six months, which they did: so that the last session of the Revolution-convention-parliament, chosen in the manner I have told you, did sit and do business since this queen [Anne] came to the throne<sup>2</sup>." But the new government was afraid to call a new parliament, lest the churchmen might, as they certainly would, have been elected. "The revolutioners," says Lockhart<sup>3</sup>, "being sensible of this, and afraid to

<sup>1</sup> McCormick's Life of Carstares, 38.—Wodrow's History, iv. 482-84.—Salmon's Chronological Historian.—Account of the Persecution.—Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 526.—Guthrie's General History, i.

Short History of the Revolution in Scotland, in a Letter from a Scotch gentleman in Amsterdam to his friend in London, 1712; cited in Episcopal Magazine, 1840.

<sup>2</sup> Lockhart papers, 41.



call a parliament, lest the royalists, seeing whither they were driving, should lay aside their scruples, and stand candidates for being elected, had recourse to a *shift* altogether, I shall say no worse, *unprecedented* in this kingdom; and that was, to pass an act turning the convention of estates into a parliament. . . . To these above-mentioned unfortunate jealousies of the royalists, the turning the convention into a parliament, and the framing and imposing the *assurance*, may be imputed the difficulty that has been since found in opposing the fanatic and court party's designs and projects. For having once settled the government as they pleased, and got a parliament that consisted entirely of a set of men of their own stamp and kidney (being mostly old forfeited rebels and gentlemen of no fortune, respect, or families, in the kingdom), they took care to continue that very parliament all king William's reign, and part of queen Anne's too."

WILLIAM received the deputies of the estates with much more civility than his usual phlegmatic manner warranted, and readily condescended to accept that which, in point of fact, he had seized, and then held in secure possession, and that which had been the object of his ambition from the beginning. The following fanatical oath was then tendered to him:—"We will serve the eternal God to the utmost of our power, according as He has commanded in His holy word, and the right and due administration of the sacraments, now received and preached within the realm of Scotland; and shall *abolish, and gainstand, all false religion*, contrary to the same, &c. And we shall be careful *to root out all heretics, and enemies to the true worship of God, that shall be convicted by the TRUE KIRK of GOD* of the said crimes, out of our lands and empire of Scotland: and all this we faithfully affirm by our solemn oath."

THEIR MAJESTIES were undoubtedly bound to be persecutors by this oath, and as there could be no doubt at whom heresies, false doctrine, &c. pointed, he was bound to proceed with that rabbling and persecution of the episcopalians which they had begun. William himself saw it in this light, and *refused* to sign it, till the commissioners replied, that neither the meaning of the oath, nor the laws of Scotland, did import persecution; which a presbyterian author denounces as false and inconsistent. Then, said he, "I take the oath in that sense." No words can more clearly import persecution; and although the persecuting clause is a dead letter in the present amiable hand that wields the sceptre, yet she is bound by oath to persecute that church which is in full communion with



that in which she received her new birth, and from the hands of whose chief minister she received her temporal crown.

SOON AFTER the meeting of the estates, the presbyterian ministers prepared and presented a petition to the convention, upon the basis of Renwick's and the Sanquhar Declarations. It is headed, "The humble petition of the poor people who have suffered grievous persecution for their religion, and for their *revolts* from, and disowning the authority of, king James VII., pleading for devolving the government upon the prince of Orange, now king of England." They rehearse their *sufferings* for what the law called sedition, treason, and murder, but which they themselves denominated religion; and then they say, "we prostrate ourselves, yet under the sorrowing smart of our still bleeding wounds, at your honour's feet, who have a call, a capacity, and we hope a heart to heal us. . . . That you will proceed without any delay to declare the wicked government dissolved, the crown and throne vacant, and James VII., *whom we never have owned*, and resolve, in conjunction with many thousands of our countrymen, never again to own—to have really forfeited, and rightly to be deprived of, all the right and title he ever had, or could ever pretend to have thereto, and provide that it may never be in the power of any succeeding ruler to aspire unto or arise to such a capacity of tyrannising<sup>1</sup>."

THE AFFAIRS of the rabbled clergy were not noticed at all by the convention for some time. On the 28th of March all the bishops, and many of the nobility, with some of the commons, deserted the house, considering it no longer consistent with that allegiance which they owed to king James, to sit in it. After that, the presbyterians easily carried every thing their own way, and their first act, after forfeiting king James in absence, was to publish a PROCLAMATION against owning the late king James, and commanding public prayers to be made for king William and queen Mary. It ran as follows:—"The estates of this kingdom having proclaimed and declared William and Mary king and queen, &c. . . . to be king and queen of Scotland, they have thought fit, by public proclamation, to certify the lieges that none presume to own or acknowledge the late king James VII. for their king, nor obey, accept, or assist any commissions or orders that may be emitted by him, or in any way correspond with him; and that none presume, upon their highest peril, by word, writing, in sermons, or any other manner of way, to impugn or disown the royal authority

<sup>1</sup> Cruikshank's History, ii. 279-80.





of William and Mary, king and queen of Scotland; but that all the lieges render their dutiful obedience to their majesties; and that none presume to misconstrue the proceedings of the estates, or to create jealousies or misapprehensions of the actings of the government; but that *all the ministers of the gospel*, within the kingdom, publicly *pray* for king William and queen Mary as king and queen of this realm: And the estates do require the ministers within the city of Edinburgh, under the pain of *being deprived and losing their benefices*, to read this proclamation publicly from their pulpits upon next Sunday, being the 14th instant, at the end of their forenoon's sermon: And the ministers on this side of Tay to read the same upon Sunday thereafter, the 21st instant; and those benorth Tay upon the 28th instant, under the pain foresaid: Discharging hereby the proclamation of the council, dated 16th September, 1686, to be read hereafter in churches. And the estates do prohibit and discharge any injury to be offered by any person whatsoever to any minister of the gospel, either in churches or meeting-houses, who are presently in possession and exercise of their ministry therein, they behaving themselves as becomes under the present government; and ordains this proclamation to be published at the market-cross of Edinburgh with all the ordinary solemnity, that none may plead ignorance."

AT THE SAME time the estates passed a vote of thanks to the presbyterians who had come into Edinburgh in such an illegal manner to overawe such of the members as continued faithful to king James. Now these men were *the very men* that had been engaged with others in that barbarous rabblement of the clergy that has been already partly described. It was, therefore, virtually a vote of thanks to that lawless rabble for their most atrocious abuse of the clergy, the plundering of their goods, the sacrilegious robbery of the communion plate that had been solemnly dedicated to God's service, and the depriving them of their benefices and livings; all of which the estates called *important services*.

BUT THIS was not the worst; for the above proclamation was designed, as it actually had the effect in part, to eject the whole of the established episcopal clergy; and besides, the convention did not take the clergy in the west, that had been rabbled, under their protection, far less to restore them to their churches. During the whole time that the convention had sat, the rabble were as busy and barbarous as at the first, and only a few days previous to the proclamation, Mr. Stewart, incumbent of Ratho, presented a petition, com-





plaining of having been rabbled and ejected from his benefice, and praying for protection. This, says bishop Sage, "gave them occasion to talk of the clergy *indefinitely*, and of the troubles many of them had met with. But what should be done in relation to them? It was moved, and the motion was entertained, that a proclamation should be ordered, requiring them to disown king James, &c., and promising obedience to all that should give dutiful obedience. But then another proposal was made by the duke of Hamilton, that those who had been thrust from their stations might be likewise comprehended, commanded home to their respective churches, and promised protection upon their compliance. This was vigorously opposed by several of the members, particularly by sir James Montgomery, of Skelmorly, who said, that was downright taking the whole west upon their top; it would disoblige all the presbyterians, and might have very fatal consequences; therefore the meeting must not look *so far back*: it would be enough if protection was promised to those who were in the *actual possession* and exercise of their ministry, which reasoning prevailed; so it was carried that the proclamation should run as it stands above<sup>1</sup>.

THIS PROCLAMATION divided the clergy into two classes; those who, on the 13th of April, were in possession of their churches and in the actual exercise of their ministry, and those who had been expelled by the rabble, and were then living precariously on the benevolence of their friends. To the former a conditional protection was promised; to the latter none at all, but moreover the lawless acts of the rabble were confirmed, and they were excluded from their churches. It is to be remarked, that this important proclamation was only published at the cross at eleven o'clock in the forenoon of Saturday the 13th, and did not appear in print till eleven o'clock that evening. The clergy of Edinburgh were required to read the proclamation from their pulpits on the following day, yet they received no notice of this order, nor received a copy of the proclamation, till about eleven o'clock on Saturday night, and some of them not till Sunday morning. This was rather short notice for complying with a matter of such importance as the transference of their allegiance from one king, to whom and to his heirs they had sworn obedience, to another, and to recommend and preach it to the people. Besides, at the time that they were required to read the proclamation, William and Mary had not accepted the crown; and it was requiring

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, p. 24, 25.



of them the implicit faith of the Roman church to make so light of their consciences and of their oaths so suddenly, without time for reflection. Moreover, the order for reading the proclamation did not come to them legitimately, through their bishops, but by the officials of the law. The judicious words of an adversary may well apply to this case:—"The dethroning of a king, and the settling of a crown upon the head of a new sovereign, is certainly a matter of so great weight, of such vast importance and concern, that it requires the most serious and deliberate, the most calm and unprejudiced minds to determine it: a hasty and undigested resolution, if in any case dangerous, would unquestionably in this prove fatal and remediless<sup>1</sup>."

THAT CLASS of the clergy that had escaped the merciless rabble till after the 13th of April, had the promise of a precarious protection; but such as, perhaps, no government ever before offered. That is, those who should read the proclamation, and pray for the new king and queen, were to be exempted from the violence of the rabble; but those who, under whatsoever circumstances, should not read it, "to your task, O rabble; you shall not be questioned for it. Is it not an excellent government where rabbles are constituted judges and executors of the laws? Was not that brave protection at a juncture when the greatest statesmen and casuists of both nations were *making protection and allegiance reciprocal*? Yes, verily, sir, considering the posture of affairs then, no man without doing violence to his own sense, could put a better gloss upon it. In many men's opinion, these words, 'they behaving themselves as becomes, under the present government,' were designed to comprehend *more* than reading and praying, and were put in of purpose to expose those to the mercy of the rabble, who (though they should obey that proclamation) should at any time thereafter refuse obedience to any thing that a presbyterian meeting, council, or parliament, should enact or determine. Certainly, the words will go so far easily, and without stretching. It is as certain the rabble herefrom took new encouragement, and kept up the persecution *as hot as ever*; and, for my part, I can see no other thing like law for turning out some ministers afterwards, who had both *read* and *prayed*, for not observing the late fast<sup>2</sup>."

THE CLERGY of Edinburgh had no time allowed them for deliberation, for some of them did not receive the proclama-

<sup>1</sup> Vindication of the Proceedings of the Convention of the Estates in Scotland.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 30.



tion till after they were in the pulpit and had commenced the service, and so could not satisfy their consciences about it. The illustrious seven bishops of England that had incurred James's wrath for refusing to read an illegal proclamation, shewed by their example that the clergy were not bound to follow the Romish doctrine of an implicit faith, and in blind obedience read every proclamation that may be forced on them by the civil power. This present proclamation contained as important and illegal matter as that for which the seven bishops suffered, or as that act of the English parliament for which so many of the English clergy were suspended. Yet there was not the least time given to the Edinburgh clergy, not even to communicate with their bishops; but they were ordained to open the proclamation from its first folds, and read it without knowing its contents. The clergy all refused to read it, and the clerk in one of the churches having got possession of it, began to read it in opposition to the minister, when the whole congregation got up and indignantly left the church before he had read above the one half of it. The clergy were cited to appear before the committee of estates in the course of the next week, to answer for their contumacy<sup>1</sup>.

THE PROCLAMATION was not delivered to the clergy in the country in proper time by the sheriffs' clerks, who kept many of them back till the days appointed for reading were passed. Yet this legal and sufficient excuse did not save the clergy from deprivation; but they had also another plea, that the proclamation was not delivered to them in due form—that is, by their respective bishops. In all preceding times, public papers that were to be read during divine service were always transmitted to them by their ordinaries; and the order of bishops had *not yet* been abolished. The bishops were the *first estate* of parliament, and their government was still in force; and the inferior clergy could not lawfully be obliged to read any public paper that had not been transmitted to them in the customary legal manner. By the words *ministers of the gospel*, used in the proclamation, there is no doubt the presbyterian preachers were meant and included as well as the established clergy. The proclamation was sent to each of them, in the same way as to the parochial clergy; but they universally disobeyed; yet *they were never called in question* for their disobedience in not reading it, from mere self-will and insolence, though it was made a sufficient cause for the ejection.

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Present Persecution, 31.





tion of the episcopal clergy. But the committee knew with whom they had to do. They very well knew that the presbyterian ministers would not make any compliances, or read any proclamation, until William had *first* declared in favour of their idol presbytery and their beloved covenant; and that is the true reason why the oath of allegiance was never exacted from the presbyterian ministers<sup>1</sup>.

AFTER THE convention of estates had sent up their commissioners to offer the crown to their majesties, they appointed a committee of the estates, as in the time of the dictator, to execute the government till William's will was made known. Information having been laid before them, by the presbyterian party in Edinburgh. that the clergy had not read the proclamation upon the day appointed, they cited them to appear before the committee. In general, the clergy pleaded scruple of conscience, and want of time to make up their minds upon so momentous a subject as the transferring their allegiance from their natural born hereditary prince to a stranger. These reasons were disregarded, and the committee, by a formal sentence, deprived them of their livings, and declared their churches vacant.

THE FIRST that appeared to answer their citation was the Rev. Dr. Strachan, professor of theology in the university, and one of the incumbents of the Tron church, and he is represented, by bishop Sage, to have been "an ingenuous man, and a truly primitive christian." He made a most ingenious and unanswerable defence. He said the estates had declared in their claim of right that none can be king or queen of Scotland until they have sworn the coronation oath. For this very reason, they said king James had forfeited his right to the crown simply because he had assumed and exercised the regal power without having taken the coronation oath. He next shewed them that all that the estates had yet done was only to *nominate* the prince and princess of Orange, as the persons to whom the crown should be offered; but that they had not yet actually made the offer. These illustrious personages had not accepted it, and it was just possible that they might decline it; but even if they should condescend to accept the crown, as they had not as yet taken the coronation oath, they could not, upon the principles now laid down by the convention, be considered king and queen of Scotland, and therefore he could not pray for them in that character. The committee were mute, and could make no answer to these points; yet his



defence was not sustained, no further time was allowed for deliberation, his confession that he had not read the proclamation was deemed sufficient, and, although he had a family of thirteen children, he was deprived, and made the first sacrifice to the exercise of the prerogative. Some other clergymen used the same line of defence, but added, they were willing to pray for the prince and princess as king and queen, so soon as they had taken the coronation oath. But even this availed them nothing, for the real object of this prosecution was to remove the episcopal clergy from their charges, to make room for the Mess Johns; they were therefore deprived for not having read the proclamation as ordered. In the course of three weeks the committee deprived about thirty clergymen in Edinburgh and its neighbourhood; "and all, too, before William and Mary had sworn the oath, or (which is all one) before accounts came from London that they had done it; for upon their assuming the royal power (you know), the execution of the law belonged to them and their council, and so there was no more place for that committee<sup>1</sup>."

WILLIAM AND MARY took the coronation oath at Whitehall, on the 11th May; and the former announced to the council that he and his queen had signed that document, and had appointed their councillors for Scotland. For the most part, these were persons of no experience, and who had never been councillors before:—"they came in upon a new found; they had new and untried rules to walk by, new designs to carry on; in a word, they had, as it were, a split new system of government to temper and establish. Besides, there were great varieties of humours at that time in the nation. Armies were in the field, and a parliament was to sit; so the council had a vast ocean of business before them: and so for some weeks they had not leisure to fall upon the clergy—that is, till about the middle of July<sup>2</sup>."

IN THE INTERIM, the rabbling went on as ferociously as when it commenced on Christmas-day. It was immaterial to the rabble whether the clergy had or had not read the proclamation; they were both treated alike; but of the two, those who complied with the orders of government had the worst treatment. The rabble imagined that the proclamation would have emptied the pulpits as effectually as their exertions, and therefore there was a short respite—a lull in the terrible hail-storm of popular fury. They imagined that those who had

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 31, 32.—Case of the Afflicted Clergy, 13.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 32.



taken the Test, and had sworn never to disown king James, would have refused to read the proclamation; but when they discovered that several of those in the country had swallowed their scruples, and read the proclamation, they recommenced rabbling. If the episcopal clergy should give obedience to the orders of the estates, they must be allowed to remain in their cures, and consequently the presbyterian ministers who coveted their churches would be disappointed of their prey. "Besides," says bishop Sage, "if we may believe the rabblers themselves, *it irritated* them to see any man give compliance upon this head, for they looked upon them as perjured, and men of no conscience." The first who felt the effects of the tender mercies of these presbyterian legislators was Mr. Macmath, the incumbent of Laswade, a village about six miles from Edinburgh, and in that diocese. One evening, as he was returning home from Edinburgh, four fellows attacked him with awls, and gave him several wounds in the abdomen; they knocked him down, and filled his mouth with horse dung till he was nearly choked, and left him in that state<sup>1</sup>.

MR. BURGESS, minister of Tempel, near Dalkeith and diocese of Edinburgh, was so anxious to read the proclamation, and to pray for king William and queen Mary, that, finding it was not likely to be sent to him in time, he carefully provided himself with a copy, and read it on the appointed day. On a Sunday morning in June, about two hundred men from other parishes came to the church before the service began, and informed him flatly, "Our will is, that you preach no more here, and you shall preach no more." They guarded the church the two following Sundays, and eventually obliged him to quit his parish. Mr. Mackenzie, minister of Kirkliston, who had been for several years chaplain to major-general Mackay's regiment in Holland, and was actually with him at the battle of Killcranky, Mr. Hamilton of Kirknewton, Mr. Nimmo of Collington, Mr. Donaldson of Dumbarton, all read the proclamation; yet were all rabbled. Mr. Hamilton, "a man for the integrity of his life, purity of his doctrine, knowledge, and gift of preaching, beyond exception," was first minister of Pennycook, but was deprived by the Test in 1681; then of Irvine. He was attacked by a rabble from other parishes, in January, who dragged him in mock procession round the town to the cross, and tore his gown over his head, and told him that was their testimony against episcopacy. They commanded him to vacate his manse and church, which he the more readily pro-

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 33.





mised to do as he had just been presented to the parish of Kirknewton, eight miles from Edinburgh. On the 18th of April, a company of armed men from another parish, about nine o'clock at night, commanded him, in king William's name, to preach no more at Kirknewton. He procured a protection from the committee of estates; but notwithstanding, in the month of June, another armed rabble came to the manse about six o'clock, when he was absent, and ejected his wife and six young children, one of whom was ill of a fever, and soon died. The act of the convention for the protection of the clergy was produced and read to these men; to mark their contempt, they took and tore it, and trampled it under their feet; saying they valued it not, they knew the king's mind better. Sir John Maitland, one of the committee of estates, made some inquiries into this rabbling, and Mr. Hamilton was restored to his church; nevertheless, his house was again attacked, and himself and wife ejected, when they entirely destroyed his furniture, which was afterwards used for firewood. He was at last obliged to leave the parish, as his life was in danger<sup>1</sup>.

MR. WILLIAM SELKRIG, incumbent of Glenholm, in Peebleshire and diocese of Glasgow, read the proclamation, and prayed for king William and queen Mary *nominatim*. About the middle of June he was rabbled. The presbyterians began to throw his furniture out; he threatened to complain to the authorities, and they told him they acknowledged no authority but the covenant. He then persuaded them to allow him a fortnight to remove his effects, which, with some difficulty, they agreed to. They carried off the key of the church, and padlocked the door, and, as they kept him out of the church, he was obliged to leave his parish and go to Edinburgh. Mr. David Spence, minister of Kirkurd, in Peebleshire, was rabbled in January by strangers, and they discharged him from receiving his stipend, although there was then a whole year in arrear. On the 21st of April the church was again beset by a large armed company, who prevented his reading the proclamation, and carried off the keys of the church. Mr. Spence received a protection from the committee, with orders to the heritors to protect him; but they pretended that it was not in their power. In September the heritors cited him before the privy council, who deprived him, and declared his church vacant, because he had not read the proclamation in his house! Mr. Mowbray, at Uphall, in Linlithgowshire, complied with the orders of the council, yet he

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, 62-65.





was rabbled in the usual way, which so terrified his wife that she died in a few days. He applied to lord Cardross, patron of the parish, for leave to shelter himself in some of his lordship's cottages, which his lordship not only refused, but took the keys of the church from him, and thus effectually deprived him of his benefice.

THE WHOLE of the clergy in the presbytery of Stranraer read the proclamation; but the presbyterians in that district hired some poor Irish protestants, who had been driven out of their own country whilst popery had the supremacy, during king James's brief tenure, to go in a body and eject all the clergy from their churches and manses, and to commit all the barbarities usual on these disgraceful occasions. They were asked by some of the clergy, why they who had themselves fled from persecution in Ireland, and had received hospitality from them, should persecute men who were obedient to the laws. "Some of them being confounded at this, said that they were *pressed, yea, hired* to what they had done; yea, some of them vowed they would never go on such an errand again." After the clergy were cast out of their manses, they sheltered themselves in their barns, until they were ejected from them next; and one farmer who took his minister into his house, was rabbled, and obliged, with the minister, to flee to the fields at midnight, to avoid being murdered<sup>1</sup>. William Fergusson was the leader of this ungrateful and ferocious band, and on Whitsun-eve went to most of the clergy of that presbytery, and commanded them, on pain of death, not to preach longer at their respective churches. The rabble had nailed up the doors and windows of the church of Stranraer. Fergusson, with his party, led Mr. Ramsay, the incumbent, to the cross, and shouted, "I discharge you, in the name of king William and queen Mary, and of the convention, upon the pain of death, to preach any more in the church of Stranraer." To which Mr. Ramsay intrepidly replied, "If he could have open doors he would preach, and would hazard to undergo their cruelty rather than desert his charge, unless he could produce him some warrant from authority for what he did." Mr. Ramsay produced the proclamation, which, he said, was a sufficient order for him to continue his ministry; but Fergusson attempted to tear the proclamation. Mr. Ramsay then said, "that he was a proper servant of theirs to tear their public orders when he attempted to execute their private commands, for which he could produce no voucher."

<sup>1</sup> Case, &c. 70, 71.—Late Letter concerning the Sufferings, &c. 9.



An Irish preacher then said, "that Mr. Ramsay, and all the rest of Baal's priests, had been too long permitted *to live*, let be suffered to preach and to seduce that people any longer!" To which Mr. Ramsay answered, "that neither he nor any of his brethren could be called Baal's priests; that they had preached against the idolatry of the church of Rome, when the presbyterian ministers were sinfully silent, out of fear king James would have taken away their indulgence; that while the church was opposing popery, they did their best to bring it in: and had the episcopal parliament condescended to abrogate the penal statutes, as the presbyterians did (notwithstanding they had the impudence to call them papists), they would never have got an indulgence." The presence of some resolute friends deterred Fergusson from offering any farther violence to Mr. Ramsay, and having more clergy to rabble that day, he suffered him to escape at that time<sup>1</sup>.

MR. FRANCIS SCOTT, of Tweedsmuir, in Peebleshire, was ejected, although his wife was only confined four days before. Mr. William Alison, of Kilbucho, in the same county, although he had complied, was rabbled, his furniture broken, his cows driven from their pasture, and his corn entirely destroyed. The indulged presbyterian minister immediately took possession of both church and manse, and Mr. Alison could get no redress. Nine of the heritors of the parish of Airth, in Stirlingshire, and diocese of Edinburgh, wrote a joint letter to the earl of Eglantine, then at London, to request his lordship to intercede with king William for the restoration of Mr. Paul Gillies, the incumbent of that parish. "He was removed from his charge upon the deposition of two flagitious fellows, who had resolved to damn themselves to get him out of his ministry." It mattered not to the presbyterians whether or not the clergy had complied with the orders of the convention of estates, for whatever might be the consequences, they were determined to fulfil the obligations of the covenant, and dispossess the clergy from their livings, by means of the rabble, and to *extirpate* the episcopal order.

ALL THE CLERGY in the presbytery of Glasgow had been rabbled out of their parishes, except Mr. Macgill, the minister of Kilsyth, who was spared till after the 13th of April. He read the proclamation on the precise day, and prayed in terms of the statute; but the following Sunday a rabble convened from other parishes to interrupt him. His own pa-

<sup>1</sup> A late Letter concerning the Sufferings of the Episcopal Clergy in Scotland, small 4to. London, 1691, pp. 9-11.



rishioners drew up to defend their minister, when an affray took place, in which one of the rabblers was killed. Before the fight, the old clergyman fled to the house of the earl of Kilmarnock, in the neighbourhood, and knew nothing of the death of his assailant. Mr. Maxwell, who was lord Kilsyth's land agent, posted off immediately to Edinburgh, to acquaint the committee of estates with what had happened. He told them the minister had given obedience to the proclamation, and therefore had a right to the protection promised in it; that when the rabble came upon him, his parishioners thought themselves obliged to defend him, not only out of the respect they entertained for him, but also for their own security; for they might have been liable to the law, which obliges parishioners to protect their minister. And he added, that unfortunately one man had lost his life in the affray. The lord Ross was then president of the committee, who replied very gravely to Mr. Maxwell, that he wished the rabble *had not been opposed*; such people cared not what they did, and it had been better to have yielded to their humour: he was truly sorry that one of the minister's friends had been killed, but that affair had better be hushed up, for it would be hard to discover the actor, or to get him punished. But, my lord, says Maxwell, it was none of ours, it was one of the rabblers that was killed. "What do you say, sir?" said his lordship, briskly; "one of the rabblers that was killed! that may draw deeper than you are aware of!"<sup>1</sup> This is a specimen of the even-handed justice that was exercised by the revolutionary leaders; but *in fact*, the rabblers were secretly instigated to their lawless devastation, and were protected afterwards by men in power. The day after they had buried the unfortunate man who had been killed, "the whole company fell upon Mr. Maegill's manse, rifled it, broke and tore all his furniture to pieces, destroyed all his books and papers, carried off about £20 streling of money, plunged his hats and periwigs in the churn amongst some milk, and pounded them with the churn-staff, emptied all his meal out of its repositories, and then the chamber-box amongst it; in a word, you have hardly read or heard of such barbarous tricks as they played. The poor gen-

<sup>1</sup> This, says the bishop, reminded him of Hackerston's cow. A tenant of the laird of Hackerston came to him to excuse himself, that his cow had broken the laird's fence and trespassed on his ground, but hoped his worship would forgive it. "No," said the laird, "you shall make up the fence and pay for the trespass."—"O, sir," said the tenant, "I mistook; it was *your* cow broke over *my* fence."—"Then your fence was not good," said the laird; "you should have kept it better."





tleman sustained a loss to the value of £150 (a good stock for a Scotch minister), and to this day has got neither reparation nor protection<sup>1</sup>."

BISHOP SAGE mentions two other instances of the injustice of the new government; and as they shew the real animus of the new powers, they shall be given in the bishop's own language. "The other two instances," he says, "shall be Mr. Craig and Mr. Buchanan, both ministers within the presbytery of Dumbarton. I do not adduce them for any thing that was odd and singular in the treatment they had from the rabble, for so far they received only the common measure, but to let you see how little it avails men not only to have complied, but to have done good services, if they have *once owned* episcopacy. These two gentlemen are barons in Stirlingshire; that is, they hold such lands of the king *in capite* as gives them the privilege of voting at the choosing of commissioners for parliament, or being such themselves if they should be chosen. Now, when the members were a choosing for the late meeting of estates, the gentlemen of that shire of Stirling were almost equally divided about the persons to be elected for their representatives. Four were listed [as candidates]; two were downright malignants, cavaliers, who would have been clear for king James's interest, and two who were as clear for the prince of Orange. When it came to be determined, the votes ran equal till it came to the two laird ministers who were last, so they had the casting of the balance, and both did it in favour of the *new* statesmen. What could they have done more for the prince of Orange? Their votes made (and by consequence were equivalent to two votes of) two members of the meeting for him; besides (not being turned out before the 13th of April), they did all duty, read and prayed, &c. Yet, now that they are rabbled, there is no more protection for them than for the rottenest jacobite in the kingdom. These are the advantages of compliance amongst us; not one of all those whom I have named (and, as I said, it were easy to name as many more) has protection to this day; none of them dare venture to their churches, few or none to their houses<sup>2</sup>."

KING WILLIAM was not disposed to have been a persecutor, and it would appear from bishop Rose's narrative, already cited, that he would have given the preference, on political grounds, to episcopacy, if he could have prevailed on the bishops to have transferred their allegiance to him. By some preceding acts of parliament, the bishops and clergy were

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution, 34, 35.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 35.



bound to James by the most stringent oaths, and not only to James but to *his heirs*; but William, prince of Orange, was *not his heir*, although he was very nearly related to him. He founded his claim upon the prince of Wales having been supposed not to have been James's son, but one that been introduced into the queen's apartment in a warming-pan. To this incredible fabrication, bishop Burnet has not failed to add several falsehoods purely his own; but although one of William's declared objects was to inquire into the birth of the prince of Wales, yet that subject was allowed silently to drop, after he had secured the object for which he had invaded the kingdom. It is but too evident that William had thrown the affairs of Scotland into the hands of the whig or presbyterian party that had been in opposition to the government of the duke of Lauderdale, and who were intimately connected with the Mess Johns, from whose principles they had formed their political creed, and whose agency they now employed to "seat king Jesus on his throne." From the present persecution, and what has still to be narrated of it, as well as the previous history of presbytery, few will dispute the truth of Leslie's assertion, that "it is particularly remarkable of presbytery, that it never came yet into any country upon the face of the earth *but by rebellion*: that mark lies upon it." It is a mark that has been clearly demonstrated in this history, and, perhaps, at no time has presbytery shewn its natural ferocity more conspicuously than in this persecution.

TWO THINGS may have been remarked in the details of the horrid atrocities which have just been described, that the episcopal clergy were taken from a superior class of men to the presbyterians, who have succeeded them. Then the nobility and gentry devoted their sons to the service of God in the church; but at the present day no gentleman's son ever thinks of entering a presbyterian pulpit, and it is seldom that even respectable farmers' sons ever turn their attention that way. Although the public worship was conducted in an extemporary manner, yet we have seen that the war of extermination was also directed against the Book of Common Prayer, and that almost all the clergy had it in their possession. Unhappily, from the want of an authorised public liturgy as a standard of doctrine, the clergy had no Rule; neither were the catholic and primitive rites, which were afterwards adopted, used in the administration of the holy communion. Although the clergy were presbyterian in their mode of worship, yet the works of such of them as are still extant decidedly prove that their doctrinal opinions rose far above the antinomian coldness of the Cal-



vinistic theory. "It should not be forgotten, however," says a most eminent modern divine, "that the episcopal church, though it had no liturgy, was not destitute of forms to distinguish it from naked presbytery. The observance of the festivals was no slight mark of difference; the constant reading of the Scriptures, the use of the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Doxology, were badges of distinction equally significant. The general tendency was towards liturgical forms. Dr. Monro<sup>1</sup> observes, 'our clergy came as near the best liturgies in their public prayers as might be, and composed prayers for their own use, such as they seldom varied from; especially in the administration of the sacraments, they took care, by the plainness, gravity, and coherence of their words, that the people might not be left in the dark as to their meaning.' In Orem's History of Old Aberdeen, we have the Order of Morning and Evening Service compiled for the Cathedral, by Henry Scougal, in which occur the General Confession, the Te Deum, and Decalogue; nay more, the English liturgy had been introduced into several churches before the Revolution. Bishop Burnet, while incumbent in Salton, is said to have read it constantly in the parish church; nor was this a solitary instance. Dr. Monro, just quoted, opens a sermon on Good Friday with an allusion which would have been scarcely intelligible unless the liturgy had been read. He says, 'I need not the help of a preface to reconcile this text to this day, it being a part of that gospel which the church appoints to be read on this solemn fast; when the universal church puts on mourning, and beholds her Redeemer dying in the arms of love.' The sermon was preached in the north-east auditory of St. Giles's Church, Edinburgh, from St. John xviii., which is the gospel for the day in the *Scottish* liturgy, but the second lesson in the English. Does not this indicate the use of the Scottish Service-Book? In a sermon at the funeral of lord Strathmore, on St. John xi. 25, &c., he says, 'the first sentence that I have read is placed in the frontispiece of the office for the *Burial of the Dead*.' Such allusions are remarkable. The incidental way in which they are introduced indicates the *familiar use* of the ritual to which they refer. When the clergy were *rabbled*, as the phrase went, it was not uncommon to hear of their being dragged to the market-cross, where their prayer-book and robes were committed to the flames, as a holocaust to the *gentle* spirit of presbytery. Such notices as these shew the feeling on the part of the clergy,—the ten-

<sup>1</sup> Bishop elect of Argyle.—Inquiry into the new Opinions, &c.





dency towards a better order of things,—the progress towards conformity with the pure example of primitive worship. They shew that the *presbyterian mode* was submitted to, not chosen, and that it was departed from to a greater extent than is generally supposed<sup>1</sup>.” In addition to the above, Mr. Greenshields, in his petition, to be afterwards noticed, says that the use of the English liturgy “was no new thing in this place; I having seen and known that form of worship *practised and observed* within this city in several places *for upwards of twenty years past*.”

THE ENGLISH parliament discovered that king James had *abdicated* the throne, for the law does not admit of his being deposed, and it is established by a fiction that the king can do no wrong. When wrong is done, it is advised or executed by his ministers, and therefore they are the responsible parties. James encouraged and fostered a power behind the throne which became greater than the throne itself. He was surrounded by jesuits, and his official ministers, both in England and Scotland, were almost all papists; and he was hurried on by their evil advice to his own ruin. When one remonstrated with him upon his extraordinary haste to papalize his kingdoms, he said he was growing old, and if he did not make haste he should not live to have the merit of succeeding, or the honour of martyrdom if unsuccessful. Although he esteemed the jesuits his best friends, yet they were his worst enemies. They advised him to court the dissenters in order to play them off against the church in both kingdoms, by which means he lost the affections of his English subjects, and made them more readily listen to the prince of Orange’s specious promises<sup>3</sup>. On the first landing of the prince, James determined, like a brave man, to oppose force to force; but he found himself deserted by his army, and not only so, but they had gone over to his adversary and strengthened his ranks. All his councillors had deserted him, and he found himself left to the fatal advice of Petre, and others of his cloth. He found a powerful enemy had taken possession of his kingdom and of his capital, who gave him notice to quit at midnight,

<sup>1</sup> Episcopal Magazine for March, 1836, v. iv. 84, 85.

<sup>2</sup> A True State of the Case of the Rev. Mr. Greenshields, 12mo. p. 25.

<sup>3</sup> One morning, as he rose, the king found the following lines in his slipper:—

“The hearts of all thy friends are lost and gone;  
Wondering, they stand and gaze about thy throne,  
Scarcely believing thee the martyr’s son.  
Those whom thou favour’st merit not thy praise,  
To their own ends they sacrifice thy ease,  
And will in sorrow make thee end thy days.”





as that adversary took possession of his palace the following day. He had now no other alternative but to abdicate or to retire from a government that had been seized by another party; and although the wisdom of parliament declared it a *voluntary* abdication, yet there is no doubt there was a real force upon the king.

THE PRESBYTERIANS have accused both church and state of persecution. This is a very unjust charge, unless indeed it may be defined persecution to prevent their murdering the bishops, and shooting and murdering the king's soldiers in their beds and on the highways; to punish them for excommunicating the king, and declaring that he had forfeited the crown, because he had burnt their covenant; to send armies into the field to fight and oppose them in three distinct and formal rebellions; and to hang individuals of them who had been guilty of treason and murder. If these things can be called persecution, there are few countries wherein so much cause was given for this species of it. But *there is not one instance* of punishment of any one, purely on account of his religion; for although the principles of their religion prompted the presbyterians to all their lawless wickedness, yet it was not for their religion, but for their crimes of rebellion, murder, or sedition, that the vengeance of the government fell upon them. Wodrow presses every trifling circumstance, and the natural consequences of all their crimes against the state and against society, into his category of "*sufferings*." Those who were fined had their fines remitted, and many of those who were sentenced to be hanged would have been reprieved, upon the simple condition of giving utterance to the scripture words—God save the king. Yet such was their obstinacy and delusion of mind, that rather than say these words they suffered themselves to be fined, imprisoned, transported, and hanged; and so, without doubt, they were accessory to their own deaths. In the previous pages of this History we have always found the presbyterian ministers foremost in all seditions and rebellions, and ever ready to instigate their followers to all the breaches of the laws of which they were guilty. And after the horrible persecution to which they subjected the episcopal clergy, they added the most gross calumnies on their characters, asserting that they were cruel, lewd, and profane; whereas, says Dr. Leslie, a contemporary, "I have made inquiry, and am told by persons of *known integrity* and undoubted reputation, who lived upon the place, that the episcopal clergy in Scotland, particularly in the west where this rabbling was, were at the time of the Revolution, for piety,



learning, and diligence in their vocation, *the most eminent* that country had seen since the reformation, *or most churches have enjoyed since the primitive times*. And we have seen the proof of it here [London] by the conversation of severals of them, who have been driven hither, as well as by the learned works of others, well accepted in this nation, by scholars of the first form."—"And if the presbyterians there would speak the truth, they must own that they received great favours from the Scotch bishops, who often skreened them as much as they could from the rigour of the law, and treated them with humanity and tenderness. And particularly the lord archbishop of St. Andrews (whom they most barbarously murdered) made it his practice to interpose for them at council, and mitigated many severities against them. He was noted for this, and their vengeance fell most upon him according to their wont. Nay, to this day, they will not own that inhuman butchery to be a murder, or any crime at all, but a *glorious action* to destroy the enemies of the Lord."

TO THE WORDS cited from Leslie may be added the words of one of those authors who were obliged to write anonymously, and to publish in London: "What reasons were given them by our clergy in the two last reigns to provoke them to lay aside all humanity, and against the common rules of society, let be christianity, to become so cruel and barbarous, I am altogether ignorant; and I am sure our clergy are able to defy them to give one instance where any dissenter suffered death, or were any ways injured by the information or instigation of any [episcopal] minister of Scotland, or that any dissenter did suffer purely for dissenting, but only in the case of open rebellion, which being destructive of civil government, no civil magistrate can tolerate; or in the case of the murder of archbishop Sharp, or the wounding of Mr. Honyman, bishop of Orkney, with a poisoned bullet, that occasioned his death; or the murder of Mr. Peter Pearson, minister of Carsphairn, in Galloway; or the murder of Mr. Stewart and Mr. Kennoway, two gentlemen of the king's life-guard, at Swyne Abbey; or the horrid butcheries and murder committed on the person of Mr. Blair, one of the duke of Hamilton's chamberlains, they ripping up his body alive and taking out his bowels, at his own house; or the barbarous cruelties committed on the person of Mr. Lawson, minister of Irongray, whom, after he had plentifully regaled them at his house, he being a lame man, they brought out and wounded him in nineteen several places of his body, whereof thirteen were in his head, leaving him, in their apprehension, dead, although afterwards, by



God's good providence, to the admiration of all men, he recovered; and also for their barbarous cruelties committed upon Mr. Ramsay, then minister of Auchinleck, Mr. Shaw, of Anworth, and several others; and yet when any of them were punished for these notorious crimes, as the authors, abettors, or actors, *the clergy never appeared against them*, either as judges, accusers, party, or witnesses. Yea, when the government commanded the clergy to inform against these people, they generally declined it, until at last, when the justice-courts went through the country, they summoned the clergy to give in catalogues of their parishioners and dissenters upon oath, or otherwise to be committed to gaol to abide trial for disobeying authority; so that being upon oath forced to give in the names of dissenters, yet they did it with *such excuses and mitigations, that very few ever suffered*, either in their persons or estates, upon their information, which sufficiently testified the ministers' aversion to any thing that in the least might give them reason to suspect them, in having any dealing in what was inflicted on them by the government. Even oftentimes the clergy employed their power and moyen [influence] to save them when accused; and now those who, by their intercession, escaped, will not acknowledge those clergymen as active instruments, but tell them it was against their inclination to save them, but that God *forced them* to do what they did . . . and indeed those who escaped by the intercession of any minister are now become the greatest enemy and persecutor that such a minister hath. . . . For all the loud clamours of a persecution against the presbyterians in the two last reigns, I can confidently affirm, and am able to prove, that the episcopal clergy were the only persons persecuted all the time, either in their names, goods, or persons, several of them murdered, some wounded, and others affrighted from their houses, and forced in frosty and stormy nights to wander about for fear of their lives. And, indeed, because the presbyterians were not suffered without punishment to supplant government, murder, plunder, and defame, then they rung it abroad that they were persecuted; and because the episcopal clergy were established by law, and countenanced by the government, as more consonant to monarchy, and of more apostolical, quiet, and better principles, than the others; when *only the civil powers* took cognizance of the fanatic crimes, therefore they gave it out, *that by prelacy they were persecuted*<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> A late Letter concerning the Sufferings of the Episcopal Clergy in Scotland. London, small 4to. pp. 22-25. 1691,





## CHAPTER LI.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1689.—Message to the English parliament.—King James lands in Ireland.—Oath of allegiance refused by some of the bishops.—Carstares appointed chaplain—his advice and opinions.—Meeting of parliament.—Act abolishing episcopacy.—First estate of parliament removed.—Origin of parliaments.—Observations.—A respite to the rabbling.—Address of the presbyterians to parliament.—Bishops ejected from their houses.—Council commence to persecute—their mode of proceeding.—Deprivations.—The earl of Crawford's hostility.—Proclamation inviting the people to accuse the clergy.—Inattention in sending copies of the proclamation to the clergy—cited before the privy council—falsely accused.—Difficulties of the presbyterians.—A fast ordered—causes assigned.—Distress of the clergy.—Deprivations.—Mr. Ramsay—deprived.—The number rabbled and deprived.—The design of the government.—Dr. Robertson and Mr. Malcom.—The clergy slandered—the learning of the clergy.—The four pleas of presbytery confuted: First plea, ignorance, manner of examination, method of study, philosophy—The second plea, immorality—The third plea, negligence—The fourth plea, error.—The plea of persecution.—Wherein the clergy plead guilty to the four pleas of presbytery.—Reflections.

1689.—ON THE 5th of March, king William informed his English parliament that king James had sailed from Brest with a body of 1500 French troops, in order to invade Ireland. Both houses agreed to an address to king William, that they would stand by him with their lives and fortunes in supporting his alliances abroad, in reducing Ireland, and in defence of the protestant religion and of the laws of the kingdom. In answer to this address, William recommended them to give timely assistance to the Dutch, and to repay them the charges of his expedition. He directed them to provide for 20,000 troops to be sent to Ireland, and such a fleet as might make them masters at sea, and to settle a revenue upon himself.

KING JAMES sailed from Brest with the pitiful detachment of 1500 men, under the command of field-marshal de Rosen, and landed at Kingsale on the 12th of March, and went



straight to Dublin. On the 20th of April he laid siege to Londonderry, which, after enduring incredible hardships from famine, was relieved by major-general Kirke on the 30th of July, who threw in a reinforcement and provisions, and the siege was raised on the following day. Dr. Walker, who so bravely defended Londonderry, received a reward of £5,000, and was afterwards killed at the battle of the Boyne. King James summoned a parliament to meet in Dublin, and coined brass money, to which he gave, by proclamation, the value of silver. The Irish parliament attainted the duke of Ormond, and several of the Irish protestant nobility, and deprived the archbishops and seven of the bishops. It was prorogued to the 12th of January.

ON THE 1st of March the oath of allegiance to William and Mary was taken by both houses of parliament; but many of the peers refused it. The archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of Bath and Wells, Kenn; of Ely, Turner; of Gloucester, Frampton; of Norwich, Lloyd; of Peterborough, White; of Worcester, Thomas; of Chichester, Lake; and Chester, Cartwright, from a conscientious regard to the oaths of allegiance that they had taken to James, absolutely refused to take the oath of allegiance to the new sovereigns. Bishops Thomas, Cartwright, and Lake, died in the course of this year, before they were suspended. Bishop Thomas, just before his death, sent for Dr. Hickes, the late dean of Worcester, and declared to him, in the strongest terms, against the new oaths: he said, "it is time for me now to die, who have outlived the honour of my religion, and the liberties of my country. If my heart deceive me not, and the grace of God fail me not, I think I could burn at a stake before I took this new oath." Lake, bishop of Chichester, made a similar declaration on his death-bed<sup>1</sup>. As the other prelates were firm in their resolution not to transfer their allegiance, nor to take the oath, they were suspended on the 1st of August, and about four hundred of the clergy, of different degrees, in the two universities and in the different dioceses of the kingdom<sup>2</sup>.

MR. CARSTARES, who had been the medium of intercourse betwixt the Ryehouse conspirators in England and Scotland, and the prince of Orange and their other friends in Holland, was rewarded for the dangers he had undergone in his many intrigues by being appointed their majesty's chaplain in Scotland. He enjoyed William's entire confidence, and being constantly about his person, with free access to him at all

<sup>1</sup> D'Oyley's *Life of Sancroft*, 260.

<sup>2</sup> *Life of Kettlewell*, app. xiii.-xxxv.



times, he persuaded him, contrary to his own political sagacity, to establish presbyterianism. His biographer says, he represented to William "that the episcopal party in Scotland were generally disaffected to the Revolution, and enemies to the principles on which it was conducted; whereas the presbyterians had almost to a man declared for it . . . that the episcopal clergy in Scotland, particularly the prelates, had been so accustomed to warp their religious tenets with the political doctrines of regal supremacy, passive obedience, and non-resistance, that it became inconsistent with the very end of his coming to continue episcopacy upon its present footing in Scotland." These political doctrines, of which he was so much afraid, might rather have recommended the church to William's protection, in preference to a sect that had given the late sovereign so many and such bloody instances of the opposite principles, and which, by implication, were threatened to be continued under William's government, unless they could reach supremacy. "Mr. Carstares," says his biographer, a presbyterian, "though the best friend ever the presbyterians had at court, knew too well the *spirit of the party* not to foresee the danger of *their abusing* that power which was to be put into their hands: that some, from the *narrowness* of their principles with respect to church government, others irritated by the personal injuries they had received from those of the episcopal persuasion, might be disposed to push matters *farther against them* than was consistent with his majesty's *interest*, or the maxims of sound policy<sup>1</sup>."

THE CONVENTION-PARLIAMENT met as appointed on the 5th of June *pro forma*, and was adjourned till the 17th, when it met for despatch of business. Very little power was given to the high commissioner, the duke of Hamilton, especially in the disposal of places, which was his own and his party's grand object. William made lord Melville secretary of state, whom he knew in Holland, and therefore could trust; for the same reason he trusted chiefly to Dalrymple lord Stair. Both of these noblemen had been too deeply implicated in the plots and conspiracies of the preceding reigns to be suspected of any secret attachment to the exiled king. The hopes of the presbyterian party were still deferred. Although the church had been declared "an insupportable grievance and trouble," yet nothing had as yet been done to gratify the "inclinations" of that small minority that called themselves *the people*. The duke of Hamilton became discontented that his merits had

<sup>1</sup> M'Cormick's Life of Carstares, 40.





been overlooked, and he turned sulky, and began an opposition to Melville, and the disputes were so keen, that many people thought there would have been a new revolution. They repealed all the former oaths of allegiance and supremacy, declarations and tests, and substituted a new oath, "to be faithful and bear true allegiance to their majesties king William and queen Mary." On the 22d of July they laid the axe to the root of the establishment of the church, by passing the following act:—

"WHEREAS the estates of this kingdom, in their claim of right of the 11th of April last, declared that 'prelacy and the superiority of any office in the church above presbyters, is, and hath been, a great and insupportable grievance and trouble to this nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people ever since the Reformation, they having reformed from popery by presbyters, and therefore ought to be abolished:' Our sovereign lord and lady, with advice and consent of the estates of parliament, *do hereby ABOLISH PRELACY, and all superiority of any office* in the church of this kingdom above presbyters; and hereby rescinds, casses, and annuls those acts of parliament under Charles II., and all other acts, statutes, and constitutions in so far alienarly as they are inconsistent with this act, and establish prelacy or the superiority of church officers above presbyters: And their majesties do declare that they, with advice and consent foresaid, will settle by law that church government in this kingdom *which is most agreeable to the inclinations of the people.*"

THE PEOPLE whose *inclinations* were to be gratified meant the presbyterians in the western counties, few and insignificant in number, rank, or wealth, compared with the great body of the people whose conscientious attachment to the reformed Catholic church was never once consulted. The clause in the claim of right, and which is again repeated in the above act, is denounced as an absurdity by a respectable presbyterian author, who says of it, "though this vote was *absurd*, and *founded upon more FALSEHOODS than one*, yet it was *expedient*, if not necessary. The friends of prelacy, in general, had slavish notions of prerogative; and it was found necessary not to represent episcopacy as a grievance, but to make its abolition one of the *pacta conventa* of the new settlement. It is to this bold vote that I chiefly ascribe the establishment and preservation of revolution principles in Scotland<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Guthrie's General History. x. 292.





THE PARLIAMENT confirmed all the transactions of the convention. But although prelacy was now abolished, and the bishops declared to be no more a part of the constitution or an estate of parliament, yet they did not pretend that episcopacy was sinful, but only, they said, it was not agreeable to the *inclinations* of the people. Truly there are many things not agreeable to men's inclinations, but which must be submitted to nevertheless. But the meaning of the leading men in the construction of this sentence, was, that whatever the people's inclinations might be, theirs were to possess themselves of the *bishops' power, lands, and revenues*; and therefore the fundamental principle of the presbyterian establishment is not the word of God, but "the inclinations of the people," and also the root of all evil, covetousness. No conditions were offered to the bishops to retain them in their places, neither were they allowed, as an estate of parliament, an opportunity of declaring whether they favoured or objected to the revolution. So that two only of the estates of parliament advised the crown to establish presbytery; not because it was conformable to the *word of God*, but because it was *agreeable to the inclinations* of the presbyterians, who alone had possession of the seats and votes of parliament. But that they might not lose the name of *three* estates of parliament, although they *extirpated* one of them, they called the nobility the *first* estate, the barons or members for the counties the *second* estate, and the burgesses or members for the burghs the *third* estate. The political party called *Whigs* having been produced by the Covenant and the wild presbyterian preachers of the seventeenth century, have always been inclined to precipitate revolutions; and it is somewhat remarkable, that from the time of their first acquiring power down to the present moment, they have continually attempted, and have sometimes accomplished, *revolutions*<sup>1</sup>.

FROM THE very first moment of parliamentary history, both in England and Scotland, the church has ever been the first estate. Parliaments in both kingdoms had their origin in councils or synods of the church, in which the sovereign presided, and the lay nobility were called to assist. At these synods temporal laws were sometimes enacted, merely as a matter of convenience; and hence originated parliaments, when, in process of time, the Commons were added, as a separate estate, to the other two estates of the clergy and the

<sup>1</sup> The last Reform in parliament was declared by Lord John Russell to have been a *Revolution*,—"we cannot afford to have two *REVOLUTIONS* in one year."



nobility. This is not a popish corruption or usurpation, but a laudable constitution, arising out of experience and the religious feelings of antiquity; for this combination is not to make the church political, but the state religious. The ministers of religion are guardians of public morals, and their estate, sitting and voting in parliament, is a security for the religious character of our legislature. To the readers of this History it will be abundantly evident that the popish clergy, the mock episcopal superintendents, and the catholic prelates both in the line of Spottiswood and of Sharp, were always esteemed an estate of parliament. The latter line were "*redintegrate*" with the constitution; and the very fact of the present powers resorting to the expedient of *splitting the Commons into two estates* shows their consciousness that they had broken in upon the constitution, by blotting out the first estate of parliament. Upon this point bishop Sage has the following judicious observations:—"If *two* estates can vote out *one*, and make a parliament without it; if they can split one into two, and so make up the three estates; why may not *one* split itself as well into *three*? Why may not the two parts of the splitted estate join together, and vote out the estate of burghs? Why may not the nobility of the first magnitude join with the burghs to vote out the smaller barons? Why may not the smaller barons and the burghs vote out the greater nobility? After two have voted out one, Why may not one, the more numerous, vote out the other, the less numerous? When parliament is reduced to one estate, Why may not that one divide, and one half vote out the other? and then sub-divide, and vote out, till the whole parliament shall consist of the commissioner of Rutherglen, or the laird of [Dumbiedykes], or the earl of Crawford? Nay, Why may not one vote out himself, and leave the king without a parliament? What a dangerous thing it is to shake foundations! How doth it unhinge all things! How plainly doth it pave the way for that which our brethren pretend to abhor so much; viz. a despotic power, an *absolute and unlimited monarchy*! To conclude this point; there is nothing more notorious than that the spiritual estate was still judged fundamental in the constitution of parliaments; was still called to parliaments; did still sit, deliberate, and vote in parliaments till the year 1640, that it was turned out by the then presbyterians. And our present presbyterians, following their footsteps, have not only freely parted with, but forwardly rejected, that ancient and valuable right of the church: nay, they have not only rejected it, but they *declaim* constantly against it *as a limb of antichrist*, and what not? And



have they not manifestly deserted the undoubted principles and sentiments of our reformers<sup>1</sup>?"

FOR A SHORT interval the rabbling had ceased, and the clergy were willing to suppose that they owed this cessation of their sufferings to the intervention of king William. Those who had escaped the first trial hoped there was to be no further persecution; and the lenity and tenderness with which the clergy saw others treated who were sufficiently obnoxious to the government, inclined them to expect similar indulgence when their case came to be duly and impartially represented. "For, seeing his [William's] mercy extended to outlaws and criminals of the grossest size, they who were God's ambassadors doubted not to partake of it; their excesses, if such they may be called, being only in points very dubious and immaterial<sup>2</sup>." Their hope seemed reasonable for some time, for no mention had been made for any further proceedings against them. They received some encouragement from the circumstance that the clergy were not comprehended in the act that obliged all civil and military officers to take the oath of allegiance. They flattered themselves that more tender measures were about to be adopted towards them; but in this they were altogether mistaken. The true reason for their escape from taking the oath of allegiance was, because it was very well known that the presbyterian preachers would not have taken that oath till presbytery was established by law, and William had himself taken their covenant.

THE PRESBYTERIAN preachers were becoming impatient for possession, and therefore they presented a long address to parliament, in which they thanked God for the great deliverance wrought out for them by the pious and magnanimous William, then prince of Orange, but now their gracious sovereign; they complimented the commissioner and the members of the parliament; they shewed their "keen hatred" with some "round abuse" of episcopacy and the bishops, and all who adhered to them; and then petitioned the parliament to relieve them from such oppressors. They likewise petitioned that the church government might be established in the hands of such only as, by their former carriage and sufferings, had given evidence that they were known and sound presbyterians; they requested that the church, thus established, might be allowed, by their lordships' civil sanction, to appoint visitations *for PURGING OUT insufficient, negligent, scandalous, and*

<sup>1</sup> Fundamental Charter of Presbytery, 407, 408.

<sup>2</sup> Case of the present Afflicted Clergy, 14.





*erroneous ministers.* "What apostle," says bishop Sage, "if you give him a presbyterian jury, shall not come within the comprehension of one of these four" appellations?

As soon as the act passed which made the "inclinations of the people" the basis of the new establishment, the bishops were obliged to quit their houses and their churches; and they were most unjustly and cruelly deprived of their revenues for the current year. "But," says an anonymous writer, "there are some, though, alas! but few, christians still remaining in Scotland, who are not ashamed of the doctrine of the cross, nor afraid to contend for catholic and apostolic unity in the faith and practice of the primitive church, though at all the hazard of all they have in the world; and who, by the grace of God, dare even resist unto blood for the truth of those doctrines which came down from above, and for the beauty of those offices which were from the beginning<sup>1</sup>."

THEIR ADDRESS awakened the dormant zeal of the privy council, and stimulated them to the work of persecution; and the lord advocate was instructed to issue summonses against all the clergy who had not read the late proclamation. Citations were issued accordingly, and the council shewed as warm a zeal, and proceeded as summarily, as the presbyterian ministers could have desired. When the person cited appeared, a long libel was read to him concerning the irreligion, the ingratitude, the contempt, &c. of his disobedience. After that, the president of the council asked him if he had read the proclamation upon the appointed day, and if he had ever since prayed publicly for king William and queen Mary, as king and queen of Scotland; and when the earl of Crawford was present, he added, by "surname." If the unfortunate clergyman answered "No" to both, there was no mercy for him, whatever the cause might be for his not having complied. Few were able to escape the comprehensive wording of this libel or indictment, for it ran, "whereas the ministers, by a proclamation dated the 13th of April, were commanded and required to read the same *upon the respective days* therein contained, and pray; yet, when the said proclamation of the estates was sent to him, at least came to his hands, or of which he had knowledge [mark the gradation and the equity of the several steps, especially the last], he was so far from testifying

<sup>1</sup> "Memoirs of the Episcopal Church of Scotland from the memorable Revolution of 1688," in MS.; a copy of which the author took from the original manuscript in the possession of the late lord bishop of Edinburgh and *primus Scotiæ episcopus*, the right rev. Dr. Walker.



his gratitude and giving due obedience thereunto, that, &c." If the clergyman pleaded, and was ready to swear to it, that the proclamation had never come to his hands, it availed him nothing; for he was brought in guilty by the third step in the above gradation. And if he had not read the proclamation, it did not save him, although he could plead that he had prayed for the king and queen by name.

THE WORTHY gentlemen who were chosen to carry on this great work, says an anonymous satirist, "accordingly sent out their emissaries into all the quarters of the kingdom, to encourage and invite persons of all ranks to bring in libels against their ministers, which was accordingly done; and it was looked upon as very modest if they contained no more than a breach of all the Ten Commandments, when the ministers upon a citation compeared before the privy council (a judicatory not tied down to common rules), the libel was read, to which the minister pleaded not guilty, and craved a trial, but that was far from their meaning, for both the accusers and judges knew very well that there was little of truth in them; however, some pretence or other was found to deprive the minister, the libels were recorded in the council books, and copies of them were sent to the respective presbyteries to cause them to be read from the pulpits to their people; so that the pulpit, which formerly went by the name of the chair of *verity*, was now made the common-sewer of all the lies and scandal of the times, and those who ought to have been made the ambassadors of the God of Truth were made heralds to the accuser of the brethren. But to do the council justice, they soon became weary of such shameful proceedings, and gave them over in some measure; but no sooner was this storm over, but a *tempest* arose which did terrible execution; what the council had let fall, the kirk judicatories took up, and that they might carry on this work with the greater success, a select committee was appointed to search the journals of the year 1638, and to find out such precedents as could make for their purpose in carrying on so good a work, and it was agreed upon that the ecclesiastical courts, in all their proceedings against the episcopal clergy, should be tied down to these few clear following rules:—1. That no episcopal minister should know his accuser; for if it were otherwise, it would discourage a great many good people (who were well inclined) from bringing in libels, which would very much retard this work. 2. That it was sufficient to name the offence, without condescending upon time and place when and where it was committed, for that might sometimes prove of great use



to the pannel. 3. A minister might be libelled upon common fame; that is, if a malicious fellow should invent and spread a scandal upon any minister, a libel should be raised upon it, which, if it served no other purpose, it would be sure to *defame* him. 4. Witnesses should be put to answer *super inquirendis*; that is, what know you of such a minister? did you ever see him drunk or hear him swear, &c.? If a witness was so stupid as not to fix some scandal upon a minister, he was dismissed with contempt. . . . I will venture to say that such rules could never be brought from precedents in any courts of justice in the world, except from the green tables in 1638, or the journals of the Inquisition. The only pleasant part of this was, that when the apostle's canon, 'receive not an accusation against an elder, but before two or three witnesses,' was objected against them, the short answer was, 'that some rules are good *in ecclesia constituta* which must not be followed *in ecclesia constituenda*; but the misfortune was, that this rule was laid down *in ecclesia constituenda*; for so I believe the church was in St. Paul's time. And now what minister could stand his ground in a court that proceeded in this manner, especially if you will take along with you the weak pretences that were laid hold upon to turn them out; some for reading and recommending the Whole Duty of Man, which approves of set fasts, as Mr. Johnston at Burntisland; some for dancing about a bonfire, as Mr. Herriott at Dalkeith, though the whole town knew it to be false; and Mr. Peacock was deposed for not appearing at the bar of the presbytery *that very day on which his wife was buried!*'

MR. GUILD, minister of North Berwick, told the council that he had prayed for their majesties from the first time he had heard they were proclaimed, and none in the kingdom was more joyful than he that a protestant king and queen were set on the throne. Nevertheless, he was deprived. There were several other similar instances; but if they had both read and prayed, if it was not done on the precise day, there was no escape; deprivation infallibly followed. Mr. Hay, of Kilconquhar, in Fife; Mr. Hunter, of Stirling; Mr. Young, of Monyvaird, in Perthshire; Mr. Aird, of Torrieburn, in Fife, with many others who had both read and prayed by the word of command, but not having read on *the precise day*, they were deprived. The case of Mr. Aird was peculiarly hard. He was an infirm old man, of great gravity and serious-

<sup>1</sup> The Causes of the Decay of Presbytery in Scotland; in answer to a Letter from a Clergyman of that Persuasion. London. 8vo. 1713. pp. 5-7.





ness, and had brought a certificate from the sheriff of Fife, certifying that he had not received the proclamation on or before the proper day, but that he had read it on the Sunday immediately after he had received it. There was no remedy; he was deprived.

ONE THING was remarked as an extraordinary circumstance, that the question was never put to any of them whether or not they would give obedience for the future. There was no place left for repentance. "And I remember," says bishop Sage, "that some of the magistrates of the town of Perth, after both their ministers were deprived, came to the earl of Crawford, and insinuated to him that they were hopeful Mr. Anderson, a good-natured man and a very good pastor, who had been one of the ministers of the said town, perhaps might yet be induced to comply, and that he would be extremely acceptable to the people if he were reponed. But presently his lordship turned huffy, and told them that that was not so much as once to be mentioned. So they were forced to let fall their design. Indeed, his lordship is a most zealous reformer, and as fit for being president at a board for turning out episcopal clergymen as could have been fallen upon. I remember a certain minister who had been a good time of his lordship's acquaintance, went to him, thinking to have prevailed with him to have got the diet deserted; and they had a very pleasant conversation. His lordship asked whether he used publicly to pray for king William and queen Mary. He answered, he prayed as the apostle directed; and cited 1 Tim. ii. 1, 2. 'Well (says my lord), this is *enough* for us to deprive you.' After some more discourse, the minister said 'he was sorry for the desolation of the church:' and his lordship answered very quaintly, '*But so am not I.*' The work had never gone on so successfully if he had not been on the top of it; for many times they had enough to do to get a quorum of the council (which can consist of no less than nine) on those days that were set apart for the clergy (in effect it was no wonder though ordinary stomachs had some kind of loathing to it): and then his lordship was in a strange pickle, and you would have seen strange running of macers through the city, calling them from their lodgings<sup>1</sup>."

THE COUNCIL began to find it to be a very tedious affair, to cite the whole clergy of the kingdom by the lord advocate's warrant. They took a shorter method of effecting their design, by inviting and allowing the parishioners of such ministers as had not obeyed to cite them before the council. The following pro-

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Persecution. 38.





clamation was therefore issued, dated the 5th of August, from which it is evident that the clergy that had been rabbled are entirely *excluded* from the protection of the government. It sanctioned and applauded their late atrocities, and in effect condemned the innocent sufferers as traitors and criminals.

WHEREAS the meeting of the estates of this kingdom, by their proclamation dated at Edinburgh the 13th day of April, 1689, did command and require all the ministers of the gospel within the kingdom of Scotland, publicly to pray for king William and queen Mary, and to read that proclamation from their pulpits upon the several Lord's days therein expressed: as also the estates did prohibit and discharge any injury to be offered by any person whatsoever to any minister of the gospel, either in churches or meeting-houses, who were then, viz. on the 13th of April last, in possession and exercise of their ministry either in churches or meeting-houses, they behaving themselves dutifully under the present government. And it being most just and reasonable that the foresaid proclamation be fully performed and obeyed, as most necessary for the security of the peace of the kingdom, and that such ministers who gave obedience should be secure under the protection of the law, and that the pain of deprivation be inflicted upon all those ministers who have disobeyed the proclamation. Therefore the lords, &c. in their majesties' name and authority, do strictly command and charge that none of the lieges take on hand to do any violence or injury to any of the ministers of the gospel, whether they be preaching in churches or meeting-houses, and that all such as were in possession and exercise of their ministry upon the 13th day of April last be allowed to continue undisturbed, and that such ministers as have been removed, dispossessed, or restrained, without a legal sentence, in the exercise of their ministry since the 13th day of April last, shall be allowed to return and exercise their ministry without disturbance. And ordains the sheriffs, &c. . . . to give their assistance for making the premises effectual; as also that such ministers who have not read the proclamation, and prayed, &c. according to the tenor thereof, may be deprived of their benefice, and restrained to officiate in their churches. *The lords, &c. do invite and allow the parishioners of such ministers as have neglected and slighted the reading of the proclamation, and praying, &c. to cite such ministers before the privy council, and grant warrant for citing and adducing witnesses to prove the same, that such ministers as have disobeyed may, by a legal sentence, be deprived of their benefices, and that none*



of the lieges at their own hand, without a legal sentence and warrant, presume to meddle in this matter.

IT MAY be remarked here, that in an affair that was made of so much importance, particular care ought to have been taken to transmit copies of the proclamation to the clergy in proper time ; “ yet never was less care taken since the world began.”—“ There were hundreds of ministers to whose hands it came not till the days prefixed were expired ; particularly in the shire of Fife there are betwixt seventy and eighty parishes, yet . . . only *six copies* came to the sheriff-clerk’s hand, who was ordered to distribute them ; and there was no such clause in the proclamation as allowed, far less required, them to obey it any Sunday after<sup>1</sup>.

THIS GENERAL invitation, coming from such an authority to the presbyterians, received instant and ready obedience, and it served a double purpose. First, it made quicker despatch ; and secondly, it afforded an opportunity for every malicious person in any parish to frame what calumnies they thought proper against the clergy. One or two of the meanest or most disreputable in a parish, and frequently the agents of the faction, borrowed men’s names without their knowledge to fill up these citations, and either of these were sufficient to accuse their minister. Summonses were issued out, upon malicious accusations, to appear at Edinburgh within ten days, before the privy council. “ Whereupon has followed the depriving of such as came before them, and had not read the proclamation ; and by this process they outed upwards of two hundred of the parochial clergy, which was all they could despatch, in about sixteen days<sup>2</sup>.” Deprivations were now more expeditious than formerly ; and under cover of this proclamation, charges of many most atrocious crimes and scandals were included in these citations against the clergy. The council never examined witnesses, nor sustained themselves judges respecting these scandals, but passed them over as the well-known tricks of their party ; confining themselves only to what was contained in the proclamation—the reading and praying. To the first, their defences were either that they had never received the proclamation, or that it had not come to their hands till the day appointed for reading it was passed ; or that it had not been delivered to them in a legal manner—that is, from their ordinaries. But none of these defences

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 36.

<sup>2</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, 15.



were sustained in their case, and when they requested that these charges of scandals and immoralities might be either examined or expunged from the charge, the falsehood of them was so well known, and so gross, that the council declared they would not sustain them. "Yet the libels, with these things in them, stand still on record; and I hear full accounts of them are sent to London, and daily printed there, and making good company in the coffee-houses<sup>1</sup>." And there is no doubt that these malignant and uncontradicted false witnesses have tended considerably towards begetting a feeling amongst English churchmen, which has traditionally and unconsciously descended, that the Scottish confessors of Christ's holy church were really what their enemies falsely designated them,—“insufficient, negligent, scandalous, and erroneous.”

THE INTRODUCTION of these scandalous lies into the citations had an insidious object; and when the presbyterial visitations should take place, they were designed to be sustained as known and uncontroverted truths; for had they not been proved before the council, and sentence followed? “It is true,” says the author of the Case of the Afflicted Clergy, “their libels were generally stuffed with a great many scandalous and vicious practices alleged against them (a malicious design to expose them to the present age, and to blacken them upon record to the future), but it is as true that when the ministers came to the bar, the scandalous and immoral part of the libel was wholly omitted by their judges, although the ministers themselves craved, for their vindication in those points, to be particularly tried upon them; but the sentence passed against them upon the two heads before mentioned [not reading or praying], and yet, in the accounts they sent to court, *the immoralities of the ministers' lives*, which were only *pretended* in the summons, but never spoken of in the trial, were *represented as grounds of their deprivation*; but it were far more easy to give the true reasons, for truth tells best; and it is this:—

“THE PRESBYTERIAN preachers in Scotland of the old standing, who only can pretend to be owned in any church meeting (if the government should think fit to call one), are but very few in comparison of the episcopal clergy now in place. It was highly debated amongst them what should be their behaviour if the parliament restored them to their churches from which they were put out in the year 1662. They could not think it advisable to meet in presbyteries by themselves,

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 39.





since in some presbyteries they would make but two in number, in some but one, and in others none at all. So that if they should join with the regular clergy in such presbyteries, they might reckon to be out-voted in all businesses, and to signify nothing; nay, if a national synod should be called, they would be at the same loss, for the members thereof, chosen by presbyteries, behoved to be episcopal men, the plurality by far of voters being of that way. So, to take off all difficulties attending this matter, it seemed to be the most plausible and effectual way to make as many vacancies as was possible, and that also before the meeting of next session of parliament, lest other measures should then be taken. And for this design, the *premunire* of not reading the proclamation, seemed, next to rabbling, the fittest and shortest expedient. I call it the shortest, because it was not possible to make greater despatch for vacancies than it occasioned, for a dozen of ministers were ordinarily turned out in a forenoon, and as many more sometimes in an afternoon. So that this method made clear way for the presbyterian brethren to be the greater part in all ecclesiastical assemblies, and by consequence to carry any thing they please there. Hereby also they have a fair opportunity of setting out young vagrants to take possession of the vacant churches, by which the number of their preachers daily increases<sup>1</sup>."

NOTWITHSTANDING the wholesale way in which the presbyterian government rendered the Lord's house desolate, and laid his vineyard waste, yet it was not sufficiently rapid to meet the desires of the ministers; neither had it all the desired effect. In many parishes there were none who would cite their clergymen; and those who did cite them, therefore, found it very expensive. Another proclamation was issued, dated the 22d of August, to shorten and simplify the form of process, intituled—"For citing ministers who have not prayed for their majesties." The people were again invited to impeach their clergy, and the heritors, sheriffs, and magistrates of burghs, were also invited to join in the accusation, and cite them before the council, on any Tuesday or Thursday six days after the citation, for all on the south side of the river Tay, and fourteen days for all on the north side of that river. And it was further declared that the said proclamation was without prejudice of any citations already given, or to be given, upon the former act of council.

THIS WOULD appear sufficiently expeditious; but it did not

<sup>1</sup> Case of the present Afflicted Clergy in Scotland, 18, 19.



satisfy the persecuting spirit of the presbyterians. So, at the instigation of their ministers, as the privy council asserts, another proclamation was issued, dated the 24th of August, for a *general fast*, to be kept on two *Sundays*! "No question," says Sage, "it was designed for a choaking morsel; for perhaps you never saw any thing like it." It was on account of "great and long-abounding sins amongst all ranks of persons—the falling from their first love—great faintings and failings of [presbyterian] ministers, and others of all ranks, in the hour of temptation, in their zeal for God and his work—and continuing divisions amongst some—the many and sad tokens of God's wrath, in the hiding of his face, and more especially in *his restraining the power and presence of His Spirit* with the preached gospel, in the conversion of souls, and edifying the converted, &c.—having seriously and religiously moved the presbyterian ministers, elders, and professors, of the church of Scotland, humbly to address themselves to the lords of his majesty's privy council for a general fast and day of humiliation to be kept throughout the whole kingdom—on this side the water of Tay, upon Sunday, the 15th of September—and by all others benorth the same on the 22d day of the said month" It was virtually to deny the faith, to compel christian men to fast on the weekly commemoration of Christ's resurrection, when He entered upon the regeneration<sup>1</sup>, obtained pardon for our sins, and gave us a pledge of *our own* resurrection to immortal life, if we keep His commandments. There was an abominable insult offered in it both to God and his servants, the clergy; for it is expressly asserted that the Holy Spirit had withheld His gifts and graces from the episcopal clergy; for it could mean none other. Although there were men then in the church equal in holiness of life to any of the primitive christians, yet the presbyterian ministers made the council say that they were in a state of reprobation; for there is no doubt, if the Holy Spirit of God be withdrawn from the hearts of men, a spirit of another sort will enter in and take possession. If the Spirit of God had not been with them, they could never have borne the cross with the exemplary and uncomplaining patience that they did; for wicked men bear not the cross; that is an honour that is reserved for the true disciples of Christ alone.

THIS PROCLAMATION was ordained to be read from every pulpit twice. These twin proclamations wrought wonderfully towards the end and design of the presbyterian ministers.

<sup>1</sup> St. Math. xix. 28.



Some of the clergy with hard straining had contrived to digest the April proclamation; but no straining could induce them to swallow the Sunday fasting. Two of the Edinburgh clergy were deprived the very next week on this account. Mr. Ramsay, one of the incumbents of the Old Church, "a man of *unblameable life*, a judicious and accurate preacher, gave obedience in all things to the act of the meeting of estates of the 13th of April, read the proclamation, prayed in express terms for king William and queen Mary, the very first day these things were enjoined to be done on; but that availed nothing, for the design was to remove all the episcopal ministers from the pulpits in Edinburgh at any rate, and upon any pretence, how little so ever."<sup>1</sup> Mr. Ramsay was immediately cited before the privy council, and it being his turn to preach on that day on which he was summoned, he took the opportunity of making a valedictory address, well knowing what would be his fate. After the morning service, his churchwardens and many of his congregation accompanied him to the door of the council-chamber. He was interrogated whether he had read the April proclamation and prayed for their majesties; and he replied that he had read the proclamation, and had prayed for their majesties by name. But, says the earl of Crawford, the president, "you only prayed for them as *declared* king and queen, not as those that were really such." He replied, that he "had prayed for William and Mary, whom the estates of the kingdom had *declared* king and queen, and since they had no liturgy, and they had given to them no form of prayer, he thought, seeing he had prayed for William and Mary, no more was to be required. And as for the words '*declared king and queen*,' he had taken them from one of their own proclamations." This was denied, but the proclamation being produced, it was found he was right; and, therefore, as he could not be caught upon this point, earl Crawford said, "but, Mr. Ramsay, you pray for the late king James." Mr. Ramsay replied, "my lord, I pray in these words—'Lord bless William and Mary, whom the estates of this land have declared king and queen, and bless all the royal family, *root and branch*, especially him who is now under affliction; sanctify it unto him while he is under it, and when it seems good to Thee, deliver him from it.' This is the form I made for myself, for you prescribe none; and is it not a sore matter, that where nothing is left to king James in reversion of three kingdoms, but the prayers of poor men, that you should deny him those?" He was then removed

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy, Fourth Coll. of Papers, 95.





from the bar till they had consulted under what pretence they could deprive him. When he was called in, Crawford said—“But, Mr. Ramsay, you did not read from the pulpit the proclamation for the fast.” “Now, my lord,” said Mr. Ramsay, “you have nicked me; indeed I did not intimate the fast.” “But why did you not?” “For many reasons, my lord.” “But pray let us hear some of those reasons.” “Excuse me, my lord, it is sufficient that I confess that I did not read it.” It was the custom of this presbyterian inquisition to screw out men’s minds and make them accuse themselves, and to provoke them to speak that which might be made matter for accusation. They urged him so vehemently, that he at last replied, because “it was against the practice of the universal church and primitive canons to fast on a Sunday: and although there were no other reasons than that one, yet he could not intimate that fast.” This was sufficient; he was deprived for not having read this last proclamation. Dr. Gardner, “a man of great parts and piety,” one of the ministers of the Tolbooth church, was deprived also, for not having read the fasting proclamation, though in every thing else he had complied with all their demands<sup>1</sup>.

THESE WERE not the only clergymen whom this persecuting fast-proclamation was the cause of depriving. Some clergymen, who had been cited from the county of Moray, were likely to have escaped in consequence of no accusers making their appearance; but to make sure work, Mr. Brodie of Brodie in that county, and the member for it, came to the bar from his place at the board, and, smiling, told them he would be their accuser. After preferring a charge against them, he returned to his seat on the bench, and voted as a judge for their deprivation!<sup>2</sup>

AT THE ERA of the Revolution the number of parochial priests in Scotland was about one thousand. Of these about three hundred were rabbled by the presbyterians, who acted only in strict conformity with their principles. Their expulsion was connived at and justified by the new government; and about one hundred more were deprived by the sentence of the privy council. The names of some of the most prominent of the sufferers have been given; but it would only have been a repetition of the same scenes of cruelty and insolent oppression to have enumerated every solitary instance of presbyterian intolerance, and of the calamities which their sudden elevation to uncontrolled power brought upon the church. Those who

<sup>1</sup> Case, &c., 95, 96.

<sup>2</sup> Account, &c., 41.





were able to keep their benefices, which were chiefly in the north, may be divided into two classes—the compliers and the non-compliers with the arbitrary order of the government. These owed their escape not so much to the justice of the government or the clemency of the presbyterians, as to their distance from Edinburgh and from fanaticism. The fate of neither of these parties was doubtful, although from the operation of the above-named causes it was for the present postponed. Those who had complied had not done *enough*, and those who had not obeyed could expect no mercy, and therefore neither party could escape the persecuting fury of the now dominant faction. Alas! how true is the old adage—“set a beggar on horseback, and he will ride to the devil!” In truth, Dr. Morer’s hyperbole was, in this instance, plain matter of fact:—“The church of Scotland,” he says, “is at this time under the claw of an enraged lion; episcopacy abolished and its revenues alienated, the clergy routed, some by a form of sentence, and others by violence and popular fury; their persons and families abused, their houses ransacked, their gowns torn to pieces, with many other injuries and indignities done to them<sup>1</sup>.”

BISHOP SAGE states, upon personal knowledge, and could name a certain minister, “to whom a nobleman and a privy councillor, who makes a considerable figure at present, and who is presbyterian enough too, (though it seems he has more than the ordinary ingenuousness of the party), said, he was truly glad that that minister had made no compliances (they were cousins; perhaps that might make him speak more freely), and assured him the present compliance would save no man; for the resolution was, THAT NONE OF THE EPISCOPAL CLERGY SHOULD BE SPARED. This I know to be of certain truth. Besides, the council of late were beginning to let so much out; for when some ministers in Argyleshire (who preach in Irish, by consequence whose places cannot be so easily supplied, whom, therefore, they were not earnest to lay aside altogether), were before them, though they made them the gracious offer, made to few or none before, that they should be continued in their ministry, upon their yet obeying the proclamation, yet they would not allow them their own churches. The secret of the matter is, all must be once out, none must enjoy their benefices by virtue of a presentation from a patron, and collation from a bishop. If any shall be permitted hereafter to bear office, they must come in upon the new foundation that

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, page 1.



is to be erected after the presbyterian model. This, I am told, the statesmen are clear for; but then the kirkmen must have their terms too. . . . Presbytery, presbytery in folio, must be one; perhaps the covenant may be another. . . .

"THIS is certain; no compliances that any of the conformed clergy have yet made have brought them so much as one inch nearer to a reconciliation with the presbyterians. Some have been at work enough to get their countenance, particularly Dr. Robertson and Mr. Malcom, two of the ministers of Edinburgh. They have preached once and again against the pride of prelates and the corruptions of the church, especially the former, whose great complaint has been of late, that he has groaned these twenty-seven years by-past under the yoke of episcopacy, although at the restitution of the government he did not think his mission good, having had only presbyterial ordination, and therefore was reordained by a bishop. They have sent once and again to the presbyterian clubs, entreating that they might be admitted into their fellowship, and to sit in their presbyteries. They have used all arts for gaining belief that they are in earnest; for instance, they are both prebendaries of the Cathedral of Edinburgh, and the bishop pays to each of them £10 sterling per annum. Through the long surcease of justice that has been in the kingdom<sup>1</sup> till of late, his lordship had got none of the revenue for the year 1688, and wanted not reason to doubt if he should ever have it; so their fees for that year were resting [owing]. Wherefore, in August or September last, they pursued him jointly before the bailies of Edinburgh (no competent judges), merely to cast dirt upon him [the bishop], that thereby they might ingratiate themselves with the godly. Yet all has not prevailed; they find the party inexorable."

AFTER RELATING the real sufferings of some of the Scottish episcopal clergy, it remains to say something in vindication of men who have been treated in such a cruel and antichristian manner; and I shall adopt the language of bishop Sage, who lived among them, and knew their merits as well as any man of his time. I know, he says, there were strange things talked of them in England; "for, besides that the prince of Orange, last year, declared them generally *scandalous and ignorant* (as was before noted), the good party have long had,

The long surcease of justice is vouched for by a judge of the session, who says, "Harvest vacance, 1688, and there was a *surcease of justice* till November, 1689; for albeit the session sat during November 1688, yet by the *unnatural usurpation* of the prince of Orange, no business was done, save deliverances on a few bills."—Fountainhall's Chronological Notes, page 265.



and still have, their instruments busy, printing and publishing odd stories of them." Two or three sentences might serve to give a general explanation; for it might be sufficient to say, that *general* indictments ought to go for calumnies, and might be denominated broad lies. Their enemies were challenged, but never ventured to name particular crimes to any individual clergyman; but contented themselves with a general declamation of ignorance, scandal, insufficiency, and such like. "Dare they, for their hearts, pronounce all ignorant? or all scandalous? or all negligent? or all erroneous? or all of a persecuting temper? If they dare, I hope they are bound to make it good against every individual; and let them try that where they will. If they dare not (as certainly they dare not, even Machiavel himself, their master for that politic, were he alive, durst not), then who sees not the iniquity of these indefinite aspersions? Where were christians taught to mix the innocent with the guilty so indiscriminately?" The fact is, when much dirt is thrown, even against the purest characters, some will stick, and sully them for the time being; and the whole of it has stuck to these patient confessors from that day to the present; but I hope it has now become so dry that it may be rubbed out, and that their characters will shine more bright here below, whilst they themselves are walking in joy and felicity in their white baptismal robes in paradise.

HE CONTINUES,—“I have more to say, and I can say it *confidently*, because *I know it* to be true. The church of Scotland, since the Reformation, was never so well provided with pastors as at the beginning of the present persecution. It is true she has sometimes had some sons, such as Dr. Forbes, Dr. Baron, and some others, more eminent for learning than perhaps any of the present generation will pretend to; but what church is there in the world, wherein, every day, extraordinary lights are to be found? Neither can it be denied that there are amongst us some of but ordinary parts; but in what church was it ever otherwise? It would be an odd thing if the poor cold climate of Scotland could still afford a thousand Augustines or Aquinases. Perhaps, too, there may be some who are not so careful to adorn their sacred office with a suitable conversation, as they ought to be; but what wonder, when Our Saviour himself had one, a devil, of twelve in his retinue? What country is it where all the clergymen are saints? And therefore, I say it over again, the church of Scotland was never so well planted, generally, since the Reformation, as it was a year ago. This is a proposition which I confess cannot be demonstrated by a private man sitting in his chamber so





as to convince the obstinate, or to give full satisfaction to strangers; but so far as things of that nature can be made to appear plausible, and at a distance, I think this may be done very briefly, in answering the charges commonly given in against them.

“THE *first is IGNORANCE*. But what is the standard to judge by, whether or not men have such a competency of knowledge as may (*cæteris paribus*) qualify them for the ministry? Till that be condescended on, I might very well bid them put up their objection in their pocket, till they can make palpable sense of it; at least, till that be done, this pretended ignorance cannot be sustained as a sufficient argument for justifying the present persecution. But how can the Scottish clergy be so very ignorant? No man (since I remember) was ever admitted to the ministry till he had first passed his course at some university, and commenced M.A., and generally none are admitted to trial for being probationers till *after* that commencement, and they have been four or five years students in divinity. The method of that trial is commonly this,—the candidate gets first a text prescribed to him, on which he makes a homily before some presbytery; then he has an exegesis in Latin, on some common head (ordinarily some popish controversy), and sustains disputes upon it. After this he is tried on his skill in the languages and chronology. He is likewise obliged to answer, *extempore*, any question in divinity that shall be proposed to him by any member of the presbytery. This is called the questionnaire trial. Then he has that which we call the exercise and addition; that is, one day he must analyse and comment upon a text, for half an hour or so, to shew his skill in textual, critical, and casuistic theology; and another day, for another half hour, he discourses again, by drawing practical inferences, to shew his abilities that way too. And then, lastly, he must make a popular sermon (. . .) All this done, the presbytery considers whether it be fit to recommend him to the bishop for a license to preach (and many have I known remitted to their studies): if they find him qualified, and recommend him, he gets his license, he commences probationer for the ministry, and commonly continues such for two, three, four, or more years thereafter, till he is presented to some benefice. Then he passes over again through all the aforesaid steps of trial, and more accurately, before he is ordained. What greater security would you desire as to the point of knowledge?

“BUT BESIDES that, since the restitution of episcopacy, our divines have had better education; [they have] been put on



better methods of study than ever they were before. They have learned to lay aside prejudices, and to trace truth ingenuously, and to embrace it when they find it. With our predecessors, especially in the times of presbytery, the *Dutch divinity* was all in vogue. Their common-place men were the great standards, and are so still to that party; and whoever stepped aside one hair's breadth from their positions was forthwith an heretic. But the present generation, after the way of England, take the Scriptures for their rule, and the ancients with right reason for guides, for finding the genuine sense of that rule; by which method, in my opinion, they are come to have their principles and thoughts much better digested." For the evidence of this assertion he refers to those clergy who were still alive, and had conformed at the Restoration, who were the ablest men then in office, but who had been educated in a less strict manner. If a comparison was instituted betwixt these and the men who had been educated since the Restoration, the bishop emphatically affirms "that all ingenuous and impartial judges would determine in favour of the latter sort, and confess that they have clearer and more distinct ideas of things, and understand the christian philosophy better. In a word, I will affirm it confidently, that philosophy was never understood better, nor ever preached better, in Scotland, than it has been these twenty years by-gone.

"I MUST confess," he continues, "it was never less practised; but for that we may thank the presbyterians. Do not think this a slander; for if they (during their twenty-four years' usurpation, *i.e.* from '38 till '62 inclusive) had not made many things, such as rebellion and presbytery, *jure divino*; if they had not baffled people's credulity, by making all the extravagancies of the late times God's own work, and the cause of Christ, &c.; and if they had not made it their chief work, ever since, to create and cherish divisions and schisms among us, and to keep up a party for themselves by all means possible, I doubt not the gospel (with God's blessing) would have had more desirable success than it has had in this kingdom. What a pernicious thing is it needlessly to break the unity and disturb the peace of a church! I have often thought of that saying of Ireneus<sup>1</sup>, '*Nulla ab iis (schismaticis) tanta fieri potest correptio, quanta est Schismatis perniciēs*'<sup>2</sup>;

<sup>1</sup> Lib. iv. Adver. Hæres, cap. 62.

<sup>2</sup> No reforms introduced by schismatics can compensate for the ruinous effects of schism.



and the more I think on it, I still find more of important truth in it. And believe it, sir, if ever there was a sect, since Christ came into the world, to whom that father's words in that same chapter were applicable, they are (only one thing excepted) to our Scottish presbyterians:—*Suam utilitatem potius considerantes, quam unitatem Ecclesiæ; propter modicas et quaslibet causas, magnum et gloriosum Corpus Christi conscindunt et dividunt et quantum in ipsis est interficiunt; pacem loquentes* (here it only fails,) *et bellum operantes; vere liquantes, Culicem et Camelum transglutientes*<sup>1</sup>. By their divisions they have still kept up such rancours and animosities amongst us, that the meek, calm, gentle, peaceable spirit of christianity could get no footing. And how can religion flourish without that? and by their bold entituling all their unaccountable freaks in the late times to God's authority, and abusing His holy word to justify them, they lost all the credit of the ministry. For, so soon as people's eyes opened, and they began to see what *legerdemain* had been played in the pulpits, especially under such high pretensions to godliness, they looked upon the sacred office of the ministry (and continue to do so ever since) as a mere imposture; so that though we are at never so much pains to persuade and convince, yet our labours are not regarded; and if they be not that, how can they be successful?

“WHAT I have said methinks may pass for a good enough account of the abilities of the conformed clergy; yet I have one thing more to add. I will not recriminate, nor go to tell our presbyterian brethren back again, that of all men alive they ought to have been the last for charging us with ignorance. But this I will undertake for; let them, out of their whole number within the kingdom, choose what number they please, and the episcopal clergy shall be content that even out of the diocese of Glasgow (which so much pains has been taken to make infamous for its ignorance) the like number be chosen, for debating all the points in controversy between us, before any sufficient and impartial judge in Christendom. Is not this enough, *ad homines*?

THE SECOND thing is IMMORALITY.—“We are generally [called] scandalous as well as ignorant; but I doubt if, amongst all the episcopal clergy in Scotland, they shall find a match for their own Mr. Williamson. Let them shew me a

<sup>1</sup> “Regarding their own advantage more than the unity of the church, for the least cause they divide, and rend the glorious body of Christ; and, as far as in them lies, crucify Him afresh. They speak peace, while they wage deadly war. — They strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.”





man that played such tricks while a minister, and was so little challenged as he is by his brethren. Not to mention how, for all his lewdness, he is now a leading man of the party, and was lately one of their commissioners at London. Indeed, sir, what greater pains can be taken, either to keep or to purge out scandalous men from being of the clergy than our constitution prescribes? After any man is presented to a benefice, before he is either collated or put in orders, an edict is read publicly, before the whole congregation, in the church where he is to be settled, requiring and inviting the heritors, or any within the parish, who have any thing to object against his life, to do it on such a day, before the bishop, or some one deputed by him; and if any blemish be found that way, he is rejected. And for those who are once in the ministry, I believe there is hardly a sharper discipline any where than in Scotland. The least crime proven against any has its punishment; *i. e.* an act of drunkenness clearly made out will suspend him; and two, though some years intervene between them, are sufficient to depose him, and to deprive him for ever.

“BUT I need not dwell on these things. The bishop of Salisbury, if he pleases, can tell the world, that when Dr. Leighton was commendator of Glasgow, and he himself professor of divinity there, the clamour about the ignorance and immoralities of the clergy of that diocese was such, that the said commendator turned very earnest to have it purged. For this end he allowed and invited all people to accuse their pastors, and to give in what indictments they pleased against them; neither was this done scruply, nor out of mere form; but if there was any partiality, it was *against* the minister. And yet, after all, how many were found worthy of deposition? *only ONE of some hundreds*, and he, too, not without great suspicion of injustice. Dr. Burnet can tell this, if he pleases; for no man was deeper in that inquisition than himself, being one of the commendator's chief counsellors and instruments. And after all, when *both* had done what they could, *they were forced to confess the clergy were injured*, and it was nothing but the spirit of *fanaticism* which made the people so unkind to them, and raise such calumnies against them.

THE THIRD thing is *NEGLIGENCE*.—“But can that be? for there were no such things as non-residence or pluralities in use in Scotland. Every presbyter is censurable who is two Sundays together from his church, without license from his ordinary; and generally they preach twice every Lord's day through the whole kingdom. But negligence is like ignorance; it will be hard to find that definition of negligence which will





be able to justify such a general persecution as has been already accounted for.

THE FOURTH *is* ERROR.—“But how shall that be tried? But I think I can easily give you satisfaction as to that matter, by telling you, that I know not so much as one amongst us who could not live in communion with the church of England, and subscribe her Thirty-nine Articles. It is, indeed, true, there be many who are no ways inclined to be every day talking to their people of God's decrees, absolute reprobation, and justification by faith alone in the presbyterian sense, and such like doctrines. They think their hearers may be much more edified by sermons that explain the true nature of evangelical faith, the necessity of repentance, and the indispensability of a gospel obedience, &c.; and what error is there here?

BUT THE last thing is, that we have been *PERSECUTORS*.—“Grant it to be true, sure I am, by this time we have been paid home pretty well in our own coin; and God, of his infinite mercy, grant unto us all, that we may exercise a true christian patience under our present sufferings, and that they may work a better temper in us than it seems their pretended persecutions have wrought in our adversaries. Sure I am, it is nowhere written in the gospel, that suffering for Christ may laudably end in malice and revenge, and the most horrid barbarities. But how can it be proven that we were such persecutors? Dare any man say that the severities against the presbyterians, since the restitution of episcopacy, have been near so great as the severities against the episcopalians were during the reign of presbytery? Dare any man say that the presbyterians have suffered anything for conscience sake these twenty-seven years by-past? It is true, indeed, the state found there were a number of people of such seditious and ungovernable tempers, that they could not be well kept from daily breaking out into open rebellions; therefore they made laws for keeping them low and curbing them; and who can blame this? It is also true, some of these laws obliged the clergy to give an account of those of that temper who lived or haunted in their parishes: and could they top with the government, and disobey law, when the obedience required was so reasonable? Besides, believe me, the clergy did as little that way as was possible for them; and I can make it good, whenever I am put to it, that where *one* was pursued upon their informations, twenty were befriended by their intercessions; a single instance whereof I learned not long ago. It was in September last, when the deprivations for non-compliance were very frequent. Amongst others, Mr. Chisholm, minister at



Lilliesleaf, in the diocese of Glasgow, was cited at the instance of sir John Riddel; the minister had given no obedience, and his case was very soon discussed. When sir John and he were coming from the bar, where the former had stood his accuser and heard his sentence, he told Mr. Chisholm, before a good many witnesses, that he confessed *he held his life and fortune of him*, and protested he would never have treated him so as he had done, if it had not been matter of *conscience* to him! What do you think of a presbyterian conscience? I could give you a hundred more such instances, for indeed it has been observed generally all along, that those have been the *greatest enemies* to the clergy to whom *they had done the best offices*<sup>1</sup>.

“ I WILL now tell you briefly that our IGNORANCE lies mainly in being unacquainted with the principles of sedition, and the *jus divinum* of presbytery; our SCANDAL, in our being so generally looked upon as nothing fond of change and revolution; our NEGLIGENCE, in parting with our benefices rather than our consciences; our ERRONEOUSNESS, in adhering so stubbornly to the principles laid down in Scripture, and maintained by the primitive christians; and our ITCH FOR PERSECUTING dissenters, to lie chiefly in our inclinations to live and behave as becomes good subjects; or, if you would have it shorter, we are ignorant, scandalous, negligent, erroneous, insufficient persecutors, and whatever men please to call us, *because we are not PRESBYTERIANS*. As I said before, I will not recriminate with our presbyterian brethren; I will not go to tell them back again, that they are ignorant or scandalous, &c.; I will not treat them so uncivilly as to throw back their dung in their own faces; but this I will say, if they plant the church of Scotland, so well as it was planted, when the prince of Orange came to England, so long as he lives; if for all their pretensions to the Spirit, the gospel be preached so purely, so rationally, and so disinterestedly, under their government, as it has been by the episcopal clergy these many years by-gone; if ever the state have peace, or the church come to a settlement; if ever our king sits securely on his throne, or Cæsar have the things that are Cæsar's; if ever the church of England (as

<sup>1</sup> The Rev. Mr. Naesmith saved John Ross, of Carnebrook, from a heavy fine, by pleading with the judge in his favour; and the return his son Andrew made was to assist in rabbling Mr. Naesmith, and to tell him “ that it was not fit that either he or any other minister should be suffered to live in that country, lest they might afterwards do them harm, and give information of their designs. Ross also drew up a summons of ejectment, left it at the manse, drove Mr. Naesmith away from his church, and was the cause of much trouble to him.—A late Letter, &c., 25.



*little as she has been concerned hitherto in HER SISTER'S afflictions*) want a thorn in her side, or be secured against attempts for her ruin; and if ever there be peace or order, or desirable concord; if ever animosities, divisions, contentions, and such other plagues of human society, and christian unity be wanting at home, so long as their Dagon stands in the temple; experience has deceived me, and I have mistaken my measures."

PERSECUTION is the last resort of a false church, or of a true church tainted with heresy and schism; hence wherever either popery or presbytery have had the power they have always been persecutors. The former is a true church tainted with heresy and idolatry; but the latter is not a church at all. Presbytery has none of the apostolic marks; it rejected and vowed to extirpate the apostles' *fellowship*; it substituted the dogmas of Calvin for the apostles' *doctrine*, which they called Arminianism and popery; it rejected and abhorred all public liturgies founded on the apostles' *doctrine*, with that prayer taught the church by her Lord and Head, and being cut off from apostolic fellowship, it was incapable of *breaking the bread* or offering the eucharistic sacrifice commemorative of the only real sacrifice on the cross. This melancholy truth is not said in an uncharitable, but in a most affectionate spirit, and from a sense of duty to my prejudiced countrymen, who having rejected Christ's own appointed representatives, have, awful to think! rejected Him. Take our blessed Lord's own word for it—"He that heareth YOU heareth ME; and he that despiseth YOU despiseth ME; and he that despiseth ME despiseth HIM that sent ME," "AS I send you"—the apostles and their successors—with the *same* power and authority, that HE sent ME.

THE GREATER part of the nation clove faithfully to the *apostolic fellowship*; it was only that small party in the western districts that had been with so much difficulty and bloodshed kept under during the last two reigns, that declared for presbytery. Their agents in Holland completely deceived William, whom they led to believe that the presbyterians were the majority of the nation, whereas he found and acknowledged that they were a mere fraction of the people. But they had been accustomed to the temporal sword, knew how to wield it, and were countenanced and encouraged by their chiefs, who kept in the background; and they brought down the arm of persecution like a tornado upon the clergy, who were living, as they imagined, in peace, under the protection of the law. The introduction of presbytery into Scot-





land has always been by unchristian means. Melville commenced his agitation in 1574, and it cost him twenty years of the utmost turbulence and fierce contention before he accomplished its establishment. Its struggles for supremacy, and its insolent encroachments on the civil rights of the sovereign and the legislature, obliged king James VI., before the expiration of the eighth year, to deprive it of its establishment. It continued to ferment, and occasionally to break out into acts of violence, till the nobility allied themselves with it to accomplish their own peculiar sacrilegious views, when the atrocities committed under its sanction, and by its means, were enough to sink the nation in everlasting infamy, and bring down the curse of God upon it. The people, sick of its tyranny, gladly sought relief from its manifold oppressions, and returned cheerfully to the apostolic fellowship. From the Restoration to the Revolution, its history was little else than one long-continued rebellion; yet the punishments of various kinds, which their sedition brought down upon them, were not received as God's chastenings to lead them to repentance; but were considered as wrongs to be revenged whenever they found themselves in a condition to accomplish the obligations of their covenant. And we may say with the Patriarch of his treacherous sons—"O my soul, come not thou into their secret; unto their assembly, mine honour, be not thou united: for in their anger they slew a man, and in their selfwill they digged down a wall. Cursed be their anger, for it was fierce, and their wrath, for it was cruel."

A REMARKABLE feature of presbytery is its constant tendency to division and separation. It is one of the marks of God's anger. The prayer of God incarnate, when He was about to lay down His life for the church, was, that not only the glorious company of the apostles might be *one*, but that *all* that shall believe on Him through *their* word may be *one also*, even in such a mysterious harmony as that of the divine Unity. He also informed them that unless those who believe on Him through their ministry should continue steadfastly in His mystical body, they "cannot bear fruit," "but are cast forth as a branch," to wither and die. He assured the apostles that He was the true Vine, and they were the branches; and that if they abode in Him, He would dwell with them. But "as the branch cannot bear fruit of *itself*, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in Me;" that is, in my mystical body the church. The successors of the apostles being branches of the vine, it is also necessary to salvation to remain steadfastly in their fellowship, in order that we may



partake of the christian sacraments, which are the channels of divine grace, and are as necessary to our spiritual birth and after growth in holiness, as the sap is to the growth of a tree. But the presbyterians cut themselves off from that branch of the vine which was established in their own country, and so the channels of divine grace were dried up, and the fruits of the Spirit were changed into those of the flesh. A withering blight overspread and broke in upon them, and instead of love, unity, and concord, there has been the fiercest hatred and wrath, not only against all the *branches* of the *vine*, but even against the various divisions of their own sect, which, as a curse following their own division, has tormented themselves. The Holy Spirit was one of the gifts which Christ promised at his Ascension to send, and He is the principle of grace and immortality to Christ's mystical body the church. But the Holy Spirit can only be obtained through the branches that abide in the vine, according to Christ's promise; and He has ordained the sacraments to be the channels for conveying His grace to the hearts of men; for by one Spirit we are all baptized into the one mystical body of Christ, and "all drink into one Spirit." Therefore those who have cut themselves off from the vine cannot baptize into the body of Christ, but only into their own *sect*, nor draw of that living water which shall spring up into everlasting life; and their ministers, not having spiritual life themselves, cannot give their people that "bread indeed," and that "drink indeed," which were given "for the *life* of the world."

THE SAME principle that creates seditions and tumults in civil governments breaks also the peace and unity of the church, to which all the promises of God are made, and to none other; and therefore no man can expect to obtain these promises by rejecting the church and joining himself to those who have separated themselves from it. Noah's Ark was a pattern and pledge of Christ's church; and the whole church, which then only consisted of eight persons, were saved by water, which typically shewed that the christian church is saved by baptism. Those countless myriads who were *outside* the ark, to some of whom Christ afterwards preached in paradise the consolation of their redemption, perished in the raging ocean of the deluge: the parallel will suggest what great danger there will be to those who cut themselves off from the church. Papianus separated from the communion of the church, but boasted that he held communion with the bishops, much in the same way that, although sworn to extirpate the bishops, the presbyterians assert that their communien



comprehends the whole church catholic. But St. Cyprian, writing to this man, told him, as we compassionately tell the presbyterians, that "the bishop is in the church, and the church in the bishop; they who are not with the bishop, are not in the church: and they miserably deceive themselves, who, not maintaining communion with the bishops of God, think cunningly to insinuate into the church, by communicating with certain others; whereas the church, which is one and catholic, will not endure separation and schism, but is united and consolidated through all its parts *by the cement of an united episcopate.*" And all the bishops throughout the whole world hold a part of the episcopate conjunctly and severally, which the same father has inimitably described in the following often quoted passage:—"The *episcopate* is ONE, of which every bishop holds a part, so as to have a concern in, or to be interested for, the whole. The *church* also is ONE, which, by a fruitful increase, grows up into a multitude of members; as the sun has many rays, yet but *one* fountain of light; or as a tree may have many branches, yet but *one root* fixed deep in the earth; or as when many streams descend from *one* fountain, they appear indeed divided in their number, yet all preserve the *unity* of their original."



## CHAPTER LII.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1689.—Viscount Dundee—leaves Edinburgh—takes the field—joined by a few recruits from Ireland.—Killcrankie—the battle—death of lord Dundee.—Letter from lord Melfort to lord Dundee.—Difference between William and the presbyterians—William's views—and sentiments.—The bishops deprived of their rents.—Proclamation.—sacrilege.—Clergy reduced to starvation—the arrears of tithe due to them stopped.—Some of the prelates go to London.—1690.—Meeting of parliament.—Distress of the clergy.—Dr. Monro—accused—his sentiments.—Acts of the presbyterians—their immorality—and some of its causes.—Diocesan fund for the clergy seized—a new fund commenced.—Meeting of parliament—king's letter—transactions—Assertory Act repealed—presbyterians petition—against patronage—act dispossessing the clergy—Confession of Faith ratified.—Presbyterian government established—repeal of acts—churches declared vacant.—Reflections.—The Directory.—Assurance.—A petition from the clergy.—Anniversary of the 29th of May abolished.

1689.—THE VISCOUNT OF DUNDEE was now the only prop of James's cause in Scotland. He was the celebrated James Graham of Claverhouse, a branch of the Montrose family, and was created Viscount Dundee, and lord Graham, of Claverhouse, in the county of Forfar, by king James VII., on the 12th of November, 1688, after the Revolution had begun. When the estates brought in the rabbling presbyterians, to protect, as they said, the convention, they assaulted all the members, including the bishops, who were opposed to the revolutionary proceedings of the times. In particular they shewed their hostility to lord Dundee, and even threatened to assassinate him, which, according to their principles, would have been a religious duty. When he heard of the design for his assassination, he complained to the convention and desired their protection. No notice was taken of his complaint, and he renewed his application, and offered to prove that such a design was on foot, declaring that without the assistance of their authority, he held it not safe to attend any longer. The only answer he received was, that "his non-





attendance would be no great loss<sup>1</sup>." He therefore retired from the convention, partly on account of the proceedings in it, and partly from the just apprehension of danger to his life. In retaliation, the convention proclaimed the viscount a rebel, traitor, and outlaw. This rash proceeding, accompanied with an attempt to arrest his lordship, precipitated his measures, before he had received the promised support of some troops from Ireland. Edinburgh Castle had been placed by king James under the command of the duke of Gordon. George, fourth marquis of Huntly, was created by Charles II. duke of Gordon, and by king James made governor of Edinburgh Castle, which he defended so long as it was practicable, and behaved with great humanity to the city, although it was in his power to have much distressed it. The convention ordered the Castle to be besieged, and after holding it out for three months in expectation of promised relief from Ireland, the duke was obliged to surrender it.

LORD DUNDEE left Edinburgh on the 19th of March, at the head of a few horse; but halting them at a spot near the West Kirk, which is now the noble terrace called Princes Street, he clambered up the rock to the postern gate, and held a conference with the duke of Gordon, and exhorted him to defend the Castle to the last extremity, at the same time promising him relief. He retired to his own house of Duddop, near Dundee, whence he entered into correspondence with the chiefs of clans in the Highlands. About two thousand joined his standard, and he drove colonel Ramsay at the head of some cavalry before him; but general Mackay advancing with strong reinforcements, Dundee fell back to Lochaber. The Athole highlanders, who had been raised by the marquis's son, lord Murray, deserted their young chief, and declared for king James. About three hundred miserable recruits also joined Dundee from Ireland, instead of the numerous reinforcements that James and his minister had promised to send him. This was a sad disappointment to Dundee. He had pressed king James himself to come over to Scotland; but at the same time he advised him not to bring the earl of Melfort with him, who was most obnoxious, on account of his religious bigotry; and also recommended him to be contented with the exercise of his own religion without forcing it upon his subjects. His advice was disagreeable to king James, and was deeply resented by lord Melfort. All the assistance, therefore, that the viscount received was this wretched company of undis-

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution, p. 3.



ciplined militia, a few stands of arms and some ammunition. Mackay was a good officer, and had served with reputation in Holland, and Burnet says, "he was the pious<sup>est</sup> man I ever knew in a military way." He cautiously followed Dundee's motions; and after much marching and counter-marching, both armies met in a small field, surrounded by hills on all sides, and with a very narrow passage on the north, where there is only room at present for the high road betwixt Perth and Inverness. This magnificent pass is called Killicranky, and is the grand entrance into the Highlands, not far from the junction of the Tummel with the Garry. It is formed by lofty mountains overhanging the latter river, which rushes violently through a dark, deep, and rocky channel, almost concealed by trees, and forms a scene of most magnificent grandeur<sup>1</sup>. At the time when general Mackay madly placed this pass in his rear, the road, if it could be called such, was one of much difficulty and danger for ordinary travellers, and threatened instant destruction to the least false step. To the northward of the pass there is a narrow haugh or low field, on which the battle that decided James's destiny was fought in July. Mackay's army was completely routed, and to make their escape had to make the best of their way through this defile. Two circumstances saved his army from annihilation; the first was, the devotion of the highlanders to plunder, and the want of artillery, but as it was, the slaughter was very great. The other circumstance was the death of the gallant Graham in the moment of victory. Dundee had elevated his arm to point his men to some orders for the pursuit, when he received a shot at the joint of his harness under the armpit, which is called "a random shot" in most of the accounts; but it has been very justly surmised to have been a pistol shot from a treacherous bystander, as from his position a shot from the enemy, and after all firing on both sides had ceased, and the flight began, could scarcely have taken effect and been mortal. The loss of the highlanders was so insignificant as not to have been named; but after the fall of their heroic commander, they fell into confusion; Mackay seeing this rallied his men, and dispersed his victors, who could never again be formed.

LORD DUNDEE was interred in the churchyard of the parish of Moulin, in which the battle was fought, and there is a rude monument erected to his memory about the centre of the field where he was killed. It is usually pointed out by the guard or coachman of the stage-coach, which now runs on a splen-

<sup>1</sup> Personal observation.



did Macadamised road that has been cut through the pass, and traverses the field of battle<sup>1</sup>. Some solitary tears have suffused the cheeks of some of the race of hereditary jacobites, which is not yet extinct, though perhaps their feelings are modified, when whirling past the stone that marks the last breathing-place of the "bonnie Dundee." He was the last hope of the house of Stuart, and the life of their cause. His death was considered so fatal to king James's interest, that most of the chieftains put up their swords and retired to their homes, except the earl of Dumfermline, who rashly ventured an action at Perth, but was completely routed, with the loss of four hundred men<sup>2</sup>.

THE NEXT day after the action at Killlicrankie, a jacobite officer picked up a bundle of papers, near the spot where Dundee fell, which those that had stripped his body had cast away as valueless. He found they contained letters and commissions, and papers of considerable importance. There was a letter from Melfort to lord Dundee, which enclosed a declaration from king James, containing an offer of indemnity to all such as returned to their duty, and of toleration to all persuasions. "Now this declaration the first of these lords had advised and prepared purposely to bridle the rage of the last against the fanatics; and the latter, we are told, was calculated to sweeten that bitter pill to him; for it imported, 'that notwithstanding the seeming promises of indulgence and indemnity in the declaration, he had so worded them that king James might break through them when he pleased, and that his majesty did not think himself obliged to stand to them.' It is fit to point out to posterity that this passage is taken from the account of Scotch affairs which lord Balcarras himself thought fit to lay before that unfortunate prince; and that his lordship observes upon it, that it not only dissatisfied Dundee, but many of his majesty's friends, who thought a more ingenuous way of dealing would have been more agreeable to his honour and his interest; that it did no small prejudice to his affairs, and that it would have done more if it had not been carefully suppressed<sup>3</sup>."

ALTHOUGH the parliament had abolished the establishment of the episcopal church on the 5th of July, yet presbyterianism had not been established in its place. The ministers,

<sup>1</sup> Personal Observation.

<sup>2</sup> Life of James II.—Life of King William III., ii. 41-57.—Burnet's Own Times, iv.

<sup>3</sup> P<sup>er</sup>son's Hist. ii. 109; cited by editor of Burnet's Own Times, iv. 49.





however, had become impatient to get possession, but the settlement of their polity was postponed for a short time; and thus, says Dr. Cook, "was Scotland for some time left without an establishment." A draught of an act was sent down by William himself, in which he shewed much good sense in modifying the high-flying sentiments of the presbyterians, and in reducing their claims to supremacy. They demanded for presbytery "to be the *only* government of Christ's church in this kingdom;" but William changed these words with his own hand, to "to be the government of the church in this kingdom established by law." Neither would he consent to the abolition of patronage. He sent down a draught of an act dated the 22d of July, which revived the act of James VI. 1592, "in the whole heads, points, and articles thereof; with this *express* Declaration, that *the necessity of occasional assemblies be first represented to his majesty by humble supplication,*"—"and in regard that much trouble hath ensued unto the estate, and many sad confusions and scandalous schisms have fallen out in the church, by churchmen meddling in matters of state . . . do hereby discharge all ministers of the gospel within this kingdom to meddle with any state affairs, either in sermons or judicatories, publicly or privately, under pain, &c." And to prevent political discussions, "that their majesties shall always have *one present in all* the provincial and presbyterial assemblies, as well as their commissioner in the general assemblies." The draught then went on to appoint the first meetings of their synods and presbyteries. William desired that his draught might be passed into an act for the settlement of the kirk; but the constraint upon their desire to control the civil government at their pleasure, and for the erection of the old Commission, with all its assumed powers, was exceedingly unsatisfactory. The control of royal commissioners in all their three courts was intolerable; but it shewed William's sagacity in preventing that trouble to his own government which had been so fatal to the preceding. When this draught was read previous to its being proposed, it excited the utmost indignation, and was forthwith rejected with scorn and contempt. "The presbyterian minister, who was then in quality of a chaplain to the parliament, said that they would, rather than admit of such a mangled mongrel presbytery, *beg back the bishops again*; and that it was nonsense not to allow the clergy to impose other oaths as well as that of allegiance." But let the presbyterians swear allegiance to all the kings in christendom, it will only be in obedience to the omnipotence of presbytery; for they are



taught, by their hopes of heaven, to resist the king, when he either counteracts or contradicts the decisions of their General Assembly, which they contend may and ought to meet when and where they please, either without or against the king's expressed will. At the reformation, the protestants thought they did the christian world an essential service when they removed the tyranny of the papal supremacy from the necks of christian magistrates; but the presbyterians hug the identical doctrine of their own supremacy as the great palladium of the protestant religion! <sup>1</sup>

WILLIAM's sentiments upon ecclesiastical matters were naturally formed upon the practice in Holland, where all religions are tolerated; but where one only is established. His great object now, when he was able to use his own eyes and ears, and understood British interests better than he did before he left Holland, was to pursue the same policy as the four preceding monarchs had done; that is, "to have the same form of church government established over the whole island." There could not have been any proposition more reasonable or consistent with sound policy; but why should the Stuarts have been so reproached and insulted for executing what William now found by experience was the only method to secure the peace of the empire? And although, says M'Cormick, in the event of uniformity, "presbytery would have been more agreeable to his own principles than episcopacy, yet an union of the two churches, upon any reasonable terms, was so very eligible, and the points in dispute betwixt the two, in his estimation, *so very trifling* [!], that, could the church of England have been brought to *lower* their terms of communion, so as to comprehend the bulk of the non-conformists in that kingdom, *he was fully determined never to abolish episcopacy in Scotland.*" It would appear, that with all his imputed sagacity and love of toleration, William's liberality *was all on one side*; nevertheless, M'Cormick says, "it is certain that it required all the influence which the friends of that [the presbyterian] form of church government could exert, to prevail with him" to establish it. The church, as if she had been a political sect instead of a society bound by God's laws, was to *lower* her terms of communion; that is, to allow a mere sect to acquire a supremacy over God's heritage; but the dissenters were not to advance one step towards her—she was to crouch to receive their burthen, but

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Afflicted Clergy. 98-102.—Life of Carstares, 44-49; Appendix.—Account of the present Persecution, 65.



they were to ride triumphant. O, *liberality!* thou art the same intolerant, selfish thing in all ages.

M'CORMICK goes on to say, "And it was not till he found that all attempts towards a comprehension in England would probably be rendered ineffectual by the violence [firmness] of the high church party, *that he yielded to the establishment of presbytery in Scotland.* Nor had he sooner consented, than, by the *indiscreet management* of those who were entrusted by him in the direction of Scottish affairs, *and the headstrong violence of the presbyterian clergy, he began to REPENT* of what he had done in their favour. As his own sentiments in religion were abundantly *liberal* [latitudinarian], so it was a maxim with him, that, upon religious subjects, every man ought to be left at full liberty to think for himself; and he abhorred from the bottom of his heart, as the worst of tyranny, every prostitution of civil authority to the base purpose of lording it over the consciences of men<sup>1</sup>." Then king William was decidedly guilty of "the worst of tyranny;" for if he did not authorise, he at least permitted, "the prostitution of the civil authority" to the most inhuman persecution of those who thought they were "at full liberty to think for themselves." For by this "prostitution of the civil authority," the episcopal clergy, in the most profound and confiding security, were driven, in the midst of a very severe winter, with their wives and tender children, from their residences, their property destroyed, and their persons insulted and abused. "Nor is this to be imputed so much to the barbarous executioners as to the bloody and enthusiastic company [of ministers] that inspired them. There is no safety for some men but in the universal shipwreck of church and state; the shaking of the nation was so terrible, that *all the scum* got uppermost, our state and our church were at once levelled with the earth, and the protestant religion lost its former signification, and now it is no more than every man's fantastic humour, new models of government, and a liberty to pull down the things that are most ancient and most sacred<sup>2</sup>."

THE ESTABLISHMENT of presbytery was, however, only postponed till the government could accommodate itself better to the inclinations of that small faction that called itself *the people*. Although the country "was left without an establishment," yet the spoliation of the church proceeded with alacrity. On the 19th of September the privy council issued

<sup>1</sup> Life of Carstares, 43.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 64.





the following proclamation, discharging the payment of the rents of the bishopricks to any but to certain persons therein named, one of whom was Alexander Hamilton, of Kinkell. He was one of the prisoners taken at Bothwell Bridge, and an attainted traitor; but whose life, by Charles's clemency, was then spared, although he was always a great ringleader among the rebel presbyterians. It is a suspicious circumstance, that all the traitors and rebels to the former governments were rewarded and promoted to office after the revolution, which gives reason to suspect that they were actually in William's service even before he invaded England, and afterwards received the reward of their treason.

WHEREAS the meeting of the estates of this kingdom, in their claim of right of the 11th of April last, declared that prelacy and the superiority of any office in the church above presbyters is and hath been a great and insupportable grievance to this nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people, ever since the reformation; and that their majesties . . . have by their act of the date of the 5th of July last by past, abolished prelacy and all superiority of any office in the church above presbyters; and his majesty, considering the prejudice it may be to his interest if fit persons be not appointed to look after and receive the rents and emoluments, particularly those consisting of tithes, which formerly did belong to the bishops, hath therefore signified his royal pleasure that the lords of his majesty's privy council should give warrant to Alexander Hamilton, of Kinkell, for drawing and uplifting the tithes and other rents of the archbishoprick of St. Andrews . . . formerly belonging to the bishops, deans, or any other person of superior order or dignity in the church, above presbyters. . . . Therefore the said lords of privy council, in their majesties' name and authority aforesaid, prohibit and discharge all and sundry heritors, feuars, life-renters, tacksmen of tiends, tenants and others whose tiends were formerly in use to be drawn, and who were liable in payment of any rent or duty to the said archbishops or bishops, or others foresaid, to draw or suffer their tiends to be drawn, and from payment of any rental, tolls, few blanch, or tack duties and other rents, casualties and emoluments, formerly payable to the said *late* archbishops, bishops, and others foresaid, except to such persons as shall be authorised by the said lords of privy council for uplifting thereof; with certification to them, if they do any thing in the contrary hereof, they shall be liable therefore, notwithstanding of any





pretended discharge that may be impetrate or obtained from any other person or persons, for the said crop and year of God aforesaid.

THUS WE find that sacrilege accompanied the most monstrous injustice, as it has ever done when the uncatholic party in Scotland have been dominant. Here was a direct and barefaced robbery of God, a taking of that from HIM which had been given by the piety of former ages for supporting His worship. But, as a certain noble counsellor had confessed to his cousin, the parish priest, it was the determination of the whig government to carry out the antichristian obligations of the covenant, and to *extirpate* episcopacy root and branch. Those clergymen who had, in compliance with their principles of non-resistance, obeyed all the requisitions of the privy council, were not one whit better off than those who resolutely, though meekly, declined to concur in acts which their consciences told them were sinful. Those whom the council could not reach through the forms of law, the rabble dealt with in their own fashion; and they were as busy in ejecting the clergy as those who had in this way so worthily celebrated the anniversary of our Lord's nativity. The government neither checked nor inquired into their barbarities, but had given them a vote of *thanks* for their good services.

THIS, says Mr. Skinner, "was quick and summary work, and a much more oppressive measure than was given at the Reformation to the popish bishops, who were allowed to hold and possess two-thirds of their benefices, at *their own* calculation, to their dying day. But our protestant bishops were not to be so gently dealt with, even by a protestant administration, which at one dash could thus sweep away the small remainder of church spoil into the exchequer, without allowing the old titulars the smallest portion of it for their necessary subsistence. In this strange state of confusion and anarchy stood the external constitution of a christian church, in a christian land, all this while! The bishops turned out of their government, and most of the presbyters out of their ministry; episcopacy itself, which had been confirmed by so many acts of free and unquestionable parliaments, struck down at one blow, and nothing as yet set up in its room. The Cameronians, indeed, these true sons of the covenant, driving up and down, in the gracious employment of emptying kirks by strength of hand, and the popish kings indulged and addressing friends, the bastard but most numerous brood of that mother, running here and there in quest of prey, and taking hold, though but for a day, of the kirks and stipends



which their active brethren were every now and then vacating for them; whilst the once legally settled episcopalians, whether outstanders or compliers, durst, in such places as these rabblers had access to, scarcely shew their heads, and had little or nothing *but the charity of friends* on which to support themselves and their dependents."<sup>1</sup>

THE privy council went further than simply thanking the persecutors. They also rivetted the injuries of the persecuted clergy, and stepped between them and the civil courts that now had resumed their functions, after having been a year in abeyance, by the following act of council, which prevented their recovering the arrears that were due to them of their stipends. Some of them had not received any stipend for the year 1687, and almost none of them had received that for the year 1688. They were consequently reduced to the lowest condition of poverty, and many of them were actually in a state of starvation.

AT EDINBURGH, December 24th, 1689.—The lords of their majesty's privy council, considering that by the act of the meeting of the estates of the date the 13th of April last, there is a difference made betwixt the ministers then in possession and exercise of their ministry at their respective churches, and those who were not so; and that the case of the ministers who were not in the actual exercise of their ministerial function the 13th day of April last by past lies yet under the consideration of the parliament; and lest in the meantime they may call and pursue for the stipend alleged due to them, or put in execution the decreets and sentences already obtained at their instance for the same, before the estates of parliament can meet and give their determination as to that point: Therefore the said lords of privy council, finding that the case foresaid depending before the parliament is not obvious to be cognosced and decided upon by the inferior judges, but that the same should be left entire to the decision of parliament, have thought fit to signify to all inferior courts and ministers of the law that the matter above mentioned is depending before the parliament; to the effect they may regulate and govern themselves in the judging of all processes to be intended before them, upon the said matter, or in executing sentences already pronounced thereupon, as they shall be answerable. Sic subscribitur Crawford, J. P. D.<sup>2</sup>

No MAN, says Mr. Skinner, "can doubt that this was a most cruel as well as a most unjust decree. *Cruel* to the

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical Hist. ii. 539.

<sup>2</sup> Account of the present Persecution, 62.



wretched sufferers, who had been by law installed in their possessions, and against whom no process had been laid, nor so much as accusation intended; and *unjust*, in thus overawing the standing civil judicatories, which, not many years ago, would have been a flaming grievance *if it had been attempted*. But it had the designed effect. For the judges did not choose to meddle after the passing of such an act, when they saw how darkly and indistinctly it was worded, and could not but know how ready such a council would be to bring them to trouble, if they should give it an interpretation contrary to its original intention, however consonant to the standing rules of both law and equity. So these poor clergy were in a most melancholy condition, not only deprived of the yearly emoluments annexed to their office, but likewise, by this iniquitous interposition of the privy council, debarred from any possibility of recovering what arrears were due to them for former services, which their persecutors could pretend no title to, and which, after this authoritative step, their debtors would not be much inclined to pay. And here, again, let it be mentioned how different the procedure in a like case was at the restoration of episcopacy in 1662. The parliament then, though they found that the presbyterian ministers, who had taken possession of kirks without presentation from the legal patrons, had no right nor title to the benefices, and therefore declared all such kirks *ipso jure* vacant, yet they declared at the same time, 'that this act *shall not be prejudicial* to any of these ministers in what they have possessed or *is due to them* since their admission;' which, whether we shall call it justice or not, was at least a singular instance of favour and indulgence<sup>1</sup>."

By a letter from earl Crawford to Mr. Carstares, dated December 19th, we are informed some of the distressed prelates repaired to London, in the hope of finding intercessors with the king to mitigate their sufferings, and to save them from the fury of their implacable enemies. "I am told," says his lordship, "there is a great repair of *abolished* bishops and deprived inferior clergy, who are stretching their wits to have this parliament dissolved; and if that cannot be obtained, to lay the foundation for reviving their interest when it sits. . . . If we can stave off all representations from our adversaries anent our church government and deprived ministers, until the convocation of the [presbyterian] clergy are dismissed, I would expect that *after* applications would have

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 536-7.





*less weight.* What is printed for the council's vindication would be well digested and couched *in generals*, rather than condescend *to particulars*<sup>1</sup>."

1690.—THE PARLIAMENT met on the 15th of April; and as the duke of Hamilton had conceived some disgust at the proceedings of the presbyterians, and moreover, as he disliked both Melville and Stair, he refused to accept the post of commissioner if he was to be tied down to co-operate with them. The earl of Melville, a genuine presbyterian, and formerly a traitor, was therefore substituted, and sent down to fill that high office, and the earl Crawford was made president. These appointments were very gratifying to their party. The persecution of the episcopal clergy still, however, continued; and some idea of the sufferings of those who had been rabbled may be conceived when it is stated that they had no means of subsistence but the charity of friends. They had not received their stipends for the previous year, 1688, and those who ought to have paid them were now prohibited by an act of council. Besides these privations, they were robbed of their good name and reputation, and assailed by the accusation of immorality of private character, as well as incapacity in their ministerial office, under pretence of securing the protestant religion and making the kingdoms happy. Dr. Monro, who has been already mentioned, was most furiously assailed with the calumny of *scandalous immorality*. He did not disdain, for the sake of outraged religion and truth, to come forward and *prove a negative*, so far as the positive and written testimony of the best members of society could prove his and his brethren's worth. The sentiments of this great and good man shew how false the imputation of immorality was, and as they were the sentiments of the majority of the clergy, it is here extracted from the Dedication of a volume of his Sermons:—"I am heartily sorry that our country should be the theatre of so many complaints and disorders, and that the immediate servants of the sanctuary, both bishops and presbyters, should be run down with clamour and violence, for no other reason, that I know, but because they are separated from the world to the peculiar service of the living God. Notwithstanding of all this, we *ought to possess our souls in patience*, and to believe that not a hair of our heads falls to the ground without our heavenly Father.' And this one truth may compose our spirits against all storms and disasters, and teach us to resign ourselves without struggling to the disposal of heaven. When we are sin-

<sup>1</sup> Carstairs's State Papers, 125, 126.



cerely humbled for our sins, both national and personal, 'He will visit us again in the multitude of His tender mercies;' and therefore it is more our duty to look unto Him that smites us, than to complain of our oppressors. It may be that they themselves who have been most active in our calamities are somewhat sensible of their cruelty; and if not, we heartily pray that God would 'bring into the way of truth all such as have erred and are deceived.' The present desolations of our church may be palliated with many little excuses; but all the rhetorical colours imaginable can never hide the consequences of *so monstrous a charge*."

THE SAME christian spirit appears to have guided those persecuted men generally; for similar sentiments are to be found in the writings of Sage, Garden, and others, that have been published. Men actuated by such humble and charitable sentiments cannot, with justice, be accused of immoral lives. The pulpits of these confessors, who were men of learning, polished manners, and many of them of high birth, were now occupied literally by "the lowest of the people," who, having a bad cause to sustain, brought a railing accusation against those whose churches they had usurped. A charge of *immorality*, therefore, was one of the artifices to which they resorted in order to blacken and malign the characters of the clergy. If, says Dr. Monro, in another publication, "there be so many libels gathered by presbyterians, it may provoke their enemies to recriminate; and if the vindicator thinks that such scurrilous writings can serve the common cause of religion, I wish him more wisdom and sobriety: I condemn all such methods in all parties; but if the thing were allowable, we could tell him, that many of his associates in the ministry are *very scandalous*, some of them adulterers, some fornicators, some blasphemers, some *whole presbyterian families incestuous*; but if I rejoiced in this recrimination, I were not a good christian. It is necessary to put these proud and supercilious men in mind, that they are but ordinary mortals, encompassed about with the same infirmities with other men, and that they should consult the Scriptures and the fathers for arguments, rather than the Cameronian zealots in the western shires, and if they ill treat the clergy at those exercises they ought to be chastised. For a conclusion to this, I must tell you, that God will clear our innocence as the sun in his meridian elevation, and I hope to the conviction of our enemies, that in the simplicity of our souls we designed the reformation of sinners, and that we look upon ourselves as dedicated to the immediate service of God, and the sooner we



retire into our own consciences, and discover the secret springs of our own calamity, the sooner will our Heavenly Father remove the marks of his indignation<sup>1</sup>."

IT WAS a common subject of declamation that was maliciously charged against the episcopal clergy, that they indulged men in their sins. This was a falsehood. It served, however, as a text to enable the presbyterian ministers to magnify and extol their own pharisaical discipline, the violence of which soon cured itself. "I know of no effect," says the above author, "that ever the presbyterian discipline had towards reforming the world, unless you reckon that the murdering of bastard children was of that nature. It cannot be denied but that the presbyterian ministers use *long* discourses to the women that sit on the stool of repentance, but they cannot name three of them that ever mounted that public seat but they became prostitutes; and when once they made shipwreck of their modesty, one may guess what followed. Their public appearance in this manner made them impudent. This is all the reformation I know that their discipline most eminently promotes. If by their *discipline* they mean *that endless and pragmatic inquisition* into all actions, it is as impracticable as it is burthensome; and though it be a natural step to advance their *supremacy*, yet it is attended with so much confusion and animosity, that neither true religion nor liberty can endure it. It is pleasant to hear them declaim against the tyranny of the papal power, and yet meddle with all that the pope ever meddled with. We know what profanations of the name of God were occasioned by this discipline in the year 1648, when the best of the nobility and gentry, and others, were made to profess their repentance for the 'unlawful engagement.' This new fantastic and apish imitation of *strictness* is inconsistent with reason, as it is indeed destructive to true and regular devotion<sup>2</sup>."

AT THIS time the whole of the episcopal clergy suffered in their reputations, liberties, and property, from the pulpit, the press, and the laws, by fines, banishment, and imprisonment. One instance is so glaringly unjust and oppressive, that it must not be omitted. In the year 1673, Dr. Young, then lord bishop of Edinburgh, proposed to the clergy of his diocese to form a widows' fund. This was readily agreed to, and every clergyman in the diocese contributed one merk annually for every hundred merks of which his stipend consisted, for the benefit of their widows and orphans. This fund pros

<sup>1</sup> Apology for the Clergy of Scotland, p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. pp. 22, 23.





pered amazingly, and was placed under the management and control of the magistrates of Edinburgh. At the Revolution it had accumulated to the sum of 7,500 merks, and the clergy now proposed to commence the payment of annuities to the widows and orphans of those who had contributed to it, and also to the clergymen of Edinburgh whom the persecution and deprivation of their benefices had reduced to absolute want. As soon as the presbyterian ministers who had supplanted the episcopal clergy heard of the existence of this fund, and of the bishop's intention to divide it among the rightful owners, they laid claim to it. They got an interdict from the Court of Session to prevent its payment to the clergy, and commenced an action at law against Dr. Rose, the lord bishop of Edinburgh, to compel him to give them possession of it. The plea that they advanced was, that this fund belonged to those who were actually in the *possession* of the parish churches; and as the contributors had been expelled from their benefices, they had consequently *forfeited* their right! Absurd and unjust as this reasoning was, it was sustained by the Court of Session, and the widows and orphans of the deceased contributors, and the starving clergy themselves, were *deprived, by law*, of their just rights. And perhaps this sacrilegious robbery was the foundation of the present flourishing Ministers' Annuity Fund.

THIS MOST unjust and iniquitous robbery was only a following out of the principles of the Covenant, and a certain method of extirpating God's heritage, whom they denominated *the priests of Baal*. Perhaps, with a slight alteration, the words of St. James might be applied not only to this transaction, but also to the rabblers,—“Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, *crieth*; and the *cries* of them which have reaped *are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth*.” Upon the occurrence of this distressing calamity, bishop Rose and his clergy proposed to raise a fund by subscription to supply, in some measure, the extreme penury of the whole body of the rabbled clergy. The account which is now before me, states—“The episcopal church being now at a very low ebb, her bishops and clergy having been deprived of their houses and livings, and many of them in very low and strait circumstances, the bishop and clergy in Edinburgh, being assisted by some of the principal laity, set on foot a collection for the relief of the most indigent, appointing two of the clergy in Edinburgh collectors of that charity, which has been of inexpressible use to very many who have shared of it; God accompanying with his





blessing the endeavours of all concerned in the administration of it, by opening the hearts and hands of many, even of presbyterian principles, to contribute for the relief of the poor episcopal clergy, which collection of charity has subsisted upwards of threescore years, does yet subsist, and may it subsist, whilst God, in his wise providence, is pleased to allow the remains of episcopacy to continue in the severe furnace of affliction<sup>1</sup>."

ON THE opening of the session of parliament king William's letter was read, dated the 18th of April. It stated, "the resolution we had to have been personally present with you in the second session of our parliament, did occasion the first adjournment; and though the sitting down of our new parliament of England, and other most important affairs, do hinder us to prosecute that design at present, yet we are so desirous of the happiness and contentment of our ancient kingdom, that we have determined our expedition to Ireland shall not delay your meeting; and to that effect we have nominated and authorised our right trusty, &c. earl Melville, whom we have instructed to give you full assurance of our tender affection and great care towards that our ancient kingdom, and particularly in relation to the establishment of church government in that way which may be most conducive to the glory of God, *and agreeable to the inclinations of our people*, that the security and peace of the country, and payment of our forces, may be provided for, and such other laws may be enacted as may render you happy and contented<sup>2</sup>."

A PETITION was presented by the presbyterian ministers, which, after having been twice read, it was moved to be sent to a committee: but it was answered, "there could be no committee appointed till the act anent the articles was rescinded, anent which there was a vote passed the last session of parliament; as also an act for rescinding the act *asserting* his majesty's supremacy in matters ecclesiastic; and that being done, they were content to proceed to name a committee<sup>3</sup>." The parliament then proceeded to demolish the king's supremacy over the kirk; but "the thorough-paced presbyterians were sadly nicked in that matter, for it was only the act of '69 that was rescinded; for other acts that asserted the supremacy to a degree entirely inconsistent with the prerogatives of the

<sup>1</sup> MS. Memoirs of the Church of Scotland.—This manuscript was lent to me by the late primate, the right rev. Dr. Walker, lord bishop of Edinburgh, of which I took a copy. The original is now, probably, with other papers, in the possession of his lordship's successor.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Parliament of Scotland, vol. ix. pp. 109, 110.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. p. 110.



kirk were kept in force, and unrepealed<sup>1</sup>." The repeal of the *Assertory Act* was a most wise and patriotic proceeding; yet it did not remove that legitimate supremacy over the kirk which the crown had at all times possessed, and has ever since actually, though quietly, exercised. The first act, therefore, was the repeal of this iniquitous act, whose erastian teeth had been drawn by king Charles's explanatory letter; but it was now incapacitated from ever again biting. "It was thought not a little preposterous," says Mr. Skinner, "to condemn an act of parliament, because inconsistent with an *imaginary thing*, which had no real being, and only existed in the *desires* and wishes of a certain party: and though they got this one offensive law out of the way, there still stood, unrepealed, many other acts asserting the supremacy in terms equally injurious to their bold claims:"—"Our sovereign lord and lady the king and queen's majesties, taking into their consideration that by the second article of the grievances presented to their majesties by the estates of this kingdom, It is declared, that the first act of the second parliament of king Charles II., entitled an act asserting his majesty's supremacy over all persons and all clauses ecclesiastical, is inconsistent with the establishment of the church government *now desired*, and ought to be abrogate; therefore their majesties, with the advice and consent of the estates of parliament, do hereby abrogate, rescind, and annul the foresaid act, and declare the same in the haill heads, articles, and clauses thereof, to be of no more force or effect in all time coming<sup>2</sup>."

MELVILLE's private determination was to grant all the demands of the presbyterians; but he had peremptory orders from William not to concede either his supremacy or the right of patronage. The former he partly did. Episcopacy was abolished, because it was said to be "contrary to the genius of that church and nation; for the king would not consent to a plain and simple condemnation of it." It was not, however, so easy to establish presbytery, because there were so few presbyterian ministers in the kingdom, and they did not think it safe to suffer the episcopal clergy to have any share of the government. Therefore it was pretended that such of the presbyterian ministers as had deserted in 1662 ought to be considered the only sound part of the kirk<sup>3</sup>. Of these there happened not to be more than between fifty and sixty, which shews the enormously exaggerated account of the number that

<sup>1</sup> Account of Church Government.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Parliament, vol. ix. 110.

<sup>3</sup> Burnet's Own Times, iv. 113, 114.



were said to have deserted at the Restoration. The presbyterians came forward with the same petition which had been rejected last session, and was now received graciously; in which they say “ — and we also request, that the church thus established may be allowed by your lordships’ civil sanction, to appoint visitations for *purging out all insufficient, negligent, scandalous, and erroneous ministers.* And seeing patronages which had their rise in the most corrupt and latter times of *antichristianism* have always been a great grievance to this church, as the source and fountain of a corrupt ministry, that these may be abolished, and that the church may be established upon its former good foundations, and confirmed by many acts of parliament since the year 1560.” This petition was word for word the same as that which had been presented to parliament the year before; for although presbyterians are against all set forms of prayer to God, yet they were clear for a set form in their petitions to parliament. Last year the duke of Hamilton objected to this petition, because they then craved that “the church government might be established in the hands of such only, who, by their former carriage and sufferings, had evidenced that they were known sound presbyterians.” “For what was this,” said his grace, “but to pull down one sort of prelacy, and to set up another in its place; to abolish one that was consistent and intelligible, and to establish another that implied contradictions?”<sup>1</sup>

The following act was passed on the 15th of April:—

FORASMUCH as by an act of this present parliament, relative to, and in prosecution of the Claim of Right, prelacy, &c. is abolished: And that many ministers of the presbyterian persuasion, since the 1st of June, 1661, have been deprived of their churches, or banished for nonconforming to prelacy, and not complying with the courses of the time, therefore their majesties, &c. ordain and appoint that all those presbyterian ministers yet alive who were thrust from their charges, &c. . . . have forthwith free access to their churches, that they may presently exercise the ministry in those parishes, without any new call thereto; and allows them to bruck and enjoy the benefices and stipends thereunto belonging, and that for the haill crop 1689: And immediately to enter to the churches and manses, where the churches are vacant; and where they are not vacant, then their entry thereto to be to the half of the benefice and stipend due and payable at Michaelmas last for

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Late Establishment, &c. 9, 10.





the year immediately preceding, betwixt Whitsunday and Michaelmas, declaring that the present incumbents shall have right to the other half of the stipend and benefice payable for the Whitsunday term last by-past: And to the effect that these ministers may meet with no stop or hindrance in entering immediately to their charges, the present incumbents in such churches are hereby appointed, upon intimation hereof, *to desist from their ministry in their parishes*, and remove themselves from the manses and glebes thereto belonging betwixt and Whitsunday next to come, that the presbyterian ministers formerly put out may enter peaceably thereto. And appoints the privy council to see this act put in execution<sup>1</sup>.

IN SCOTLAND Whitsunday is a legal term, and has nothing to do with the high festival of that name, and it is always kept on the 25th of May. Servants enter to their service, and leases generally commence and terminate, on that day. Such of these persecuted men, therefore, as had not been rabbled out of their manses, had only one month's warning given them to remove from their houses and seek others, besides being impoverished and robbed of nearly two years' stipend. These clergymen who were now so summarily thrust out of their livings were legally possessed of them by presentation from the patron, and induction by the bishop. The men who were now, by the above act, put into their livings, had got possession of them by force and fraud during the usurpation of Cromwell and the tyrannical rule of the remonstrators, and never had any just right to them. It was on account of illegal intrusion that the remonstrator ministers had been dispossessed, and not alone for their non-compliance. The settlement of presbytery now, therefore, was upon the footing of a double injustice—approving of the first intrusion of the presbyterians, and now removing the lawful incumbents, and placing men in their benefices who were to receive two years' stipend which had been due to the episcopal incumbents!

THE NEXT proceeding was to settle the presbyterian form of government and the Westminster Confession of Faith. The seventh act, therefore, was to ratify it. The whole of that long and complicated document was read, and it composes part of the act itself. On the 26th of May “the Confession of Faith underwritten was this day produced, read, and considered word by word, in presence of their majesties' high commissioner and the estates of parliament, and being voted and

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Parliament, ix. 111. Act Second.



approven, was ordained to be recorded in the books of parliament<sup>1</sup>." After it had been read the following act was passed, which makes the Westminster Confession the creed of the presbyterian establishment.

OUR SOVEREIGN lord and lady the king and queen's majesties and three estates of parliament, conceiving it to be their bound duty, after the great deliverance that God hath lately wrought for this church and kingdom, in the first place, to settle and secure therein the true protestant religion, according to the truth of God's word, as it hath of a long time been professed within this land: And also the government of Christ's church within this nation, agreeable to the Word of God, and most conducive to the advancement of true piety and godliness, and the establishing of peace and tranquillity within this realm: and that by an article in the Claim of Right, it is declared that prelacy and the superiority of any office in the church above presbyters is and hath been a great and insupportable grievance and trouble to this nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people ever since the Reformation (they having reformed from popery by presbyters), and therefore ought to be abolished; like as, by an act of the last session of this parliament, prelacy is abolished:

"THEREFORE their majesties, &c., do hereby revive, ratify, and perpetually confirm, all laws, statutes, and acts of parliament made against popery and papists, and for the maintenance and preservation of the true reformed protestant religion, and for the true church of Christ within this kingdom, in so far as they confirm the same, or are made in favour thereof. Likeas, they by these presents, ratify and establish the Confession of Faith, now read in their presence, and voted and approven, as the public and avowed confession of this church, containing the sum and substance of the doctrine of the reformed churches.

"AS ALSO they do establish, ratify, and confirm the presbyterian church government and discipline: that is to say, the government of the church by kirk sessions, presbyteries, provincial synods, and general assemblies, ratified and established by the 114th Act, Ja. VI. parl. 12, anno 1592, entituled, Ratification of the Liberty of the True Kirk, &c., and thereafter received by the general consent of this nation, to be the only government of Christ's church within this kingdom; reviving, renewing, and confirming the foresaid act of parliament, ex-

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Parliament, ix. 117.



cept that part of it relating to patronages, which is hereafter to be taken into consideration. RESCINDING, ANNULING, AND MAKING VOID—act anent restitution of bishops—act ratifying the acts of assembly, 1610—act anent the election of archbishops and bishops—act anent the ratification of the Five Articles of Perth—act entituled, for the restitution and re-establishment of the ancient government of the church by archbishops and bishops—act for acknowledging and asserting the right of succession to the imperial crown of Scotland—act anent the test—*with all other acts, laws, statutes, ordinances, and proclamations, in as far as they are contrary or prejudicial to, inconsistent with, or derogatory from, the protestant religion and presbyterian government now established: allowing and declaring that the church government be in the hands of, and exercised by, those presbyterian ministers who were ousted since the first of January, 1661, and are now restored by the late act, and of such ministers and elders only, as they have admitted, or hereafter shall admit; and appointing the first meeting of the General Assembly of this church, as above established, to be at Edinburgh on the third Thursday of October of this present year, 1690.* And because many conformed ministers either have deserted, or were removed from preaching in their kirks, preceeding the 13th of April, 1689, and others were deprived for not giving obedience to the act of the estates in their proclamation of that date; therefore declares, all the kirks deserted, or removed, or deprived from, as said is, *to be vacant*, and that the presbyterian ministers exercising their ministry within any of those parishes, or where the last incumbent is dead, by the desire and consent of the parish, shall continue their possession, and have right to the stipends, according to their entry in the year 1689. And that the disorders which have happened in this church may be redressed, they allow the general meeting and representatives of the foresaid presbyterian ministers and elders, either by themselves, or by visitors authorised by them, to try and purge out all insufficient, negligent, scandalous, and erroneous ministers, by due course of ecclesiastical process and censures: ordaining, that whatever minister, being summoned before these visitors, shall refuse to appear, or on appearing shall be found guilty by them, every such minister shall by their sentence be *ipso facto* suspended from, or deprived of, their kirks, stipends, and benefices<sup>1</sup>.”

PERHAPS so much barefaced iniquity and injustice was never

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Parliament, ix. 116 to 133.





before established by law, as there is within the compass of this act. The presbyterians raised an immense clamour about the act Rescissory, which swept away all the memorials of their infamy, during their reign of terror in the grand rebellion, but here is an ACT RESCISSORY that remorselessly repeals the fundamental laws of the kingdom, that had been solemnly enacted by legitimate kings and lawful parliaments. The Confession was read, and it was proposed also to read the Catechisms and Directory for Worship; but on reflection the ministers withdrew the latter, as it was not convenient to allow it to be seen that they had so entirely thrown aside the directions therein given. Besides, it was in some measure a *set form*, and required an uniformity which was abhorrent to their prejudices against popery, prelacy, &c. It peremptorily prescribes the reading the Holy Scriptures—"All the canonical books of the Old and New Testament shall be publicly read in the vulgar tongue, out of the best allowed translation, distinctly, that all may hear and understand<sup>1</sup>." Farther than a text for their sermons, or a citation to illustrate them, they had entirely thrown aside the reading of the Scriptures, and therefore they were not disposed to be reminded of their negligence. But there was another ordinance, which has always been omitted, and considering that they lay such exclusive claim to the headship of Christ, and to the infallible knowledge of His mind, it is not very respectful or decorous—that is, the entire omission of the Lord's Prayer. Here again they would have been reminded of their insolent sins of omission; for it says—"because the prayer which Christ taught his disciples is not only *a pattern* of prayer, but is itself *a most comprehensive* prayer, we recommend it also to be used in the prayers of the church<sup>2</sup>." Being conscience smitten, the ministers, who were in constant attendance, advised their friends to allow the duke's objections, and not to insist upon reading these documents.

IN THE ACT which repealed the act of supremacy, and abolished episcopacy, they did not pretend to establish presbytery because it was agreeable to the word of God, but only because it was alleged to be suited to the inclinations of the people. And, says Lockhart, "to prevent the designs of the royalists, in being elected in room of any vacancies that should happen in parliament, they framed a *Test* called the ASSURANCE, wherein they declared before God that they believed king William and queen Mary to be king and queen of this kingdom *de jure* as well as *de facto*; and engaged to defend their

<sup>1</sup> Directory, &c., p. 529.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 539.





title as such with their lives and fortunes, which Declaration they required all persons capable to elect or to be elected members of parliament, and all in any public trust or office, civil, military, or *ecclesiastical*, to sign, together with the oath of allegiance, under the pain of *deprivation*<sup>1</sup>."

THE RUMOUR that it was the intention of the house to put the whole government ecclesiastical into the hands of the surviving presbyterian ministers, created some alarm in the minds of those who were to be the sufferers under this extraordinary establishment. Accordingly, some of the clergy, who had submitted to the new government, met, and hastily drew up a petition to the house, praying that they might be secured in the possession of their benefices; but the time was so short that they could not consult the commissioner before presenting it. The following is the substance of this petition:—"That they for themselves and others of the episcopal persuasion who have submitted to the government of king William and queen Mary, according to the protection that had been promised them, may be secured in the possession of their benefices. They humbly conceive that to put ecclesiastical jurisdiction entirely into the hands of the presbyterian ministers, and to establish them as the sole judges of their lives and doctrine, will be in effect to turn them out of that protection, for they shall not only thereby be deprived of all share and interest in ecclesiastical government, though they have every way as good a right to and are as capable of managing that trust as the presbyterian ministers, and do *very far exceed* them in numbers; but also shall be subjected to the arbitrement of a party who profess it their duty to purge the church of all ministers who have at any time declared for the lawfulness of episcopacy: whom, therefore, (though they are not afraid of the strictest impartial trial) they decline as their judges; which declinature the presbyterian ministers themselves cannot but in reason acknowledge to be just and equitable, considering that they [themselves] have all along refused to submit to the jurisdiction of the bishops upon the like reason: that it has been still matter of regret to them that the differences upon the account of opinion about church government have been so much kept up. That therefore it would please the parliament to appoint a conference betwixt some ministers of both persuasions, which they most humbly conceive may prove a good expedient for curing the distemper, or at least to find where it lieth."

<sup>1</sup> Lockhart Papers, p. 40.



THEY DID not expect that the fundamental point of church government would have been brought under the consideration of the house so soon; and therefore this petition was got up rather hastily. At the time when the duke of Hamilton was disputing the equity and reasonableness of their article of church government, and of their placing the clergy at the mercy of fifty presbyterian ministers, James Moir, esquire, of Stonywood, member for the county of Aberdeen, presented the above petition, and craved that it might be read. The duke of Hamilton warmly seconded him, and permission having been given, it was read; "but it was immediately *hissed* at. The noise was great, the cry was loud, that it was indiscreet, unmannerly, arrogant, &c. and all this forsooth because they called themselves ministers of the episcopal persuasion; compared themselves for abilities with the presbyterian ministers; declined them as their judges; craved a conference; and undertook to maintain the lawfulness of episcopacy. Extravagant impudence sure!"<sup>1</sup>

THE FIFTY-EIGHTH act repealed several acts of former parliaments, and among others that which ordained the anniversary of the Restoration of the church and monarchy to be kept as a perpetual holiday. And there were a multitude of acts passed to repeal the attainders of all the traitors in the late reigns down to the laird of Cessnock, commencing with that notorious traitor, Johnston of Warriston<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Account of the late Establishment of Presbyterian Government, 47-49.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Parliament, ix. 199.



## CHAPTER LIII.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1690.—Patronage abolished—the act.—The kirk government placed in the hands of sixty ministers.—The clergy present a petition—the petition—not received.—Synod of Aberdeen—their petition—rejected.—Duke of Hamilton's speech.—Churches declared vacant.—The duke's opposition—leaves the house.—Presbytery established.—The liturgy.—The universities—acts for their visitation—for the peace of the church.—Act rescissory.—Excommunications.—Pains and penalties removed.—Superiorities vested in the crown.—Parliament prorogued.—Act of council.—Presbyterians dissatisfied.

1690.—THE SUBJECT of patronage now came before parliament, and lord Melville found himself placed in a dilemma betwixt the “inclinations of the people” and his master's peremptory command. Mr. Carstares dreaded the consequences that might ensue from entrusting the government of the kirk and the disposal of its benefices “in the hands of a set of men who were tainted with all the prejudices of the people, and at the same time *irritated* by a sense of recent injuries. Whilst he advised, therefore, the establishment of presbytery, he was of opinion that it ought to be of the most *moderate* kind, and so modelled as to admit of the assumption of such of the episcopal clergy as took the oaths to government, upon the mildest terms. This he foresaw would not be the case unless the right of patrons were preserved as a check upon the clergy<sup>1</sup>.” Melville differed in opinion with Carstares, who was William's bosom confidant, and may be considered to have been his minister for kirk affairs. Melville was the head of the presbyterian party, and the whole influence and credit of his administration depended on them; and therefore he was obliged to yield to them in points that his own judgment and the commands of his master required him to oppose. The *concessions* that had been already made to that party encouraged them to demand more; and Melville found himself so

<sup>1</sup> Life of Carstares, 49.





situated that he must either disobey his master, or else break with the presbyterians entirely. The pressure from without was too strong to be resisted, and he accordingly yielded to their demand for the abolition of patronage, and the 53d act of this parliament was passed into a law:—"Considering that the power of presenting ministers to vacant churches, of late exercised by patrons, hath been greatly abused, and is inconvenient to be continued in this realm, do therefore, with the advice and consent of the estates in parliament, hereby discharge, cass, annul, and make void the aforesaid power heretofore exercised by any patron, of presenting ministers to any kirk now vacant, or that shall hereafter happen to vaik within this kingdom, with all exercise of the said power . . . . and to the effect the calling and entering ministers in all time coming may be orderly and regularly performed, their majesties . . . . do statute and declare that, in case of the vacancy of any particular church, and for supplying the same with a minister, the heritors of the said parish (being protestants) are to name and propose the persons to the whole congregation, to be either approven or disapproven by them. And if they disapprove, that the disapprovers give in their reasons, to the effect the affair may be cognosed upon by the presbytery of the bounds, at whose judgment and determination the calling and entry of a particular minister is to be ordered and concluded. And it is hereby enacted, that if application be not made by the eldership and heritors of the parish to the presbytery, for the call and choice of a minister within the space of six months after the vacancy, that then the presbytery may proceed to provide the said parish, and plant a minister in the church *tanquam jure devoluto*!"

WILLIAM loved power, and he was exceedingly displeased with his commissioner for the concessions he had made; but, to compensate for the loss of his supremacy, the parliament kindly granted him "chimney money!" Presbytery was now triumphant. If, says Burnet, "they had followed the pattern set them in 1638, all the clergy in a parity were to assume the government of the church; but those being episcopal, they did not think it safe to put the power of the church in such hands; therefore it was pretended that such of the presbyterian ministers as had been turned out [*i. e.* who *deserted*] in the year 1662, ought to be considered *as the only sound part of the church*; and of these there appeared to be not more than three score alive: so the government of the

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Parliament, 53 Act, v. ix. 396, 7.



church was lodged with them ; and they were empowered to take to their assistance, and to a share in the church government, such as they should think fit. Some *furious men*, who had gone into very *frantic* principles, and all those who had been secretly ordained in the presbyterian way, were presently taken in. This was like to prove a *fatal error* at their first setting out. The old men amongst them, what by reason of their age or their experience of former mistakes, were disposed to more moderate councils ; but the taking in such a number of *violent men* put it out of their power to pursue them : so these broke out into a most extravagant way of proceeding against such of the episcopal party as had *escaped the rage* of the former year. Accusations were raised against them ; some were charged for their doctrine as guilty of arminianism ; others were loaded with more scandalous imputations. But these were *only thrown out to DEFAME them*. And where they looked for proof, it was in a way more becoming *inquisitors* than judges ; so apt are all parties, in their turns of power, to fall into those very excesses of which they did formerly make *such tragical complaints*. All other matters were carried, in the parliament of Scotland, as the lord Melville and the presbyterians desired. In lieu of the king's supremacy, he had chimney money given him ; and a test was imposed on all in office, or capable of electing or being elected to serve in parliament, declaring the king and queen to be their rightful and lawful sovereigns, and renouncing any manner of title pretended to be in king James<sup>1</sup>."

THE RABBLLED clergy, seeing now no hope of recovering their benefices, drew up and presented a petition to the parliament ; and as they were anxious to conciliate the bigotted presbyterians, they took the presbyterian petition, which had been presented in Charles I.'s time, as their model, which accounts for the frequent repetition of the word *whereas*. It was supposed that the presbyterians' own style and language would not give offence. It was presented by sir Patrick Scott, of Ancrum, and its reading was most earnestly urged by the duke of Hamilton, but postponed "until the act itself was once passed, and then there was no place left for it."

"WHEREAS your petitioners (though they entered to their offices and benefices at their respective churches according to law, and were in uncontroverted possession of them) were thrust out from their offices and cures by notorious force and

<sup>1</sup> Own Times. iv. 114.



violence ; cast out of their dwellings with their families and furniture, and threatened with *death* if they should offer to return to the exercise of their ministry at their respective churches.

“WHEREAS your petitioners upon such violent treatment made application to his present majesty, then his highness the prince of Orange (who, at the humble desire of divers lords and gentlemen of this kingdom, had then taken upon him the government and administration of the affairs of this realm), by their humble petition for protection, of the date at Glasgow, 22d of January, 1688-9, presented to his majesty by Dr. Robert Scott, minister at Hamilton, empowered by your petitioners for that effect, as will appear from his commission of the same date ; and upon that application his majesty did emit a declaration for keeping the peace, &c., in the kingdom of Scotland, 6th February, 1688-9 ; whereby he did expressly prohibit all disturbance and violence upon the account of religion, and authorise all protestants to enjoy their several opinions and forms of worship, whether in churches or meeting-houses, whether according to law or otherwise, with the same freedom, and in the same manner, in which they did enjoy them in the month of October preceding, as the said declaration at more length bears. Whereby it is evident that his majesty and his counsellors and advisers for Scottish affairs at that time were clearly convinced of the *violent wrongs* your petitioners had met with, and of the irregularity and illegality thereof.

“WHEREAS, notwithstanding the said declaration the persecution of your petitioners continued *as hot* as ever ; as is evident from a second tumult at Glasgow upon the 17th of February, 1688-9, being the Lord’s day, on which both ministers and hearers (having assembled for divine worship according to law, and upon the protection and security contained in the said declaration) were most violently assaulted by an enraged multitude in the high church of that city ; and a great many other instances, which may be easily adduced ; and a representation of that tumult in Glasgow, and a second application for protection, were made to his majesty by Dr. James Fall, principal of the college of Glasgow ; and his majesty referred the matter to the meeting of estates, indicted by him to meet at Edinburgh, 14th March, 1688-9.

“WHEREAS the said meeting of estates did not think it convenient in that interim by their authority to repossess your petitioners of their just, legal, and undoubted rights, as appears from their proclamation of the date at Edinburgh, 13th April, 1689. So that your petitioners, wanting protection, durst never





since, without the manifest *peril of their lives*, adventure to return to the exercise of their ministry at their respective churches.

“WHEREAS, your petitioners (besides the unspeakable grief it is to them, to be thus restrained from the exercise of their sacred functions), are generally reduced to *great necessities*, and many of them with numerous families *are at the point of starving*, having no livelihood but their stipends, and being *refused* payment of these by the debtors thereof, upon pretence of an act of council, dated December 24, 1689, whereby intimation is made to all judges that the case of the ministers, who were not in the actual exercise of their ministerial functions on the 13th of April, 1689, lieth under the consideration of parliament, and they are required, in executing of sentences already recorded, and in judging of processes to be intended at the instance of such ministers, to behave themselves as they will be answerable, which act, not only the debtors of your petitioners’ stipends pretend for not paying the same, as said is, but also many inferior judges do so construct, that they will grant no decrees in favour of your petitioners. And

“WHEREAS, by the laws of this realm, your petitioners (being ministers of the gospel of Christ, and having entered legally to their offices and benefices, as said is), have right to protection in the exercise of their ministry at their respective churches, and to their benefices *ad vitam vel culpam*, and can neither be deprived of either without a legal sentence; and now that your grace and the estates are met in parliament, to which the case of your petitioners is referred by the aforesaid act of privy council. May it therefore please your grace, and the honourable estates of parliament, to take the premises under consideration, and interpose your authority for restoring your petitioners to the exercise of their ministry at their respective churches; for causing to make payment of the stipends that are due to them by law; and for protecting them both in their offices and benefices according to law<sup>1</sup>.”

THIS PETITION met with silent contempt; for compassion for their misfortunes, or justice to their legal right, was deadened in the breasts of these presbyterian legislators, who were burning with the fierce hatred of exasperated party spirit, and actuated by the obligations of that most wicked contrivance of the jesuits — the Covenant. A petition from the

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Episcopal Clergy of Scotland truly Represented. Folio, p. 3.— Account of the late Establishment.





synod of Aberdeen of the 2d of July met with no better success. That learned and loyal body, who have always been the champions of primitive truth and order, sent up two of their number empowered to present a petition to the parliament craving a general assembly of the clergy for healing the wounds of the church. They said—"The ministers of the said synod, as they did give their free testimony in the late years against popery, and have generally concurred in rendering thanksgiving to the divine majesty for putting so seasonable a stop to the designs of that antichristian party, and in praying for king William, the great instrument of our deliverance, so are we earnestly desirous of an union with all our protestant brethren, who differ from us only in matters of church government; not doubting but that if we would mutually lay aside our unchristian heats and animosities, we might be so reconciled as that we might serve the Lord with one heart and consent, and tolerate one another in these things wherein we may still differ<sup>1</sup>." This petition met with no attention whatever; in fact, the now triumphant presbyterian ministers were afraid to shew the nakedness of their party, both in point of numbers and of theological attainments, by meeting the clergy upon the grounds on which they challenged them, and therefore they wisely declined the conference.

AN AMENDMENT to the act that placed the government of the kirk in the hands of the surviving presbyterian ministers was proposed by a member, but it was also rejected. It was, "That at least these presbyterian ministers who had been deposed by *their own judicatories*, before the restitution of episcopacy in 1662, might not be included in the number of those known sound presbyterians in whose hands the government was to be established in the first instance." In support of this amendment the duke of Hamilton exposed the injustice and partiality of the act, and said, "for what was this, but instead of fourteen prelatical bishops, to give unlimited authority to fifty or sixty *presbyterian* ones, from whom the episcopal clergy could expect little justice, and less mercy?" The duke's prognostications were very soon verified in the after proceedings of these presbyterian prelates. The article which met with the greatest opposition, and excited the greatest indignation in every one that had not been infected with the presbyterian malignity, was the hardship fastened on those clergymen that had been expelled from their benefices by the lawless and inhuman rabble. In supporting that petition

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Parliament, Appendix, ix. 129, 130.



presented by sir Patrick Scott, the duke said, with great justice, and some warmth, "It was wonderful to call these men *deserters*, when it was notorious all the kingdom over, that they were *driven away by the most barbarous violence*; and it was no less wonderful to declare their kirks vacant because of their being removed from them. For what could be the sense of the word '*removed*,' in this case, but just neither more nor less than '*rabbled*;' and what might the world think of the justice of the parliament if it should sustain that as sufficient ground for declaring their kirks vacant? These men had entered to their churches according to law; how then could they be deprived without a legal trial? What evil had they done? They had never had an opportunity to disobey the government. They were violently thrust from their churches by the rabble before the 13th of April, 1689. So it was impossible for them to obey the authority of the meeting of estates in that day's proclamation. Nay, consider that proclamation, and it will be found that it did not bind them. Were they chargeable with any other crimes or scandals? Why, then, let them be first tried and convicted, and then deprived by due course. Was it ever heard of, that ministers of the gospel of Christ were turned out of their offices and livings without the least guilt fixed on them? What a reflection would it cast on the king, if such an act should be made? Did he not come to these kingdoms to deliver us from arbitrary power? To secure liberty and property as well as religion? But how was it consistent with this, to deprive so many protestant ministers of their churches and livings, for no imaginable reason in law or equity? Besides, when first the government of this kingdom was transferred to his majesty, did he not receive these men into his protection by his declaration dated February 6, 1689? But how was it consistent with the common protection due to subjects to deprive them of their undoubted rights so very arbitrarily?" But honour or equity were banished from the bosoms of partizans inflamed by all the rancour of long-suppressed feelings of hatred and revenge. No man attempted to reply to these unanswerable arguments; but the duke ought to have known the result of admitting the sworn enemies of the church of God to legislate for it, and not placed himself at the head of the presbyterian interest at the meeting of the convention the previous year.

THE FOLLOWING article was brought before the house on Friday, the 23d of May; and as it was prepared by the committee, it ran thus:—And because many conform ministers have deserted, or are removed from their churches preceding



the 13th of April, 1689, and ought not to be reponed, and others were deprived for not giving obedience to the act of the estates of the said 13th of April; therefore their majesties, &c. do hereby declare all the churches either deserted, or from which the conform ministers were removed or deprived, as said is, *to be vacant*, and that the presbyterian ministers exercising within any of these parishes, or where the last incumbent is dead, shall continue their possession, and have right to the legal benefices and stipends forth and from the time of their entering, and in all time coming; aye, and while the church as now established take further course therewith." The duke of Hamilton argued that this clause was not only needless, but that it would necessarily follow that those that had been rabbled ought not to be reponed; that clause was therefore left out. The other, that the presbyterian ministers who had accidentally, as it were, exercised their calling in any of the rabbled parishes, should have right to the benefice. The duke opposed this also, and said, "that many presbyterian ministers had exercised their ministry in several parishes, and possessed themselves of the churches from which the conform ministers had been forced, who had neither presentation nor call from the greater or better part of the parish: and what title could such men have to the benefice?" So the following clause was added in the printed act—"exercising their ministry by the desire or consent of the people." The third clause was—the presbyterian ministers were to have the benefice from the *time of their entering*, without specifying any definite term or year from which their entrance might be dated. This, again, was intrepidly opposed by the duke, who said, "this was very strange, for many presbyterian ministers had exercised their ministry in *several* parishes ever since king James's toleration, which was in the year 1687. So that this clause gave them title *ever since that year*; although both in that year and in the next there was a legal incumbent in the actual and uninterrupted exercise of his ministry in the parish! What iniquity was this?" Upon the statement of this notorious fact, the term of entrance for the presbyterian ministers was limited to the year 1689.

SEVERE and unjust as the act is, it would have been much more so had the draught passed as it was originally intended. The aird of Kelburn, member for the county of Bute, proposed that "such ministers as had not free access to their churches, and consequently could not give obedience to the proclamation of the estates of the 13th of April upon the day appointed, but were willing to obey when they should





have opportunity, might be excepted out of the number of those whom the parliament were to declare deprived, and their churches vacant." This equitable amendment was rejected with scorn. On Wednesday, the 28th, the great point in the Article was moved, whether or not "the deed of the rabble should be justified, and all those ministers deprived who had been driven from their churches by the rabble." After some farther fruitless opposition it was put to the vote, and the duke of Hamilton then moved, that the vote be stated, "approve or not approve *the deed of the rabble*." That was really the true stating of the case; but it was too barefaced, even for the disciples of the covenant, to put such a monstrous iniquity upon the statute book, and therefore it was put in smother terms—"approve or not approve *the Article*<sup>1</sup>."

WHILST the duke of Hamilton was making these efforts in favour of the persecuted clergy, a member stood up and said, "the duke would do wisely to temper his language; for what was this but to reflect on the house, and fly in the face of an act of parliament?" The duke instantly replied, "It was a mistake; it was but *a vote* of the house, and had not yet got the royal assent, so it was no act of parliament. But seeing matters went so (though he was very much afraid the reflection would go further than the house was aware of), for his part he would say no more, but put his hand upon his mouth." And with this he left his seat, and went out of the house, a good number of members following him.

ALL THAT now remained to be done was to vote the act *in cumulo*; and this was hastened by the impertinence of a presbyterian preacher, who had got into the house, and exclaimed to the members next to him, "Fie! make haste; despatch, now that he is gone, lest he return again, and create more trouble." The act was accordingly instantly "read, voted, and passed;" only four or five staid to vote against presbyterian government, that it might not be said that it was carried *nemine contradicente*, and some few others, who would not vote for *that* establishment of presbytery, because, as they pretended, it was not established in its proper "plenitude of power and independency<sup>2</sup>."

THE ACT was voted on the 28th of May, but it did not receive the constitutional touch of the sceptre till the 7th of June. It was necessary to acquaint William with the nature of it before it could be enacted; and it is pretty certain that

<sup>1</sup> Account of the late Establishment of Presbyterian Church Government, 64.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 60-63.



he did not receive a just account of it. "I cannot forbear to tell you, that I am fully persuaded he did not get a just and impartial information of the several articles in it; which, had he got, it was impossible that he should ever have approved or ratified the act: for why? That article concerning the rabbled ministers is plainly inconsistent with the express words of the coronation oath. Now who could believe that the king would have consented to such notorious oppression as more than three hundred protestant ministers met with from this act, if that matter had been duly represented to him? But I cannot find what can be said for my lord Melville, who, knowing very well the whole matter, abused his master by not fairly representing it to him<sup>1</sup>."

PRESBYTERY was now triumphant; and the church was cast off by the state, and left to her own resources. In the state of desolation and persecution to which she was now reduced, one of her first efforts was to draw near to God, in that admirable form of prayer, the English liturgy. She had been so accustomed to be bullied and domineered over by her late ally, the state, that from habit she thought it necessary to have law on her side, or at least the protection of the government, before she adopted it. Accordingly, on the following day after her depression, the 29th of May, and the anniversary of her own Restoration, the earl of Linlithgow moved for leave to bring in a bill "for giving *toleration* to those of the episcopal persuasion to worship God after their own manner, and particularly that whosoever were inclined to use the English liturgy might do it with safety." It would appear from this, too, that war had been declared, or at least threatened, against the Book of Common Prayer, which contains the whole teaching of the church catholic, and is a complete compendium of catholic doctrine and true piety. And now that the external pressure of state tyranny was removed, the clergy, and of course their people, were seeking a resting-place for their faith, and were inquiring for the good old paths where is the good way in which their fathers walked, before the innovating hand of Andrew Melville forced upon them extemporary declamations. The Prayer Book did not come into immediate use, but it came gradually in, and has ever since formed a conspicuous and distinctive mark betwixt the church and the disciples of the covenant, by whom she was supplanted. The draught of the act was read, but rejected; and no more was heard of it.

NOW THAT PRESBYTERY was established, it was necessary

<sup>1</sup> An Account of the late Establishment of Presbyterian Government, 64-65.



that the sixty ministers, which was the numerical amount of their force, should also be put in possession of the seats of learning, that they might secure the rising generation. As the universities stood under the episcopal constitution they were a great eye-sore to the party, and therefore none could expect that the presbyterians would be satisfied unless the public schools were put into their hands. Besides, the education of youth added much to their strength and national settlement; so they were resolved, with or without law, to seize very speedily the most conspicuous and the most eminent places. The ministers were so warm in this design, that they importuned their patrons in the state to remove such professors as they judged most opposite to their government, even before the affair was considered by parliament. But the wiser sort among them withstood this precipitancy; for since they might frame an act of parliament such as they pleased, it was thought most convenient to delay their revenge for a little while, because the masters of the universities might be more effectually turned out under the covert of an act of parliament than by the methods that they first devised<sup>1</sup>. At the Restoration the universities were purged only of those intruders who had forcibly ejected the lawful possessors, and had taken their places without any other form of law than a vote of their omnipotent assembly. The expulsion of these intruders was denominated the utmost stretch of tyranny; but now, when the power is placed in their own hands, they summarily ejected men who had been legally established in their colleges, which were adorned by their learning, and illustrated by the piety and the respectability of their lives. An act was passed for the visitation of universities, colleges, and schools, which statuted and declared, "that from this time forth, no principals, professors, regents, masters, or others bearing office in any university, college, or school within the kingdom, be either admitted or *allowed to continue* in the exercise of their said functions, but such as do acknowledge and profess, and shall subscribe to, the Confession of Faith, ratified and approved in this present parliament, and shall swear and subscribe the oath of allegiance to their present majesties, and shall be of a loyal and peaceable conversation, of sufficient literature, and submitting to the government of the church now established by law. And appoint . . . . . to be visitors, with full power and commission to them, or a quorum of them, to meet, visit, take trial, *purge out and remove*, ac-

<sup>1</sup> Account of the late Establishment of Presbyterian Government, 4to. 1698.





cording to the aforesaid qualifications; and their first meeting to be at Edinburgh on the 23d instant [July], with power afterwards to adjourn and meet as they shall see convenient, aye, and while their majesties recal and discharge this commission<sup>1</sup>."

PARLIAMENT next passed an "Act for settling the quiet and peace of the church;" wherein "our sovereign lord and lady, &c. ratify, approve, and perpetually confirm, the fifth act of the second session of this current parliament, intituled, an act ratifying the Confession of Faith, and settling presbyterian government in the whole heads, articles, and clauses thereof. . . . That no person be admitted or continued for hereafter to be a minister or preacher within this church, unless that he subscribe the Confession of Faith ratified in the foresaid fifth act of the second session of this parliament, declaring the same to be the confession of his own faith, and that he owns the doctrine therein contained to be the true doctrine, which he will constantly adhere to; and likewise that he owns and acknowledges presbyterian church government, as settled by the foresaid fifth act of the second session of this parliament, to be the only government of this church, and that he will submit thereto and concur therewith, and never endeavour, directly or indirectly, the prejudice or subversion thereof. And their majesties . . . statute and ordain, that uniformity of worship and of the administration of public ordinances within this church, be observed by all the said ministers and preachers as the same are at present performed and allowed therein, or shall be hereafter declared by the authority of the same; and that no minister or preacher be admitted or continued for hereafter unless that he subscribe to observe, and do actually observe, the foresaid uniformity<sup>2</sup>." This uniformity was to consist in a negation of the then practice of the church—that is, that none of the forms be retained in the public worship of God that are not used by the presbyterians; that the Lord's Prayer, the Doxology, and the Apostles' Creed, be rejected from the public worship, and that the Holy Scriptures be no more used in the public assemblies as heretofore.

THERE WAS another *act Rescissory* passed about the same time, which repealed all former acts against non-conformity that had been passed since the year 1661, or that enforced conformity with the established episcopal church and its go-

<sup>1</sup> 25th Act. 4th July.—Acts of Parliament, ix. p. 163, 164.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Parliament, Act 23.





vernment under archbishops and bishops. This act "re-scinded, cassed, and annulled all acts for denouncing excommunicate persons, and anent sentences of excommunication, with all other sentences of the same import, and bot [without] prejudice of this generality, all acts enjoining *civil pains* upon sentences of excommunication whatever." In the church of England there are excommunications *minor*, *major*, and *ipso facto*. The former are passed on those who knowingly converse with an excommunicated person when there is no necessity for their so doing; and by this censure men are merely deprived of the sacraments. The major excommunication deprives men not only of the sacraments, but of all communication with other christian men without as well as within the church; but they are not deprived of communication with christian people except in the church, till they have remained three months under this sentence without seeking the benefit of absolution. An *ipso-facto* excommunication means by a man's own act; such as the wilful falling into schism or popery, which last was as bad as the ancient *Thurificati*, who were lapsed christians that burnt incense upon the altars of the heathen gods, and were reckoned the worst and vilest sort of idolaters. In the case of schism or idolatry, although excommunication is not denounced, nevertheless it really takes place, and a clergyman may refuse to bury men if they die in this condition, and no one can testify to their repentance<sup>1</sup>. In Scotland, the old popish temporal pains and penalties attached to excommunication were in force up to the period at which we are arrived. The parliament wisely and humanely took away the power of inflicting the dreadful pains upon excommunicated persons, that the law till then allowed; for the barbarous cruelty of the presbyterians, in using this engine of tyranny, during their former usurpation, had not been forgotten. This act, says Mr. Skinner, "took out the sting of excommunication which had been so terrible, and had produced such grievous effects under every prevailing system of church discipline. Indeed, it was much to be regretted that any scheme of reformation, real or pretended, should have retained *one of the most scandalous corruptions of popery* introduced in one of the darkest ages, and first put in practice by one of the most overbearing popes, Gregory VII., to the manifest hurt of civil society, and to the total disregard of the original design of that spiritual power committed to the church, not for destruction but for edification; by mortifying the soul, not

<sup>1</sup> Johnson's Clergymen's Vade-Mecum, 180-185.



by punishing the body or seizing the goods of the offender. This abuse was now luckily removed, and the episcopal clergy both then and since, amidst all the hardships of subjection which this parliament laid them under to the new establishment, are in so far obliged to it for thus curtailing the dangerous extent of ecclesiastical jurisdiction by this salutary act, and thereby putting it out of the kirk's power to distress those of a different persuasion so much as by their avowed principles, and with their former privileges, they would in all probability have done<sup>1</sup>."

PARLIAMENT vested in the crown all the superiorities which had formerly belonged to the church, and made an act for the plantation of kirks and valuation of tiends or tithes, founded upon the laws made by Charles I. Their majesties are made to say they were resolved to prosecute this *good work* for the universal good of their subjects, and especially for the encouragement of the ministers of the gospel. Having now a second time "cast down the walls of Jericho<sup>2</sup>," and raised a new fabric with the untampered mortar of the "inclinations of the people" and the sacrilege of the "rabble," the parliament was prorogued on the 22d of July, and the executive power was devolved, as in times past, upon the privy council.

BUT complete and sweeping as this revolution was, it failed to give satisfaction to the presbyterians, who only took what they got as an instalment till time and opportunity enabled them to follow out the *obligations* of the covenant. The anti-burghers, who are consistent presbyterians, as late as the year 1829 have borne their "testimony against the public evils" which were then perpetrated, and which they say introduced many corruptions into the kirk. They say, "the settlement both of church and state was accompanied with *sinful* defects, and followed by acts and proceedings which deeply affect the interests of religion to this day. The conduct of the nation and its representatives, at the Revolution, was faulty in different respects. The estates of the nation . . . did neither then nor afterwards faithfully and plainly inform their rulers of their duty, or of the peculiar obligations under which Scotland lay, in consequence of her national *attainments and vows*. The parliament abolished prelacy as a great and insupportable grievance to this nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people ever since the reformation; but they *did not*, as had been done in former times by the competent

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical Hist. ii. 554.

<sup>2</sup> Vide *ante*, i. ch. xiv. p. 634.



authorities, consider it as *contrary to the word of God*, and abjured by our covenants. They ratified the presbyterian government according to its establishment in 1592, in the way of *sinfully* overlooking and passing by all the legal securities given to it between 1638 and 1650, which, together with the reformation attained to in that period, was left buried under the infamous rescissory act, which stands in the body of our Scotch law to this day. In like manner they ratified the Westminster Confession of Faith, as the public and avowed confession of this church, without any reference to the act of the General Assembly, 1647, by which it was received as a part of the *uniformity* in the churches of the *three kingdoms*, and with an explicit assertion of the inherent right of the church to call her own assemblies—an omission which paved the way for dangerous encroachments by the state. Though certain laws which subjected persons to penalties for owning the National Covenant and Solemn League were repealed, yet these covenants were allowed to remain under the indignities done them by the rescissory and other acts; nor were they excepted from those oaths which were removed to make way for a general and *unqualified* oath of allegiance to the sovereign. The draught of an act for excluding from places of power and trust such as had been accessory to the oppressions of the late persecuting period, was laid aside; in consequence of which, persons were entrusted with the management of the affairs of the nation who were hostile to its best interests, and who, though they yielded to the establishment of the presbyterian church, took pleasure in clogging her operations, and were ready to embrace the first opportunity to infringe her rights and invalidate the security which she had obtained<sup>1</sup>.”

<sup>1</sup> Testimony of the Associated Synod of Original Seceders, 37.





## CHAPTER LIV.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

Effects of the Assertory Act.—The church the candlestick—the gospel the light.—Westminster Confession—schisms.—Defects in the church—defects in extemporary worship.—Advantages of a liturgy.—Fundamental charter of presbytery—objections to it.—Arts practised at the Revolution.—Objections to prelacy being a grievance.—Whether prelacy was popular?—The number of the presbyterians—numbers of episcopalians.—First reformers not justified.—the principle of reformation.—Wherein the presbyterians differ from Knox—in faith—in the use of a liturgy—in discipline.—Episcopal authority and succession—whence derived.—Despised—and why.—Patronage.

1690.—BY WHATEVER motives the duke of Lauderdale may have been actuated in passing the ASSERTORY ACT, we have seen its calamitous effects in several instances, — in the degradation of christian bishops, the imposition of a self-contradictory and impious Test that caused a persecution of the clergy, and now the total overthrow of the church of Christ. It gave the new sovereign the power to “order and dispose of the external government and policy of the church” at his pleasure. Although William himself had no desire to make any change, yet those into whose hands the desertion of James’s ministers from their posts had thrown the executive government, were not slack to take advantage of the power that this act conferred on the crown. The presbyterian convention-parliament shewed wisdom in repealing it; for so long as it stood in force, William might have again changed their new policy, and have restored the hierarchy to its former establishment. Although the presbyterians were justly opposed to it from first to last, yet they took advantage of its provisions before they removed it from the statute-book; a species of serpentine wisdom which they imbibed from their friends the jesuits. The events of the last year in Scotland were the triumphs of jesuitism. The grand object of the papacy, and its most devoted agents, the jesuits, is to overturn the re-



formed catholic church of the three kingdoms; and by divine permission they accomplished the disestablishment of it in Scotland. Could they accomplish their desire of overthrowing the united church of England and Ireland, they would make short work with the dissenters of all denominations, whether they be established in Scotland or tolerated in England. It is the reformed episcopacy alone that is, under God, the grand bulwark against popery; hence the incessant efforts of the papists to undermine the episcopal power by assertory acts, by perjuring themselves in parliament, and legislating for her so as eventually to accomplish their designs, and by voting for the suppression of bishopricks.

IN HOLY SCRIPTURE the church is represented under the emblem of a candlestick; and the christian doctrines—the faith delivered once for all to the saints, and which requires no further confirmation, neither will admit of any alterations or additions—are the light set upon it. Hence if the candlestick be removed, the light cannot burn with safety, but must be extinguished. In His wise and merciful providence, God was pleased to remove our candlestick out of its place; for there was no appearance of repentance among the people. No sooner was the candlestick removed, than, nationally speaking, the light of gospel truth was extinguished, and the monstrous heresy of the Calvinistic Westminster Confession was established in its stead, which teaches for truth the most enormous falsehood. The case of the presbyterian establishment has not been an exception to the general rule, that the removal of the candlestick has always been followed by the extinction of the light of gospel truth. The plague of Calvinistic darkness fell upon the presbyterian kirk; a darkness that might be felt in all the unmitigated atrocity of the covenant; whilst the rabbled and disestablished church has had the *light* in her dwellings. Since the pressure of the regal supremacy has been removed, and the church permitted to exercise her own intrinsic powers, she has adopted a liturgical worship, and in her admirable Communion Office has preserved the catholic doctrines unimpaired; whilst the presbyterians have been dividing and subdividing, and “disputing which heresy is the more orthodox blasphemy.” The church being “the ground and pillar of the truth,” the candlestick and the light cannot be separated, without the danger of extinguishing the truth; a verity that has been made evident whenever the experiment has been tried. “In all the annals of the church,” says Leslie, “whether under the law or the gospel, there is not one in-



stance of a schism against the priesthood which God had appointed, but great errors in doctrine and worship did follow it. Thus the priesthood which Micah set up of his own head, and that which Jeroboam set up in opposition to that of Aaron, both ended in idolatry. Thus the Novatians and Donatists, who made schisms against their bishops, fell into grievous errors, though they did not renounce the faith. What hydra heresies and monstrous sects, fifty or sixty at one time, flowed like a torrent into England, in the times of forty-one, after episcopacy was thrown down. So evident is that saying, that the church is the pillar and ground of the truth, that we can hardly find any error which has come into the church, but upon an infraction made upon the episcopal authority."

THOSE MEN on whom the tower of Siloam fell were not sinners above all men, neither was the church of Scotland deficient above all other churches in bearing fruit, at the time when the divine justice was provoked to pull down her fence and to leave her exposed to the wild boar out of the wood, and to the "obligations of the covenant." There were, nevertheless, politically speaking, defects in her, that weakened and sapped her foundations, and exposed her to a falling away from the faith. Among the most prominent was her yielding to her fears of offending the prejudices of the presbyterians, in not authoritatively appointing a liturgy for the public worship of the whole church. It is evident that the clergy had furtively adopted parts of the English liturgy in their public prayers; but still they were repeated without book, *as if* extemporaneously, which was a species of hypocrisy, and a practising deceit on the people, in their solemn addresses to Almighty God. The absence of an authorised liturgy left the keeping of the faith to every man's own strength, and as there was no standard it was liable to degeneracy and corruption, as it has notoriously degenerated in the presbyterian establishment. In the eucharistic sacrifice no catholic rites were practised, nor any authorised form of sound words that had descended from antiquity, or that embodied the language of apostles and of apostolic men. There was no form of words for the other sacrament, but the infant disciple was left to the discretion and the orthodoxy of the priest, who might or might not be sound in the faith. Yet He, who is love itself, would regenerate, adopt, and justify the child according to His own institution, although the priest himself might be deficient in impleading the merits and promises of Christ. In short, the church was entirely left, in their public worship, to the discretion, the





growth in grace, the gradual attainments, and the fidelity of every individual clergyman; and all of them might not be Timothies in faith, although some of them might be Apollos in eloquence, and in might in the Scriptures. This was a great sin, inasmuch as it was a neglect of that *mark* of the apostolic church which consisted in continuing steadfastly in *the prayers* of the whole church.

HAD SHE continued to be established, it is hard to say how far God in his mercy might have preserved her from swerving from the faith. We have seen great defects, however, in that body that supplanted her at the Revolution, and we have heard loud and repeated complaints by many of her own members of the uncertainty of her doctrines. One in particular, in addressing the presbyterian establishment, says, "I have come from my house a sound orthodox christian, and have hardly taken my seat in the church, when I have found myself praying, or at least one was praying in my name, as a rank Socinian. I have been made an Arian as to my prayers very often; and, in short, there has hardly any whimsical opinion been broached among the clergy for these forty years, that I have not some time or other found mixed with my public prayers . . . Sometimes, indeed, for my heart I could not have told upon what particular principles my prayers were offered; they were so excellently well *contrived*, and so free from all narrow notions, that they would have served a Jewish synagogue, a Mahometan mosque, or a congregation of Persian magi, as well, or better, than a christian assembly. If the minister be a sceptic, I am made to pray like a sceptic; if an enthusiast, he addresses God in my name, according to his enthusiastical notions. When he chances to be a factious firebrand, my prayers breathe faction, my public devotions are flaming with party heat, and tintured with the fury of his faction. When any disputes happen and differences arise in their synods and assemblies, both sides appeal to heaven in their public prayers, and force the laity to appeal with them. But what is even worse, by an unlucky change of ministers, or by stepping into another church, I have often been made to appeal to heaven as an advocate for *both sides* of the question, and to pray for and against each of the parties in *one day*: for though our churches have the *appearance* of the same worship, yet, in fact, their worship is as different as the tempers, principles, and parties of the men who *manufacture it*; and this leads us into the dangerous blunder of offering *contradictory* petitions, and praying at different times upon principles as opposite to one





another as light is to darkness. . . . I have thanked God for His decrees of election and reprobation in the forenoon, and in the afternoon offered my humble thanks that all men have equal access to salvation by faith and virtue. In a word, there is no party nor different principle among our ministers with respect to which I have not been made to play fast and loose with the Deity, to ask what I did *not* want, and to pray *against* what I most earnestly wished for."

ALTHOUGH this is a description of the presbyterian worship true to the life, yet the church, from her want of a liturgy, was liable to the same lamentable absurdities. This was felt and lamented by the established clergy, and many of them composed forms for themselves, grounded chiefly on the inestimable liturgy which the church of England has provided for her sons. The advantage of a liturgy is, that we can examine it, learn its import, and prepare ourselves to pray with the spirit as well as with the understanding, which is an utter impossibility when listening to an extemporary prayer, as no man can tell what the minister is going to say, nor remember what he has said; and may not perhaps approve of the matter of the prayer, and so cannot say Amen to it. Extempore prayer is as bad, if not worse, than to speak in an unknown tongue; the minister may edify himself, but the people cannot understand him, "howbeit in the spirit he may speak mysteries." In a volume of sermons, by Mr. Lunan, parish priest of Daviot, in Aberdeenshire, on "The Five Solemn Festivals of the Church of Scotland," published in the year 1712, there are prayers added for each festival, which he composed and used on each of these occasions. They are compiled from the Liturgy and the Psalms; but still, though most excellent, they came upon the ear of his congregation as strange sounds. This sad defect in public worship was rectified, after the church recovered from the effects of the stunning blow she received at the Revolution, as shall be related in its proper place, which enables her now, and all her faithful sons, to pray with the spirit, and with the understanding also. "It is a remarkable fact," says bishop Walker, in his *Life of Archbishop Whitgift*, "well worthy of the most serious reflection, that the church [of England] reformed by the most sober-minded and judicious divines of that most remarkable age, stands now, as she stood then, the same in doctrine and discipline,—the acknowledged bulwark of pure, true, and undefiled religion, against popery, fanaticism, and all the various degrees of infidelity,—which unity of faith and discipline cannot be predicated of any



other church of the reformation which we know; while of most of them the direct contrary must with equal grief and indignation be acknowledged."

THE ARTICLE in the Claim of Right<sup>1</sup>, which is the fundamental charter of the presbyterian establishment, has been proved by the preceding part of this History to be entirely false. It is needless to go over the whole history again to prove they were not all presbyters who overturned, but did not reform, the church of Scotland, which was then under the obedience of the see of Rome. There were some nominal bishops, a few presbyters or priests, but the greater number were mere laymen, and farther, from the year 1560 until 1610, there was not an ordained priest within the kingdom, save Knox, and perhaps half a dozen others. But let us ask how these presbyters, who they say were our reformers, got their ordination. Those who really were priests had their orders from bishops; but those "certain zealous men," of whom Knox speaks<sup>2</sup>, had no ordination whatever; and even the real founder of presbytery, Melville, was a mere layman. Not one of these lay-brethren, however, attempted to work miracles to prove their mission, or to shew that they had divine authority to pluck up and destroy, and to assume the characters of ambassadors of Christ, and to represent Him. But even the ministers, not of Christ, but of the Covenant, that were now established, had no orders of any sort but what they received from unauthorised men, who were bound to *extirpate* that very order of men who could alone have conferred authority upon them. But even supposing that the gospel had been preached by priests, must we, then, infer that those priests and all others were to be ever after not only exempt from episcopal jurisdiction, but bound under an oath to abolish the apostolic office? If that were to hold good, then the Samaritans should have rejected and murdered both priests and apostles, because they happened to be reformed by a deacon! Some nations were first converted by laymen, and others by jesuits, and some, it is said, by women, and therefore, upon the principle laid down in the Claim of Right, these churches ought still to be governed by laymen, jesuits, and women!

THE INCLINATIONS of the people, however, were adopted at

<sup>1</sup> "That prelacy and the superiority of any office in the church above presbyters is, and hath been, a great and insupportable grievance and trouble to this nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people ever since the reformation, (they having reformed from popery by presbyters), and therefore ought to be abolished."

<sup>2</sup> Vide ante, i. ch. v. p. 139, 140.



the Revolution as the *articulus stantis vel cadentis ecclesie*—the article of a standing or a falling church. But prelacy was unanimously consented to and established at the reformation, and continued so without challenge, till Melville, fifteen years afterwards, proposed his new scheme of presbytery, and maintained a continued struggle of seventeen years more before he accomplished its establishment. It was not the inclinations of the people which first gave life and motion to the monstrous confederacy against the prelates in 1637; for the conspiracy was far advanced before the leaders fixed on prelacy as one of the reasons. They protested to the marquis of Hamilton that they had no intention to abolish episcopacy; and in cajoling the people to sign their covenant, they asserted it might be sworn without prejudice to prelacy<sup>1</sup>. It is true, this was only the policy of the leaders; but it shewed that the people were favourable to prelacy, otherwise no such devices and subterfuges need have been necessary. It was not till James VIIth's Indulgence that the presbyterians broke communion with the church, and avowed themselves schismatics. But it may be said, says bishop Sage—"that those presbyterians who lived anno 1637 and downwards, shook off prelacy, and would bear it no longer; and was it not, then, an insupportable grievance to them? True, indeed, for removing the *pretended* corruptions of prelacy, they then ventured upon the *really* horrid sin of rebellion against their prince; they embroiled three famous and flourishing kingdoms; they broke down the beautiful and ancient structures of government, both in church and state; they shed oceans of christian blood, and made the nations welter in gore; they gave themselves up to all the wildnesses of rage and fury; they gloried in treason and treachery, in oppression and murder, in fierceness and unbridled tyranny; they drenched innumerable misled souls in the crimson guilt of schism and sedition, of rebellion and faction, of perfidy and perjury. In short, they opened the way to such an inundation of hypocrisy and irreligion, of confusions and calamities, as cannot easily be paralleled in history. And for all these things they pretended their antipathies to prelacy; and yet after all this, I am where I was. Considering their foresaid principles and practices as to the *unity* of the church, they could not call it an *insupportable* grievance; they did not truly find it such. Had they

<sup>1</sup> Bishop Sage has demonstrated the absurdity of that allegation, in his Fundamental Charter, a scarce work, but I am happy to see it is to be republished by the Spottiswood Society.





really and sincerely, in true christian simplicity and sobriety, found or felt it such, they would no doubt have looked on it as a forcible ground for separating from the communion in which it prevailed, as the protestants in Germany found their *centum gravamina* for separating from the church of Rome. To have made it that indeed, and then to have *suffered patiently*, if they had been persecuted for it, without turning to the anti-christian course of *armed resistance*, had had some colour of an argument that they deemed it an insupportable grievance. But the fiercest fighting against it, so long as they could allow themselves to live in the communion which owned it, can never infer that it was to them an insupportable grievance; at most, if it was, it was to wanton humour and wildfire only, and not to conscience and real christian conviction."

THE PRESBYTERIANS were secretly forewarned of the prince of Orange's intention to seize the crowns of Great Britain and Ireland; and they had concerted their measures for co-operating with him in his designs. As soon as they heard of his success, they hounded out the rabble in the western counties against the episcopal clergy, and committed the barbarities, some of which have been detailed, and thereby created confusion and disorder. Their next step was to control and influence the election of members for the convention; and in which they succeeded to their wishes. Taking advantage of this appearance of a popular movement, they declared prelacy to be "a great and insupportable grievance and trouble to the nation, and contrary to the inclinations of the generality of the people." There was no other indication of popular inclination. Such indication could not be collected from the separation of the people from the established episcopal church upon the proclamation of king James's Indulgence; for not the tenth part of the kingdom separated, namely, the western presbyterians. It could not be collected from their covetousness to seize the rich possessions of the bishops, for the whole of their united property did not exceed seven thousand pounds sterling; and William seized on them for his own share of the spoil. It could not be collected from any suspicion that the people might entertain of the bishops' defection to popery; for it was very well known that they had made much more powerful opposition to popery, both in their place in parliament and also in their pulpits, than the presbyterian ministers had done. But so powerful had the bishops' opposition been, that some of them were deprived of their bishopricks for that political sin. But "the members of that meeting of the estates had received no instructions from their respective electors, either in counties



or burghs, to turn down prelacy and set up presbytery. I could name more than one or two who, if they did not break their trust, did at least very much disappoint their electors by doing so. There were no petitions, no addresses presented to the meeting by the people, craving the eversion of prelacy or the erection of presbytery. They never so much as once offered at polling the people about it. Shall I add farther? After it was done, they never received thanks from the 'generality of the people' for doing it. There was never yet any thing like an universal rejoicing among the people, after it was done. They durst never yet adventure to require from 'the generality of the people' their approbation of it. And now, if the article was thus established at first, entirely upon the foot of rabbling the episcopal clergy in the west, I think I might reasonably supersede all further labour about this controversy; for not to mention that they were but the rascally scum of these counties, where the rabbling was, who performed it, and that even in those counties there are great numbers of people who never reckoned prelacy 'a great and insupportable grievance and trouble;' but lived and could have still lived peaceably and contentedly under it, particularly the most part of the gentry. But granting that all the people in these counties had been inclined, as is affirmed in the article, yet what were they to the whole nation? Is it reasonable to judge of a whole kingdom by a *corner* of it? to call these the sentiments of *all* the kingdom, which were only the sentiments of four or five counties?"

AN ANONYMOUS author, with the view of undeceiving the public on the subject of the popular inclination, published ten questions; and the tenth was, "Whether Scottish presbytery was agreeable to the general inclinations of the people?" Arguing for the negative, he says, "that the nobility of the kingdom (a very few, not above a dozen excepted) had all sworn the oath commonly called the Test, wherein all fanatical principles and covenant obligations were renounced and abjured; that not one of forty of the gentry but had sworn it also, and not fifty in all Scotland (out of the west) did, upon the indulgence (granted by king James, anno 1687), forsake their parish churches to frequent meeting-houses; that the generality of the commons live in cities and market-towns; that all who could be of the common council in such corporations, or were able to follow any ingenious trade, were obliged to take the test; that the clergy stood all for episcopacy, there being, of about a thousand, scarcely twenty trimmers betwixt the bishop and the presbyterian moderator, which twenty,



with all the presbyterian preachers, could not make up the fifth part of such a number as the other side amounted to; that in all the universities there were not four masters, heads, or fellows, inclined to presbytery; that the college of justice were so averse to it, that the generality of them were ready to take up arms last summer in defence of their episcopal ministers."

BISHOP SAGE's testimony is important: he says, "I can affirm, with a well-grounded assurance, that if by the people you mean the commonalty, the rude illiterate vulgar, the *third* man throughout the kingdom is not presbyterian; and if by the people you mean those who are persons of better quality and education (whose sense, in my opinion, ought in all reason to go for the sense of the nation), I dare boldly aver, not the thirteenth. For notwithstanding all the clamours that are made on that head, it is well known to all the kingdom that fanaticism has all along had little footing in that far wider half of the kingdom which is north of the Tay. And though the party has been infinitely earnest and active to increase and multiply their numbers every where, yet, in all that country, they could never get above *three or four* meeting-houses erected, and these, too, very little frequented or encouraged. Nay, even on *this [the south] side of the Tay* (except in the five associated shires) *the third man was never engaged in the schism.*" This is a demonstration that the inclinations of the people were not unfriendly to episcopacy; for with such an ample toleration as the jesuits, for their own purposes, had advised James to grant, and even encouragement given to separate, they might have shewn it by seceding from the communion of the church, but which they did not. Dr. Morer, chaplain to an English regiment in the Castle, says, "the church party, both for *number* and quality, are predominant in this nation. The nobles and gentry are generally episcopal, and so are the people, especially northward, where, to my own knowledge, they are so well affected that it would be no hard task to bring them to subscribe to the rites and worship of the English church, as Buchanan says the ancient Scots did. . . My frequent reading of our service, and preaching in their churches, to the auditories' satisfaction, the caresses of the gentry and respect of the ordinary people whenever I met them, infers so much, and plainly discovers that they neither abhorred me nor my way of religion."

IMMEDIATELY before and at the beginning of the Revolution, the presbyterian party exerted all their energies to get a meeting of estates formed to forward their views. The unhinging of all things, the desertion of the ministers of the crown,





the surprise, confusion, and irresolution of the rest of the nation, occasioned by the violence of the presbyterians, contributed considerably to the advancement of their designs. Notwithstanding, at the first meeting of the estates, they had well-grounded fears that they would be outvoted; and they certainly would have been so, had not so many of their opponents deserted the house before they ventured to introduce that clause into the claim of right which is their fundamental charter. Yet it was June of this year before they accomplished an establishment, in a thin house, not one-third of the whole parliament. Had they not got patronages abolished, and the plantation of kirks thrown into their own hands, they would have been experimentally convinced that the inclinations of the people were antipresbyterian.

BUT EVEN although the reformation in Scotland had been effected by presbyters, yet it does not follow that prelacy was either a grievance or ought to have been abolished. But Scottish episcopalians never did, nor do they at present, think themselves bound to embrace and maintain all the sentiments, and to justify all the practices, of Knox and the other reformers. They were not endued with the gifts of infallibility, inerrability, or impeccability; they had no commission nor authority to establish new articles of faith, nor to make new conditions of salvation. When they receded from conformity with the original and immoveable standard of the christian religion, the church of Scotland felt herself at liberty to differ from them, and by no means to follow them. Bishop Sage produces the following instances of this difference betwixt the church in his days and the reformers:—"We cannot allow of popular reformations, as it was asserted and practised by our reformers. We own, indeed, that it is not only *lawful* but necessary for every man to reform himself, both as to principles and practice, when there is corruption in either; and that not only without but *against* public authority, whether civil or ecclesiastical. Further, we own it is not only lawful, but a plain and indispensable duty in the governors of the church, to reform her, acting within their own sphere, even against human laws, in direct opposition to a thousand acts of a thousand parliaments. I say, acting and keeping within their own sphere, *i. e.* so far as their spiritual power can go, but no farther; keeping within these their own bounds, they may and should condemn heresies, purge the public worship of corruptions, continue a succession of orthodox pastors, &c. In a word, do any thing that is needful to be done, for putting and preserving the church committed to their care in that state





of orthodox purity and unity which Jesus Christ, from whom they have their commission, and to whom they must be answerable, has required by his holy institution. But we cannot allow them to move eccentrically, to turn exorbitant, to stir without their own vortex. We cannot allow them to use any other than spiritual means, or to make any other than spiritual defences. We think they should still perform all dutiful submission to the civil powers; never resist by *material* arms; never absolve subjects from their allegiance to their civil sovereign; never preach the damnable doctrine of deposing kings for heresy; never to attempt to make those whom they should make *good* christians, *bad* subjects; but to teach the great and fundamental doctrine of the cross, and exemplify it to them in their practice when they are called to it. This we profess, and we do not think it popery; but our reformers taught quite a different doctrine. Their doctrine was, that it belonged to the *rabble* to reform religion publicly and by force; to reform the state, if it would not reform the church; to extirpate all false religion by their authority; to assume to themselves power to overturn the powers that are ordained of God; to depose them, and set up new powers in their stead."

THE CHURCH did not recede from the reformers in any one catholic doctrine or principle which they maintained in common with the universal church before she was tainted with the corruptions of popery. But the presbyterians notoriously deserted the principles of the reformers, 1st, in the faith; 2dly, in the worship; 3dly, in the discipline; and 4thly, in the government of the church.

1. KNOX and others drew up a Confession of Faith, which was ratified in parliament in 1560, and again in 1567; and which continued to be the national standard till the year 1648. From that year, the presbyterians set up an entirely different standard of orthodoxy, wherein many abstruse and mysterious points are nicely, minutely, precisely, and peremptorily determined, such as Knox very properly expressed in general and accommodable terms. But this parliament statuted and ordained, "that no person be admitted or continued for, or hereafter to be, a minister or preacher within this [presbyterian] church, unless he subscribe the Westminster Confession, declaring it to be *the confession of his [own] faith*, and that he owns the doctrine therein contained to be the true doctrine, to which he will constantly adhere."

2. THE PRESBYTERIANS have entirely deserted the practice of the reformers, in the article of public worship. It has been already convincingly demonstrated, that the reformers



used a liturgy, kept the festivals of the church, and repeated the Creed and Lord's Prayer in the public worship. The reformers uncovered their heads when they entered the church, and used private prayer at their first entrance, but presbyterians, at and since the revolution, consider these laudable practices superstitious and popish. "Now a-days it is plain superstition to a presbyterian not to enter the church with his head covered. Mess John himself doth it as mannerly as the coarsest cobbler in the parish. In he steps, uncovers not till in the pulpit, claps straight on his *breech*, and within a little falls to work as the spirit moves him. All the congregation must sit close in the time of prayer, and clap on their bonnets in the time of sermon. This brings me in mind of an observe an old gentleman has frequently repeated to me; 'that he found it impossible to perform divine worship without ceremonies, for the presbyterians themselves, who pretend to be against all ceremonies, seem, even to superstition, precise in observing the ceremonies of the *breech*, &c.'" The custom has been, ever since the writer of this can remember, to stand, or rather to loll listlessly over the backs of their pews; and he has seen the minister enter the pulpit with his hat on, and then hang it up on a peg behind him. The pulpits are always against the south wall, and betwixt two windows. He has also seen men put on their hats or bonnets during the sermon; so that custom is not yet obsolete. 3. In point of discipline, there is nothing more notorious than their desertion of Knox's principles and practice. The former part of this History incontrovertibly proves that he established an episcopacy, such as it was, in superintendents, and afterwards in titular archbishops and bishops; whereas the discipline of the revolution presbyterians now consists of ministers and elders, with progressive classical assemblies. 4, and lastly, Knox's episcopacy constituted one of the three estates of parliament, but the presbyterian ministers have not any recognised rank, and have no place in the heralds' office or in parliament.

IN WHAT has been said, I have chiefly followed the unanswerable arguments of bishop Sage; and, fully concurring in his sentiments, I conclude this subject in his words:—"I wish all men christians, and I wish all christians christians indeed; in a special manner, I wish our presbyterian brethren and we may yet be so much honoured and blessed of God, that in the sincerity of brotherly kindness we may be all united in one holy communion. I wish we may all earnestly contend, with all christian forbearance, fellow feeling, and charity, as becometh the members of the one church whereof Christ Jesus



is the head, to have the poor, divided, desolated church of Scotland restored to that peace, purity, and unity—that order, government, and stability—which our blessed master hath instituted and commanded. May Almighty God inspire us all with the Spirit of His Son, that our hearts being purified by an humble and a lively faith—the faith that worketh by love,—and our lives reformed according to the laws and great purposes of our holy religion, we may be all unanimously disposed for so great, so glorious, so desirable a mercy<sup>1</sup>.”

SEPARATION from episcopal communion places the separatists in a state of insecurity respecting their eternal salvation, which is ordinarily to be found in the participation of the sacraments of Baptism and the Lord's Supper. God has appointed these as the ordinary means of grace, and of obtaining the benefits of the gospel; and they are not to be attained by merely hearing of sermons, nor even of prayer. The validity of the sacraments depends on the authority of the persons who administer them, and that they be really and truly such as God has commissioned to act as His ministers, to represent Him, and whose ministerial acts He will ratify in Heaven. God has not obliged himself to bestow spiritual benefits on those who receive so-called sacraments from persons who are not thus authorised; for their administration by unauthorised persons is an usurpation of God's authority, and a deception on the people. This authority was first committed to the apostles, and by them to the order of churchmen, whom we now call bishops, and which is derived to other bishops by a regular succession “of faithful men,” who had authority to give it to them; and therefore this authority is no where to be found but in the episcopal communion. At the period of the Reformation the church was, without any doubt, everywhere governed by bishops, who had come down by a regular succession from the apostles; but when they ordained presbyters or priests, although they conveyed to them authority to administer the sacraments, yet they did not confer on them the power of ordaining other presbyters. Men, therefore, who underwent the ceremony of ordination from presbyters, had not the power of administering the sacraments, and of conveying divine grace to the souls of the receivers. And if *they* lacked authority, how much more were those who were admitted to the ministry by laymen deficient of divine power?

<sup>1</sup> Fundamental Charter of Presbytery, *passim*.—Account of the present Persecution in Scotland.





Although God's mercy is over all his works, and He will not condemn a man for that which he hath not and cannot procure, yet He has expressly informed us that Christ's intercession is only made for those who are within the visible church, and all out of it are deprived of that inestimable benefit—"I pray for them [the church]: I pray *not* for the world [who are not in the church], *but for them* whom thou hast given me; for they are thine:—sanctify them through thy truth; and for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth." This might be paraphrased,—I *offer* myself, that they may be enabled, as my representatives, to offer the eucharistic sacrifice; "neither pray I for these alone, but for [their successors, and for *all*] *them* also which shall believe on me through their word<sup>1</sup>." This last expression clearly implies a succession of apostles, or, as they are now called, bishops. St. John informs us, that "he that hath the Son hath life, and he that hath not the Son hath not life;" as Christ himself had previously done—"for without Me ye can do nothing." Communion with the Son, therefore, is necessary for obtaining eternal life, and this communion can only be had through the apostles and their successors, who are declared to be the branches of the divine Vine. St. John speaks of a "sin unto death," for which he says it is needless to pray; but it must be left to the uncovenanted mercies of God. Wilfully and maliciously to cut themselves off from communion with Christ, and not only so, but to take a solemn oath to extirpate his representatives, must therefore be a "sin unto death," according to the apostle's reasoning; which, although not strictly impossible to be forgiven, is yet highly improbable or difficult to realize. And another apostle says, "it is impossible for those who were once enlightened [by baptism], and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted of the good Word of God and the powers of the world to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance." But as the grapes that were beyond reach were considered sour, so the apostolic descent has always been considered unnecessary in the presbyterian communion; and that this may not be thought an uncharitable assertion, the words of one of their standard writers is here faithfully quoted:—"As to the *channel* through which our [presbyterian] orders have been transmitted to us from the apostles, *I can solemnly assure you, that we give our-*

<sup>1</sup> St. John, xvii. 9, 19-20.



*selves very little trouble about it.* We believe that emergencies may occur, and that such emergencies have actually occurred in time past, wherein any man who feels himself disposed to proclaim the good news of salvation, and is qualified for the office, may, *very warrantably*, consider our *Lord's commission*, which is recorded for the instruction of all in the New Testament, 'Go ye and teach all nations, &c.' as addressed to *him*, and may *take out a commission immediately* from Jesus Christ. This was the way in apostolic times, as appears from various parts of Scripture, particularly the eighth chapter of the Book of Acts. It was the way with bishop Calvin and bishop Knox, who, though they were, I believe, in priests' orders before they ceased to be episcopalians (Calvin was certainly a priest)<sup>1</sup>, rather chose to take their commission, as ministers of the Reformation, from Jesus Christ, than from a popish bishop<sup>2</sup>."

PATRONAGE has always been a grievance to presbyterians. They consider popular election of ministers a *divine right*, which they say Christ bequeathed to his people. It is, they say, His legacy to them, an unalienable part of their spiritual property, which cannot be taken from them without directly crossing Christ's institution, and committing the horrid sin of robbing His people of their indisputable privilege. When the Revolution-parliament repealed the act of patronage, perhaps they "*outfooled the people*" as much as the rebel parliament did in the year 1649, at which time it was decided that "*the direction was the presbytery's, the election the session's, and the consent [only] the people's*."<sup>3</sup> So, whether patronage was administered by a lay patron or by a presbytery, the people were not a bit better; for it appears all their divine right was to *consent* to that which in either case they could neither help nor control. It was a mere trick on the people; but it was a wrong and an injury to the patrons, who have generally exercised their privilege with prudence, and who at all events must select the object of their patronage from men whom the presbytery have already approved and licensed. Besides, an educated man will always judge with greater circumspection than a multitude of the lowest of the people, who are imposed on by specious appearances and popular tricks, and

<sup>1</sup> Calvin certainly was not a priest, nor even a deacon. Knox was in orders.

<sup>2</sup> Presbyterian Letters addressed to Bishop Skinner, of Aberdeen, by Patrick Mitchell, D.D., minister of Kemnay. 8vo. 1809, p. 354.

<sup>3</sup> Vide *ante*, ii. ch. xxiv. p. 314.



whose votes are more worthy of being counted than weighed. The patronage was transferred from the patrons to the heritors and elders of the different parishes, who were required to pay a sum of about £33 sterling as a compensation to the patron: but the fact is, that betwixt the years 1690 and 1711, when patronages were again restored to their former owners, only four parishes in the whole kingdom complied with the conditions. This is a sufficient and convincing proof that either lay patronage was not practically the evil which they alleged, or else that the privilege of choosing their own minister was not so highly valued by the people as it was maintained.



## CHAPTER LV.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1690.—Address to the earl Crawford.—Visitation of the universities—of Edinburgh.—The Test.—Principal Monro—charges against him—his answers—commissioners' report, and sentence.—Dr. Monro deprived.—Dr. Strachan—charges against him—deprived.—University of Glasgow.—Dr. Fall deprived.—University of St. Andrews—earl Crawford's qualification—Dr. Wymess—all the professors deprived.—University of Aberdeen—professors not deprived—the citizens petition in favour of the clergy.—Principal Middleton deprived.—A Jacobite plot—proposal to king William.—Meeting previous to the assembly—the number of ministers—the transactions.—A fast on Sunday.—State of the kirk.—A new persecution begun.—Mr. Crawford—Cooper—Graham—causes of individual persecution.—Procedure of the presbyteries.—Mr. Heriott.—Mr. Purves.—The public disgusted with the presbyterians.—Meeting of the assembly—king's letter—earl Crawford—Hugh Kennedy—primary proceedings—Assembly's answer—appointments for preaching—their prayers—their difficulties—discussion about baptism.—A fast—the nature of their fasts.—Sentence of deposition removed from the deposed members.—Two commissions appointed.—Assembly dissolved—the covenant not mentioned.—Modern strict presbyterians dissatisfied with this assembly.—Reflections.—Character of the clergy.—Presbyterian opinions of the sacraments.

1690.—IN A SATIRICAL dedication, that worthy confessor, Mr. Robert Calder, compiler of the "Scottish Presbyterian Eloquence Displayed," thus addresses the earl of Crawford, who had been the oppressor of the episcopal clergy after the Revolution. "To your courage and conduct, which are equal, you have added such a success as to raise the church and state of Scotland to be the wonder and amazement of the world: such burning and unquenchable zeal, such strange unaccountable prudence, and unparalleled piety, have appeared in all your actions, that if others had but wrought together with your lordship in any measure, then, I dare say (as your lordship expressly words it, in your pious printed speech to the parliament), 'a greater despatch had been made of the prelatists, and many honest suffering ministers, ere now, had





been delivered out of their pinches ;' and the enemies of the kirk and covenant had vanished when your lordship condescended to appear in person at it. It is to you that the nation owes her miraculous deliverance from the idolatries of the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the *Gloria Patri*. It is your lordship that hath rescued us from the superstitions of observing Christmas, Easter, and Whitsunday, and from all the popish fopperies of cassocks, close-sleeved gowns, and girdles. It is your lordship that has enriched their majesties' treasury with the revenues of fourteen fat bishops, and with admirable expedition have voided more than half the churches of the kingdom ; and advanced such a set of preachers, as, it is certain, never flourished in any period of the church of Scotland under any of their majesties' predecessors ; and now that some malignant lords have been brought into the council again, your lordship hath retired from it, bravely scorning to sit at the same board with the opposers of *the Cause*."

IN OBEDIENCE to the clause in the act for "purging the universities," the noblemen and gentlemen named in it as commissioners met on the 23d of July, and selected four sub-committees, one for each of the universities. The earl of Lothian and others were appointed to the University of Edinburgh—duke of Hamilton and lord Carmichael to Glasgow—the earl Crawford to St. Andrews—and the earl Marischal to Aberdeen. The pamphlet entitled "The Presbyterian Inquisition" gives the names and designations of all the members of each of the committees, but it is of little importance to repeat names long since forgotten. They were, however, assisted by some of the presbyterian ministers. Gilbert Rule, of controversial memory, who was designed to fill the Principal's chair of the metropolitan university, took the chief lead, and, assuming a high legal authority, "required and commanded," on their own authority, "the messengers, &c. to pass to the market-cross, &c., and warn and summon all the lieges to come in and make what objections they can against the masters," professors, &c. All the masters and professors were deprived, except one, Mr. Andrew Massie, who with contemptible meanness turned an accuser of his brethren, in order to keep his own place. At this, as at all the other universities, the professors and teachers were ordered to take the following Test or Assurance—"I, A. B. do, in the sincerity of my heart, acknowledge and declare that their majesties king William and queen Mary are the only lawful and undoubted sovereigns, king and queen of Scotland, as well *de jure* as *de facto*, and in the exercise of the government : and



therefore I do sincerely and faithfully promise and engage that I will with heart and hand, life and goods, maintain and defend their majesties' title and government against the late king James and his adherents, and all other enemies, who, either by open or secret attempts, shall disturb or disquiet their majesties in the exercise thereof."

THE INFERIOR men were soon disposed of, but Dr. Monro, the principal and the elect of Argyle, was the chief butt of their malice. Ten articles were exhibited against him; but they were neither signed nor authenticated by any accuser; hence the proceedings were designated an inquisition. He was accused, first, of having renounced the protestant religion, whilst abroad in France, and of having deborded to popery. 3. That he set up the English liturgy within the gates of the college. 4. It is well known by all that Dr. Monro is highly disaffected to the government in church and state, as appears by a mis-sive letter written by him to the late [*i. e.* the present] arch-bishop of St. Andrews, dated the 5th of January, 1689, which appears by his having left the charge of the ministry; his not having prayed for king William and queen Mary; and his having rejoiced on the day that the news of lord Dundee's victory was received; and how much he dislikes the present government of the church, may appear by his bitter persecuting of all of that persuasion to the utmost of his power. 5. At the last public laureation, he sat and publicly heard the Confession of Faith ridiculed by Dr. Pitcairne, yea, the existence of God impugned, without any answer or vindication. 6. He caused to be taken down all the pictures of the protestant reformers, that, as he alleged, "the sight of them might not offend the [popish] chancellor at his visitation." 7. He presented some *eucharistic*<sup>1</sup> verses to the chancellor on the birth of the prince of Wales. 8 and 9. That he is an ordinary curser and swearer, and a neglecter of family worship<sup>2</sup>.

THE INQUISITION was postponed for some days, and Dr. Monro in the interim prepared written answers to these false allegations, which had no foundation in truth. 1. He peremptorily denied the first charge as a spiteful and malicious calumny, and appealed to his whole life whether or not he had ever shewn the slightest indication of that heresy against which he had been bound down by the most solemn oaths

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps meant for *eulogistic*.

<sup>2</sup> Presbyterian Inquisition, as it was lately practised against the Professors of the College of Edinburgh. 1690, 4to.



and tests at his ordination. He shewed that had he been so inclined he had the fairest opportunity in the late reign, when such an apostacy would have led to profit and honour. "Was it," says he, "any of the sermons I preached against popery in the High Church, and in the Abbey of Holyrood House, when our zealous [presbyterian] reformers were *very quiet*, to all which some hundreds of the best quality of the nation were witnesses? But as I have been in France, I must therefore behave to be a papist, and this is *enough* for this libeller. I am sure none of the papists ever thought me so." 3. He admitted the alleged sin of having read the liturgy in the college; but against which, however, there was no law then in existence. By this, among other circumstances that have occurred, we see the growing attachment to a liturgic worship, which had made considerable progress both amongst the clergy and the people. He added, they must be odd kind of papists who read the service of the church of England on the 5th of November. He then goes on to refute the libellers' assertion that a liturgy was never allowed in Scotland since the Reformation. "But the plain matter of fact is this," he said: "when I left off preaching in the High Church, I advised with some of my brethren, and the result was, that we should read the Book of Common Prayer, and preach within our families, *per vices*, since *most of them were acquainted with* the liturgy of the church of England; neither did we think, when quakers and all other sects were tolerated, that we should be blamed for reading those prayers within our private families, which *we prefer to all other forms* now used in the christian church. Nor had we any design to proselytize the people . . . but the matter succeeded beyond what we proposed or looked for. We preached to the people upon the Sundays. They came by hundreds more than we had room for, and very many became acquainted with the liturgy, and perceived, by their own experience, that there was neither popery nor superstition in it. I look upon the church of England as the true pillar and centre of the Reformation, and if her enemies should lay her in the dust, which God forbid, there is no other bulwark in Britain to stop or retard the progress of either popery or enthusiasm. And I wonder [presbyterian] men should retain so much bitterness against the church of England, valued and admired by all foreign churches, and whose liturgy, as it is the most serious and comprehensive, so it is the most agreeable to the primitive forms. But if there was no law for it, there was none against it; there was no





national church government then, and why might we not read the prayers of that church from which we derive our ordination to the priesthood since the Restoration of Charles II. 4. The principal was obliged to admit that he had not transferred his allegiance from him to whom he had sworn it; but denied that he resigned the High Church because he would not pray for the king and queen; he denied, also, the charge of persecution, and thanked God that "he had no such presbyterian temper." With respect to rejoicing at lord Dundee's victory, he said—"I assure him of the contrary, for no gentleman, soldier, scholar, or civilized citizen, will find fault with me for this. I had an extraordinary value for him, and such of his enemies as retain any generosity will acknowledge that he deserved it; and the libeller should consider that the victories obtained in a civil war are no true causes of joy, for our brethren, friends, acquaintances, and fellow christians, *must fall*." 5. To the allegation that he had heard the existence of the Deity impugned, he replied—"the *sneaking libeller* is grossly ignorant and malicious, for the doctor only . . . endeavoured fairly and like a true philosopher to load some propositions in the thesis with this absurdity," as a consequence. 6. He shewed that he had been requested to remove the pictures by the then lord provost, sir Thomas Kennedy, lest they should have produced an altercation betwixt the popish and the protestant visitors. 7. This he admitted. 8. "It is not usual," he said, "for the presbyterians to load men of different opinions from them with *ordinary* escapes; they must represent them as abominable, and sinners of the first rate, for all that are not of their cause have no fairer quarter, yet I could not easily guess who should first invent this prodigious calumny; a lie so notorious, that it could not come out of the mouth of an ordinary sinner." He had been obliged to expel one Robert Brown for having been a notorious ringleader in several tumults, and for having threatened to shoot the principal, and who, out of revenge, had made up a libellous story against the principal, which was greedily laid hold of to fill up their libel. 9. "Sometimes I am accused for having too many prayers in my family, and now, that I ordinarily neglect prayers (for I guess, by the worship of God, he only means that part of it). But this is a common plan, and all of the episcopal persuasion must be represented as *atheists* and scandalous, void of all devotion and piety: but very few of any sense or quality will believe this impertinent slander, either in the country or in the city of Edinburgh, where we are known; therefore I thought it not worth any answer." "But it is na-



turally impossible for the libeller to forbear calumny; the viper must either burst or spit his poison<sup>1</sup>."

THE PARTIES to whom the principal's answer was remitted made their report on the 25th of September, and the following sentence was pronounced:—

At Edinburgh, Sept. 25, 1690.—The lords and others of the commission appointed by act of parliament for visitation of universities, colleges, and schools, having this day heard and considered the above-written report of the committee of the college of Edinburgh, anent Dr. Monro, primar of the said college, depositions, and other instructions produced; and also Dr. Monro being asked if he was presently willing to swear the oath of allegiance to their majesties king William and queen Mary, and to sign the same, with the Assurance and the Confession of Faith (. . .), and if he would declare his willingness to submit himself to the present church government as now established; the said Dr. Monro did judicially, and in the presence of the said commission, refuse to sign the said Confession of Faith, and to take the said other engagements required to be done by the said act of parliament; and also did judicially acknowledge his written answers produced before the committee, and did confess he caused the removal of the pictures of the reformers out of the library: Therefore the said commission approves of the foresaid committee's report, and finds the same sufficiently verified and proven, and hereby deprives the said Dr. Monro of his place as primar of the said college of Edinburgh, and declares the said place vacant<sup>2</sup>.  
—*Sic subscribitur.*

CRAWFORD, P.

I HAVE been thus particular in detailing the case of Dr. Monro, on account of his eminence, and because the whole of the others in all the universities were treated exactly alike; and it being tiresome to repeat the same circumstances so often, I only now extract the concluding remarks of the anonymous author of the Presbyterian Inquisition:—"Reader, Thou hast now heard how the presbyterian inquisition proceeded against those two doctors; with the same rigour and severity they persecuted all such as they judged to be of the episcopal persuasion in that college, and in all the colleges of the mother university at St. Andrews. One instance more of the presbyterian partiality in judging I must not here omit, and it is this:—

<sup>1</sup> Presbyterian Inquisition, 27-45.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 46, 47.



"THEY ADMITTED and sustained libels against all the masters that they thought were episcopal, without the least shadow of any accuser or informer, when themselves also knew the article to be most false; yet, if any of the masters who were presbyterians, or who had insinuated themselves into their favour, if any such were informed against, though the indictment was subscribed by men of undoubted reputation, and contained many things that justly deserved deprivation, yet the matter was huddled up without examining any one article. As in the case of Mr. Andrew Massie, against whom an information was given in, subscribed by two gentlemen of great learning and reputation—the one a doctor of medicine, the other a master of arts; but the inquisitors knew that these informers were not of their gang, nor had any liking to their cause, and therefore they took no notice of the charge<sup>1</sup>."

THE INQUISITORS next accused Dr. John Strachan, incumbent of the Tron church, and professor of divinity in the university. They alleged that in a sermon before the diocesan synod he had recommended a reconciliation with the church of Rome; that he was an Arminian, a Pelagian, and innovated the worship of God in *setting up the English service*; that he neglected his duty in the college; that he was disaffected to the government, and neglected family worship. He defended himself against all these falsehoods and calumnies; but he was in the hands of men who had prejudged him, and coveted his preferments. In addition to their adhering to their own charges, they offered him the Test, which he declined, and therefore he was deprived.

THE PURGATION of the university of Glasgow fell into better hands, says Mr. Skinner—"the lord Carmichael, though a staunch presbyterian, was a man of temper and good breeding." Good temper and good breeding, however, will not be preservatives against injustice and persecution, when these two points are predetermined. The same system was pursued at Glasgow as at Edinburgh; proclamation was made charging the professors with every species of immorality, and inviting the lieges to accuse them of any farther offences. The presbyterian inquisition proceeded in the same summary way as their fellow inquisitors had done at Edinburgh. Dr. Fall, the principal, and three of the professors, refused to take the Test, but with which, notwithstanding his good breeding and good nature, lord Carmichael would not dispense. These gentlemen were accordingly deprived<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Presbyterian Inquisition, 98.

<sup>2</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical Hist. ii. 556.





THE PURGATION of the university of St. Andrews was conducted with remarkable harshness and severity, and with the entire absence of that "temper and good breeding" which had accomplished the same harsh offices at Glasgow. Lord Crawford was accompanied by some of the ill-bred presbyterian ministers, of whose canting style of preaching the satirist already quoted says he was a good judge. Besides, he says, "my lord, the curates themselves, cannot deny but that your lordship is fully qualified to judge of the works of such learned men as are spoken of in this treatise [on presbyterian eloquence], if they consider your wonderful knowledge of, and great concern for, the mother university at St. Andrews, which had the happiness to be nearest to your lordship's [family seat], and to be your particular charge; and the kingdom is not insensible how you *reformed* and *purged* it thoroughly with such unspeakable *justice* and *impartiality*, that even aged gentlemen, doctors of divinity, and heads of colleges, some of whom had been your lordship's own masters, and one your kinsman, had not the least regard nor respect from you, because of their wanting *covenant grace*, without which no man is valuable in your lordship's eyes<sup>1</sup>." At that time the university of St. Andrews consisted of the three colleges of St. Salvador, St. Mary, and St. Leonard. The earl of Crawford, the president, acted with remarkable harshness and severity, and was much blamed, even by his own party, for his rough uncivil manner to the masters; from his "presbyterian temper he hated men for their opinions," and he was bound by oath to extirpate all episcopalians. He was particularly brutal to the very reverend and aged Dr. Wymess, principal of St. Leonard's college, who had been his own preceptor, and had taught him his philosophy, and, besides, had been five-and-forty years a professor in that university. He would not allow the venerable old man a seat, and when, from age and infirmity, after long standing, he sat down on the step of a stair to relieve his fatigue, Crawford sent an officer of court to force him to stand up, and to remain standing during the remainder of the examinations. The Test was here as infallible in its operations as it had been elsewhere; no consistent episcopalian could take it, and therefore the whole of the professors and masters of this university were deprived. So, says Mr. Skinner, "under this imperious censor, the masters of this university were all turned out, by the general commission,

<sup>1</sup> Calder's Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence Displayed. Dedication, p. v.





on the 25<sup>th</sup> of September, and the place *left without any form of education for a long time*<sup>1</sup>."

ABERDEEN has always been the strong hold of the Scottish church, and her university the most formidable opponent with which the Covenant and the presbyterian interest ever met. Upon this occasion the commissioners were balanced by a greater number of episcopalians in their body than had been on the other three divisions of the commission, and no purgation took place, but the episcopal professors were allowed to keep their chairs. "But on the whole there was *desolation* enough made of learning in so short a time; and the visitors were neither dilatory nor sparing in executing their commission to the full, though with different humours, yet all with the same views, and to the same effect<sup>2</sup>." At this time the laity in the north had stood forward in a legitimate way, by petition, in defence of their clergy; and some of the citizens of Aberdeen, who had shewn considerable opposition to the purgation of their university, were set on the pillory, and had their ears nailed to it! The presbyterian party "had the confidence, at London, to deny that some of the people of Aberdeen had their ears nailed to the pillory lately at Edinburgh, because they testified their respect to their own episcopal ministers, and would not suffer the inquisitors to deprive them of the blessing of their doctrine and presence<sup>3</sup>." Dr. Alexander Middleton, the principal of King's College and professor of divinity, however, was suspended. He was the direct ancestor of the present earl of Gainsborough; his grandson, Charles Middleton, distinguished himself in the navy, and was created lord Barham in 1805, with remainder to his only child, Diana, wife of Gerard-Noel Noel, from whom the present earl of Gainsborough is descended<sup>4</sup>.

DURING the last session of parliament there had been some political intrigues and correspondence with the adherents of king James, by some of those who had been forward for the Revolution, among whom was sir James Montgomery, and who afterwards betrayed the parties to king William's government. Many of the lords, says Burnet, "who had been concerned in the late plot, came up [to court], and confessed and discovered all, and took out their pardon; they excused themselves as apprehending that they were exposed to ruin, and that they *dreaded the tyranny of presbytery* no less than they did popery; and they promised that if the king would so ba-

<sup>1</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, ii. 555.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. ii. 556.

<sup>3</sup> Presbyterian Inquisition: Preface, 19.

<sup>4</sup> Burke's Peerage, art. Barham.



lance matters that the lord Melville and his party should not have it in their power to ruin them and their friends, and in particular that they should *not turn out* the ministers of the episcopal persuasion who were yet in office, *nor force* presbyterians on them, they would engage in the king's interests faithfully and with zeal. They also undertook to quiet the highlanders, who stood out still, and were robbing the country in parties; and they undertook to the king, that if the episcopal clergy could be *assured of his protection*, they would all acknowledge and serve him. They did not desire that the king should make any step towards the changing the government that was settled there; they only desired that episcopal ministers might continue to serve in those places that liked them best, and that no man should be brought into trouble for his opinion as to the government of the church; and that such episcopal men as were willing to mix with the presbyterians in their judicatories should be admitted without any severe imposition in point of opinion. This looked so fair, and agreed so well with the king's own sense of things, that he very easily hearkened to it<sup>1</sup>."

THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY had been ordered by parliament to meet in October, and as the time advanced the few surviving ministers in whose hands the government had been placed held a meeting to adjust matters previously to the meeting. From the long abeyance of assemblies, the *forms and ceremonies* had become almost obsolete; but as it is impossible for the current of presbytery to run smooth and free from contention, a new and unexpected subject of embarrassment occurred betwixt the moderate party and the descendants of the remonstrators, or the remnant of vagrant preachers that had infested the fields. Some of the remonstrators had been deposed by the last assemblies before the Restoration, and others by synods, for very gross and scandalous irregularities. These, however, forced themselves into this preliminary meeting; but objections were taken by the other party, who maintained that they ought to be excluded till their sentence of deposition was taken off. Against this the deposed ministers pleaded that their sentence was in itself null and void, inasmuch as it had been passed by an erring key and by a factious multitude of opposite, and of course erroneous, principles. This business was for the present hushed up, and the deposed men were admitted<sup>2</sup>.

THE MINISTERS who composed this meeting did not exceed

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, iv. 133.

<sup>2</sup> Skinner's Ecclesiastica History, ii. 557.



sixty, and the presbyteries throughout the kingdom had not been permitted to send representatives; for had they met, the episcopal clergymen would have mightily outvoted all the presbyterians united. In some presbyteries they did not exceed two in number, and in the greatest proportion there were none at all. They had been very diligent in creating vacancies in the barbarous manner already detailed, but they had felt great difficulty in filling these vacancies up, and ignorant tradesmen, tailors, shoemakers, weavers, &c. who felt themselves called to the ministerial work, were put into the vacant livings. As the whole government had been lodged in the hands of sixty ministers, they determined that none should be admitted but those who were approved by them; which was a decided injury to those episcopal clergymen who had complied with the orders of the civil government. These accordingly petitioned the council to be admitted to a share in the government, or at least that they might be exempted from the jurisdiction of men who had declared and shewn themselves to be their most inveterate enemies. They claimed this, not only as their right, as lawful ministers of Christ, but from the public faith that had been pledged to them, and to the promise of protection upon their compliance. The council rejected this petition, and the government was confined to the old presbyterian ministers, sixty in number at the utmost. So that instead of fourteen bishops, the kingdom had now about sixty presbyterian governors. The motion for excluding the remonstrators who had been deposed for scandal and sedition, and for removing their sentence, was over-ruled, and these men were allowed to take their seats in the meetings. So that this meeting and the subsequent assembly of the new establishment was composed literally of "ignorant, insufficient, negligent, scandalous, and erroneous ministers."

THIS NONDESCRIPT meeting chose Gabriel Cunningham for their moderator, and appointed ministers for different parts of the kingdom, and parcelled out the country into presbyteries. They prescribed rules for trying the clergy, and ordained that where a presbytery consisted of less than four ministers, the next presbytery should be annexed to it. This last resolution was at that time absolutely necessary; for in many presbyteries there were no presbyterian ministers within their bounds, and its object was the trying and censuring of the episcopal incumbents. It is stated in the old pamphlet, from which this account is taken, that in the two presbyteries of Dunbar and Haddington, in the diocese of Edinburgh, consisting of upwards of thirty parishes, there were only five presbyterian





ministers. In the next two presbyteries of Dunse and Chirnside, both also in the diocese of Edinburgh, of the same extent as the former, there were the same number of presbyterian ministers. In the presbytery of Auchterarder, in the diocese of Dunblane, there was but one minister, and when the next presbytery was added to it, there were only three. A lay elder stated, that for twenty miles westward of Perth there were only two or three presbyterian ministers. These simple facts entirely prostrate the mendacious boast in the Claim of Right, that the inclinations of the people were in favour of presbytery. They next fixed the form and manner of constituting the General Assembly. A presbytery consisting of eight ministers was to send four ministers and three elders; under eight, but above four, three ministers and two elders; where there were four, they should send two ministers and one elder; and where there was but one, that one and an elder should come up to the assembly. They kept up the spirit of presbytery by ordering, without consulting the government, a *fast* to be holden on *Sunday*, the 5th of October, which was the third *Sunday fast* that had been held this same year. Before they separated, the meeting revived one of their old pranks of exerting their supremacy over the civil power, by assuming the privilege of granting monopolies. They ordered the king's printer to republish an old treatise of "Ruling Elders, &c." and discharged all others from printing or publishing that book. But this insertion of the small end of the wedge was too insolent even for a presbyterian privy council to permit to pass unnoticed; and they ordered the book to be called in, and the ministers' license to be torn away<sup>1</sup>.

IT MIGHT have been expected that the sixty presbyterian prelates would have filled the churches that the rabble had emptied, and which had, with monstrous injustice, been declared vacant by parliament; but they were not so zealous to plant as to pluck up. For more than a year, about one-third of the churches had been vacant and destitute of ministers, and in the dioceses of Glasgow and Galloway they were all shut up. Two ministers declared, at the meeting, that "there was not so much as the face of a church in all Galloway and the west; there were no ministers, they said, in all that extensive country, but themselves;" yet none were sent there: but the fact is, there were more vacancies than there could be found presbyterian ministers to fill. Notwithstanding, the work of demolition still went on; but they now re-

<sup>1</sup> History of the First General Assembly, 1690.



sorted to a new way of proceeding. It was lamentable to see so large a portion of the kingdom entirely deprived of the means of grace and of the preaching of the gospel, and such a multitude of people without faithful shepherds. This was, indeed, "the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet," when the sanctuary was polluted, the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate was placed in their stead. When some sober people asked why the sixty prelates persisted in ejecting the episcopal clergy before they had provided presbyterian successors for them, they replied, "there was less prejudice both to the church and to the people, by the want of preaching, than by the preaching of men of episcopal principles and persuasions<sup>1</sup>."

THE MEETING broke up, and the members returned to their presbyteries to persecute the remaining clergy, previous to the meeting of the assembly. As the time was short, they sat every week, and no other business came before them but citations and libels against the clergy. The presbyteries were perfect inquisitions, and their processes were begun and finished in the utmost hurry and with the most scandalous partiality. They employed spies to make discoveries of their faults, both in the public services and in the private conduct of the clergy; and the present time was not sufficient, but they searched backward into the whole course of their lives; and every thing the most trivial that malice could suggest was admitted as evidence, and exaggerated into scandalous offences. A general charge against the clergy was the use of the *DOXOLOGY*, which was one of the marks in the public worship which distinguished the clergy from the presbyterians. They were also accused of a leaning to popery, because they recommended to their people such books as the *Whole Duty of Man*, and *Dr. Scougal's Catechism*; for there was no authorised catechism. One never-failing count in the charge, says the author of the pamphlet already mentioned, was, that the clergy had entered by presentation from a patron, and by ordination and institution by a bishop. In the indictment this was affirmed to be contrary to the word of God, to the constitution of this kirk, to the acts of assemblies, and to the land's solemn engagements<sup>2</sup>.

NO DEFENCE was admitted for the clergy under these and other accusations, especially when such matters of fact as were consistent with their condition as ministers of an epis-

<sup>1</sup> Hist. of First General Assembly, 1690.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid.



copal church, and in obedience to the laws, were now made crimes and misdemeanours. The ministers said, the people gave in these matters as charges against the clergy; whereas all the indictments were made up by the presbyteries themselves, and ran in similar language in all the different courts. In addition to these general charges, the most frivolous and unjust circumstances were eagerly searched out and produced against them. There was a formed and systematic design of rendering the episcopal clergy infamous for immorality; but, after the most inquisitorial search, nothing could ever be justly established against them. The least impropriety of personal conduct was magnified into a gross and scandalous crime; and in the absence of real immorality, the indictments were filled up with declamatory accusations, after the manner of the justiciary court; and these, which are there only matters of form, were in the presbyteries considered evidence of well-established guilt. When they could not accuse the clergyman himself of any alleged immoralities, they condemned him for the general scandal of his parishioners; but it required some ingenuity to accomplish this method.

MR. CRAWFORD, of Ladykirk, in Ayrshire, a man aged upwards of eighty, was cited for an alleged act of drunkenness fifteen years before. He proved the falsehood of this charge, and said, as they had been obliged to travel so far backward for an instance of his alleged "scandalous drunkenness," it was evident that that charge must be false; but he had said the covenant was no better than a band of rebellion. This was sufficient to merit deprivation. When the accusation had to be laid on their people, the clergy were accused of "profaning the ordinance of the Lord's Supper," by having indiscriminately admitted their parishioners. Mr. Cooper and Mr. Graham, ministers of Dumfermline, were cited and deprived, for this very alleged offence, that "they had admitted persons promiscuously to the sacrament; had profaned the Lord's day in suffering people to bring in kail [cabbages] and fan barley for the broth-pot on that day, and by allowing their children to play with others;" Mr. Graham, of having taken the oaths of allegiance and canonical obedience; and Mr. Cooper, of having taken the Test, which, they said, shewed them to be "incorrigibly episcopal." Another clergyman was cited for having "plucked a few peas on Sunday;" but this offence being so similar to the pharisees' accusation against our Lord's apostles, it was dismissed. One was cited because he "sometimes whistled; another because "one day, playing at bowls, he broke an innocent jest," which none,





it appears, but the impure themselves, could have considered profane. If any had publicly or privately expressed zeal for episcopacy, reflected on the covenant or the practices of the godly, or if, in obedience to the civil power, they had been instrumental in troubling the godly, they were sure to meet with neither justice nor mercy. Mr. Herriot, minister of Dalkeith, was cited for having called Monmouth and Argyle rebels and traitors, because he had read the proclamation in which they were so designated. Mr. Wood, of Dunbar, was accused of saying to one of his parishioners, who had expressed an apprehension that the English liturgy would be introduced, "Heaven send us no worse!" and because he had never expressed thankfulness for delivery from popery and prelacy. To the first, he said, "he was sorry if such an expression had dropped from him, being by far too mean for such a great and glorious church as that of England;"—to the second he said, "he thanked God heartily for any deliverance from popery, but could not do so for the overthrow of prelacy, unless he acted the hypocrite, or was convinced that presbytery was the greater blessing, and the more ancient government of the two, which he had never yet seen made out." Mr. Johnston, of Saline, in the diocese of St. Andrews, was indicted for having recommended to his people the *Whole Duty of Man*, which the presbytery called a superstitious and erroneous book. Mr. Johnston, of Burnt Island, in the same diocese, of having conversed with some who they said were not friends to the government either in church or state; for having used the *Doxology*, and for having repeated the *Creed* and the *Lord's Prayer*. The minister of Abbotshall, in the same diocese, was condemned for having used bishop Scougal's catechism<sup>1</sup>.

IN EVERY indictment, they made *ordination*, collation, and institution by a bishop, regular and never-failing counts in the indictment. This was a most cunningly devised trick; because, in time, it had the effect of making the ignorant people think that episcopal ordination was a great crime. It served also to bring the episcopal office and authority into contempt, and to induce the people to think that the episcopal clergy were not true ministers; yet the presbyterians never attempted to re-ordain any of those who joined them, which, I believe, did not exceed twenty. The articles exhibited against the clergy were in all cases frivolous and irrelevant, and the processes were altogether illegal. But even if they

<sup>1</sup> Hist. of First General Assembly, 1690.





had been all true, the new judicatories were surely not competent to try and punish alleged faults committed under another jurisdiction, and especially for having given obedience to the law and to the authority of their legal superiors in the church. The conduct of the presbyteries was worse than that of the popish inquisition. An episcopal minister was almost never allowed to know by whom he was accused; and the accuser was always produced as a witness in the absence of the impeached. The presbyteries always received and sustained the indictment before they heard the accused, who was only called into court to hear and see himself deposed, for he was seldom suffered to be present during the examination of witnesses. Contrary to the usage of Scottish law, the witnesses were allowed to be present when the depositions of other deponents were taken, and, in direct opposition to the same just and salutary law, those who bore malice or hatred against the accused were allowed not only to give evidence against them, but to sit in judgment upon them. Mr. Calderwood, a bitter and open enemy, was both the accuser and one of the judges of Mr. Heriot, incumbent of Dalkeith. He complained of these two glaring indecencies, and challenged his removal; but this was peremptorily refused, and Mr. Herriot was deprived by an open and avowed enemy, sitting as his judge! Before the same presbytery, Mr. Purvis, minister of Glen-corse, objected to some of the witnesses, as "carrying heart-malice and ill-will towards him," and he undertook to prove that these men, who were now produced as evidence, had assaulted him in his pulpit during divine service with bludgeons, and, seizing him by the throat, would have strangled him, had not others come to his relief. He objected that the evidence of enemies so notorious should be admitted. Matthew Selkirk, one of the presbytery, then addressing the moderator, said, "that if these men had done so out of malice and personal prejudice, they ought not to be received as witnesses; *but* if they had done it *for the glory of God*, he saw no reason why they should not be admitted." This horrible crime, which in other times would have been punished by the civil magistrate, was decided to have been done for the glory of God, and therefore their evidence was sustained, and Mr. Purvis was deprived<sup>1</sup>.

SOME of the episcopal clergy had the moral courage to disown the jurisdiction of the presbyteries, and refused to answer their summons or to appear at the presbytery courts; others appeared and gave in defences, but seeing the glaring partiality

<sup>1</sup> Hist. of First General Assembly, 1690.



and injustice which notoriously reigned in these courts, they appealed to the next General Assembly. From it they hoped they might receive more justice and meet with some moderation, or at least that, in the interval, the civil government might be induced to interfere, and if not to stop, at least to moderate the persecution which was now raging. Those who disowned the jurisdiction of the presbyteries were summarily deprived without any more ado. By their intolerant and unjust proceedings, the presbyterians disgusted many even of their own friends; "many who thought well of them while they were *kept under*, are now ashamed of them, and have deserted them. I am told that many (even in the west) abominate them. It is most certain, that in other places of the kingdom "they are *feared and dreaded* as a plague to mankind, *just as the jesuits are*¹." And Burnet says, "the truth was, the presbyterians, by their violence and other foolish practices, were rendering themselves both odious and contemptible: they had formed a General Assembly . . . in which they did very much expose themselves by the weakness and peevishness of their conduct: little learning or prudence appeared among them: poor preaching and wretched haranguing, partialities to one another, and *violence and injustice* to those who differed from them, shewed themselves in *all* their meetings. But the falsehood of many, who, under a pretence of moderating matters, were really undermining the king's government, helped in the sequel to preserve the presbyterians, as much as their own conduct *did now alienate the king from them*²."

AT LAST, with this most christian preparation, and an after abeyance of forty years, the Assembly met on the 16th October, and the lord Carmichael was appointed William's representative; for it is remarkable that the very man who said he came purposely to relieve them from the supremacy of their lawful sovereign, now exercised that supremacy with greater rigour than ever Charles or James had done. The first session was spent in what is called fasting, that is, preaching, and on the second day the king's letter, as follows, was received, but not read:—

"REVEREND, trusty, and well-beloved,—Our concern for the good of our ancient kingdom hath been such, that we have left nothing undone that might contribute to the making of it happy. And therefore, having been informed that differences as to the government of the church have caused the greatest

¹ First General Assembly, 1690.

² Own Times, iv. 134.



confusions in that nation, we did willingly concur with our parliament *in enacting such a frame of it* as was judged to be *most agreeable to the inclinations* of our good subjects: to which, as we have had a particular regard, in countenancing this assembly with our authority and a representative of our royal person, so we expect that your management shall be such as we shall have no reason to repent of what we have done. A calm and peaceable procedure will be no less pleasing to us than it becometh you. We never could be of the mind that violence was suited to the advancing of true religion; nor do we intend that our authority shall ever be a tool to the irregular passions of any party. Moderation is what religion enjoins, neighbouring churches expect from you, and we recommend to you. And we assure you of our constant favour and protection in your following of these methods, which shall be for the real advantage of true piety and the peace of our kingdoms<sup>1</sup>."

It was the general wish and desire of the fiercer sort, and the wish of Crawford himself, that he should have been appointed the royal commissioner; and in consequence that nobleman had entirely neglected his election by some presbytery, as a ruling elder, to be sent to the General Assembly. Great, therefore, was his own and the godly party's disappointment when it was discovered that William had appointed the "well-bred" lord Carmichael to represent his person in the Assembly. It was necessary to appoint a Commissioner, in order to prevent the godly brethren from going beyond the last, and meddling with affairs of state, to which, in all periods of their history, they have shewn an extraordinary propensity, and also that the crown might exercise that *real* supremacy, to which, *theoretically*, presbyterians are so much opposed. Earl Crawford was not a member of this Assembly; but it was very desirable, and even necessary for the cause, that he should be. Whigs in all ages have been the most unscrupulous and arbitrary contemners of law and custom, when opposed to their own and their party's interests, and this was conspicuously remarkable in this instance. When it was found that Crawford was not to be the commissioner, the Assembly compelled the burgh of St. Andrews to elect him their member, although their representation was already full, in order to secure the assistance of so fierce a zealot, and who was at the same

<sup>1</sup> Acts of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland. 1638—1842. p. 222.





time the president of the privy council, and "one of the meekest christians ever Scotland bred!" Hugh Kennedy, one of the new presbyterian ministers of Edinburgh, was chosen moderator. He had been a principal leader among the remonstrators, and attended the Scottish army at Newcastle; he was also one of those who insulted king Charles, of blessed memory, in that town, and who received six thousand merks as his share of the blood-money of that royal martyr. He had been excommunicated by a presbyterian synod in 1650, for having been a firebrand among his brethren, and for several gross crimes, and this sentence was not removed till the day before the dissolution of the Assembly. He was "*a veteran in wickedness*, well acquainted in all the scandal that was thrown upon the bishops in the year 1638, and such a notorious stickler in the days of king Charles I. that he had, as a reward of his exemplary service, more than 'thirty pieces' of that silver which was given for betraying that good prince<sup>1</sup>." There was not one representative from any of the presbyteries north of the river Tay, nor from any of the universities, except that of Edinburgh, which shews the scanty supply of presbyterian preachers better than any arguments could do. This primary assembly of the new establishment can, therefore, have no more right to call itself the national church of Scotland, than the synod of Trent had to represent the church catholic.

THE AUTHOR of the pamphlet so often quoted states it as a fact, he himself having been present as a spectator, that the king's letter was so disagreeable to the leaders when seen in private that it was not read in public<sup>2</sup>. It was somewhat doubtful to them what was meant by their "neighbour church," whether it was that which was then under the pressure of their own persecution, which they intended to extirpate, or whether it was the church of England, which they were resolved to *reform* as soon as they had an opportunity. The king's advice to be calm and moderate was extremely offensive; for it was an insupportable grievance to be on neighbourly terms with a church which they considered superstitious, idolatrous, and heretical, and were sworn to extirpate. It likewise gave them great offence to be twitted with the "inclinations of the people;" for it might be easy for their enemies to represent to the king that that fundamental principle of their establishment was decidedly in favour of episcopacy. They now began to be apprehensive of danger to their establishment from so vul-

<sup>1</sup> The Causes of the Decay of Presbytery in Scotland, &c., 8vo. p. 4. Lond. 1713.

<sup>2</sup> History of General Assemblies, 1690.



nerable a point as the wavering ocean of popular opinion. Were the episcopalians at court to represent that nineteen-twentieths of the people were in favour of episcopacy, it was just possible, upon their own principle, that presbytery might be voted "an intolerable grievance," and the church be again restored. Therefore, in their answer to the royal missive, they intended to have inserted a clause, that presbytery was not only suitable to the inclinations of the people, but also most agreeable to the word of God. That this assertion might not appear to be merely a flourish of trumpets, they intended to have clinched it by an act of assembly, in which they were to have embodied a declaration that presbyterian government was not only of divine right, but also that it was and ever had been the only true and legal government of this church, which they alleged had never suffered alteration, except in times of usurpation, tyranny, and oppression. Notwithstanding his "good nature" and "good breeding," the commissioner was not prepared to accept an answer couched in such formidable language; and he required them to furnish him with a draft of it that he might send it to court, to ascertain whether or not the king would receive it. But even the phlegmatic disposition of a Dutchman could not stand this, and it was returned with an intimation that that clause must be altered. The brethren murmured, but murmurs were vain; William was not made of such malleable stuff as the Stuarts had been, and therefore that clause had to be altered to the following words:—"It was the sad confusions that differences as to the government of the church had caused in this nation, that according to your majesty's first declaration for our relief, moved our gracious God to raise up and prosper you to be our glorious deliverer for effectuating the re-establishment that we now enjoy; so that we are persuaded that it is not more agreeable to the *inclinations* and conscientious persuasions of all within this kingdom, who are best affected to your majesty's person and government, than it is *acceptable to God*, and will be your majesty's perpetual peace and satisfaction." "Great revolutions," they said, "of this nature must be attended with occasions of complaint;" and as to the *moderation* required of them, they promised, "with a solemn attestation, that they would shew all the moderation that his majesty *could expect* <sup>1</sup>."

IT CANNOT be precisely said what stretch of moderation William expected; but the Assembly soon shewed to what

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Assembly, 223.



extent they meant their own words to apply. At all meetings of the Assembly it is customary for some of the members to preach for the ministers of the place; and such appointments during their sitting were made by the assembly itself. When they were making these appointments it was proposed to appoint presbyterian ministers to preach in the chapels and upper rooms of houses that were now occupied by the once established episcopal clergy of the city. But the commissioner here interposed the king's *supremacy*, and peremptorily prohibited such a wanton insult and gross violation of common decency; the motion was, therefore, dropped, with a remark from Kennedy, the moderator, that as the episcopalians "sought none of their help, they should get as little<sup>1</sup>." One, who was present, alleges, at every session ten ministers "engaged in prayer" in succession, and these prayer employments lasted from eight till twelve o'clock. On one occasion one of them had a very remarkable expression in his prayer. In compliance with William's desire, they had always some declarations respecting moderation; and after letting his moderation be heard by all men, he concluded—"But, O Lord! *just to make free with you*, it would be better to *make a clean house*<sup>2</sup>." Or, in other words, it would be better to extirpate the episcopal clergy; a petition which he, not knowing what spirit he was of, addressed with this disgusting freedom to the Head of the Church against His suffering members.

"THE SUFFERING remnant of the kirk," as they called themselves, ran some risk of being summarily set aside by the party that had climbed into power upon their shoulders. These were represented by only three preachers—Linning, Boyd, and Shields, the author of the *Hind Let Loose*; but they made themselves so considerable that the assembly was glad to purchase peace with them, and the cessation of field-preaching, by assuming them into their body on the promise of obedience to their jurisdiction. These three men gave in a paper of adhesion, but which the assembly declined to read publicly, because, although there were some good things in it, yet it contained "several peremptory and gross mistakes, unreasonable and impracticable proposals, and uncharitable and injurious reflections, tending rather to kindle contention than to compose divisions<sup>3</sup>."

FEW THINGS could have more completely exposed the nakedness of presbytery than the eighth act respecting the "Associa-

<sup>1</sup> History of the First General Assembly, 1690.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid.

<sup>3</sup> Acts, &c., 224.





tions of Presbyteries;" for it is here officially implied that there was not a sufficiency of ministers to supply the barbarous desolation which they had made:—"The General Assembly allows and approves of the ministers of different presbyteries their associating in presbyteries, aye, and until the vacancies of the said presbyteries be filled, and declares them to have the authority and power of presbyteries respectively; and that notwithstanding that according to the old platform, the said ministers do reside in the bounds of different presbyteries." So small a faction had, by bustle, intrigue, and violence, overturned an established and flourishing church, yet had not a sufficient number of ministers to supply the vacancies that they were constantly making, but were obliged to make the same men serve these courts in several different presbyteries.

SOME ACTS for discipline were passed; one of which forbade the baptism of infants in private, under any circumstances. Gilbert Rule called private baptism *sorcery and charming*. Alexander Kirkton opposed this doctrine, and said—"that though there were a thousand acts against it, he would rather baptize in private than suffer children to be baptized by the curates," that is, the episcopal clergy. It became the custom to sprinkle only on Sundays, and immediately after the sermon: but the ministers were exceedingly capricious in performing this office, and they even preached against the necessity of baptism as an absurd and abjured relic of popery. The people, who had been better taught, exceedingly lamented this antichristian custom; but their descendants have come to consider baptism as merely *a form* when a name is given to a child; but they deny that grace is thereby obtained. This is true enough, when administered by unauthorised hands; yet their ministers did not think themselves deficient of authority; but only that Christ's institution did not convey grace. Nevertheless, their Confession of Faith asserts that in baptism a child is regenerated. It became customary when children were brought to what was called baptism, to teach the parents that it was a superstitious, idle, and unnecessary ceremony. And the before-mentioned Kirkton was in the habit of saying—"you think it necessary to have your children baptized; but I tell you, I knew a good old godly minister, who lived till he was fourscore, that was never baptized in all his lifetime<sup>2</sup>."

NOTWITHSTANDING the efforts that had been made to eject

<sup>1</sup> Acts, &c., 226.

<sup>2</sup> History of First General Assembly, 1690.





the clergy, they still kept possession of their churches in many parts of the country, where the people still affectionately adhered to them. The presbyterian ministers feared the clamour that would arise if they should pass an act for their expulsion; and after proposing various plans, they at last hit upon an expedient that they were sure would effect their design. This was to appoint a *fast*, to mourn for the sin of episcopacy. An act, accordingly, was passed on the 12th of November, to confess the national sin of having suffered prelacy to exist, "which hath been always a grievous burthen to this nation—because there had been under prelacy a great decay of piety—that there hath been a dreadful atheistical boldness against God, &c." They enumerated a fearful list of crimes, with which perhaps they themselves had been best acquainted at their field-meetings, which they laid to the charge of the episcopal clergy; but above all, this fast was to operate as an *abjuration* of episcopacy, and to acknowledge it to have been a *great national sin*, of which they were required publicly to repent. "All ministers, either in kirks or meeting-houses, were ordained to read this act publicly from the pulpit a Sabbath or two before the said day of humiliation<sup>1</sup>."

PRESBYTERIAN fasts did not consist in abstinence from food, but in preaching, and long declamations on the cause of the fast. This was very well known, and they were never liked by churchmen, because they generally preceded some operations inimical to them. The object of appointing the present fast was to empty the churches, as they knew that the clergy and people would neither fast nor repent for having conscientiously adhered to the church as it had been established. Some of the clergy would not have read their act, both on account of the subject of it and because they disowned the Assembly's authority; but that body had foreseen this obstacle, and therefore procured an act of council to give it a legal sanction and the force of law. It was drawn up and read on the 11th, and Kennedy called it a "most savoury paper;" but there were, in the original draft, certain unsavoury expressions respecting the oaths of allegiance, supremacy, and the Test, which the commissioner would not permit to be inserted. His grace here practically convinced them of the royal supremacy, and they quietly obeyed his commands and expunged the obnoxious passages. The Assembly were satisfied that the episcopal clergy could not observe their ordinance without the sins of hypocrisy and mockery of God, and therefore

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Assemblies, session 25, p. 227-230.



they enjoined it the more peremptorily. This fast was not to avert the divine wrath and to please God, but for the purpose of ensnaring men's consciences, and to be an occasion of sin. Under a pretence of zeal for the glory of God and abhorrence of sin, they made this *fast* an instrument for executing their own malice and vengeance, not only against the clergy themselves, but against their sacred office.

ON THE LAST session but one, the Assembly removed the sentence of deposition from their moderator Kennedy, and some others. Kennedy took his brethren by surprise, and introduced an overture himself for that purpose:—"You may remember," he said, "there were once some unhappy differences among us, which some carried so high as to proceed to inflict the sentence of deposition upon some on that account. Now I think it fit, before we part, that this sentence be revoked; and that as we are a' ae man's bairns, so we may be all alike stated." He then named all the parties concerned, and himself in the third person, saying, "there is one Mr. Hugh Kennedy, whom I'se warrant ye a' ken weel enough." And now they passed an act declaring "all sentences past against any minister *hinc inde*, by any church judicatory, upon the account of the late differences among presbyterians from the year 1650 till the introduction of prelacy, to be of themselves void and null to all effects and intents<sup>1</sup>." Thus, then, in their primary assembly, there were men who were under solemn censure, and had been deposed from their ministry by their own synods, one of whom was their moderator, who yet sat and voted in this state, and thus most truly incurred the censure which they so unjustly and recklessly cast upon the clergy, of being "*ignorant, insufficient, negligent, scandalous, and erroneous*."

IN THE LAST session they appointed two commissions, one for the south and another for the north side of the Tay; the declared object of which was to *purge* out the clergy from the parish churches, and not only them, but those also who, having been already ejected, had withdrawn from their jurisdiction. The fourth clause of their instructions was, "to take care to purge out all who, upon due trial, shall be found to be insufficient, supinely negligent, scandalous, or erroneous;" and the fifth, that their power of visitation shall "reach presbyterians *as well as others*<sup>2</sup>." Immediately before their dissolution they appointed Gilbert Rule and David Blair a deputation to wait on the king, and to make a true represen-

<sup>1</sup> Acts, &c., Act xiii. p. 230.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. Act xv. p. 232.



tation to him of their proceedings ; to entreat the continuance of his favour, and to vindicate themselves from the aspersions of their enemies. Their last transaction was a debate touching the dissolution of the present and the appointment of another assembly. They attempted to shew their independency, and were proceeding to dissolve themselves without consulting the commissioner, but he cut short their deliberations by an assertion of the royal supremacy, and dissolved them *in the king's name* ; and by the same authority he appointed the next General Assembly to meet at Edinburgh on the first of November, 1691. The Assembly were not a little astonished, and had half a mind to be restive at this *act of supremacy* ; but William was not to be trifled with. There was no arguing with the master of ten legions of Dutchmen, and therefore, after some little coquetry, and pretending not to hear his grace, Kennedy next dissolved the meeting, and appointed exactly the same day as the commissioner had done for their next assembly<sup>1</sup>. And here, says Mr. Skinner, “ before I take leave of this assembly, which I have been the longer upon, not as belonging to, but because, as far as they could, destructive of the old episcopal constitution, let me express my surprise that in all this time, and, indeed, in all the preparatory steps towards the presbyterian settlement, we have heard no public mention of that former *idol* of veneration among them—THE COVENANT ; which their predecessors, about fifty years ago, had preferred to their Creed, and even to their baptism. But now, except what private glances of remembrance some of their packed presbyteries squinted towards it, when it was necessary to swell a libel against an episcopal pannel, we meet with it in no petition of the kirk, or deed of the state ; no handle made of it, as once, for abolishing prelacy ; no regard shewn in the least to the so much magnified sacredness of its engagements, except among those faithful adherers to it, the Cameronians. It would seem the statesmen had been either afraid or ashamed of it ; and the ministers had not thought fit to disgust such friends by reviving it. Let them account for this neglect whose business it is, and, like honest men, either avow or renounce their connection with the Solemn League and Covenant of their godly ancestors<sup>2</sup>.”

BUT ZEALOUS, fierce, and persecuting as this primary assem-

<sup>1</sup> This account has been condensed from the “ History of the First General Assembly of 1690,” a rare pamphlet, 4to. ; which Mr. Skinner seems also to have had before him when he was writing his History, although he does not refer to it.

<sup>2</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 575, 76.





bly was, it did not come up to the desires of a certain sect of presbyterians of the present day, who say, in their testimony drawn up by the late Dr. Mc'Crie,—“ The proceedings of the church at this period were also chargeable with *unfaithfulness*. The first General Assembly after the Revolution sat down in the year 1690, under the above civil establishment, without *remonstrating* against what was defective in it, and accommodated their proceedings to the measures of the state, instead of exerting their *own intrinsic powers* in supplying what was wanting, and lay within their own proper province. By rejecting a paper presented by Mr. Alexander Shields and two other ministers, they shewed their *aversion* to inquire into the *public evils* which had been introduced. They evinced a laudable concern ‘for retaining soundness and unity of doctrine,’ by enjoining all who were licensed to preach, ordained to the ministry, or received into communion as ministers or elders, to subscribe their approbation of the Confession of Faith approved by former General Assemblies of this church: in their act for a national fast, they enumerated the heights to which the supremacy was advanced, *the introduction of prelacy*, the general compliance with it, and the persecution which followed, among the grounds of humiliation; and they declared the sentences passed against the protesting ministers [the Remonstrators] before the introduction of prelacy, to be null and void. But neither that assembly, nor any of the subsequent assemblies, expressly approved of the reformation carried on between 1638 and 1650; nor did they expressly condemn the overthrow of it, and the sinful oaths and bonds by which it was renounced; nor did they justify the testimonies and sufferings in its behalf during the late trying period. Although, in some acts for fasting, the Assembly acknowledged that our sins are aggravated by breach of solemn vows, yet, notwithstanding the indignities which had been done to our national covenants, they never expressly asserted their obligation: nor does the name of the Solemn League so much as appear in any of their acts since the Revolution. Although the royal prerogatives of Christ had been daringly invaded, and the whole government of the church usurped by the crown, during the late reigns, yet the Assembly did not by any act formally condemn the supremacy, or assert the sole headship of Christ, the divine right of presbytery, or the intrinsic power of the church<sup>1</sup>.”

WHEN the seed of the word has been sown on stony ground,

<sup>1</sup> Act and Testimony of the Associate Synod of Original Seceders, p. 38. 1839.



although it be at first received with gladness, yet, when affliction or persecution ariseth for Christ's sake, instead of taking up the cross, men of stony hearts are immediately *offended* in Christ. They go back, and walk no more with Him; but by so doing, they can never reach the crown of glory which the righteous judge has promised to all them that love His appearing. It would seem that the seed had been sown on *good ground*, in the hearts of the Scottish clergy, at the Revolution, for they had received the Word affectionately, and brought forth the good fruit of christian patience, and uncomplaining suffering of calamities that cannot be paralleled for atrocity and long continuance. Instead of being "insufficient," as their enemies most falsely and maliciously asserted, they could have borne a comparison, according to their numbers, with those of any church of the time, for general professional learning, for their christian principles, and for their christian conduct. Dr. Leslie says, "that there was not any where to be seen, in any church in Europe, *a more pious and inoffensive clergy* than those in Scotland in the beginning of this Revolution." Of nearly a thousand clergy that were at that time in Scotland, there were not more than twenty that rejected the cross, apostatized from the faith, and fell from the heaven of the church; thus becoming "fallen stars," which, in scripture language, and taken in a spiritual sense, is the symbol of an apostate christian priest. The sufferings of these christian confessors were great beyond imagination; under which they exercised the greatest patience. These were inflicted by presbyterian ministers, and their immediate disciples, that called themselves the only true ministers of Christ. "The episcopal clergy of Scotland, at the Revolution, suffered the loss of every thing, and suffered in a spirit which never was exceeded in any age of the church. The truly christian spirit of the whole community was such as to carry along with them, in their sufferings, many who might naturally have been expected anxious to escape from the connection, if they found a convenient opportunity . . . . while we have numerous instances of men who, though they might have had a high station in the new church, chose to *suffer* with the old<sup>1</sup>." Persecution is not a new thing to the church, and the Scottish branch of it, even in her best times, was always a sufferer, either from the state or from the presbyterians. Although William himself did not desire to be a persecutor, yet he looked on in silent indifference, and suffered his privy council, the presby-

<sup>1</sup> Note to Bishop Walker's Gaelic Sermon, p. 42.



terian ministers, and the rabble, without control, to expend their fury upon the ministers of Christ. Both Bishop Burnet and Principal Carstares assert, that he was *disgusted* with the proceedings of the presbyterians; yet he took no steps to curb their fury, nay, not so much as Eli took with his wicked sons, —“It is no good report I hear of you.”

WHEN THE faction, says Dr. Monro, “had ruined the clergy at home, they were afraid they might be pitied abroad, and to justify their sacrilege and villainy they endeavoured to cover them all under libels and invectives, and to represent them to other nations as vicious and illiterate. For the information of strangers I will consider both parts of the accusation: First, as to the immoralities alleged against the clergy, *there cannot be a more atrocious and spiteful calumny*. It is not possible for them to convince credulous strangers by an open, fair, and visible trial, that this is a lie, for they have no fence against the malice and activity of their enemies, but their *patience and their prayers*: if their learned and compassionate brethren in England would interpose so far with the present court as to have this affair examined before any impartial judicature, then such as were found guilty should be deprived of the honour of the priesthood, and not suffered to continue stumbling-blocks to the people. But let me acquaint you plainly that there shall never be such a judicatory erected, and that it is not the method of their enemies to have things fairly and calmly inquired into. And therefore the clergy beseeches all generous strangers to stop their ears against such *wicked and indefatigable calumniators*. They give their enemies open and public defiance upon this head; it is enough that they are banished, rifled, and plundered in the most savage manner, though they be not robbed of the compassion of strangers. It is true that in the records of the council relating to the deprived clergy there is a column containing immoralities libelled against some of them; but it is as true, that though they are recorded (to make the world believe them guilty), yet they were never examined fairly. The artifice of their enemies is as mean as it is wicked; first to invent calumnies and slanders, and then to leave them unexamined; boldly to vent them amongst strangers, when they had not the confidence at home to give one instance of such immoralities amongst so many hundreds that have been deprived. How easily and how sadly might they recriminate upon this head; but that is not so pleasant in itself, nor will it serve the ends of christianity<sup>1</sup>.”

<sup>1</sup> Account of the present Persecution. Letter iv. 66, 67.





THE ACTS of the late Assembly have shewn what are the doctrines of the presbyterian establishment respecting the sacraments; nevertheless, they are continually lamenting over original sin, but yet they disparage the means that have been divinely appointed for washing it away. By virtue of that birth that we derive from Adam, we are born in sin or wrath; but in our new birth in baptism we are born into the family of Christ, and are taken into covenant with him. Yet the assembly thought it better to let an infant die in a state of wrath, and an alien to the commonwealth of Israel, rather than to administer their sprinkling in private, or at any other time than during the sermon on Sunday. They denied the efficacy of baptism; and sure enough they were right, as they administered it, because they were unauthorised so to do, and in fact they only profaned the sacrament; but that was the last reason for their conduct. They considered it merely a sign or ceremony, and they held all *significant* ceremonies to be superstition and popery, and denied that the sign really conveys the thing itself when administered by authorised hands. But as they were merely usurpers of the sacerdotal character, and were totally without authority, perhaps the children to whom they refused sprinkling were as safe in the uncovenanted mercies of God as if they had been deluded into a false security, and been made to believe that by presbyterian sprinkling they had obtained the graces promised to lawful baptism; viz. justification, or the washing away of sin; regeneration, or new birth into the family and kingdom of Christ; calling and election, which we are commanded to make *sure* by a life of holy obedience; adoption, by which we have the blessed privilege of sons, and may call God our Father, which the Jews could not; and sanctification, by which we are sealed, and assisted to fight the good fight of faith by the indwelling of the Holy Ghost.

THE OTHER sacrament in their hands can only be considered a ceremony without signification, and so, indeed, they treated it; for after the Revolution it was frequently not "dispensed," as they call it, for several years; and even now, in country parishes, it is only administered once in the year. But the Lord's Supper being the christian sacrifice commemorative of that only perfect and sufficient oblation on the cross, cannot be offered without a priest—priest and sacrifice being convertible terms. As they were not priests, but only lay ministers, they could not offer the christian oblation to God, nor feed the people with His Body and Blood: so they are consistent in their doctrine, and only consider that sacrament as





an *ordinance*, like the transactions of the rebel Long Parliament, which were never called acts but *ordinances* of parliament. As the ordinances wanted the king's authority to give them power and efficacy, so the sacraments are deficient of that divine grace that can alone make the comers thereunto "perfect," and to "dwell in Christ, and Christ in them." It is a fearful state of delusion in which to live; and presbyterians and dissenters are earnestly and affectionately entreated to ponder well this subject, and, like Blessed Mary, lay it up in their hearts, drawing near to God in prayer, who will draw nigh to them. Let them, as new-born babes, desire the sincere milk of God's word, that they may grow thereby; let them ask for the old paths in which our fathers trod and were saved, and seek the sacraments in that church which alone can give them with power; and which, notwithstanding its persecution even unto death, still flourishes in the midst of them, as a brand plucked out of the burning, and as a witness to God's truth and His omnipotence.



## CHAPTER LVI.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1691.—English bishops suspended.—Archbishop Sancroft's plan—he refuses to consecrate Burnet.—Dr. Fitzwilliam's letter.—Number of the clergy who were deprived.—Letter of the clergy in the archdeaconry of Sudbury.—Bishop of Norwich's answer.—Suspended bishops accused of bad designs—deprived.—Promotions.—Dr. Hickes protested.—Opinions of Kettlewell and others.—Burnet's opinion.—Dr. Hickes sent to France.—The king's communication.—Dr. Hickes's return—his narrative—consecration.—The fast.—The difficulty of the clergy—their protest—not observed in several dioceses—kept by the presbyterians only.—Council devolve the persecution on the ministers.—Commission of the kirk—their instructions—its first meeting—their transactions.—Clergy decline their jurisdiction—deprived.—A separation.—Distress of the clergy.—William's letter to the commission—offensive to the ministers.—Cannot supply vacancies.—Pluralities.—Persecution of Mr. Skene.—Meeting of the commission.—William's letter.—The clergy send a deputation to William.—A petition—not signed—the Aberdeen clergy present it—also by some others—rejected.—Three apostates—Case of archdeacon Waddel and Dr. Nicolson.—The Assembly adjourned.—Extract of a sermon.—1692.—Observation of king Charles's martyrdom.—Extract of a sermon.—William anxious for the admission of the episcopal clergy.—Assembly dissolved.—Moderator's speech—his prayer.—Intrigues of the earl of Bredalbane with the highland chiefs.—Macdonald of Glencoe takes the oaths.—THE MASSACRE.—Remarks on fasts and festivals.—The covenant—the number 666.

1691.—On the 13th of October, 1689, the archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of Gloucester, Ely, Norwich, Bath and Wells, and Peterborough, refused to take the oaths to the new king, and were in consequence suspended *ab officio*. During the period that intervened between the address of the lords to the prince and the meeting of the convention, archbishop Sancroft appears to have been occupied in considering the state of the nation, and in forming plans for settling the government. He drew up a paper in which he proposed three ways of accomplishing this important point. The first was, to declare the prince of Orange, who was then actually administering public affairs, king, and solemnly to crown him; the



second was to crown Mary, the next heir of the throne after the king's death; and the third, which he preferred, was to declare king James incapable of the government, by reason of his unhappy principles, and his apparently unconquerable resolution to act accordingly, since such principles are inconsistent and incompatible with the religion and liberties of the empire. He proposed to declare the prince of Orange *custos regni*, and the administrator of the government in the king's right and name. But he mistook his man. William came to seize the crown for his own property, not to act as a regent or deputy for either his father-in-law or his wife. The archbishop reasoned with great force on what must be done in hereditary monarchies when the king is rendered "incapable of directing the government and dispensing the public treasure, &c. either by absence, by infancy, by lunacy, *deliracy*, or apathy; or lastly, by some *invincible prejudices* of mind, with unalterable resolutions superinduced in matters wholly incompatible with the laws, religion, peace, and true policy of the kingdom<sup>1</sup>." He justly considered the king's prejudices, and his past conduct resulting from them, as amounting to what he calls *deliracy*, a sort of *monomania*; and not without reason, for there are many persons who are perfectly sane and rational upon all topics except one. Hardly any raving could be more delirious than was the conduct of James, who hastened on the supremacy of Rome, with all its idolatries and superstitions, faster even than the pope himself was disposed to go along with him; and in the face of the most unequivocal repugnance of the clergy and all classes of his subjects in both ends of the island.

THESE PRELATES were only suspended in the hopes that they would have followed the example of the majority of their brethren. The archbishop refused to consecrate Gilbert Burnet, who, by a trick, had obtained the bishoprick of Salisbury. As soon as he heard of its vacancy, he hurried to court, and preferred his petition to William, who, in his phlegmatic and taciturn manner, put him off with saying he would *consider of it*. Burnet immediately dropt on his knee, and thanked the king for complying with his request, to William's utter consternation, who had no intention of conferring a bishoprick on him; but as the above transaction had occurred in the presence of his whole court, he thought himself bound to confirm his appointment. The primate gave a commission to the

<sup>1</sup> D'Oyley's Life of Sancroft.





bishop of London, and three other bishops, to consecrate that presbyterian in heart.

SEVERAL attempts were made to induce the bishop to comply, but without effect; the English and the Scottish bishops and clergy were actuated by precisely the same motives in their conduct at this important period. Their sentiments may, perhaps, be gathered from the letter of Dr. Fitzwilliam, rector of Cottingham and canon of Windsor, to lady Russell; to whom he writes in great distress about the oaths, on the 13th May, 1689:—"I cannot tell what my dear friend, the bishop of Bath and Wells, may do in this case [of resigning his living in favour of another]. I find him, by a letter to me, and another I saw in the hands of a person of honour, of your sex, *to be fluctuating*; but if the consideration of the church's peace should, without a full persuasion of the lawfulness of the matter of the oath of allegiance, and of the authority which imposeth it, induce him to take it, neither his example nor advice, though I have used him as a spiritual guide, should steer me in this point. For I could never hear that doctrine of the Romish casuists defended to a probability, that a good intention or a holy end could sanctify actions in order to that end, which were dubious or questionable in themselves. It may be I have as sad thoughts for the divisions of the church, and as ardent desires for its peace, as any; and let my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth, if I prefer not Jerusalem before my chief joy. But I cannot esteem it a good way to seek the attainment of this by any act that will disturb my own peace: and yet this I must of necessity do, if I make use of such means as may be conducive to that end, when I am not first convinced of the justice of them. I did not doubt but the deans of some of the greatest name in the city would take the oaths, nor do I suspect but they will proceed to the doing so upon grounds which seem, in their own judgment, very solid. . . . It may be their judgment that at least in such a case as ours was the people have power to alter the succession, and that the convention was a full representative of them. I sucked in other more monarchical principles with the first knowledge I had, from the breasts of my mother the university, and then and ever since took them, as far as I could understand, to be more agreeable to our frame of constitution of government; or they may look on this revolution as a *tacit and virtual conquest*. I wish it had been owned to be such; for then I had known, from the resolutions of civilians and casuists, and my own reason, what to have done without difficulty. In the meantime, I entreat you, very good madam,



not to call boggling at an oath clashing against another, an unnecessary scruple.

“THE FORMER oath of allegiance (he continues) runs thus:—‘I will bear *faith and true allegiance* to his majesty king James, and *his heirs and successors*, and *him and them* will defend.’ Of supremacy:—‘I will bear *faith and true allegiance* to the king’s highness (James), *his heirs and lawful successors*, and to my power shall assist and defend all jurisdictions, privileges, pre-eminences, and authorities granted or belonging to the king’s highness, his heirs and successors, or united and annexed to the imperial crown of this realm.’ Now, I am informed by the statute 1 James, c. 1, that lineal succession is a privilege belonging to the imperial crown; and by 12 Car. II., c. 30, § 17, ‘That by the undoubted and fundamental laws of this kingdom, neither the peers of this realm, nor the Commons, nor both together, in parliament or out of parliament, nor the people collectively nor representatively, nor any persons whatsoever, hath or ought to have any coercive power over the kings of this realm.’ The present oath runs thus:—‘I will bear true allegiance to their majesties king William and queen Mary.’ Now, let any person resolve me, whether one of these (king James having abdicated) be his heir or *lawful* successor, or could be made so, had the people met either collectively or representatively, which they did neither. In the meantime I protest to your ladyship, upon the truth of a christian and a priest, that divesting myself of all prejudices, and as far as it is possible of all passions which darken the light of the judgment, I will examine the matter to the bottom, and if I find I can take the oath, I will. But if I find I cannot without declaring, or an admission of such a declaration, that I never intend, nor will be thought by construction or implication by such swearing to recognise the *legal* title of king William and queen Mary,” he would then beg certain favours; which he went on to state<sup>1</sup>.

NEARLY FIVE HUNDRED of the inferior clergy, whose names and cures are all printed in the Appendix to the Life of Kettlewell, were also deprived, as well as the bishops. There is a letter from nine of them, of the archdeaconry of Sudbury, that were lying under suspension, to the bishop of Norwich, asking his lordship’s “paternal direction; for though *we can think of nothing but losing all*, yet we are passionately desirous of being instructed how we shall leave our respective cures; whether voluntarily, or stay till particular intruders thrust us out by

<sup>1</sup> Letters of Lady Rachel Russell. 1773. 4to. pp. 133-138.







pretext of law; as also, which way to behave ourselves, to preserve (if possible) *the old church of England*." His lordship advised them to remain till they were thrust out by force of law; and he adds, "there have been some mitigating proposals made to us by those who assure us that they are our good friends: what the issue will be you shall know as soon as we can arrive at any resolution<sup>1</sup>." Perhaps the proposals were those conveyed to the suspended bishops by the earl of Rochester, from queen Mary, "to try whether, in case an act could be obtained to excuse them from taking the oaths, they would go on, and do their functions in ordinations, institutions, and confirmations, and assist at the public worship as formerly; but they would give no answer; only they said they would live quietly." On this last expression Burnet puts a most malignant construction<sup>2</sup>.

A PAMPHLET was published in 1690, which reflected very severely on the non-juring bishops, and charged them, whom it calls the Lambeth Holy Club, with being the principal managers of a plot for encouraging a French invasion, for the restoration of king James, with popery and arbitrary power, and with a design to alter the liturgy. These reflections being calculated to injure them, the archbishop of Canterbury, with the bishops of Norwich, Ely, Bath and Wells, and Peterborough, in their own names, and in that of their absent brother of Gloucester, published a paper, in which, in the presence of God, they solemnly protested and declared "that these accusations cast upon them were all of them malicious calumnies and diabolical inventions—that they knew not who was the author of the new liturgy; that they had no hand in it, and never used it at any time—that they never held any correspondence, directly or indirectly, with the French king . . . but should always, by God's grace, make it their daily practice to study to be quiet, to bear their cross patiently, and to seek the good of their native country<sup>3</sup>."

THIS PRETENDED plot, and the discovery of some correspondence with the exiled prince, which was attempted to be fastened on the bishop of Ely, but which he utterly disowned, gave William a plausible excuse for depriving the bishops, and filling up their sees. Dr. Sancroft, archbishop of Canterbury; Dr. Kenn, bishop of Bath and Wells; Dr. Turner, bishop of Ely; Dr. Frampton, bishop of Gloucester; Dr. White, bishop of Peterborough, and Dr. Lloyd, bishop of

<sup>1</sup> Life of Kettlewell. Appendix, pp. ii. iii. iv.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times. iv. 128.

<sup>3</sup> Complete History of England; by an Impartial Hand. Folio, Part viii. 616.





Norwich, were deprived on the 1st February, 1691, and others were consecrated and placed in their sees, which, in an ecclesiastical sense, were not vacant; for these prelates were deprived by the authority of the state alone, without any trial or censure by their brethren of their own order. They thought it a betrayal of the rights of the church to submit to mere lay deprivation otherwise than by force, and consequently they waited in their palaces till they were ejected by legal process. On the 5th of February, queen Mary, who administered the government in William's absence on the continent, issued a proclamation for apprehending the bishop of Ely, William Penn, and James Graham, Esq., for alleged correspondence with the French government, and for endeavouring to procure an invasion of this kingdom<sup>1</sup>. Dr. Tillotson, dean of St. Paul's, was promoted to the see of Canterbury in May, and was consecrated in Bow Church, Cheapside, on the 31st of May, by the bishops of Winchester, St. Asaph, Salisbury, Worcester, Bristol, and Oxford; all the great officers of state, all the nobility then in town, and many other persons of quality, being present; and the other sees were filled by other eminent men. Those who were deprived submitted in silence, except Dr. Hickes. Upon his deprivation of the deanery of Worcester, he fixed up in the cathedral church of that city "a Protestation and Claim of Right," of his own continued right to the said dignity, against the intrusion of any other person, on the 2d of May, and addressed to Dr. Jephcott, the sub-dean, and that he "was, and still did continue, the only rightful and legal dean of this cathedral church of Worcester<sup>2</sup>." An eminent non-juror, in a letter to Dr. Tillotson, warning him of the sin of schism, says, if the places of the deprived bishops "be not vacant, the new consecrations must, by the nature of the spiritual monarchy, be perfectly null, invalid, and schismatical;" and he produced the case of St. Athanasius, against whom three other bishops were set up by lay power, yet they were never acknowledged as lawful bishops by the clergy and people of Alexandria. Mr. Dodwell argued, that to consecrate persons into the sees of those bishops who had been deprived only by lay power, was to erect altar against altar, because such sees were not justly vacated. Mr. Kettlewell, another eminent non-juror, did not make an exception to the validity of lay deprivation by act of parliament, but made it a *nullity* in the present case, because done by an unrightful king and an illegal parliament. Otherwise, he granted a *rightful* state

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 263.<sup>2</sup> Life of Kettlewell. Appendix, pp. v. vi. vii.



may punish the refusal of allegiance in clergymen by deprivation, as being an offence against morality and religion. Mr. Dodwell reasoned, that all bishops, by their consecration, are equal, and a vacancy only is wanted to make the appropriation of a diocese lawful and unexceptionable. The consecration of the new bishops, and their taking possession of the dioceses of the deprived bishops, was what he considered constituted a schism; but it was his opinion that the schism ceased on the death of the deprived bishops.

DURING the period of their suspension the deprived bishops seem to have been inactive, and Burnet most vehemently accuses them of neglect of their sacred duties. In his "Vindication," published in 1696, he says, "their silence has continued ever since. Their archbishop lived and died in this silence; having never, by any public and express act, declared himself, nor given warning to the nation: He neither required the bishops of his province, nor the clergy of his diocese, to adhere to himself or to the late king; to refuse the oaths, and to reject his successor. He did not require it of those of his own family. He did neither fly nor abscond, but was all the while at home, both safe and silent. All the rest have followed his example, and continue to this day silent: That is, whatsoever any of them may talk in corners, or may write and print without name, they have not, by any public instrument or episcopal act, declared themselves. . . . I think it is fully made out that the late king did abandon his people; but they did much worse; for from August 1689, till May 1691 (for near two years together), they lived in their sees without taking any care of the church, or doing any of their functions. They thought they were all that while lawful bishops; and for a good part of the time they certainly were so; and yet they did nothing as bishops all that while: they neither fed their clergy nor their people with instructions, admonitions, and reproofs or censures. And if, in so critical a time, a body of men, who are entrusted with the care of feeding the flock of Christ, will leave them to themselves, to the wolves that devour them, or to the poison that must destroy them, it is hard to tell what is *abandoning*, and what is not."

ALTHOUGH they had foreseen their deprivation, yet it was not till after that act took place that the ejected bishops and clergy formed a separate communion from the established church. I shall not take upon me to decide whether or not the newly consecrated bishops or the ejected bishops were the schismatics; but certainly there was a schism in the church of England at this time. The non-juring bishops, both in



England and Scotland, were so habituated to connection with the state, and of subjection to the regal supremacy, that they thought they could not act in the continuance of their own order without king James's formal sanction. They had resolved to continue a succession, and to consecrate two bishops; but as his *congé d'élire* could not now be directed to deans and chapters, they adopted the same plan as at the Restoration, where for the time being the bishopricks were made donative. They directed, therefore, the lord Clarendon to write to lord Melfort for king James's sanction, which was immediately given, and who said, "he was well pleased with the design, and would readily concur with it." A second letter was written to lord Melfort, but the answer was so long of coming, that they then recollected the intrinsic powers of the church, by which they could act without the king's authority in this matter<sup>1</sup>.

AT LAST they received a letter from lord Melfort, signifying his majesty's great desire to have the new consecrations finished, and requiring them to send some person over with whom he could confer about this matter, with a list of the deprived clergy. They selected Dr. Hickee, who gives the following narrative, and who set out from London May 19th, 1693, and went by the way of Holland, but did not reach St. Germain's for six weeks afterwards. The day after his arrival the king sent for him, and made the following very extraordinary apology for having delayed so long to answer lord Clarendon's second letter:—"That before he proceeded farther in that matter, he thought himself obliged fully to satisfy his own conscience as to the lawfulness of his part in it; which, said he, I did first by consulting of those I thought the best casuists of the place where I am, viz. the archbishop of Paris and the bishop of Meux, and then by laying the case before the pope. The resolution of the two bishops I have here; and they both agree in this determination, though consulted separately,—that the church of England being established by the laws of the kingdom, I am under no obligation of conscience to act against it, but obliged to maintain and defend it as long as those laws are in force." His majesty then put the papers, containing the said case and the bishops' resolutions, into Dr. Hickee's hands, who found them to be as the king had represented. The pope's answer had not then arrived, but it came before the doctor left St. Germain's, and it

<sup>1</sup> Nelson's Lives of Dodwell and Kettlewell.—Kennett's History of England, vol. ii.—Scottish Episcopal Magazine for March, 1822, iii.—D'Oyley's Life of Sancroft.





was to the same effect as those of the two bishops. The king then informed Dr Hickes, after he had read the papers, that "He had, on all occasions, justified the church of England since the Revolution, declaring that the true church of England remained in that part of the clergy and people which adhered to her doctrines, and suffered for them. And that, sir, said he, 'is the church of England, which I will maintain and defend, and the succession of whose bishops I desire may be continued, that when it shall please God to restore me or mine, we may meet with such a church of England and such bishops; and I desire for that end that the new consecrations may be made as soon as conveniently they can, after your return.'" At that and other audiences his majesty expressed his esteem of the deprived bishops and clergy, and of the laity that suffered with them, in the most tender and affectionate manner, even with tears in his eyes. And also declared—"that he was very sensible that the greatest part of the complying clergy still loved him, and had fallen only through infirmity, and very few through disaffection and malice to him."

"THE DOCTOR had his *congé* from his majesty the latter end of July, and arrived at Rotterdam on the 7th of August, where he waited all that month and the next to return in a fleet of merchants under the convoy of the same men-of-war that convoyed the yacht in which the prince of Orange returned; but when he should have gone on board he was seized with an ague and fever, which detained him near four months longer, viz. till January the 14th, on which day he went from Rotterdam, and going on board the packet boat on the 26th, he arrived at Harwich on the 29th, where he escaped being examined by one Mackay, a Scotchman, placed there to examine passengers, by sitting next to a foreign minister in the boat which brought the passengers on shore. After three days' stay at Harwich he came to London on the 4th of February, and on the feast of St. Mathias, the 24th of the said month, the consecrations were solemnly performed [of George Hickes, formerly dean of Worcester, and Thomas Wagstaffe, formerly rector of St. Margaret Pattons and St. Gabriel, Fenchurch-street, and chancellor of the church of Litchfield], according to the rites of the church of England; by Dr. William Lloyd, bishop of Norwich, Dr. Francis Turner, bishop of Ely, and Dr. Thomas White, bishop of Peterborough, at the bishop of Peterborough's lodgings in the Rev. Mr. William Gifford's house at Southgate, in Middlesex: Dr. Kenn, bishop of Bath and Wells, giving his consent. Here it is to be noted that Dr.



Frampton, bishop of Gloucester, absolutely refused all correspondence with his brethren, from which he desired to be excused, alleging that he had retired from all business but what related to his own soul, in preparing himself for death: and that Dr. William Sancroft, archbishop of Canterbury, died while the doctor lay ill at Rotterdam; but he joined in every thing relating thereto while he lived, and particularly recommended to the king one of the two persons to be consecrated, as the bishop of Norwich did the other. All the time of his grace's retirement in Suffolk, he corresponded with the bishop of Norwich, notwithstanding that he had given him a deputation in due form, and in the Latin tongue, empowering him to act in all cases relating to church affairs, in his stead; which yet the bishop seldom made use of without first acquainting him with it, and receiving his grace's directions thereupon.

“(Signed) GEORGE HICKES<sup>1</sup>.”

THE FAST before mentioned proved in reality a stumbling-block to the clergy, who, to a man, would have rejected the Assembly's authority; but their having procured an act of council to enforce it, entirely altered the state of the case. That determined enemy of the church, the earl Crawford, took care, in his capacity as a privy councillor, to word the proclamation so as to include the clergy.—“Forasmuch as the General Assembly, &c. hath appointed a solemn national fast, &c., therefore we, with the advice of the lords of our privy council, do hereby command and enjoin that the said solemn fast and humiliation be religiously observed *by all persons* throughout this kingdom, both in kirks and meeting-houses, &c.” The clergy now felt considerable difficulty in excusing themselves from obedience to the commands of the civil power, and at the same time found they would suffer in their reputation with their own people if they should comply with an ordinance that enjoined them to confess and bewail, *as a sin*, that to which they conscientiously adhered as the truth and institution of God. The people were disgusted at the hypocrisy and perfidy of the Assembly, and both alike considered it an unchristian and uncalled-for action, to impose such a downright piece of hypocrisy on the suffering clergy; but this and their other atrocities were the genuine result of presbyterian principles. In several places the clergy drew up protests against it:—Because they disowned the ecclesiastical authority that enjoined it; because

<sup>1</sup> Records of the New Consecrations, in *Scottish Episcopal Magazine*, March 1822, vol. iii. 130-133.—Perceval's Apology, 217.



it was not a lawful representation of the national church; because presbyterian ministers had no right, by either divine or ecclesiastical laws, to impose commands upon the lawfully ordained clergy, who looked only to their bishops for direction; because the constitution of their government, being *parity*, gives them no jurisdiction over other brethren; because acts cannot be binding on the clergy without their own consent, which could not, in this instance, be pleaded, inasmuch as the clergy had neither delegates nor representatives in the Assembly; because the reasons for the fast were ambiguous, and liable to be misunderstood; because, if by the words "*general defection*" and "*taking of unlawful oaths*," were meant *compliance with prelacy*, and *swearing allegiance*, and *the test*, the episcopal clergy could *not profess repentance* and humiliation for these, without a *horrid profanation* of the *NAME OF GOD*; because they were not convinced of the unlawfulness of such compliances; and it shewed how little regard the presbyterian ministers had for the sacred offices of religion to enjoin such contradictions upon the clergy, when they knew what were their judgments and sentiments on these subjects.

IN THE DIOCESE of Aberdeen the clergy communicated together, and feeling bound, both by conscience and well-earned reputation, to resist this fast, they unanimously resolved *not* to observe it. The dioceses of Brechin and Dunkeld followed their example, and, in short, the fast was not at all observed north of the river Tay. The clergy residing on the south side of that river had not such opportunities of consulting together, and therefore were not so unanimous. The clergy of the greater part of the country southward had been rabbled out of their livings, and those districts being under the dominion of the Assembly, the presbyterians had it all their own way. In Berwickshire and East Lothian, where there were some clergymen still in possession of churches, the clergy met at Haddington, and unanimously resolved that they could not comply consistently with their consciences. The meeting drew up and signed a protest, to be read from their pulpits on the Sunday when the fast was enjoined, and on the fast-day itself, which, strange to say, was not appointed to be held on a Sunday. There is no doubt but there was abundant reason for fasting and humiliation, for the awful apostacy from true religion—the desolating revolt—which the revolution had sanctioned and compelled. Those, however, who know any thing of presbyterian special fastings, are aware that they always preceded and ushered in some species of villainy; and the present was one of those portentous signs





of a coming storm. It was, in fact, designed to be a snare to entrap the weak or unwary into an acknowledgment of the presbyterian government, and to afford a special opportunity for inflicting both presbyterial censures and civil punishments on those holy confessors who put their trust in God, and dared to be honest in the worst of times.

ON THE SECOND Thursday of January the presbyterians kept this most abominable and sinful fast with the utmost zeal, and even outdid the ancient Pharisees in the stern demureness of their countenances and the length of their prayers, which were so framed as to represent that the whole sins, for which they pretended to fast, consisted in the profession of and obedience to episcopacy—God's own ordinance. Not only their sermons, but even their prayers, were full of invectives against the bishops and clergy, and also of the illustrious house of Stuart, the ruin and extinction of which must be laid at their door. Mr. Wilkie made a recapitulation of his own and his party's sins, among which he enumerated, "their accepting an indulgence from a popish king, which," he said, "was only granted to make way for popish priests and jesuits, who sought the ruin of the protestant religion." He said to God, in his prayer, "We knew this well enough, but self-interest biassed us; and the same principle of self-interest made us guilty of sinful silence; for all that time *we never* preached *against* popery, fearing that we might lose that liberty if we did. And none was more guilty than myself; for *mass* was said daily at my lugg [ear], and yet I never opened my mouth." This is a fair confession of their duplicity and hypocrisy, in being silent against popery whilst there was danger; when at that time the clergy were faithfully preaching upon all the controverted points. Contrary to the *moderation* towards their "neighbour church," which, not without reason, William pressed upon the presbyterians, Wilkie added in his prayer—"O Lord, confound the land of graven images," meaning their "neighbour church" of England, when he incontinently checked himself, recollecting, no doubt, that William had communicated for special purposes in that church, and added, "But, O Lord, save *our* king<sup>1</sup>."

THE PRIVY COUNCIL became weary of the task of maintaining the "inclinations of the people;" the presbyterian ministers had, therefore, to take the work of persecution into their own hands. Their first intention was to procure an act of parliament, when it again met, to declare all the churches

<sup>1</sup> History of the late General Assembly, 1690.





vacant—that all the present incumbents were intruders—and that the people should have their free choice, and be enabled to call ministers agreeably to their own inclinations. Upon a little inquiry and consideration, however, it was discovered that the people of almost all the parishes in the kingdom would have recalled their episcopal clergy, or at least others of their principles. “For by this time the people were every where shewing their disgust both at presbytery and the present presbyterians; and by manifold instances it appeared, that neither of them were acceptable to the greater and better part of the nation.” This means, that the people had been surprised by the audacity and impudence of the *rabble*, and the presbyterian ministers in the western counties; for had there been any forewarning, or even suspicion, of their intentions, the people would have defended their clergy, and protected them from the barbarities that were so wantonly inflicted upon them.

THE ACT of Assembly that had appointed the two itinerating commissions, directed them with plenary powers “to visit all ministers, and to purge out of the church such as should be thought *insufficient, scandalous, erroneous, and supinely negligent* ;” to keep quarterly sessions, and to appoint other meetings as often as they should think fit. The commission of the kirk was an invention of the Assembly of 1642, in order to gratify the ambition of the leading demagogues of the kirk, and to subserve the political purposes of Argyle and others; and it is a court entirely unknown to the legal constitution of the kingdom; it was again revived this year, that the General Assembly, which is only allowed to sit for about ten days, may, in fact, continue current all the year round. Though inferior and subject to the review of the General Assembly, yet it has an important advantage over it, inasmuch as it is not subjected to the inconvenient thralldom of the king’s representative to control their debates and to keep them from entering upon political discussions. Their instructions were—

TO TAKE into their cognizance all references and appeals not discussed in the assembly—to discuss and determine the same; 2, to give their advice to all synods and presbyteries; 3, to have power to visit all ministers in presbyteries, as well presbyterian as others; 4, to purge out of the church [*i. e.* the presbyterian establishment] all who, upon due trial, shall be found insufficient, scandalous, erroneous, or supinely negligent; 5, to be careful that none be admitted by them to ministerial communion, or to a share in the government, but such as, upon due trial, shall be found orthodox [*i. e.* calvinistic] in their



doctrine, of competent abilities, having a pious, godly, and peaceable conversation, as becometh ministers of the gospel, of an edifying gift, and whom the commission shall have ground to believe will be faithful to God and this government, and diligent in the discharge of their ministerial duty, and that all who shall be admitted to the ministry, or shall be received into a share of the government, shall be obliged to own and subscribe the Confession of Faith, as the confession of *their own faith*, and to profess submission and willingness to join and concur with the presbyterian church government; 6, that they be very cautious in receiving informations and forming libels against the late conformists and present incumbents, and that they proceed in the matter of censure very deliberately, so as none may have just cause to complain of their rigidity, yet so as to omit no means of information, and that they shall not proceed to censure but upon relevant libels and sufficient probations, &c.”

THE GREAT object, says Mr. Skinner, “was to keep such men [the episcopal clergy] out of their judicatories; lest by their difference of principles and plurality of voices they should incumber their proceedings, and by degrees turn the channel of affairs another way. And it is *incredible* what severities and flagrant exertions, of both oppression and artifice, were used to prevent such a dangerous conjunction<sup>1</sup>.” The South Commission met in Edinburgh on the 21st January, and several clergymen had been cited “to be tried in life and doctrine, and the discharge of the duties of the ministerial function, and to be censured by the said commission as they shall think just.” It is decidedly unjust and unnatural, that clergymen who had exercised their ministry under an entirely different government, and were, therefore, not responsible to a set of governors who had been so recently instituted, and who did not acknowledge the jurisdiction of the commission, should be subjected to them, not only as governors, but as judges, and that, too, so prejudiced as to have prejudged their cause. On the day appointed for appearing at the bar of this unjust court, the Rev. James Hutchison, one of the late clergy of Edinburgh, appeared at the bar, and, in the name of his brethren, demanded a special indictment, with an express specification of their crimes, the names of their accusers, a list of the witnesses against them, and a sufficient time to be allowed them to prepare their defences. These reasonable requests were peremptorily refused; and the moderator de-

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 533.



clared that "the commission was not bound to give any reason for their being summoned, neither of what they were accused, nor the names of their accusers and witnesses. But having been cited, they were obliged to answer instantly to whatsoever might be asked at them; and if they refused, the commission would proceed to censure them." These clergymen, however, determined not to submit to this inquisitorial popish system; and therefore they sent their attorney with a protest, which concluded in these words—"We having all of us considered the import of the said compearance upon the said citations given us, do hereby declare that we have no freedom in our consciences to compear, or subject ourselves to any trial whatsoever, before the said commission, and that by reason of our known principles and former engagements to episcopacy; and this we own to be our judgment, with all due deference and submission to authority. In witness whereof we have subscribed these presents with our hands at Edinburgh, January 21, 1691<sup>1</sup>."

THIS BEING the first instance of recusancy, the commission determined to visit it with summary and instant vengeance. On a division, two votes carried immediate deprivation and deposition over excommunication, which was proposed. This sentence was ordered to be intimated from the pulpits of all the churches in Edinburgh the following Sunday; but these gentlemen resolved to continue in the exercise of their ministry, unless they should be prevented by force and the power of the civil magistrate. On Saturday night they received an order from the lord provost not to attempt to officiate the next day, or even to be seen near their churches; but so discontented were their congregations, that as a precautionary measure the magistrates kept the town-guard in readiness to act, in the event of a riot occurring.

ALTHOUGH the Assembly had assumed Shields, Linning, and Boyd, in a mysterious sort of way, yet they had been exceedingly restive under the restraint to which it was necessary to subject them. They were not, however, any new species of presbyterians, but only the more honest and steady to the presbyterian principles, and who drew from them the practical conclusions which these principles naturally and necessarily yield. They asserted the genuine presbyterian principles under Cameron, Cargill, and Renwick, when the others were silent, and they did nothing but what their principles required them

<sup>1</sup> Historical Relation of Assembly 1690.





to do; for it is a maxim with them, "that the people may (especially in conjunction with their pastors) reform the church when the magistrate is slack or remiss in his duty, or opposed unto the designed reformation." Their ideas of reformation, however, outran even the violence and injustice of the late proceedings and of the commission; and they separated from the establishment, held independent meetings, to which they went armed, and sometimes came to blows with those from whom they had separated. Shields and his brethren published a protest against the Assembly, and accused them of degeneracy from their principles. Houston had received a call from the parish of Kilsyth, but he refused submission to the presbytery of Glasgow, and drove the man whom they had sent to preach there from the kirk, and preached himself. Notwithstanding their abhorrence of the royal supremacy, both parties appealed to William. Houston went to Flanders, and petitioned William to redress the injuries he had sustained from the presbytery; and besides, he complained of the corruption and defections of the establishment generally. William gave him a letter to the privy council, and another to the presbytery; the first of which he delivered to earl Crawford, and posted off to Glasgow with the other. He met with civility, but no redress, from the presbytery, and the council took no notice of his affair. Being unable to occupy the kirk of Kilsyth upon his own terms, his partizans commenced a schism, which has subsisted ever since, under the denomination of Cameronians, from Richard Cameron, the field preacher. In less than three years the truth of Calvin's words became conspicuous, that "*parity breedeth strife*," and he might have added, *division* also.

THE DISTRESS of the clergy now became so great, that they found themselves under the necessity of appealing to William for protection at least, if not for redress, from the fury of their persecutors; they sent over Dr. Canaries and Mr. Leith with a petition, praying the king to put a stop to the violence of the persecution to which they had been subjected. A modern representative of the genuine presbyterian principles, with unblushing effrontery, says—"Loud were the outcries of oppression raised by the disarmed tyrants, whose own deeds, in their day of power, had made Scotland a field of blood. Their complaints were carried to the ears of William, and repeated incessantly in the most exaggerated terms, till they made some impression on his mind, and induced him to write twice to the commission, urging the admission of the prelatie



clergy<sup>1</sup>." But whatever Mr. Hetherington may insinuate against "disarmed tyrants," we will venture to affirm, that the tyranny of his godly brethren was greater, and their persecution more severe upon the episcopal clergy, than has ever been felt in any part of Christendom since the last general pagan persecution. When the deputation reached London, they found William in such haste to join the army in Flanders, that he could do no more than give them a simple promise of redress. But they wisely followed him to the army, and after a conference with him, they were made the bearers of letters to the council and to the commission. When the solicitor-general presented the king's letter to old Kennedy, the moderator, he threw it to the clerk of the commission, and said—"Man, tak the scab aff the wame o't, and lats' see whats in't." When the scab, that is, the seal, was broken, it proved to be a long letter, of which the following are some extracts:—

"RIGHT REVEREND and well-beloved, we greet you well.—Whereas there hath been humble application made to us, by several ministers, for themselves and others, who lately served under episcopacy in that our ancient kingdom, we have thought good, as well for the good and advantage of that church, as the public justice and welfare of the nation, and the interest of our government, to signify our pleasure to you, that you make no distinction of men otherwise well qualified for the ministry, who are willing to join with you in the acknowledging of, and submission to, the government in church and state, as it is by law now established, though they may have formerly conformed to the law introducing episcopacy; and that you give them no vexation or disturbance for that cause, or upon that head: and that in regard many of these ministers are *turned out summarily, without any sentence or order of law*, if such shall be called to be ministers of any vacant congregations, by plurality of heritors or elders, we judge it reasonable that you admit them, when there is no just cause to the contrary, without making any difficulty. Whereas some of these ministers complain of *severities and hardships*, by several sentences pronounced against them, we think fit to give you opportunity to review what cases shall be brought before you, that yourselves may give such just redress as the matter requireth, before we take any farther notice of their complaints." After assuring them of his protection, &c. he con-

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington, p. 184.



tinued:—"And it is our pleasure, that during our absence out of Britain, until we give you further directions, that you proceed to no more processes, or any other business, and dispose yourselves to give out your best means for healing and reconciling differences; and apply yourselves to give impartial redress upon any complaints that shall be offered unto you against sentences already passed, that we are not obliged to give ourselves any farther trouble thereanent. So we bid you heartily farewell.—Given at our Court, at the Hague, February 13, 1691."

THIS LETTER gave the brethren of the commission great offence; and it was even proposed to lay it aside, and pay no attention to it. William maintained the royal supremacy with a firmness that would brook none of that factious opposition that had been so wantonly offered to the more moderate demands of their native sovereigns. Kennedy grumbled out, that "the king would be wiser to let these matters alone, *had he not so many men at his back*;" which shews that it was only his strong military force that kept the presbyterians, even now, in subjection to the crown. Since the Revolution, however, they have been compelled to submit to the supremacy *in fact*, although they vociferously repudiate it in *theory*. It was to no use to attempt setting up "king Jesus" in opposition to king William, with "so many men at his back," and who vigorously exercised, but never talked about, the prerogative; and therefore this storm blew quietly over. The king's letter commanded two disagreeable things—to redress the grievances of the clergy, and to forbear from proceeding any farther against them. They determined not to comply with the first; but for the latter, their master's will was too powerfully expressed to be disputed, and they found it convenient to submit, lest the king might be irritated, and withdraw his support, without which they could not have stood a month. The commission was therefore adjourned till the next quarterly session; but the presbyteries were permitted to continue the persecution; and when the clergy reminded them of the king's letter, they pretended ignorance of it. Before their adjournment, however, they deputed Law and Blair, two of their number, to go beyond seas, and confer with William<sup>1</sup>.

YET IT does not appear, says Mr. Skinner, "that this letter had any great effect, or answered the end it was designed for. The committees continued as rigid and severe as ever; and

<sup>1</sup> Historical Relation.





under the pretext of negligence, insufficiency, or scandal, gave the complying clergy of the episcopal persuasion all the disturbance they could. In many parts of the north, however, the attachment to episcopacy was so strong, that little regard was paid to the presbyterian courts; and the ministers who kept their kirks being protected by the gentry and beloved by the people, seldom or never appeared before these new tribunals; and in some parishes, where the old patrons were the only or principal proprietors, and thereby had influence over the parishioners, the vacant kirks were filled with ministers who had received episcopal ordination, either from the bishop of the diocese, if in the neighbourhood, or from any other who was most contiguous to them. These liberties were, no doubt, particularly galling to the leaders of the establishment, not only as thwarting their designs, and preventing the full completion of their favourite model, but especially as they were such a glaring and actual *contradiction* to the *fundamental* declaration in the late Claim of Right, about the *inclinations* of the people<sup>1</sup>."

THE DESOLATING revolt that had laid the south-western parts of the kingdom desert, was much more active in pulling up and extirpating than in planting; but, in truth, the presbyterians had not men to supply the vacancies that they themselves had made. An anonymous author says, "they had not so many preachers of their gang as filled the half of these churches from which the conformists had been forced; so that there were some hundreds of vacancies, whereby they had an excellent occasion to petition the council for the vacant benefices to make up their pretended losses. This was a blessed providence, and with them it had been *to resist a divine call* to have neglected it; and therefore it was their great business to petition the council for vacant stipends. Thus William Veitch had been a great sufferer: he had been forced to appear actually in rebellion at Pentland; for which he was not hanged, indeed, but declared rebel and fugitive. But since he had endured so much persecution, would he not have been to blame had he not studied his own interest? He petitioned for no less than five vacancies—viz. Crieland, Eckford, Yetholm, Morebattle, and Oxnam [all contiguous parishes, and situate in the diocese of Glasgow]. It is true the council were so hard-hearted as to grant him only three of them [the three first named], which was hard enough: but, alas! it was found that the minister of Crieland had not been

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 585.





deprived before Michaelmas 1689, so that Veitch could not get that parish, which was certainly a very disappointing persecution to him<sup>1</sup>."

THE SAME author narrates a monstrous piece of persecution which fell on Mr. Skene, the vicar of Dunsire, a parish in the county of Lanark and diocese of Glasgow. He had been *rabbled* with circumstances of atrocity equal to any of those which have been already narrated. In February of the year 1689, the leaders of the rabble sent him peremptory orders to remove from his church and manse, under the threat of tearing him in pieces. This he disregarded, and continued at his charge. On the 21st of March, about sixty rabblers came to his house, and committed such outrages that they frightened his wife into premature labour, and caused her death within three hours after the birth of an infant, leaving her persecuted husband with eight motherless children. Notwithstanding, he had the moral courage to continue to exercise his ministry as formerly. He was again rabbled on the 13th of April: such was the meek spirit of the covenant. They fastened up and secured the church doors on the 20th, and carried off the keys; and guarded the church door on Sunday the 21st, so as completely to prevent his reading the proclamation; nevertheless, this good and resolute man officiated and preached that day, in his own house, to those faithful men who had courage to attend on him, and he continued so to officiate till the feast of Whitsunday. On that sacred festival the rabble again returned, and in a most outrageous and inhuman manner cast himself, his motherless children and family, out of doors, broke and destroyed his whole furniture, and so, with nothing but the clothes on his back, he was obliged to seek shelter for himself and children elsewhere.

THERE WAS a Mr. Murray, a presbyterian minister, who, for some impropriety, had been deprived by the late government of the contiguous indulged parish of Culter, and who afterwards lived quietly in the parish of Dunsire, where he had some property, and even attended Mr. Skene's ministrations. No sooner was king James's fatal indulgence published than he erected a meeting-house in Dunsire, and collected a congregation. It was strongly suspected that he had set the rabble upon Mr. Skene; for as soon as that worthy confessor was fairly rabbled out, he petitioned the privy council for the parish and for the stipends of the years 1687, 88, and 89, which were in arrears, and had never been paid to

<sup>1</sup> Account of Presbyterian Government, 72.



Mr. Skene. Though now so poor as to be obliged to sue *in forma pauperis*, yet Mr. Skene determined to try the issue of an action in the court of Session for the recovery of his arrears. Murray opposed him, pleaded the act of council, that Skene had not read the proclamation, that he had *deserted*, &c., and that Murray had officiated in Dunsire during the three years above stated, and therefore craved judgment in his own favour for the stipend, &c. The counsel for Skene pleaded the facts above narrated, and much more, but it was to no purpose; his unjust judges passed the following sentence:—

“Edinburgh, 26th February, 1691.—Upon the report of the lord Anstruther, the lords find, that seeing Mr. Robert Skene was not exercising the ministry in the kirk of Dunsire upon the 13th April, 1689, the church *was vacant* by the act of parliament; and therefore prefer Mr. Anthony Murray.

“*Sic Subscribitur*, STAIR, J. P. D.”<sup>1</sup>

ABOUT the middle of July the commission again met, when Law and Blair, having returned, gave an account of their negotiation, and informed the commission that the king had positively told them that he would not any longer suffer them to oppress and persecute his episcopal subjects, and desired them, in his name, to acquaint the commission with his mind, that for the time to come they should proceed more moderately, otherwise he would let them know that he is their master. The moderator said openly, “that if it were not for the great army he had with him, he durst not have said so to them; and, however, he had been wiser to have held his peace, for that they owned no master but Christ<sup>2</sup>.” They delivered likewise the following letter from William, who says, after greeting:—

“BY THE letter presented to us from you by your two commissioners, we do perceive you sufficiently understood our intentions contained in our letter directed to you from the Hague; and we are well pleased with what you write, both as to your own unanimous inclinations to redress those that may be injured, and to unite with such of the clergy who have served under episcopacy, and fallen neither under the qualifications of the act of parliament nor the terms of our letter, and that you are sufficiently instructed by the General Assembly to receive them. From all which we do expect a speedy and

<sup>1</sup> Account of Presbyterian Government, pp. 72-75.

<sup>2</sup> Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence Displayed, p. 31.



happy success; and that ye will be so frank and charitable in that matter, that we cannot doubt but that there shall be so great a progress made in this union betwixt you, before our return to Britain, that we shall then find no cause to continue that stop which at present we see necessary; and that neither you nor any church meeting do meddle in any process or business that may concern the purging out of the episcopal ministers. And we do not restrain you as to other matters relative to the church or yourselves; nor did we ever intend to protect any in the ministry who were *truly* scandalous, erroneous, or supinely negligent; and therefore we did propose their subscribing the Confession of Faith as the standard of the church communion, which takes off the suspicion of error. And as for those who are really scandalous, erroneous, and supinely negligent, if such shall apply, either by themselves or with others, though they were willing to acknowledge our authority and to join with you, we do not oblige you to receive such. And in that case, where there is a just cause, you may proceed to a fair and impartial inquiry, in order to their being received into the government of the church, but not in relation to the turning them out of their benefices and ministry. As the act of our parliament has left them to our further orders, we will not doubt of the sincere performance of what you have so fairly promised in your letter, whereby you will best recommend yourselves to us, and answer that trust reposed in you by the act of our parliament. So we bid you heartily farewell.— Given at our court at Aprebrux, June 25th, 1691.”

THE PRESBYTERIAN refugees previous to the Revolution had completely deceived William with respect both of the numbers of their body and of the general inclinations of the people, which were decidedly in favour of episcopacy; and when his own sagacity discovered the truth, he would have continued the episcopal establishment, could he have prevailed on the bishops and clergy to transfer their allegiance. When presbytery was established by act of parliament, the episcopal clergy petitioned for a share of the government, or at least to be relieved from the jurisdiction and protected from the dreaded violence of the presbyterian ministers, now ready to revenge imaginary wrongs. They were disappointed in both these objects, and now, as a last refuge, they resolved to send a deputation of their number to wait on king William, which produced some good effects. Dr. Canaries, Dr. Gardner, Mr. Leisk, and Mr. Forbes, were sent over to Flanders, and William thinking their request reasonable, promised them his pro-





tection, and required the commission to act towards them with more justice and equity, and less harshness. He exacted a promise from the presbyterian deputies to receive the episcopal clergy into a share of the government, and it would appear from the tenor of William's second letter that the commission had given some such promise under their hands. The following petition was therefore drawn up in London, and sent down for the episcopal clergy to sign and present to the commission:—

“ TO THE reverend the ministers and others, by law empowered to establish the judicatories of the church of Scotland, the humble petition of the ministers of the episcopal persuasion—

“ HUMBLY SHEWETH, that whereas episcopacy is by law abolished in this kingdom, we, who in the most dangerous times manifested our zeal against popery, are now ready to give all the assurances of our firmness to the protestant religion, and of our duty and fidelity to their majesties king William and queen Mary. We are farther ready and willing, in our respective charges and stations, to do every thing that is incumbent on us as ministers of the gospel, for advancing the power of religion or repressing of scandal and vice, and for the securing the peace and quiet of their majesties' government; and to act in church judicatories for carrying on of these ends, without any regard to the difference of persuasion in matters that are not fundamental. We do therefore humbly and earnestly desire, that, in order to these ends, we may be suffered to act as presbyters in this church, in our several precincts and parishes.”

WHEN this petition was submitted to the clergy, the major part of them declined to sign it, for obvious reasons. Some of them prognosticated failure from the known temper and disposition of the presbyterians, and said it would be a mere prostitution of their reputations to make an offer that was sure to be rejected; whilst others considered that by this petition they would surrender at once the whole cause of catholic episcopacy to the presbyterians, and therefore they refused to sign it. But in the diocese of Aberdeen it is said “the most part condescended,” that is, agreed to sign the document; and accordingly they commissioned Mr. Leisk and Mr. Small to attend on the commission at Edinburgh, and in their names to present it. But the commission were not disposed to receive it. The moderator referred him to the commission for the north side of the Tay; to which Mr. Leisk replied, that there was no commission then sitting north of that river;



that Kennedy was moderator of both commissions, but especially that the king's letter was addressed to the south commission, which was appointed to receive applications; and finally, if the petition was rejected, that he would protest. Kennedy bid him please himself; so Mr. Leisk protested against the commission, and withdrew. Whilst Mr. Leisk and the moderator were engaged, one of the presbyterian ministers got up, and, with a furious countenance, seized Mr. Small by the collar, and shook him violently, saying, "*ye are a pack of profane rascals, and deserve no pity, neither ought ye to be received.*"

ON THE SAME day, Mr. Wood, minister of Dunbar, and Mr. Denoon, presented a copy of the foregoing petition, signed by about a dozen clergymen of that presbytery; and as they were all resident on the south side of the Tay, the commission had not the same pretence to get rid of them. But the commission made the discovery that some of the petitioners had been deposed for gross immoralities, and that the others *ought to have been* deposed for the same cause; and therefore their address was also rejected. Mr. Wood therefore protested, and left the court. The public blamed both parties, as having acted without sufficient candour; for although both expressed willingness to unite, yet both stood aloof. There were so few presbyterian ministers, that the accession of some of the ejected clergy might have been desirable; but, in truth, the dominant faction rather chose to let parishes remain vacant than to admit episcopalians into them; and therefore they introduced a new barrier amongst their conditions, which was an acknowledgment that episcopacy itself, and compliance with it, *were sinful*. Three stars only, fell from the heaven of the church, made this acknowledgment, and heartily apostatised—Mr. Arnot, Mr. Menzies, and Mr. Hugh Nisbet. The first of these was minister of Ginglekirk, in Berwickshire, and diocese of Edinburgh; and he was so sordidly covetous that he offered to do penance in as many churches as the commission might appoint, rather than part with his benefice. Menzies was originally a hill preacher, but submitted, was episcopally ordained, and appointed to a parish church, which he deserted, and joined the rebels at Bothwell Bridge. He afterwards surrendered to the king's mercy, and was restored to his benefice, which he now retained by apostatising to his original principles<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Historical Relation of the First Presbyterian General Assembly, 1690, *passim*.



BEFORE the rising of the parliament of 1690, an act was passed against those clergy that had been deprived for refusing to read the proclamation of the 13th of April. Some of the clergy had so far obeyed their sentence as not to officiate in their own churches, yet they preached in the neighbouring churches, because their deprivation was confined only to one place. Although the council had *deprived* them, it had not unministered them; and it was still lawful to preach where they had occasion. They thought they had but too much occasion to preach in neighbouring churches, considering how many vacancies had been made, and how few had been planted with presbyterian ministers; so very few, says an anonymous author, "that you should have found six, eight, or ten churches all empty in one neighbourhood. Besides, they preached nothing but the solid and substantial points of christianity—*faith and repentance*. They did not meddle with crowns and sceptres and governments, but they made it their work to persuade people to a sober, righteous, and godly life." This mode of evading the law, and of preserving the face of religion amongst the people, irritated the presbyterian party in the council, and they procured an act of council to render the land still more desolate:—we "do hereby prohibit and discharge the whole foresaid ministers, deprived as said is, to preach, or exercise any part of the ministerial government, either in churches or elsewhere, upon any pretext whatsoever, until first they present themselves before the lords of their majesty's council, and there . . . swear and subscribe the oath of allegiance, &c."

NONE OF THE clergy qualified themselves in this manner. "They were forced, therefore, to choose the other side of the alternative, and cease from the public exercise of their ministry, either in churches or elsewhere, and did so for a certain time, till they looked about them, and considered a little better. And then, in several places, they adventured to have divine worship somewhat publicly in their own houses; that is, they prayed and sang psalms, and also gave their families a sermon, but they did not shut their gates, but left them open, that whosoever pleased might meet with them. This gave mighty provocation to the presbyterian preachers, for wherever this was done, it emptied their conventicles of a great many of the common sort; and besides, the gentry generally flocked to these private meetings of the deprived men; which was an insupportable grievance and trouble to the brethren. . . . But what remedy was proper for so dangerous a disease?" Should they cite the clergy before their presbyteries or synods, they





would not have appeared, as they did not recognise their ecclesiastical authority; and to excommunicate them would be to as little purpose, because the temporal pains and penalties, which alone made it formidable, had been taken away, and as for the spiritual effect of it, the clergy only laughed at it. Parliament was not now sitting, and therefore the presbyterian ministers gave in a long list of these private preachers to the council, but that body only thought proper to cite Dr. Waddell, archdeacon of St. Andrews, and Dr. Nicolson, parson of Erroll, in the county of Perth, and diocese of St. Andrews<sup>1</sup>. Dr. Waddell was a presbyterian minister before the Restoration; but he readily conformed to the episcopal church, and when she fell into persecution he took his lot with her in her depression as he had done in her prosperity<sup>2</sup>.

DR. WADDELL was deprived because he refused to read the proclamation so often mentioned, for the disowning of king James, and for not having prayed for king William and queen Mary as king and queen of Scotland before Whitsunday, 1689; and that, too, before they had become such by having taken the coronation oath. Another of his crimes was, that he had preached and read prayers in his own house to his own family in St. Andrews, without having taken the qualifying oath of allegiance, and giving it under his hand that he should pray for the king and queen by name, and taking the Assurance.

DR. NICOLSON'S sin against the state had many different circumstances attending it. Erroll is a considerable parish in the Carse of Gowrie, one of the richest tracts of land in Scotland, and it was divided into a great many estates. The heritors were all churchmen, or *malignants*, as their adversaries called them, except two, and a very small number of inferior people, whom they had persuaded to turn with the times. These determined to have a presbyterian preacher into the parish, and, on the 10th of May, they brought forward a young man of the name of Tullidaff, with the view of intruding him into the church; but the other parishioners having got notice of their intentions, convened in considerable numbers, and met Tullidaff and his guards as they were entering the churchyard. One of the presbyterian lairds began to harangue and soothe them, "but the resolute clowns were not to be wrought upon by such whining rhetoric, and therefore they told that gentleman briskly that the preacher would do best to be gone without further noise, for that day he

<sup>1</sup> Account of the late Establishment of Presbyterian Government.

<sup>2</sup> Bishop Walker's Gaelic Sermon, note, p. 42.





should not enter the church of Erroll." The presbyterians then began to offer blows, but they were soundly beaten, and Tullidaff with his friends were obliged to retreat.

DURING this scene, Dr. Nicolson, who, though he had been deprived, yet, by favour of the heritors, still kept possession of the manse, was engaged in divine worship, with his own family in it. In a few days he was summoned before the council, and accused of having been the instigator of that day's tumult. The public prosecutor cited a great many acts of parliament, from the Reformation to that time, to shew the care that had ever been taken of the clergy. He was ordered to quit the manse, and leave the parish, which was declared vacant. "A great many more acts of parliament might have been cited; for we have had enough to that purpose, occasioned by the insults, invasions, and murders, committed by the presbyterian party in Charles the Second's time. But that for which I have transcribed this narrative is chiefly this, that on the one hand you may see the piety of our former parliaments in the protection of clergymen, so, on the other, you may take occasion to consider what a spirit prevailed in the last session of our parliament, which justified and approved the deed of the rabble against so many clergymen; and whether we have not now a very impartial government, when the same laws which must be buried in deep silence, when the case concerns the episcopal clergy, are thus awakened and made cry so loudly when the presbyterian interest stands in need of them<sup>1</sup>."

BUT ALL the oppressions of the late Assembly and its commissions were far from satisfying the desire of many of the ministers for vengeance on the episcopal clergy. "It is wished," says Willison, "that the act [appointing the fast] had been more full and explicit with respect to the shedding of the blood of God's *saints and martyrs* under prelacy, the king's ecclesiastic supremacy then advanced to a most blasphemous height, the self-contradictory oath of the abominable Test, and the *fearful indignities done to our covenants*, which we find mentioned by subsequent assemblies, and for which there is cause of mourning and humiliation to this day. Likewise we wish they had done more to retrieve the honour of these broken and burnt covenants, by openly asserting the lawfulness and obligation of them, and *applying to the civil powers for their concurrence to renew them*." Here is the incon-

<sup>1</sup> An Account of the late Establishment of Presbyterian Government, 4to. 77-78.

<sup>2</sup> Fair and Impartial Testimony, p. 25.



sistency of *false* principles; they theoretically deny the regal supremacy, but yet in reality are obliged to succumb to it.

THE AFFAIRS of Scotland gave William much trouble, and he began to find the grand mistake he had made in the outset of his government by suffering the presbyterian party to gain the ascendancy. It is admitted by their own partizans that he was thoroughly disgusted with the presbyterians, and Hetherington says, he was "irritated at the failure of his scheme [of relieving the episcopalians] based on a compromise: the king adjourned the meeting of the Assembly from November till January, 1692, in the hope that this mark of his *displeasure* might render the church more compliant<sup>1</sup>." William found it necessary to assert his supremacy, not indeed by blustering words, which was not his way, but by substantial actions; and therefore he would not suffer the Assembly to meet that had been appointed for the first day of November. He prorogued it till January next year, and even Hetherington admits that "the conduct of the church [that is, the Assembly,] is perhaps *more censurable* than that of William." This prorogation was very disagreeable to the ministers, but as their number was so small they dared not venture on attempting to meet in opposition to the royal authority; especially as the episcopal clergy might then have regained the court favour. "The spirit of presbytery," says Dr. Monro, "is a spirit of tyranny, and *cannot endure to obey*, and therefore such as are fully poisoned with their principles (whenever the decisions of the public contradict their own peculiar plan and scheme) immediately fly in the face of that authority they formerly pretended to support, and by general words, which at the bottom have no particular signification, but what they please to put upon them, they pick quarrels and exceptions against their own judicatories and governments, civil and ecclesiastical<sup>2</sup>."

THE DAY after the Assembly had been adjourned by royal proclamation, Mr. Erskine, in his sermon in the Tron church, said—"Sirs, ye heard a strange proclamation the other day, which I hope the authors may repent of some day; it brings to my mind, sirs, an old story of king Cyrus, who once set his hands fairly to the building of God's house, but his hand was not well in the work when he drew it out again: all is well that ends well, sirs; for what think ye became of king Cyrus, sirs? I'll tell you that now, sirs; he e'en made an ill end—he e'en died a bloody death in a strange land. I wish

<sup>1</sup> History, 184.

<sup>2</sup> Apology, p. 69.



*the like* may not befall our king: they say comparisons are odious; but I hope he will not think that Scripture comparisons are so. Whatever you may think, I am sure of this, that no king but king Jesus has power to adjourn our General Assembly<sup>1</sup>."

1692.—THE HISTORY of the church at this period is exceedingly defective; the bishops, having been expelled from their houses, and from all legal jurisdiction, retired to such places as their poverty enabled them to procure. The history of the inferior clergy and their severe sufferings are so mixed up with that of the presbyterian ministers, that they cannot be separated. The episcopal clergy observed not only the fasts and festivals of the church, but also the state fasts and festivals, particularly the martyrdom of king Charles on the 30th of January. A short time before that occasion, the privy council, by the advice of all the judges, sent one of their number to the Commission, which was then sitting, to desire them to appoint a minister to preach before the council in St. Giles's church on the 30th of January, according to custom and the act of parliament which had not been repealed, intimating, at the same time, that the council expected a sermon proper for the occasion, according to the laws and customs of the nation. To observe that fast would have been very inconsistent, for it was the *principles* as well as the actions of their predecessors that occasioned the great national sin for which they were required to fast and mourn. But they had not so far repented of that execrable crime as to comply with the desire of the privy council; and so they returned the following characteristic answer:—"Let the council mind their own business, for we are to receive no directions from the state, nor to take our measures from the council, especially in preaching anniversary sermons." Upon a little reflection, however, they found William's supremacy was one of real effect, and was not to be trifled with; they thought it better to appear to consent, rather than to be compelled by the council. They appointed Shields, one of the most wild and bigotted of their number, and as it happened that the anniversary fast fell that year on one of their own weekly preaching days, the compliance did not carry the appearance of yielding to the authority of the privy council. All the notice, however, which he took of the king's murder was—"Ye, sirs, perhaps some of you, may foolishly fancy that I came here to-day to preach to you concerning the death of

<sup>1</sup> Scotch Presbyterian Eloquence Displayed, p. 31.





king Charles the First. What! preach for a man that died forty years ago! If it be true what some histories tell of him, he is very much wronged; but if it be true what *we believe* of him, and have ground for, *he is suffering the vengeance of God in hell this day, for his own and his forefathers' sins!*"<sup>1</sup>

THE MARQUIS of Tweeddale was made lord chancellor, and lord Melville was reduced to an inferior post, and most of his creatures were dismissed; several of those who had been in Montgomery's plot were brought into the council and ministry, and Johnston of Warriston was recalled from Brandenburg, and made secretary of state. The adjourned meeting of the Assembly took place on the 15th of January. The presbyterians had very much offended the king, and their fury was instrumental in raising great jealousies of him in England. He foresaw the bad effects that this was likely to produce, and therefore he recommended to the Assembly, (Willison says, "he pressed *strongly*,") to secure the episcopal clergy to an union with them in the government. In case the Assembly could not be brought to comply, he instructed his commissioner to dissolve it, and not to name any other day or place for their meeting again. In his letter the king desired them to admit such of the episcopal clergy as were willing to submit to, and comply with, a formula which he sent down, and appointed to be the terms of communion betwixt the parties. The terms proposed were such, it seems, that presbyterians of moderation might have rejoiced at; but they were "insolently rejected, and exclaimed against by all the Assembly." They asserted that king William designed to dethrone king Jesus; that the prescribing any formula to them was an encroachment on Christ's kingdom, and a violent usurpation of his privileges; that any formula but the covenant is of the devil's making, and ought not to be tolerated by presbyterians. Burnet observes, "the presbyterians, who at all times were *stiff and peevish*, were more than ordinarily so at this time: they were jealous of the king; their friends were now disgraced, and their bitterest enemies were coming into favour: so they were *surly*, and would abate of no point of their government." As the earl of Lothian, the commissioner, found them so intractable, in accordance with his instructions he dissolved the Assembly without appointing any other time or place for another meeting. At first they were disposed to have disputed the supremacy, but the commissioner was firm; the moderator asked whether his grace would not appoint a day for the

<sup>1</sup> Presbyterian Eloquence, 30.



next meeting, and he was informed that his majesty would appoint another in due time, of which they should receive timely notice; and, says Dr. M'Crie, "the Assembly of 1692 remains to this day a *blank* in the printed records of the church<sup>1</sup>."

THE MODERATOR then declared their intrinsic power to meet annually in the name of their king Jesus, either with or without the consent of the crown, and spoke as follows:—"This Assembly, and all the members of this national church, are under the greatest obligations possible to his majesty; and if his majesty's commands to us had herein any or all our concerns in the world, we would have laid our hands upon our mouth and been silent; but they being for a dissolution of this Assembly, without indicting another to a certain day, therefore, having been moderator to the Assembly, I, in their name, they adhering to me, humbly crave leave to declare, that the office-bearers in the house of God have a spiritual intrinsic power from Jesus Christ, the only head of his church, to meet in assembly about the affairs thereof, the necessity of the same being first represented to the magistrate: and further, I humbly crave that the dissolution of this Assembly, without indicting a new one to a certain day, may not be to the prejudice of our yearly General Assembly. granted us by the laws of the kingdom." Here the members rose up, and with one voice declared their adherence to what the moderator had said; and so pretending to act independently, they adjourned themselves, and the moderator named the third Wednesday of August, 1693, for their next meeting. "The moderator, in his prayer immediately after its dissolution, reflected upon king William, as sent in wrath to be a curse to God's kirk. He and the whole Assembly protested against the king's power to dissolve them; and before his commissioner *disclaimed* all his authority that way. Afterwards, to make their testimony (that is, their word for treason) public, they went to the cross of Edinburgh, and took a formal protestation, after the old manner, against the king, in behalf of the people of God, by which they intend their own subjects. The magnanimous earl of Crawford vowed, before the commissioner, that he would adhere to the protestation with his life and fortune—two things equally great and valuable." "These proceedings," says Burnet, "were represented to the king as a high strain of insolence, that invaded the rights of

<sup>1</sup> Testimony Assoc. Synod Orig. Seceders, note, p. 39.



the crown, of which he was become very sensible. Most of those who came now into his service made it their business to incense him against the presbyterians, in which he was so far engaged that it did alienate that party much from him<sup>1</sup>."

THE PRESBYTERIAN ministers began to consider that the throne of their invisible king, that is, their own dominion, was in some danger from their *visible master*, and were accordingly preparing to assert the rights and dignity of the former, when an event occurred which startled the whole island from its propriety, and drew both their own and other people's attention to another scene of the Revolution. Although William had seized the crown, and had long had secure possession of it, yet many had never acknowledged his right, and some especially of the Highland clans had never submitted to his government. The earl of Bredalbane had formed a scheme of reducing the Highland chiefs to obedience by bribing them; and having represented the practicability of this project to king William, he was entrusted with fifteen thousand pounds, to be distributed among the chieftains. He cajoled them, through the medium of emissaries, that the best way of serving king James was to bide their time, and to take the oaths to William in the meantime, which would be satisfactory to the latter, and they might still act for king James when a favourable opportunity occurred. But when the chiefs nosed out that Bredalbane had money to distribute, they instinctively rose in their demands, and their price became greater than he had funds to satisfy. They increased their price also, in the consideration, sagaciously enough entertained, that their noble briber intended to keep the largest share of the allegiance-money to himself, which gave a keener edge to their appetite. "Amongst the most clamorous and obstinate of these was Macdonald, the chief of Glencoe;" that is to say, this unfortunate chief stood out longest, in hopes of getting a better share of the money, and of course of reducing Bredalbane's own proportion. This was, no doubt, very irritating to his lordship, who was obliged to disgorge the whole sum; and Burnet says, "the head of that valley had so particularly provoked lord Bredalbane, that as his scheme was quite defeated by the opposition that he raised, so he designed *a severe revenge*." William had offered an indemnity to all that were in arms, or who objected to the oath of allegiance, on their taking the oaths against a certain day,

<sup>1</sup> Burnet's Own Times, iv. 155-157—Presbyterian Eloquence, 31, 32—Willison's Testimony, pp. 25, 26.





which had been several times prolonged, but at last was fixed to the 31st of December, 1691, with a threat of military execution against outstanders.

THE TERRIFIED chiefs complied with more or less reluctance, except Macdonald, of Glencoe, who stood out to the last day; but on the 31st of December he went to the governor of Fort William, and offered to take the oaths. Not being a magistrate that officer could not administer the oath, and Macdonald had to seek his way, in the best manner he could, through the deep snow, in search of a magistrate, which, in that country, and at that time, were few and far between. It was therefore the 5th of January before this unfortunate chief could travel through the deep snow, in a mountainous and thinly-peopled country, and discover a magistrate, who administered the oath to him, although, in strict law, the time had expired. This fact was concealed from king William, when the earl of Bredalbane came to court to restore the allegiance-money; but he accused Macdonald of having been the chief instrument of defeating his designs; "and that he might both *gratify his own revenge*, and render the king *odious* to all the Highlanders, he proposed that orders should be sent for a military execution on those of Glencoe. An instruction was drawn up by the secretary of state [Dalrymple, the master of Stair], to be both signed and countersigned by the king, (that so he might bear no part of the blame, but that it might lie wholly on the king,) that such as had not taken the oaths by the time limited should be shut out of the benefit of the indemnity, and be received only upon mercy. But when it was found that this would not authorise what was intended, a second order was got, to be signed and countersigned, that if the Glencoe men could be separated from all the rest of the Highlanders, some examples might be made of them, in order to strike terror into the rest." Ralph observes, that if lord Bredalbane was a jacobite, the master of Stair was not, any more than his brother secretary Johnston; and that how far soever Bredalbane might have been instrumental to the massacre, by his representations at court, *Stair was the man* who took such pains to make it as terrible as possible." William signed this atrocious paper, it is said, without knowing its contents; for he procrastinated business till there was a great heap of papers came before him for signature, and then he signed them without any inquiry; but at all events he was kept in ignorance of Macdonald's having tardily signed the oaths. Dalrymple, the secretary of state, wrote most pressing letters to Livingston, the commander-in-chief in Scotland,





giving him "positive orders that no prisoners should be taken, that so the execution should be as terrible as possible;" and he described all the passes in the valley so minutely, that none but one intimately acquainted with them could have done, and ordered them all to be secured, to prevent the escape of the unfortunate inhabitants. He pressed this, says Burnet, "with strains of vehemence, that looked as if there was something more than ordinary in it; he, indeed, grounded it on zeal for the king's service, adding, that such rebels and murderers should be made examples of<sup>1</sup>."

FOR THE accomplishment of this most perfidious and cruel slaughter, a company of Argyle's Highland regiment, under the command of captain Campbell, of Glenlyon, was sent into the valley in the month of February, under pretext of levying the taxes. They were kindly received by the unsuspecting inhabitants, who thought themselves secure from all hostilities. Macdonald was at first somewhat suspicious of his new guests, but captain Campbell's assurances were so friendly, and his men lived upon such social terms with the clansmen, that their suspicions subsided, and animosities were forgot. Even the night before the massacre the old chieftain and the perfidious commanding officer spent some hours together at cards! Some circumstances revived the suspicions of one of the younger Macdonalds, who, with his brother, left the house to ascertain what was going on. From the conversation of the sentinels their suspicions became certainties; but before they could return and put their father on his guard, the massacre had commenced. Old Macdonald was murdered in his bed and in his wife's arms, who survived him but a few hours. A neighbouring gentleman, in the house on a visit, shared the same fate, although he had a government protection in his pocket; and Drummond, a subaltern officer, coolly stabbed a boy of eight years of age, while he was embracing his knees and imploring his mercy. The whole number that were butchered, and the most of them in their beds, was thirty-eight; and when the sword had done its worst, then fire completed this atrocious scene. The houses of the wretched sufferers were set on fire, and the women, and old men above seventy, who were not included in the order to be massacred, were turned naked into the fields in that inclement season and desolate country, to starve of hunger, cold, and lacerated feelings. The murderers drove off nine hundred cattle, two hundred horses, besides a great number of sheep and goats, to

<sup>1</sup> Ralph's History, ii. 333—Burnet's Own Times, iv. 157-160.



the garrison of Inverlochy, where they were divided amongst the assassins. Providentially the severity of the weather prevented other troops from being sent to secure the passes, so that the two younger Macdonalds, with about a hundred and sixty males, made their escape; but many of the women perished in the cold. Two officers were sent under arrest to Glasgow, because they had refused to break their parole to Macdonald, or to take any share in this inhuman massacre<sup>1</sup>.

"THIS BARBAROUS massacre," says Smollett, "performed under the sanction of king William's authority, answered the immediate purpose of the court, by striking terror into the hearts of the jacobite Highlanders, but at the same time excited the horror of all those who had not renounced every sentiment of humanity, and produced such an aversion to the government, as all the arts of the ministry could never totally surmount. A detail of the particulars was published at Paris, with many exaggerations, and the jacobites did not fail to expatiate upon every circumstance, in domestic libels and private conversation. The king, alarmed at the outcry which was raised upon this occasion, ordered an inquiry to be set on foot, and dismissed the master of Stair from his employment of secretary: he likewise pretended that he had subscribed the order amidst a heap of other papers, without knowing the purport of it; but as he did not severely punish those who had made his authority subservient to their own cruel revenge, the imputation stuck fast to his character, and the Highlanders, though terrified into silence and submission, were inspired with the most implacable resentment against his person and administration<sup>2</sup>."

THE SENTIMENTS expressed by Dr. Fitzwilliam in his letter to lady Russell were those that actuated the whole non-juring body both in England and Scotland, and therefore we cannot wonder at their acting as they did in refusing the oaths to the new dynasty. The deprived bishops made part of the episcopal college in both kingdoms, and they entered into close union and communion together. Nevertheless they acted on the church's principle of non-resistance to the powers that were in possession of the crown, and raised no rebellion; they neither appealed to the people, nor preached them into tumults and riots.

THE EPISCOPAL church, when it was established in Scot-

<sup>1</sup> Burnet's Own Times, iv. 157-161—Guthrie's General History, 308-313—Hume's England, ix. 145-151.

<sup>2</sup> Continuation of Hume, ix. 149.



land, celebrated all the fasts and festivals of the christian church throughout the world, but presbyterians observed no festivals at all, but only the fasts of their *own* appointment. These were generally held for factious purposes, and it is somewhat remarkable, that whenever they had any conspiracy in hand, either against the church or the state, it was always preceded by one or more of these humanly appointed fasts. The festivals of the church preserve and increase true devotion, and her fasts assist in mortifying the spirit of men; but the christian church has not left these anniversary observances to the caprice of individual ministers. By her excellent discipline she has so ordered them, that it is impossible to forget the faith into which christian men have been baptized; and this visible practice of the church preaches faith and repentance more effectually, and makes more indelible impressions on the hearts of both young and old, than the ordinary sermons and the daily service. The festivals remind the human heart, which is at all times apt to become cold and insensible, of the great mercies of redemption, and enable the heart to expand in thanksgiving and praise. Fasting fixes the attention of the heart, delivers the soul from the oppressions of the body, and restores it to its true and native sovereignty over the lusts and passions. "The public seasons of devotion," says one of the lights of that generation, "are the catechism of the people. It is true, where there is no day fixed for the uniform celebration of a mystery, it may be remembered by some; but it is not credible that all the people will remember it; but when the day is fixed, we cannot forget it; and from our infancy we are easily trained in the nurture and admonition of the Lord, and in the simplicity of the christian religion, free from Jewish superstition ('touch not, taste not, handle not,' with which all our *sectaries are unhappily leavened*), as well as from giddiness and enthusiasm." But the presbyterians inverted the very nature of the Lord's day, and the very ends for which it was appointed, by appointing their fasts to be held on that day of thanksgiving and rejoicing for the resurrection of Christ. Their fasts also were generally appointed for envy and strife, and to tear the prelates and clergy in pieces, as limbs of antichrist and priests of Baal, as they usually called them. Although they will not celebrate the anniversary festivals of the church, yet the presbyterians annually commemorate the birth-day of the worthy George Herriot, who founded an hospital in Edinburgh for the education of the sons of tradesmen, perhaps on account of his having left five pounds to the preacher for the anniversary sermon! This is a sad reproach,





and from my heart I wish it were wiped away, that men, calling themselves christians, will keep an anniversary festival to commemorate the birth of a fellow-sinner, because he has *paid* for it, which is "the root of all evil," and obstinately refuse to celebrate the birth, passion, mighty resurrection, and glorious ascension of the blessed Redeemer of *all* mankind, and who is "the author and finisher of our faith!"

WODROW and others, when chronicling what they called the "sufferings of the presbyterians," have not produced one single fact of tyranny or oppression against the prelates, in the course of twenty-eight years. No sooner, however, did their party acquire power and an establishment, than they commenced and continued a system of tyranny and oppression unequalled, perhaps, by any similar persecution since the days of the first christian emperor. Their cruelty consisted not only to the bodies and families of the clergy, but to their characters and reputations; and these slanderous invectives have been kept up, nourished, and propagated to this day, with as much virulence and animosity as at the period under review. All this is the effect of the Covenant, which is a constant bond of rebellion against both church and state, and it may truly be called the master-piece of the jesuits; for certainly none of their most wicked contrivances have ever caused so much public and private evil as this fundamental principle that that most satanic body have imposed upon presbytery. The rev. Robert Calder, compiler of the Presbyterian Eloquence Displayed, has ingeniously demonstrated that the Solemn League and Covenant contains the number 666. I know not whether or not St. John, in the visions of the Apocalypse, designed to intimate the existence of the jesuits and their Solemn League and Covenant, as the name of the Beast, or the number of his name, and the mark which should distinguish the buyers and sellers in the spiritual market; but sure enough the *initial* letters of the title and the six articles of that popish document, without the preface and conclusion, contain precisely the "number of a man," 666:—the first article, 131; the second, 93; the third, 88; the fourth, 99; the fifth, 83; the sixth, 172=666. Whether or not the decided opposition of the presbyterians, and their contempt for the *cross*, is as likely to be the *mark* of the Beast, as the idolatrous use, and constant abuse, of that sacred symbol of our salvation by the papists, I leave the learned in these matters to determine.



## CHAPTER LVII.

## PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1692.—Threatened invasion.—Archbishop of Glasgow arrested, and sent to the Castle.—Affairs at Aberdeen.—1693.—Meeting of parliament.—The Assurance.—The opinions of the English presbyterians.—The Assurance refused—pressed on the episcopalians—their position.—Petition for an assembly—no meeting of assembly.—An assembly summoned and adjourned.—Difficulty in collecting the bishops' rents—tithes given to the patrons.—Death of archbishop Sancroft—character.—1694.—Oaths of Assurance and Allegiance.—Commissioner applies for instructions—his instructions—revoked, and others sent.—Remarks.—The ministers not required to take the oath.—A commission—instructions.—Objections to signing the Confession of Faith.—Ministers sent to the north.—Death of archbishop Tillotson.—Death of queen Mary.—1695.—Assembly adjourned.—A session of parliament.—The affair of Glencoe—three clergymen deprived and imprisoned—an act favourable to the clergy—some of them take the oaths.—Itinerating ministers.—Act against intruders.—Troops employed to collect the bishops' rents.—Act against baptism.—Death of the bishops of Brechin—of Caithness—and of Galloway.—Agitation.—Meeting of assembly—commissioner's speech.—1696.—Progress of atheism.—Scarcity and dearth of provisions.—Bishop Ramsay's death.—Publication of the Fundamental Charter of Presbytery.—Mr. Sage—his Cyprianic age—is obliged to conceal himself.—A session of parliament.—An association.—Acts.—1697.—Clergy arrested.—Plan for asserting the independence of the kirk.—Meeting of assembly.—1698.—An assembly—a commission—a session of parliament.—Increase of immorality.—Act against rabbling.—Seasonable warning.—Position of the bishops.—1699.—An assembly.—King's letter.—Colony of Darien.—An union proposed.—The principle on which the Revolution turned.—Application to the queen of Bohemia.—Consequences of the Revolution.—Disputed successions.—Royal supremacy.—The presbyterian ministers.—Reading the scriptures.—Remarks.

1692.—WE ARE informed by a modern writer, that "a season of half-suppressed dissatisfaction, intrigue, and jealousy, prevailed [among the presbyterians], tending greatly to alienate the mind of Scotland from William, and fostering the hopes of the jacobites, that they might, ere long, succeed in



overturning the government, and bringing back the exiled king<sup>1</sup>." And Burnet says—"While we were pleasing ourselves with the thoughts of a descent in France, king James was preparing for a *real* one in England. It was intended to be made in the end of April: he had about him 14,000 English and Irish, and marshal Belfonds was to accompany him with about 3,000 French. They were to sail from Cherbourg and La Hogue, and some other places in Normandy, and to land in Sussex, and from thence to march with all haste to London<sup>2</sup>." From the letters of a Mr. Mackay to lord Melville, we learn that an extensive correspondence was carried on with the jacobites in Scotland, for their co-operation in this invasion. This Mackay had insinuated himself into their confidence, and had betrayed them. He states, that the archbishop of Glasgow was a principal correspondent with the exiled court, and from whom he derived his best intelligence. He speaks also of another bishop, but does not name him, as giving him information. The lord archbishop of Glasgow was arrested, and committed to the Castle of Edinburgh; a circumstance that disconcerted Mackay's plans; and he says, "there could have nothing fallen out more unluckily than the apprehending the bishop of Glasgow at this juncture, he being the person from whom I had my surest intelligence, and one whom I am sure cannot be more active than in contriving against the government, and which he can do in prison as well as out of it<sup>3</sup>." This man also mentions, that he met the archbishop on his first introduction to his grace "at his elder brother's of St. Andrew's;" and perhaps archbishop Ross is the other bishop alluded to in Mackay's former letter.

THE REFUSAL of the clergy of Aberdeen to observe the fast that had been imposed on the church as a Test, and the declaration of the people of that city to defend and maintain their clergy, gave great offence to the government, and therefore they instituted an inquiry into the circumstances. In a letter to Mr. Carstares, the earl Crawford says, "the affair of Aberdeen is found very dirty, and the probation distinct. It is warrantably suspected that some of high quality, and in the government, had a deep share in the contrivance of that foul affair. There is likewise a sort of bond of association subscribed by all the disaffected in the place, not only undertaking to stand by their ministers, but protesting against any thing the commission should do. I presume his majesty will not

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington, p. 184.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, iv. 165.

<sup>3</sup> Carstares' Stat.: Papers, 128-135.





approve them in such a procedure to a commission of the assembly, delegated by that venerable meeting, consented to by his commissioner, and carrying the authority of parliament with it. . . . It does not sound well that presbyterian government being the legal establishment, their judicatories should be appealed from; which is a consequential, if not a direct, disclaiming the authority both of king and parliament. The deprived episcopal men are every where transgressing the law; preaching without qualifying themselves before the council; and, cross to the act of deprivation, preaching in their own parishes; yea, many of them setting up for calls, and mustering all the disaffected in the country for hearers to them. His majesty's former letter is the pretext for this behaviour. If some speedy course be not taken to remedy this, I am much afraid it will shake both church and state<sup>1</sup>."

1693.—BURNET informs us that "affairs in Scotland grew more and more out of joint;" and "the presbyterians began to see their error in driving matters so far, and in provoking the king so much; and they seemed desirous to recover his favour and to manage their matters with more temper<sup>2</sup>." The General Assembly had been dissolved by royal authority, and was not permitted to meet by the visible head of the kirk, notwithstanding its boasting of its intrinsic powers; but the commission sat regularly, and kept up the purging system. The country north of the Tay still presented difficulties to the supremacy of presbytery, and Willison says it was their "chief care and business for many years to get the north and highlands supplied and planted with proper ministers; they sent divers committees of the most experienced ministers to *purge and plant the north*, and transported many of the best ministers to that country<sup>3</sup>."

As WILLIAM found the presbyterians were now courting his favour, he thought there might be no risk in holding another session of parliament; and as means had been found to reconcile the duke of Hamilton to his government, he was appointed the commissioner. The session was opened on the 18th of April, by reading the king's letter, which was replete with compliments and cajoling expressions; and Smollet says, "the parliament proceeded to exhibit undeniable specimens of their good humour." They drew up an appropriate answer to the royal letter; they voted an addition of six regiments to the standing army; they granted a supply of above

<sup>1</sup> Carstares's State Papers, 146.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, iv. 216.

<sup>3</sup> Testimony, 27.





£150,000 sterling to his majesty; they enacted a law for levying men to serve on board the royal navy; they fined all the absentees; and they *purged* the house of all the members that would not take the Test or Assurance, which was equivalent to an abjuration of king James. Secretary Johnston told Carstares, "we keep off church affairs till those of state are done; but there is room enough even for them<sup>1</sup>."

KING WILLIAM was most thoroughly disgusted with the presbyterian ministers; but he had convinced them that he was the head of their kirk, by proroguing and dissolving their Assemblies. And he still farther humbled them by an act which was passed in this session, which obliged all in office to take the oath of allegiance to their majesties, and at the same time to sign the Assurance or Test, acknowledging William to be king *de jure* as well as *de facto*. The presbyterians thought it highly proper that the episcopalians should be called on to sign the Assurance, but they highly resented the meting out to them that measure which they had measured to the episcopalians. The presbyterian ministers accordingly took the alarm, and imagined that it was determined to involve them in the same trouble that they had contrived for the others; and they considered the imposition of this oath as a snare, in order that the king might consider them to be as unfriendly to his government as the episcopalians were supposed to be. They also considered the attempt to comprehend the episcopalian clergy with them, as "an engine to destroy presbytery;" and, in consequence, their irritation against William was very great. They considered the imposition of any civil oaths as a qualification to sit in church courts, as an erastian encroachment upon the freedom of a christian church, and therefore were resolved not to take the Assurance<sup>2</sup>.

A LETTER from an English presbyterian, after making some very sensible remarks upon revolutions, and the doctrine of deposing kings, and the deluges of blood which have always followed such events, says, by this oath, "you are not only obliged to assert this king-dethroning principle, but to seal it in the presence of Almighty God, by swearing allegiance to king William, *whose royalty is founded upon this principle alone*. How can you, with any manner of reason and justice, declare that your present governor is king *de jure* as well as *de facto*, seeing you will not pretend that you have looked into your ancient laws and constitution so narrowly that you have

<sup>1</sup> Carstares's State Papers, 154, 155.—Smollet's Continuation of Hume, 8vo. ix. 210.

<sup>2</sup> Life of Carstares, 51.



examined the grounds and reasons of king James's forfeiture, so exactly as to enable you to make so grave and so important a declaration? Or rather, have you not, by asserting in your Confession of Faith that difference of religion *doth not vacate* the subject's allegiance, *given up* what was declared by the meeting of estates to be *the most important reason* for forfeiting king James? There is a more particular tenderness expected from ministers of the gospel than from other men; they are not obliged implicitly to obey orders of state, nor to engage in the decisions of questions so intricate in themselves; for you do not know in what sense it is you are to declare your present governor king *de jure*—whether by right of blood, of election, or of conquest. All the three have been pleaded for; nor has the parliament decided the point." If these reasons stood good in the case of the presbyterian ministers, why should not the episcopal clergy have enjoyed the benefit of them? The letter writer goes on, "Amidst all the struggles amongst you about controverted titles to the crown, the church was never obliged by oaths to either of the contending parties. It never entered into the heart of any magistrate, either among you or among any foreign nations, to pursue such a policy, until of late that set and party began to bear sway in our public council. I find no instances of it in the history of England or Scotland, neither do the annals of the Roman empire, of France or Spain, where we have the most monstrous example of contending parties, furnish us with any precedent of this nature. The church of England, indeed, upon the revolution, has been by order of parliament obliged to take party oaths; for the present oath of allegiance is no other. But a great many of their clergy have stood out, though their laws give *some* countenance to a king *de facto*; whereas there is *no such pretence* by your laws. There is countenance to a king in possession without right [in blood], to be found in the language of your law; and yet you are obliged, by the last orders of your parliament, to declare a *right* as well as a *possession*, and a right, too, of an unknown, indefinite, and illimited nature<sup>1</sup>."

THE REASONING in this letter determined the presbyterian ministers to refuse all subscription to the Assurance; and as they bullied the government, they escaped the infliction of the penalty, but there was no relief for the episcopal clergy. This parliament, however, appeared to be desirous of granting the episcopalians some relief; but the conditions which were re-

<sup>1</sup> Cited in *Life of Carstares*, 52-57.



quired to obtain it, were such as exposed them more than ever to the fury of their adversaries. The conditions were, to acknowledge that the presbyterian was the only government of the church of Scotland; to subscribe the Westminster Confession of Faith, *as the confession of their own faith*; and to observe such uniformity of worship as was *then*, or should be *afterwards*, practised in the presbyterian kirk. This act statuted also "that *uniformity* of worship [this was levelled at the Liturgy, which was coming into use in the chapels of the episcopal clergy], and of the administration of all public ordinances within this church, be observed by all ministers and preachers, as the same are at present performed and allowed therein, or shall hereafter be declared by authority of the same; and that no minister or preacher be admitted or continued hereafter unless that he be subscriber to observe, and actually do observe, the said uniformity: and withal declaring, that if any of the said ministers who have not been hitherto received into the government of the church, shall offer to qualify themselves, and apply in manner aforesaid, they shall have their majesty's full protection, aye, and while they be so admitted: *Providing always*, that this act and the benefit thereof shall no ways be extended to such of the said ministers as are *scandalous, erroneous, negligent, or insufficient*, and against whom the same shall be verified within the space of thirty days after the said application."

BURNET SAYS the episcopal clergy were only required to make an address to the General Assembly, offering to subscribe to the Confession of Faith, and to submit to presbytery as the only government of the church. Within a fortnight after they had done this, if no matter of *scandal* was objected against them, the Assembly were to be obliged to receive them into the government of the kirk; but the act had expressly provided this loop-hole to evade the king's intentions, for it was an easy matter for them, in their loose way, to prove any or all of these four pleas of presbytery. But if the clergy would not agree to these terms, then the act engaged that the king should take them under his protection, and maintain such of them as had not been rabbled out of their churches, without any dependence on the presbyterian courts. The act farther provides, "that if any of the said ministers who have not been hitherto received into the government of the church, shall offer to qualify themselves, and to apply in manner foresaid, they shall have their majesty's full protection, aye, until they shall be admitted and received in manner foresaid." This, says Burnet, "was a strain of moderation that the presbyte-





rians were not easily brought to; a subscription that owned presbytery to be the only *legal* government of that church, *without* owning any *divine right* in it, was far below their usual pretensions. And this act vested the king with an authority very like that which they were wont to condemn as erastianism<sup>1</sup>. The privy council was empowered to tender the Assurance to all when they should see cause for it, and to fine and imprison all who should refuse it.

THE ACT for "settling the quiet and peace of the church<sup>2</sup>," besides enacting as above narrated, contains a *humble request* to his majesty to call a General Assembly for the ordering of the affairs of the church, and the admission to the exercise of church government of those ministers possessing churches who had not yet conformed. This clause was very offensive to the ministers, for they considered that it made them "homologate" the supremacy, and wounded the rights and privileges of the kirk, "since it supposes that there is no assembly in being by which the king's dissolution of the last Assembly is approved; the Assembly's protestation of adjournment is condemned, and the intrinsic power of the church in calling and continuing of assemblies *pro re nata*, with the right of annual assemblies, given him by the act of settlement, are struck off. . . . So that, in effect, an address of that nature is an address for the *extinguishing* rather than calling General Assemblies<sup>3</sup>." The earl of Lothian had named no day for the convocation of another Assembly, but the moderator appointed the third Wednesday of August for their next meeting. Notwithstanding their bluster about their intrinsic powers, when that day arrived not one of the ministers ventured to come to the capital, or to convene as an assembly; and therefore they *abdicated* their privileges, which, if they were *jure divino*, as they allege, they were guilty of a great sin! Dr. McCrie says, this "was a *blank* in the printed records of the church<sup>4</sup>," and on turning to the "printed records," we find no assembly betwixt the 16th of October, 1690, and the 29th of March, 1694. The privy council, by order of the king, who was then abroad, issued a proclamation summoning an Assembly to meet on the 6th December of this year; but before that date he adjourned it by proclamation till the 29th of March next year<sup>5</sup>. Willison apologises for the ministers; but he adds, "though still it must be owned it would have been much for

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, iv. 217

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parliamentorum, fol. p. 303

<sup>3</sup> Life of Carstares, 53.

<sup>4</sup> Testimony, note, p. 39.

<sup>5</sup> Acts of Assembly, p. 235.



the church's exoneration, that matters had been more plainly and closely laid to the door of the state, that the world might have seen where *the stop* was<sup>1</sup>. Although presbyterians wink hard at it, and count it among the predestinated things that could not be helped, yet "the world" can very easily see that "*the stop*" lay with the royal supremacy, which in William's hands was a matter of fact, and not of theory, as it unfortunately had been in former days.

IT REQUIRED all secretary Johnston's dexterity to ward off an inquiry into the massacre of Glencoe, at which several of the members expressed great indignation. All that had hitherto been done was the dismissal of Dalrymple from the office which Johnston now filled, of principal secretary of state. There was one Payne, too, an agent of king James's, who had been arrested, and the parliament was clear for bringing him to trial; but he gave them to understand that he could reveal much more than would secure his pardon; this so alarmed the commissioner and some other noblemen that he was allowed time to prepare his defence beyond the sitting of parliament, which was a device to allow him to escape.

SACRILEGE had been rampant in Scotland ever since the Reformation; and of course it was perpetuated at the Revolution. The whole of the lands and tithes belonging to the fourteen bishopricks were conveyed to the crown, and an act of parliament was made to authorise the government to quarter troops upon the tenants and others of the bishopricks of Argyle and the Isles, who were described as refractory. "Considering that several of the inhabitants within the bounds of the synods of Argyle and the Isles are very refractory in paying to the chamberlains and factors those rents which were formerly payable to the bishops of Argyle and the Isles, and to their majesties; and that the distance and inaccessibleness of these lands render legal executions not only difficult but ineffectual for inbringing of these rents, &c.;" therefore they authorise the quartering of troops upon the refractory parties. Doubtless these refractory gentlemen had desired to follow the example of their betters, and commit sacrilege on a small scale and upon their own account<sup>2</sup>. And a further robbery of God was perpetrated in another act, wherein "it is statuted and declared that the right of the tiends of parishes whereof patrons had formerly the presentation by that act abolished, and which tiends are not heritably disposed, should by virtue of that act *belong to the patrons*, with burthen always of the

<sup>1</sup> Testimony, 26.

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parliamentorum, p. 268.



minister's stipend and others therein expressed ; and that it is *just and reasonable* that the said benefit should be extended to the patrons of all parsonages and other benefices without exception<sup>1</sup> !”

ARCHBISHOP SANCROFT died on the 24th of November, and his remains were committed to the earth in the churchyard of Fresingfield, his native village, on the 27th of the same month. Dr. D'Oyley has drawn his character with great candour and ability. The non-juring bishops and clergy did not consider that any schism existed betwixt them and the established bishops, till *after* their sees had been filled up by other bishops ; and although they were of opposite political sentiments, yet they were on the best terms with each other as churchmen. The non-juring bishops considered the new bishops that had been appointed to their sees, as schismatical intruders, and the other bishops, who acknowledged them, as abettors of schism and betrayers of the catholic church. From that period, they looked on themselves and their adherents as constituting the only church in England that was in communion with the catholic church of the four first centuries. Of his private character, Dr. D'Oyley says, he “ was greatly eminent in his generation for the manner in which he fulfilled all the private and public duties of life. The various excellencies and virtues which adorned his character are sufficient to claim for him the tribute of admiration of posterity in general ; but by the protestant members of the church of England (and we may add, by protestants of all denominations in Britain) his name must ever be cherished with grateful recollection for the noble stand which he made at the hour of trial, in defence of the religious and civil liberties of the country ; a stand to which the preservation of that goodly fabric in church and state, which they inherit from their forefathers, is principally to be attributed.”

1694.—THE ASSURANCE was a bitter and most unpalatable pill for both parties to swallow ; but the presbyterians were now pushed to a point from which there was no escape. It must be taken before the Assembly could sit, by every member. They applied therefore to the council, *to dispense* with the law which enjoined them to take the oath of Assurance and allegiance. *Dispensing* with the laws was one of the very sins for which king James was faulted ; yet they could practise that themselves, which they condemned in him ! The privy council not only refused to exercise the dispensing power, but

<sup>1</sup> Acta, p. 305.





they issued an order that no member should be allowed to take his seat till he had first taken the oaths. The ministers were resolute in two things—first, not to take the oaths, and secondly, to hold their Assembly even if William should again exercise his prerogative, and either adjourn or dissolve them. Lord Carmichael, the commissioner, was however instructed, if they refused the oaths, to dissolve the Assembly in his majesty's name. The Edinburgh ministers assured his lordship, "that if this measure was persisted in, it would spread a flame over the country which it would not be in the power of such as had given his majesty these counsels to extinguish."

THE COMMISSIONER thought that a dissolution of this Assembly would be *fatal* to the kirk, even although it was declared to have been built on the inclinations of the people; he therefore sent an express to court, stating the opposition of the ministers, and requesting instructions how to act in this dilemma. With the same express the ministers also sent a despatch to Carstares, who was William's confidential chaplain, urging him to put out his hand and support their ark, now tottering to its fall. The lords Stair and Tarbat, although presbyterians, represented this obstinacy of the ministers as rebellion; and William would not encourage that sin by which he himself had risen; so an answer was returned that same day to the commissioner, instructing him to enforce the oaths, and if the ministers still persisted in refusing to take them, to dissolve the Assembly. Carstares was absent during this transaction, but he returned at a late hour, and before the messenger had set out on his return. After reading the memorial that had been sent to himself, he ascertained the nature of the answer that had been returned to the commissioner's despatch. There was no time to be lost. He ran in breathless haste to the messenger, whom he found on the very point of starting; in another minute he had been off, and the perusal of the despatches with which he was entrusted would have been the signal for "Michael's angels" to have "drawn to a head." The "mother of harlots," and her offspring, are not at all particular as to the *means* employed, provided the *end* in view may be obtained; so in this case Carstares thought the imminency of the danger justified him in telling a lie. He demanded the despatch from the messenger *in the king's name*. It was delivered on such an authority, and with which Carstares hurried to his majesty's apartment, who was then in bed and asleep. The lord in waiting refused him admittance, but gave way on being informed that he desired to see the king on business of the last importance.





ON REACHING the bedside he found his majesty fast asleep; so falling down on his knees to the visible head of the kirk, he made free to awake him. Astonished to see such an apparition, and in such an unusual posture, he hastily inquired the cause of such an intrusion on his privacy. Carstares said he came to beg his life, and then produced the king's despatch. Fierce is their wrath "when the rich blood of kings is set on fire." "Have you, indeed, presumed to countermand my orders?" said the king. Carstares acknowledged his fault, and entered into a long explanation; and, that he might not be farther interrupted, the king took the despatch, tore it up, and desired Carstares to "draw up the instructions to the commissioner in what terms he pleased, and he would sign them. Mr. Carstares immediately wrote to the commissioner, signifying that it was his majesty's pleasure to *dispense* with putting the oaths to the ministers; and when the king had signed it, he immediately despatched the messenger, who, by being detained so many hours longer than he intended, did not arrive in Edinburgh till the morning of the day fixed for the sitting of the Assembly<sup>1</sup>."

HERE was the exercise of the *dispensing* power to some purpose, which had cost James his crown. It is a constitutional maxim, that the king can do no wrong; because whatever wrong is done, it is the effect of the evil advice of his constitutional advisers: but Carstares was not a minister of state, had not consulted with any minister before achieving this daring and unconstitutional act, and the advice of ministers of state was set aside, and other counsels adopted in an important case, by the advice of a private chaplain. Father Petre, the jesuit, who was a privy councillor, did no more than Mr. Carstares, the presbyterian minister, now ventured to do. It was made a count in the indictment against king James, that he followed Petre's advice; but no blame was ever attached to William for this irregular transaction; and one of Carstares' correspondents had the modesty to write to him, that he could, "as plainly as sunshine, see Tarbat and old Stairs' hand in it." He calls the advice that these noblemen had given the king, "a gross act of leasing making;" and adds, "it were of great consequence that the fears of such future escapes were likewise removed, which can never be, so long as the procurer [Tarbat] is in that post, which may endanger a relapse. On my conscience, *he should lose his head for it*, if it were right; but to continue him in his post is un-

<sup>1</sup> Life of Carstares, 58-61.



pardonable, and the sooner he is turned out the better, as it would appear such a favour to the nation. . . . Now pray let the king be urged to remove him, and presently. He can have no great need of secretaries till he return; and then, if he be not convinced that it is best to rest on a single secretary, let him have another<sup>1</sup>."

As THIS important despatch did not reach Edinburgh till the morning of the day on which the Assembly met, both the commissioner and the ministers were in the utmost perplexity; but both parties had screwed up their courage to act their respective parts—the one to enforce the oaths and dissolve the Assembly, the other to refuse them, and to sit, in spite of the crown, as they did at Glasgow, in the year 1638. "Both of them were apprehensive of the consequences, and looked upon the event of this day's contest as decisive with respect to the church of Scotland, when, to their inexpressible joy, they were relieved by the return of the packet, countermanding the dissolution of the Assembly." King William had become extremely unpopular among the presbyterians, because he had been as good as his word, "that his authority should never be a *tool* to their *irregular passions*;" but this unconstitutional transaction reinstated him in their favour, and also established Carstares' credit, of whom they began to be jealous.

THE ASSEMBLY met on the 29th of March, when the laws were *dispensed* with in the case of the presbyterian ministers, and they were not required to take the assurance or the oath of allegiance: that was one advantage, at all events, they had gained by placing their hand on the sword. There is nothing connected with this history occurs till the 13th of April, when a commission for the ensuing year was appointed, chiefly with an eye to *purging* out the episcopal clergy in the north. Among their instructions there are the following clauses:—"6. That this Commission may receive into ministerial communion, such of the conforming ministers as (having qualified themselves according to law) shall apply personally to 'hem, one by one, duly and orderly, and shall acknowledge, engage, and subscribe upon the end of the Confession of Faith, as follows: viz.—' I, ——— do sincerely own and declare the above Confession of Faith, approved by former General Assemblies of this church, and ratified by law in the year 1690, *to be the confession of my faith*; and that I own the doctrine therein contained to be the true doctrine, which I will con-

<sup>1</sup> Life of Carstares, p. 63.



stantly adhere to; as likewise, that I own and acknowledge the presbyterian church government of the church, now settled by law in kirk sessions, presbyteries, provincial synods, and general assemblies, to be the only government of this church; and that I will submit thereto, concur therewith, and never endeavour, directly nor indirectly, the prejudice or subversion thereof; and that I shall observe uniformity of worship, and of the administration of all public ordinances within this church, as the same are at present performed and allowed.' And the commission is to have especial regard to their ministerial qualifications; and if any of the said ministers so applying, or any other ministers within this church, of what persuasion soever, shall be accused or informed against, *of any scandal, error, supine negligence, or insufficiency*, then the said commission shall make inquiry thereinto, cite parties, lead witnesses, take depositions, and do every other thing that may clear the matter of fact informed against them, and report the same, and their diligence therein, to the next General Assembly. Providing always, that if any be accused of gross uncontroverted scandals, and these clearly proven, in that case the commission shall proceed to determine as they find cause<sup>1</sup>."

THESE INSTRUCTIONS were evidently based on the act of parliament. Although it acted as a barrier, and was so intended, to the admission of those who retained their livings, into their presbyteries and other courts, yet Hetherington has the assurance to say that it "approached more nearly to what may be termed *undue concession* than to persecution; and, indeed, heavy complaints were made by many, and severe reproaches uttered by some, against the conduct of the Assembly, as indicating great laxity of principle, and tending to unfaithfulness in the important duty of preserving the purity and efficiency of the church—a charge which it would not be *easy* to meet with a complete and satisfactory vindication<sup>2</sup>." Was it no persecution, even to *tough* consciences, much more to *tender* ones, to be compelled to sign a document which contains the grossest heresies, inconsistencies, and contradictions; not as a bond of peace, but as the *bond fide* belief and confession of their own faith? It certainly was very great persecution to compel christian men to sign a system of doctrine that is corrupt and unsound in the faith, and antinomian, wherein those whom they count the elect are made secure in

<sup>1</sup> Acts of the General Assembly, 239, 240: Sess. 13, Act xi.    <sup>2</sup> History, p. 186.





their sins, however heinous, and though these sins are persevered in to their last breath. A system that makes God the author of sin, by denying free will in man, and asserting that men's actions are so predetermined, that they cannot be altered; and that the number of men and angels that are to be saved or condemned are so minutely fixed, that God himself can neither add to nor diminish their number! But this act itself is persecution; for instead of comprehending the episcopal clergy, as it was their pretence, it was as severe a test as could be worded in order to exclude them.

MOREOVER, the words of the act of parliament make it an act of uniformity in "worship, and which worship they must subscribe to observe, and declare that actually they do observe it." These are the words of the act, and the episcopal clergy were called upon to observe "that worship which, to the great scandal of all other protestant churches, hath thrown out that comprehensive prayer which Our Lord hath taught, and commanded us, when we pray, to say; with that religious hymn, so anciently enjoined and so constantly used in the church, to the honour of the Holy Trinity; rejecting also the apostolical creed in baptism, the great standard and summary of the christian faith, into which we are to be baptized, and admitting no other standard of our intercessions and prayers to Almighty God, no other forms of sound words, than the private conceptions of every pretender to be the mouth of a whole church assembly or congregation of God's people. And yet this is 'the uniformity of worship which they must subscribe to observe, and declare that actually they do observe it.' And if in any ways they dissent from any of these, then they incur the penalties contained in the act. Is this a toleration? . . . But as to the penalties, they must be suspended *tam ab officio quam a beneficio*; that is, both from their offices and benefices. First, from their offices; and that is, 'not to exercise any part of their ministerial function in any parish within the kingdom.' And is not this a penal law? The penalty, methinks, is heavy enough, to be deprived of bread, which the benefice implies; but yet heavier to be deprived of the exercise of all those sacred offices of religion to which they were consecrated. But this is not all, nor doth this negative consummate the penalty of this law; for if they continue to exercise any part of their ministerial function without subscribing and declaring as aforesaid, then they must incur banishment, and be for ever exiled from their native country, and exposed to all the miseries of poverty and distress among strangers. If this be a



*toleration*, they have it; and if these be not *penal* laws, where are they to be found?<sup>1</sup>

"THE INCLINATIONS of the people" in the northern parts of the kingdom had still resisted the advances of presbytery, and it was found necessary to make an act "for the supply of the North," on account of "the many vacancies in this church by north the water of Tay, and the *paucity* of ministers in these parts." Sixteen ministers, being all that could be spared, were sent to itinerate in that large portion of the kingdom, which was then filled with the episcopal clergy, to whom the people steadily adhered, in order to introduce division and strife, and by these means to plant presbyterianism, "and to illumine those parts where *prelatic darkness* prevailed<sup>2</sup>."

ON THE 17th of November, archbishop Tillotson was taken ill, while officiating in the chapel at Whitehall, of a fit of the dead palsy, and died on the 22d at Lambeth, in the 65th year of his age. Burnet preached his funeral sermon, and says, "he was not only the best preacher of the age, but seemed to have brought preaching to perfection; his sermons were so well heard and liked, and so much read, that all the nation proposed him as a pattern, and studied to copy after him." Both the king and the queen were much affected with his death, especially the latter, who seldom mentioned him without tears. Burnet says, "he died so poor, that if the king had not forgiven his first-fruits, his debts could not have been all paid: so generous and charitable was he, in a post out of which Sancroft had raised a great estate, which he left to his family." Malignity and mendacity are here most transparently blended. It is well known that Dr. Sancroft expended the revenues of his see in hospitality and charity, and died in great poverty; and left no other estate to his family than his father had left to himself—of about £50 per annum, in his native village. Dr. Tennison, bishop of Lincoln, was elevated to the see of Canterbury—a dull and covetous man, "a zealous party man, and the only divine in the church of England over whom the Roman Catholics had any advantage in king James's reign<sup>3</sup>."

QUEEN MARY did not long survive her favourite archbishop Tillotson. She was taken ill of small-pox of the most malignant sort, and Dr. Ratcliffe had been both negligent and unskilful in the treatment of her malady. She died on the 28th

<sup>1</sup> The Case of the Episcopal Clergy of Scotland truly represented. Folio, 1, 2.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Assembly, Act 4, Sess. 14.

<sup>3</sup> Salmon's Chronology, ii. 273—Burnet's Own Times, and the Editor's Notes, iv. 243, 244.



December, in the thirty-third year of her age, and the sixth of her reign. She was attended in her last moments by archbishop Tennison, and received from him the blessed sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ. The earl of Dartmouth, in a manuscript note to Burnet's Own Times, says, "the earl of Nottingham, who was much in her confidence, told me, he was very sure, if she outlived her husband, she would have done her utmost to have restored her father; but under such restrictions as should have prevented his ever making any attempts upon the religion or liberties of his country." Out of a long and exceedingly high character which this queen has received, I shall only select one paragraph:—"She was a perfect example of conjugal love, chastity, and obedience. She set her husband's will before her as the rule of her life; her admiration of him made her submission not only easy, but delightful; and it is remarkable, that when Dr. Tennison went to comfort the king, his majesty answered—"that he could not but grieve, since he had lost a wife, who, in seventeen years, had never been guilty of an indiscretion." . . . . To sum up all, she was a tender and respectful wife, a kind friend, a gentle mistress, a debonair queen, a good christian, and the best of women<sup>1</sup>."

1695.—WHEN THE last Assembly rose, the commissioner appointed the next meeting to be on the first Thursday in April, but the king thought fit to adjourn it to the 11th of July, and again to the 20th of November; and it appears that the ministers were obliged to petition king William to call another Assembly. Sir James Stuart, the lord-advocate, writing to Carstares, says—"I desire to know your thoughts, if it be advisable that they [the synod of Lothian] address the king for a new Assembly, to sit some time before August next, and the sooner the better; if it can stand with the conveniency of his majesty's affairs, it may be it will not be unacceptable to the king. You can judge of the obvious consequence of it. I know some who would be glad of it, although it should be but a very short session, if it were no more but to appoint a commission for the north, for taking in some of the best of the incumbents, in some places almost a whole presbytery: as, for example, that of Strathbogie, in Moray; in other places but three or four in a presbytery, as they can be had; that *so there may be a more full representation of the national church* in the next ensuing General Assembly." William,

<sup>1</sup> The History of King William, vol. ii. 407—Burnet's Own Times, iv. 245-250.





however, did not suffer the Assembly to meet till the 17th of December<sup>1</sup>.

A SESSION of parliament was held, and the marquis of Tweeddale was sent down as the royal commissioner. After the royal letter had been read, in which the king regretted that public affairs prevented his presiding in this parliament in person, the marquis expatiated on his majesty's care and concern for their safety and welfare, and his firm purpose to maintain the presbyterian discipline. The earl of Annandale, who was president for this session, took notice of the fresh assurances they had of his majesty's firm resolution to maintain presbytery, and added, "he hoped the moderation and calmness that should at this time appear in all their proceedings, in church matters, would satisfy the world that this is the government most agreeable to the temper and inclination of this people, and most suitable for the interest and support of their king, the civil government and peace of this kingdom." A dutiful answer was voted to the king's letter, and an address of condolence on the death of queen Mary.

THE PERFIDIOUS and barbarous massacre of Glencoe had never been inquired into; but a precognition of it was ordered to be taken under the Great Seal. The course of this inquiry was excessively unfavourable to Dalrymple, the late secretary of state, as well as to the parties employed in the massacre. In his instructions, king William left a door open, upon their taking the oath of allegiance, for those who were unwilling to acknowledge his sovereignty; but the parliament found that Dalrymple's letters had exceeded the king's instructions. Bredalbane was committed to the castle, and the parliament requested the king to send the officers concerned in the massacre home from the army in the low countries for trial; and the censure of Dalrymple was referred to the king. But Burnet says, "the king seemed too remiss in inquiring into it," and notwithstanding the detestation that he expressed of the massacre, he inflicted no censure on Dalrymple, and instead of sending the officers home for punishment, they were protected and advanced in the service! Burnet says, "it appeared [from the report of the precognition] that a black design was laid, not only to cut off the men of Glencoe, but a great many more clans, reckoned to be in all above six thousand persons. . . . So the parliament justified the king's instructions, but voted the execution in Glencoe to have been

<sup>1</sup> Carstairs' State Papers, 200, 201.





A BARBAROUS MASSACRE, and that it was pushed on by the secretary of state's letters beyond the king's orders: upon which they voted an address to be made to the king, that he and others concerned in that matter might be proceeded against according to law<sup>1</sup>."

THREE of the ministers of the synod of Aberdeen, Messieurs Craven, minister of Newhills; Burnet, minister of Aberdeen; and Thomson, minister of Fintrie, who had protested against the commission of the last General Assembly, were called before the House, and examined. For this heinous offence, and their attachment to the episcopal church, their churches were declared to be vacant, and they were debarred from the exercise of their ministerial function, until they should qualify themselves by taking the oath of allegiance and subscribing the assurance. They were imprisoned in Edinburgh till they gave security not to go on the north side of the river Forth, under a penalty of £100 sterling<sup>2</sup>." But Gilbert Ramsay, one of the ministers of the synod of Aberdeen, who had signed the protest also, having been called to the bar of the House, was dismissed without any censure, because he now disowned the protest, and took the oath of allegiance and the assurance<sup>3</sup>.

THE CHURCH had been exposed to the presbyterian persecution from the Revolution till this time; but the civil government, "not willing to have the remains of episcopacy quite rooted out, by an act received into its protection such of the clergy as would take the oaths then required, but confined them as to the exercise of ecclesiastical discipline within their own parishes; the far greater number of such as, till then, continued in possession of their churches within the diocese and shire of Aberdeen, embraced their peace on these conditions, and qualified themselves in terms of law. But this did not free them at all from the vexatious persecutions of their adversaries, who from time to time libelled [indicted] several of them, though they rarely found a plausible pretence to pass sentence<sup>4</sup>." This is confirmed by Burnet, who says, "In this session an act passed in favour of such of the episcopal

<sup>1</sup> Own Times, iv. 281.

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parl. 18, p. 389.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. 423.

<sup>4</sup> A Representation of the State of the Church in North Britain, as to Episcopacy and Liturgy; and of the Sufferings of the orthodox and regular Clergy, from the Enemies to both. But more especially of the Episcopal Churches within the diocese and shire of Aberdeen. To which is prefixed, A DISQUISITION concerning Ecclesiastical Censures, in causes civil and criminal, particularly in matters of Treason and Rebellion. With Original Papers and Attestations. 8vo. Lond. printed for W. and J. Innys, at the Princes Arms in St. Paul's Churchyard: and sold by James Bettenham, at the Crown in Paternoster Row, 1718. p. 17.



clergy as should enter into those engagements to the king that were by law required; that they should continue in their benefices under the king's protection without being subject to the power of presbytery. This was carried with some address, before the presbyterians were aware of the consequences of it; for it was plainly that which they call erastianism. A day was limited to the clergy for taking the oaths; and by a very zealous and dexterous management, about seventy of the best of them were brought to take the oaths to the king; and so they came within the protection promised them by the act<sup>1</sup>." The London Gazette, however, states that upwards of one hundred of the clergy complied. And sir James Oglevy, in a letter to Mr. Carstares, says—"There are a hundred and sixteen of the episcopal ministers in churches qualified, besides those formerly assumed. The presbyterian ministers have declared several of the non-jurant churches vacant, particularly my parish church at Cullen is so vacated. This was without my knowledge, yet I do not blame them; for he was disaffected to the civil government, and it was necessary to make some examples<sup>2</sup>."

LEST SOME of those who had taken the oaths, and against whom they had not been able to establish either of the four *Pleas* of presbytery—of scandal, error, negligence, or insufficiency—should be able to take their seats in their presbyteries and synods, parliament passed an act to guard against this occurrence. The act declares—"That all such as shall come in and duly qualify themselves, as said is, and shall behave themselves worthily in doctrine, life, and conversation, as becometh ministers of the gospel, shall have and enjoy his majesty's protection, as to their respective kirks and stipends, they always containing themselves within the limits of their pastoral charge in their said parishes, without offering to exercise any power, either of licensing or of ordaining ministers, or any part of government in general assemblies, synods, or presbyteries, unless they be first duly assumed by a competent church judicatory. Providing, nevertheless, that as the said ministers, who shall qualify themselves as said is, are left free to apply or not to the aforesaid church judicatories, so the said judicatories are hereby also declared free to assume, or not to assume, the foresaid ministers, though qualified, as they shall see cause." The vague manner in which this act is expressed left it optional to the presbyterians to *assume* the episcopal

<sup>1</sup> *Own Times*, iv. 282.—*Ralph's History*, i. 580.

<sup>2</sup> *Carstares' State Papers*, p. 263.



clergy or not, as it suited their own caprice or their "irregular passions."

"HOWEVER," says Mr. Skinner, "with all all those arts, and after all the mighty boasts of their numbers, and of the general affection of the people towards them, it would seem they still found it a difficult matter to get all their kirks filled, owing either to the paucity of their preachers, or to the inclinations of the people *running still in the old channel*: for we find an act of parliament in July, narrating—'That there are many churches vacant on the north side of the water of Forth, which cannot be soon legally planted, nor in the meantime *otherwise supplied* than by the presbyteries, in whose bounds they lie, employing preachers who are not settled in churches, to preach in such vacant churches for some time; therefore, and for the pious use of entertaining such preachers so employed, his majesty, with advice and consent of parliament, doth hereby destinate, appoint, and allow, out of the first end of the vacant stipend of the respective churches at which they shall preach, by invitation or appointment of the proper presbyteries, to every one of the said preachers, twenty merks Scots, for their preaching every Lord's-day, forenoon and afternoon, in the said vacant churches; and that whether the said preachers be employed to preach at one church or at several churches within the bounds'. These itinerant preachers were among the vulgar called the 'twenty merk-men,' and they made a tolerable living by that random method of supplying vacancies in which either their own insufficiency or the disaffection of the parishioners kept them from being formally settled. Neither was the number of these itinerants found sufficient to answer all exigencies of this kind, for, from another act at the same time, it appears that even the settled ministers were obliged many times to be employed in that business, with the benefit of the former act extended to them, as well as to the itinerants, who were considerable sufferers by the extension<sup>2</sup>."

FOR THE further security of the presbyterian government, parliament passed an act against intruders into churches, "that whosoever shall intrude into any church, or possess manse or benefice, or exercise any part of the ministerial function within any parish, without an orderly call from the heritors and eldership, and legal admission from the presbytery, shall, by letters of horning and caption in common form, be removed from such intrusion, possession, and ministration,

<sup>1</sup> Acta Parl. 26, p. 415.

<sup>2</sup> Ecclesiastical Histories, ii. 587-88.





and be declared incapable of enjoying any kirk or benefice for seven years after their removal. . . . Likeas his majesty doth recommend to the lords, &c. to remove all those who have already, since the establishment of this present church government, intruded into vacant churches without an orderly call from the heritors and eldership of the parish, and a legal admission from the presbytery, within whose bounds the said churches lie: as also to take some effectual course for stopping or hindering those ministers who are or shall be hereafter deposed by the judicatories of this present established church, from preaching or exercising any act of their ministerial function, which they cannot do after they are deposed without a high contempt of the authority of the church, and of the laws of the kingdom establishing the same<sup>1</sup>."

THE ACT formerly mentioned for sending troops on free quarter upon the bishopricks of the Isles and of Argyle, was confirmed and renewed in this session; and an act was passed, on the petition of Archibald, lord bishop of the Isles, ordaining those who were indebted to him for rent or tithes previous to the time at which he was ousted from that bishoprick, to pay the said arrears to his lordship<sup>2</sup>.

THE MOST severe blow that had been inflicted on the catholic church was contained in the following act of this parliament. Fines and imprisonments might have been alleviated by the compassion of the judge, or the mitigating circumstances of the case; but this act struck at their rights and privileges as christian ministers, and there was neither option left to the judge nor appeal for the sufferer. The presbyterians placed no value on the sacrament of baptism, which is the sign and seal of the covenant of grace; but placed more reliance on keeping the first day of the week, which they heretically call the *Sabbath*, although there is no other authority for the observance of the first day of the week than the authority and tradition of the church—it stands entirely upon church authority. To prevent, therefore, the episcopal clergy from making christians of the infants born in the kingdom from that time forward, that the people might be heathenised, they procured an act of that parliament to be passed, that "our sovereign lord, considering that the baptizing of children and solemnizing of marriage, by the laws and customs of this kingdom, and by the constitution of this church, have always been done by ministers of the gospel authorised by law and the established church of this nation; and that notwithstanding whereof

<sup>1</sup> Acta Parl. 35, p. 421.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 48, 49, p. 448.



several ministers, now out of their churches, do presume to baptize children, and to solemnize marriages, without proclamation of banns, or consent of parents, and sometimes within the forbidden degrees: therefore strictly prohibits and discharges any outed minister to baptize any children, or to solemnize marriage betwixt any parties, in all time coming, under pain of imprisonment, aye, and while he find caution to go out of the kingdom, and never to return thereto<sup>1</sup>."

JAMES DRUMMOND, lord bishop of Brechin, died this year, in the sixty-sixth year of his age. At the Revolution, he, with his brethren, was deprived of the temporalities of his bishoprick, and driven from his episcopal residence. After this, having been reduced to great poverty, he chiefly resided with the earl of Erroll at Slaines Castle, in Aberdeenshire, who had married the chancellor's sister. Although this prelate had been promoted by the favour of his relative, the earl of Perth, then lord chancellor, yet he was a most vigorous opposer of the measures of the court, then promoted by the chancellor; and "it is certain," says Keith, "there were but very few of the bishops (if any at all) who favoured an alteration in religion<sup>2</sup>." Indeed, if his lordship had said none at all, he would have been nearer the truth; for even archbishop Patterson, whose public conduct was the most equivocal, was very averse to popery. Andrew Wood, lord bishop of Caithness, also died this year, at Dunbar, whither he had retired after his "exaucteration" at the Revolution. He was formerly incumbent of that parish, and was allowed to keep that living *in commendam*; and it is probable that he had retired to it when deprived of the revenues of his bishoprick, and officiated there as its pastor<sup>3</sup>. John Gordon, lord bishop of Galloway, who had been formerly one of his majesty's chaplains at New York, in America, joined king James at the Revolution in Ireland, and after the final ruin of the king's affairs in that kingdom he followed his royal master into France; "and whilst he resided at that prince's court at St. Germain's, he read the liturgy of the church of England in his lodgings to such protestants as resorted to him<sup>4</sup>." The time of his death is uncertain; but it is probable that he had died at St. Germain's, where those of the reformed catholic principles were treated with marked contempt.

SOME OF THE Galloway presbyterians were beginning to shew their natural disposition, under the repeated exhibitions

Acta Parliamentorum Gulielmi, v. x.

<sup>2</sup> Catalogue, 169.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. 218.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid. 283.



of the royal supremacy. A Mr. Blair writes to Carstares, that the meeting of an Assembly would be "the only means to restrain and curb the humours of some young ministers in Galloway, who *talk much of doing something*, at least by way of *testimony*, against the putting off the diets of assemblies<sup>1</sup>." Three young ministers—Cameron, Boyd, and Ewart—were the agitators of this testimony, and made overtures to their own synod, and also corresponded with some other synods, to induce them to "display a banner" against the encroachments of the head of the kirk. This agitation was allayed; for after repeated adjournments the king at last permitted the Assembly to meet on the 17th of December, and lord Carmichael was again sent down as royal commissioner, and Mr. Patrick Simson was elected moderator, who represented to his grace "how great a mercy it was to this church and kingdom, that *his majesty had called*, and countenanced this national Assembly with his authority." In reply, the commissioner said, "Right reverend, and you the remanent members of this Assembly; you are now met in this Assembly *conform to the king's appointment*; and . . . I am warranted to give you all assurance of his majesty's resolution to maintain presbyterian government in this church, and to evidence his fatherly care for its welfare. His majesty expects that at this time you will chiefly make it your work to regulate matters of order and discipline amongst yourselves. It is the king's great regret that there are so many churches vacant within this kingdom, which obviously suggests that it would be your best work, as indeed it would be most acceptable to his majesty, that you should apply yourselves principally to the restoring the gospel to such churches; and in doing of this, you may be very well assured of his majesty's countenance and authority. It is also evidently convenient, and likewise expected, that if good men apply to you to be assumed, you will receive their applications with all charity and moderation. . . . I recommend you to *mind your business* closely, without heats and unnecessary contentions, and to make all the despatch you can to bring this Assembly to a happy issue, both for the church's good and his majesty's satisfaction<sup>2</sup>."

IN THE ABOVE speeches, the royal supremacy is unequivocally recognized and acknowledged, as it was firmly exercised by king William; and it is made matter of complaint by a modern sect of presbyterians, "that the mystery of that system of ecclesiastical polity, which has been predominant in

<sup>1</sup> Carstares's State Papers, p. 264.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Gen. Assem. 1695, p. 247.





the established judicatories of Scotland for a century past [1829], had then begun to work<sup>1</sup>. On the 31st of December, an act was passed for "a more expedite and certain way of planting the north with fixed ministers." They had found the inclinations of the people of the north lean so decidedly to episcopacy, that the presbyterian system had not yet made any progress beyond the Tay, and the unwillingness of the presbyterian ministers to undertake a mission to the north of that river, for inoculating the people with their new principles, was so great, that the Assembly authorised their commission to suspend those who refused to undertake the task. They selected forty-four ministers from the different presbyteries in the south, "of some considerable experience, fit to be transported to the north," to be sent on a converting mission, and to supply some of the vacancies that had been made by the privy council<sup>2</sup>.

1696.—FOR MORE effectually carrying into effect this mission to the north, forty ministers, which were all they could spare from their own necessities in the south, as a commission for the north, was appointed to sit in Edinburgh, and to wield the whole power of the Assembly itself<sup>3</sup>. As Burnet formerly informed us that the contentious wranglings of the presbyterian ministers had encouraged the growth of atheistical principles among the people, so the late events of the Revolution had considerably increased this lamentable evil; and it was found necessary to pass an act, on the 4th of January, "against the atheistical opinions of the deists, and for the establishing of the Confession of Faith;" and it contained a clause authorising ministers to proceed against the teachers of deism, "as scandalous and heretical apostates used to be." Perhaps this meant that they were to be burnt at the stake, as "used to be" the custom in the Romish church. And they "discharged all ministers and other members of this church to publish or vent, either by speaking, writing, printing, teaching, or preaching, any doctrine, tenet, or opinion, contrary unto or inconsistent with the Confession of Faith of this church, or any article, part, or proposition therein<sup>4</sup>."

THE LORD CARMICHAEL dissolved the Assembly on the 4th of January, and appointed the next Assembly to meet in Edinburgh on the 2d of January, 1697. This was of course assented to by the moderator, who appointed the same day,

<sup>1</sup> Testimony Assoc. Synod of Orig. Seceders, p. 40.

<sup>2</sup> Sess. xii.; Acts of Assembly, p. 248-50.

<sup>3</sup> Sess. xviii. January 3d, p. 252.

<sup>4</sup> Acts of Assembly, Sess. xviii. p. 253.





sang the 85th Psalm, pronounced the apostolic blessing, and the meeting separated.

THE DEPRIVED clergy continued to suffer the greatest privations, and had no other means of living but the charity of relations or friends, and they were subject to all the insults and indignities that low malice could inflict; and to add to their calamities, there was a scarcity which lasted for two years, and consequently a great dearth of all sorts of provisions. Although they had suffered so much at the Revolution, yet they received no relief or encouragement from the court of St. Germain. "King James resolved to prevent the coming of any protestant divines thither, and therefore sent major Scott and Mr. Macqueen to England, to let his friends know that he desired no such company, and ordered them to make use of other messengers<sup>1</sup>."

DR. JAMES RAMSAY, lord bishop of Ross, retired to Edinburgh at the Revolution, where he officiated as a priest to a congregation. He was reduced to the greatest poverty; for, bishop Russell says, "he died in very low circumstances," on the 22d of October, and was interred in the Canongate churchyard<sup>2</sup>. At the Revolution, our spiritual fathers, who were the first of the three estates of parliament, were not only turned out of parliament, but they were entirely deprived of all means of support and maintenance. Harsh and violent as Knox and his coadjutors were, and rapacious as were the great men of that time, yet they allowed the bishops in the Roman obedience to retain the revenues of their sees all the days of their natural lives. But "the love of money is the *root* of all evil," and the covetousness of those whom the events of the Revolution had elevated to power, made them "err from the faith," and not only commit the sin of sacrilege by seizing the revenues of the bishops, but actually to attempt to exterminate their sacred order. In this year bishop Sage's "Fundamental Charter of Presbytery" was published at London; "for the severity of the then government would not suffer any such book to be printed in Scotland; and it was judged no less than treason and subverting of the government, to publish any sheet against the tyranny of presbytery or in vindication of episcopacy<sup>3</sup>." This inestimable work excited the indignation of the presbyterians, and "although all care was taken to conceal the author, yet it was to no purpose. In spite of all

<sup>1</sup> Kennett's Hist. of England, iii. 721.

<sup>2</sup> Keith's Catalogue, 204; and Appendix, 517.

<sup>3</sup> Gillon's Life of Sage, 1714, 8vo. p. 17.



the caution that was used, it was soon discovered by the presbyterians that Mr. Sage was the person who, to their eternal reproach, had thus exposed their principles and practices; and this filled them with the highest resentments against him, which they did not fail to express as often as they had opportunity; for his affairs, and a passionate desire of visiting his dear friends at Edinburgh, obliged him to venture thither for a few days. But though some of his colleagues who had been banished with him were allowed to stay there, or at least were connived at, yet he no sooner came to the city than he was observed on the street by a privy councillor, whose greatest pleasure was to persecute the episcopal clergy, and by his order he was carried before the magistrates of the city, and obliged to find bail to leave the town and never to return thither<sup>1</sup>."

THIS TYRANNICAL treatment compelled Mr. Sage to go back to his former retirement in Kinross, where he wrote the "Principles of the Cyprianic Age, with respect to Episcopal Power and Jurisdiction<sup>2</sup>." "This performance," says bishop Gillan, "so much more incensed the party against him, that they resolved by all means to ruin him; and for this end, being informed that he had adventured to return to Edinburgh, anno 1696, and his much-honoured friend, sir William Bruce, being about that time committed close prisoner to the Castle of Edinburgh, upon suspicion of keeping correspondence with the court of St. Germain, they thought his intimacy with sir William was a plausible pretence for accusing him also, and throwing him into some nasty prison which might either put an end to his life or at least force him to petition for a voluntary banishment, which had been the fate of some others. And therefore the same privy councillor who had shewn his spite against him before, ordered the captain of the town-guard, with a party of soldiers, to search all the houses where they were informed he was wont to lodge or visit. But, by the good providence of God and the care of his friends, he was concealed for some eight days, and put on board a boat at Leith, and safely landed at Kinghorn; though at the same time all the passages and harbours of Forth were strictly guarded with soldiers. Yet even there he did not think himself safe, for he was certainly informed that spies were sent to all places of the country for discovering and apprehending

<sup>1</sup> Gillan's Life of Sage, 1714, 8vo. pp. 21, 22.

<sup>2</sup> This book, with the Defence of it, by the same author, is to be republished by the Spottiswood Society.



him; and therefore he made his escape to the hills of Angus, where, under the name of Mr. Jackson, and the person of one that wanted good air and goats' milk for his health, he lurked many months, until his constant and faithful friend, sir William Bruce, was at liberty, and those in the government were brought, by much pains and powerful solicitations, to a milder temper<sup>1</sup>."

ANOTHER session of parliament was held at Edinburgh, which commenced on the 8th of September, and the earl of Tullibardine came down as the high commissioner. The lord Polwarth, already mentioned by the name of Sir Patrick Hume, sat as lord chancellor. In his speech from the throne, all that the commissioner said respecting ecclesiastical matters was:—"I am allowed by his majesty to assure you that he is resolved to maintain presbyterian government in the church of Scotland; and that it will be very acceptable to him that differences among churchmen be composed; and he particularly recommends moderation in these matters." And lord Polwarth said,—"It is an inestimable blessing that God has set over us, and preserves unto us, a king not only professing the reformed religion, but who also is so pious in the practice and so zealous in the defence of it; a king who has given to this nation many convincing demonstrations of his peculiar favour towards it; and among others, that of establishing presbyterian government in this church, and giving us assurance that he will maintain it. Let our prudence, charity, and moderation, ever encourage him to do it<sup>2</sup>."

ALL THE MEMBERS of this parliament signed an ASSOCIATION similar to that which both houses of parliament in England had entered into, viz.—"Whereas, there has been a horrid and detestable conspiracy formed and carried on by papists, and other wicked and traitorous persons, for assassinating his majesty's royal person, in order to encourage an invasion from France, to subvert our religion, laws, and liberty; we, whose names are hereunto subscribed, do sincerely and solemnly profess, testify, and declare, that his present majesty king William is rightful and lawful king of these realms. And we do mutually promise and engage to stand by and assist each other to the utmost of our power, in the support and defence of his majesty's most sacred person and government, against the late king James and all his adherents. And in case his majesty come to any violent or untimely death (which

<sup>1</sup> Gillan's Life of Sage, 23, 24 Ed. 1714.

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parliamentorum, vol. x. Appendix.





God forbid, we do hereby freely and unanimously oblige ourselves to unite, associate, and stand by each other, in revenging the same upon his enemies and their adherents, and in supporting and defending the succession of the crown, according to an act made in the first year of the reign of king William and queen Mary, &c.<sup>1</sup>" And as the Revolution had plunged the nation into interminable continental wars, and consequently had incurred great expenditure, the parliament granted a land cess and additional excise, for maintaining the standing forces by sea and land, of £1,440,000 Scots. They passed an act for securing their religion, lives, and properties, in the event of his majesty's coming to an untimely end; and another to oblige all who were in public trust to sign the Association. Also an act in favour of preachers at vacant churches, and in favour of the universities, schools, and hospitals. Dr. Burnet, late one of the ministers of Aberdeen, who was imprisoned by order of parliament, presented a petition to the House, setting forth the hardship of his case; that he and his family had resided in Edinburgh for fourteen months since his sentence; that in consequence of his deprivation, and the dearth and extraordinary high price of provisions, he had been reduced to great poverty and distress. He therefore prayed to be discharged of the aforesaid sentence, and to be permitted to return to his own county. This was agreed to as far as concerned his confinement, but the other part of the sentence was allowed to remain in full force<sup>2</sup>. On the 8th of October the parliament was adjourned to the 8th of December.

1697.—THE CATHOLIC clergy were now insultingly denominated "dissenting ministers," and the upper rooms of houses where they were compelled to meet the faithful people were called "meeting-houses" and "conventicles." In these upper rooms the Liturgy of the Church of England was used, and the pure doctrine of the church catholic was taught, without any respect to politics. The following is the language of Cockburn of Ormiston, to Mr. Carstares:—"The dissenting ministers that preach in Edinburgh, are most of them taken up [that is, arrested and imprisoned] by the council's order. The field-meetings were formerly called 'the rendezvous of rebellion;' and I assure you, the conventicles now in Edinburgh are 'the nests of disaffection.' And therefore, as far as law will go, I wish them all banished out of the

<sup>1</sup> Kennet's History of England, iii. 706.

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parliamentorum, vol. x. p. 16.



town<sup>1</sup>." But notwithstanding of this pious wish, the presbyterians were made to feel that king William was in sober earnest the head of the kirk. A Mr. Blair writes to Carstares,—“I would fain have the solution of a question; and that is, what you take to be the best way of *asserting* the intrinsic power of the church? Whether to prove it in the pulpit by the strongest and best arguments the Scripture can afford to that purpose, or to assert it by a *stout assertory act* of a General Assembly? Or what would you think if a man should go up to the pulpit, and tell the people in the close of his sermon that the government of the church and its intrinsic power should not rest upon *so slippery a foundation as the inclinations of the people*, and therefore it were good that it were declared and asserted in the next Assembly? For the old men were going off the stage, and young men will faint for want of courage. What think you of these two last methods? For my part I would rather be for the first<sup>2</sup>.”

KING WILLIAM did not, however, suffer from this insolent threat, for he allowed the Assembly to meet on the day that he himself had appointed. On the 2d of January, lord Carmichael, his commissioner, presented his letter to the Assembly, wherein his majesty said, “The proceedings of the last General Assembly were very satisfactory to us, which hath encouraged us *to allow and countenance your meeting now*. . . . The present juncture of affairs will not allow of your sitting long, therefore you are to lose no time in doing what is most necessary for suppressing and restraining of sin and profanity, and in planting of *vacant* churches with pious and moderate ministers. . . . As we have done formerly, so we do now upon this occasion, assure you that we are resolved to maintain presbyterian church government in that our kingdom of Scotland; and therefore we expect that, in all matters that come before you, you will proceed and conclude with calmness and moderation, which is the duty of all, especially in church meetings<sup>3</sup>.” There were no transactions in this Assembly, in any way connected with this History, that is worthy of repeating, except their anxiety for “planting and purging the north,” where the people displayed a mighty disinclination to the dominion and tyranny of presbytery. A new committee was formed, and several ministers, some of whom had not gone on their mission, and others who had returned in despair, were cen-

<sup>1</sup> Carstares's State Papers, 288.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 365, 366.

<sup>3</sup> Acts of Assembly, 257.



sured. What they call "the barrier act," anent the passing of acts of Assembly of general concern to the church, and for preventing of innovations," was passed in this Assembly<sup>1</sup>. An act against those sins which generally follow the establishment of presbytery, of atheism, and profanity, was passed, and the commissioner dissolved the Assembly on the 12th of January, and appointed it to meet on the second Tuesday of January 1698.

1698.—On the 17th of February, the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts was founded in England, as a society for the reformation of manners had been some little time before. Both these societies were countenanced by great numbers of the nobility, judges, clergy, and gentry.

THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY met by the king's permission on the 11th of January. Lord Carmichael was again commissioner, and George Meldrum was chosen moderator. In his letter, the king says, "We are so well satisfied with your proceedings at the last General Assembly, that *we agree to your meeting now*, though another time had been more convenient to our affairs; . . . . and we do now renew our assurances of our protection and countenance to the presbyterian government now settled in the church of Scotland. You know it is our inclination, and we do recommend it to you, to assume the episcopal ministers, whose lives and doctrine do render them useful to the church; and likewise the planting the churches in the north with the most prudent and pious of your ministers, &c." In answer to this portion of the king's letter, the Assembly wrote:—"The General Assembly is still ready to assume such ministers as served under the late prelacy, whose lives and doctrines render them useful to the church, and who apply to them in the terms and methods proposed by former Assemblies, and shall recommend the same to inferior judicatories. In the planting of the north, such progress *as could be attained* hath been made since the last Assembly, &c."<sup>2</sup>

THE KING'S urgency for the planting of the north, and the Assembly's admission of how little had been done, shews plainly the difficulty that they experienced in presbyterianising the country beyond the Tay, and the fallacy of their mendacious assertion that presbytery was the choice of the people. Hetherington calls this adherence to principle "pertinacious obstinacy." "It has already been shewn," says he,

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Assembly; Act ix., Sess. vi.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of General Assembly. pp. 267-68.





“that the pertinacious obstinacy of the northern jacobites and *prelatists*, both in refusing to take the oaths to government and in retaining their churches, and in intruding into those where presbyterian ministers had been placed, rendered an act of parliament necessary, to prevent such conduct<sup>1</sup>.”

A NUMEROUS commission was appointed, with power to divide themselves into as many committees as they shall see fit, and to send them to any part, north or south, with power to meet quarterly. This was intended for the farther purgation of the episcopal clergy, and to plant the vacant churches. The instructions given them were, among other things,—“That when any of the ministers who served under the late prelacy, whose lives and doctrines may render them useful to this church, do apply for reception into the government, the General Assembly, in prosecution of the assurances given to his majesty in their letter written to him, do empower and recommend to this commission and the other judicatories of this church, that they be ready to receive them<sup>2</sup>.”

AFTER SOME other business had been transacted, the commissioner dissolved the Assembly in the king's name, and appointed their next meeting to be on the 20th of January, 1699. The episcopal clergy in most places of the north were kept in their churches by the affection of their people; but even if all the churches had been vacant, ministers of presbyterian principles could not have been found to fill them. They could not occupy the churches that had been made vacant by the merciless rabble and the tyrannical privy council; and it must have been very injurious to the cause of morality, when these commissioners, assembling at different and distant places, withdrew the presbyterian ministers from their local duties, and obliged them to leave their congregations without the stated public worship. But that evil exists at the present day, when the kirks are all full; because the ministers add the extra duty of legislative and executive government to their ordinary parochial duties; one or perhaps both departments must, therefore, suffer from the want of their undivided attention.

PARLIAMENT met in July, and the earl of Marchmont was sent down as lord commissioner. In his speech from the throne, his grace said,—“His majesty has graciously given you full assurance that he is firmly resolved to make it his principal care to maintain your religion, laws, and liberties, and presbyterian government in the church; and I am commanded to let you know that he is fully resolved to continue

<sup>1</sup> History, 188.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Assembly, 272-274.





the same." And the earl of Seafield, as the principal secretary of state, said, "His majesty has always judged his interest to be inseparable from yours; he has been the powerful instrument of God Almighty in rescuing you from popery and arbitrary government; . . . in his reign you have the full enjoyment of your religion, laws, and liberties; you have also presbyterian government established in the church, which his majesty has declared he will maintain, and you have many good laws and constitutions granted for the ease and satisfaction of the nation, &c.<sup>1</sup>" . . .

UNDER the shelter of an act against intruders into churches, the ministers prevented the episcopal clergy from exercising any part of the ministerial function in any of the vacant churches; and if they did venture to officiate, the law declared them incapable of enjoying any kirk or benefice for seven years afterwards. In consequence, many disorders occurred among the people, who, in some places, were entirely destitute of ministers of any sort, and left to the natural backsliding of the human heart, which being of itself "desperately wicked," soon reduced them much below the standard of christian morality. For this state of things, and for the disorders that occurred at what they call the planting of churches, Hetherington has the audacity to accuse the episcopal clergy of being the instigators. He says, "they privately instigated the lowest, rudest, and most immoral of the populace, to assemble in a tumultuous manner at the churches to which the presbyterian ministers had been sent by the Assembly, or had been called by the more respectable and pious part of the congregation, and to offer every obstruction in their power; not unfrequently inflicting severe personal injury upon the ministers<sup>2</sup>." This is a purely gratuitous assertion; for such conduct was entirely opposed to all the principles which actuated the conduct of the clergy, and to the doctrine that they taught to the people.

YET, says Skinner, all these stretches of legal precaution could not entirely prevent the ecclesiastical disorders which were perpetually breaking out; for whether owing to the incessant janglings between the two contending rivals, or to the tumultuous mode of elections which was now substituted in place of the ancient method of patronage, the spirit of licentiousness and opposition was become so common and prevalent upon these occasions, that the parliament saw it necessary to make a law, of which the following is an extract:—"It

<sup>1</sup> Acta Parliamentorum, x. App. 16, 17.

<sup>2</sup> History, 188.



strictly prohibited and discharged all persons whatsoever, by rabblings, tumults, or any other manner of violence to any minister lawfully authorised and sent to preach at any vacant church within the kingdom, either for supplying the vacancy or to be fixed minister within the parish : and that under the penalty of £100 Scots upon every heritor or life renter, and fifty merks upon every unlanded person, for every fault ; and that such delinquents as are not able to pay shall be punished in their persons as the privy council shall see fit. And further statuting and ordaining that where and whenever, after requisition made to the beadies or bearers of the keys of vacant churches, to deliver them up to the presbyteries or any having their orders, the same are refused and not given up, then the next magistrate, when required, shall repair to the said kirk, and there make open and patent the doors, and put new locks on them, and deliver the keys to the presbytery or their order, for their free use-making of the same : certifying every such magistrate who shall refuse when called, that he shall be liable in a fine of £100 Scots by and attour the presbyteries' expenses<sup>1</sup>."

THE CAMERONIANS, who had furnished so many would-be martyrs, and had been the cause of so much bloodshed, began now to feel that all their testimonies for Christ's crown and kingdom had been entirely thrown away ; for they found themselves not any better under presbytery than they had been under prelacy. They now had made a schism in their own body, and by way of testimony represented the Revolution settlement as decidedly erastian, and their own newly-established kirk itself as having abandoned its very fundamental principles, and as not having the courage to assert its own intrinsic powers. To counteract the effect of this testimony, the commission of the Assembly published a paper termed "A Seasonable Admonition ;" in which, among other things, they say, "We do believe and own that JESUS CHRIST is the only head and king of his church, and that he hath instituted in his church officers and ordinances, order and government, and not left it to the will of man, magistrate, or church, to alter at their pleasure. And we believe that this government is neither prelatical nor congregational, but presbyterian, which now, by the mercy of God, is established among us ; and we believe we have a *better foundation* for this our church government than *the inclination of the people* and the laws of

<sup>1</sup> Acta Parliamentorum, vol. x., Act. ii., p. 148.—Skinner's Ecclesiastical Hist. ii. 538.



men<sup>1</sup>." It may be all very well for the kirk to kick the ladder from under them, by which they had climbed up to an establishment with all its advantages and disadvantages—to turn round upon the people and undervalue their attachment; but when struggling for supremacy, they stated the *inclinations* of the people to be their *fundamental charter*. And we would here beg leave to remark, that the establishment of presbytery, instead of being "the mercy of God," was a most decided symptom of His wrath in removing the national candlestick from its place, and giving His heritage up to a most soul-destroying delusion; and with having "killed her children with [spiritual] death." It was a decided symptom that He had carried His threat against the church of Sardis into effect against the church of Scotland. The names of those who apostatised from the faith were "blotted out of the book of life," into which they had been entered by holy baptism; yet still He preserved a remnant whom, if they overcome the world, and keep their baptismal robes undefiled, He will permit to walk with Him in white.

THE OUTED MINISTERS, says Mr. Skinner, "as they are called, though thus restrained, and even much terrified, were not altogether silenced, but still continued their ministerial functions when and where called, in the safest and most prudent manner they could, so as neither to lose sight of their sacred character on the one hand, nor wantonly to provoke their implacable enemies on the other, but in patience possessing their souls, and depending entirely on their great Head, in whose cause they were both serving and suffering. In this patient and peaceable course, besides the example of the primitive presbyters, which they justly looked upon as a pattern worthy of imitation, they were warranted by the countenance and authority of their own bishops, who were now their fellow sufferers, and who, after being stripped of their temporal honours and disseized of their own legal revenues, were no longer distinguished by any particular notice, but were struck at in general under the degrading comprehension of '*outed ministers*.' These deprived FATHERS . . . still retained their spiritual power and the superiority inherent in their commission; and, under all their depression, had the happiness to possess the respect and esteem not only of their ejected sons but likewise of most of the compliers, and even many of the great ones among the laity who had been active in the late change. They had quietly retired from their episcopal houses

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington, 188, 189.





on the first promulgation of the dispossessing act, and provided themselves in lodgings where they best could. Such of them as had any little paternal inheritance of their own, withdrew to it; others took shelter with their friends and relations, or were sustained by their ministerial labours in particular congregations which adhered to them<sup>1</sup>."

1699.—THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY was permitted to meet on the 20th of January. Lord Carmichael was again sent down as commissioner, and George Hamilton was elected moderator. In his letter, the king tells them decidedly that they sat by his permission:—"We have thought fit," says he, "*to allow and countenance your meeting at this time*, that you may have the opportunity to do what is necessary for promoting religion and regulating order and discipline. And we do again earnestly recommend you to fall upon effectual methods for planting vacant churches with pious and learned ministers, which is so necessary for suppressing error and immorality; in the doing whereof you shall have all due encouragement and assistance." In answer to this they say, "the planting of the north hath been minded by them, and their commission and committees empowered for that effect, to the remotest parts of the kingdom, and even to the isles of Orkney and Zetland; . . . nor can we omit to notice that your majesty's royal bounty did very seasonably contribute to make our labours in that matter more easy and effectual." The revolution in the church was not a cheap experiment, for to this establishment there has always been given a "royal bounty" out of the general revenues of the kingdom. This was never given to the church during her establishment. She depended on her own proper resources—the lands of the bishopricks and the tithes of the other lands of the kingdom; but what between the expensive pageant of a commission, and the allowance of propagating the gospel in the highlands and islands, with the salaries to the purse-bearer, clerks, and others, the exchequer at present pays about £5000 sterling annually.

THERE WERE no transactions in this meeting that require to be noticed, except that the acts of the commission were in general terms approved of, and consequently their "seasonable admonition" was adopted by authority; and that an act was made for compelling all ministers, probationers, and schoolmasters, to sign the Westminster Confession, as the confession of their own faith<sup>2</sup>. The commissioner dissolved the Assembly on the 4th of February, and appointed the next to meet

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 597.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Assembly, 277-288.



on the first Friday of February 1700. In both of these decisions the moderator was obliged to acquiesce.

GREAT DISCONTENT prevailed in Scotland at this time, on account of the unfair means that had been employed to prevent the Scottish settlement at Darien from being founded and protected. Had it been properly encouraged, there seems no reason to doubt but that it would have been successful, especially now, when the two seas could be so easily connected by means of railroads. But William, whose heart was always in Holland, listened to the interested suggestions of the Dutch and his English subjects, and did not permit the scheme to be completed. It was a national affair, and many families had embarked their whole property in it, and in consequence of its failure were entirely reduced to beggary. This disappointment turned the hearts of many towards St. Germain's, and it is said that the duke of Hamilton, and about a hundred noblemen and gentlemen, joined in a letter to king James, promising him their services whenever he should call them into the field.

To ALLAY this dangerous ferment, the king proposed an union of the kingdoms, and said, in answer to an address from the English House of Lords, "He took this opportunity of putting the House of Peers in mind of what he recommended to his parliament soon after his accession to the throne, to suggest that they would consider of an union between the two kingdoms; that his majesty was of opinion that nothing would contribute more to the security and happiness of both kingdoms, and was inclined to hope that after they had lived near a hundred years under the same head, some happy expedient might be found for making them one people, in case a treaty were set on foot for that purpose; and therefore he very earnestly recommended that matter to the consideration of the House. The peers cordially entertained the proposal, and passed an act to authorise commissioners from England to treat with those of Scotland; but the Commons would not give their concurrence, and so the project was dropped for the present.

THE CLERGY of both the churches of England and Scotland were entirely ignorant of the preparations that were making for the Revolution, and had no hand whatever in it. In England the Revolution went upon the fact of there being a vacancy in the throne, or an abdication of the crown by king James, so that the hereditary descent of the crown still went on. The convention-parliament did not proceed on the



principle of deposition, or of the power of the people to change their governors, which is contrary to all the laws of England, but on the father's desertion or abdication of the throne, which they declared to be filled by his daughter, who was the nearest in blood. It was contended that the prince of Wales was not the king's son; and besides, he was carried out of the kingdom, and was in the power of the abdicated monarch; and therefore Mary, princess of Orange, as the nearest in hereditary descent, was recognised as the sovereign. The subsequent arrangement betwixt the royal sisters and the prince of Orange does not affect the principle of the hereditary descent of the crown. In Scotland the Convention broke through all the fundamental laws of the kingdom, where the hereditary descent of the crown was as much recognised as in England. This may in some measure be accounted for by the fact already mentioned, of the irregular and unconstitutional manner in which the Commons of the kingdom had been elected, and consequently that branch of the legislature was entirely composed of men who had renounced their allegiance to the two former sovereigns, and who had been frequently in plots, and in arms in the field, to dethrone them. They went upon the principle, not recognised by the laws of either kingdom, of electing their sovereign; and as a consequence of this illegal principle, they declared that king James had forfeited the crown. There were very few churchmen in the Convention, and the presbyterian party had little opposition; so that their principles predominated, and their transactions were in faithful correspondence with them. At every period of their history presbyterians have advocated revolutions and resistance to the sovereign powers, which is a principle utterly at variance with the precepts of Holy Scripture, or indeed the custom of nature. For the kingly power being founded by God himself, on the obedience of children to their father, He has annexed a blessing in the fifth commandment to obedience to the fatherhood, which consists of our natural parents, our political father (or mother as at present), the sovereign, and our spiritual fathers, the bishops.

THIS RESTLESS desire for revolutions has always been one of the distinguishing marks of presbyterianism; and it is fully developed by the following paper, in the hand-writing of sir John Dingley, who was secretary to the king and queen of Bohemia:—"Mr. Mackdowal came from Groningen; desired private audience of the queen [Elizabeth, eldest daughter of James VI., and married to Frederic, count palatine of the Rhine, and king of Bohemia], and told her, that now the





king [James VI.] had sent her brother into Spain to marry the Infanta, the greatest part of Scotland gave him as a prince lost in his religion, and therefore cast their eyes on her; and he had commission to assure her, that if she would go into Scotland she would be well received, and make the king declare himself, that he was a true protestant, and an enemy to papists and popery. And this he spake not of himself, but under the hands of the best in Scotland." Her majesty answered, "that he was mistaken in her; that she was confident neither the king, who had sufficiently declared himself, nor yet the prince, would ever favour the contrary religion; or if they did, yet that should never move her to depart from the duty she owed to her father, nor love to her brother. And though God had deprived the king, her husband, of his estate and honour in Germany, yet she would never seek to be repaired by such unworthy and disloyal means." Adding, "that if he would make the motion to the king, her husband, she doubted not but he would find him of the same opinion." But Macdowal replied, "that because the king was a foreign prince, he had no address to him, but left it to her majesty to acquaint him with it;" which she did, and the king abhorred the motion<sup>1</sup>.

THIS SHEWS the animus of the party. The Revolution was in the first instance bloodless, and no doubt preserved the nation from a more violent convulsion; yet it led to an unexampled expenditure both of blood and treasure. Like a brave man, James intended to have measured swords with his son-in-law; but he was deserted by his army, and was obliged to fly out of the kingdom, to avoid being taken prisoner, and perhaps put to death. But it cost much blood afterwards in Scotland, and still more in Ireland, "where, it is modestly computed, that not less than 300,000 souls perished in two years' time, by the sword and the famine occasioned by it, besides the thousands of families that were ruined by it." Then the continental wars that succeeded, to keep out the exiled family, and the public debt which was commenced by king William to support these wars, have rendered the Revolution an expensive experiment. James left not a sixpence of debt in either kingdom, but William laid the foundation of the National Debt in the very commencement of his reign, that has accumulated since to so great an amount. The history of Europe since that period shews what a deluge of blood has been shed to maintain the different revolutions that have taken place

<sup>1</sup> Cited by Dr. Leslie, in his *Rehearsals*, v. p. 108.





since the abdication of James the Jesuit. The histories of England and Scotland, as well as Ireland, are full of instruction. The latter country having been unjustly conquered without any other motive than the lust of power, has been, as a retribution, a thorn in the side of England, and the cause of her weakness, ever since. In England the wars of the Roses deluged her with blood, in consequence of the usurpation of the duke of Lancaster, till the true line in the House of York was restored to the throne. In Scotland a disputed succession, after the death of the Maid of Norway, not only plunged the kingdom in blood, but laid it open to a foreign invader: the usurpation of the crown, in the reign of queen Mary, exposed the kingdom to the tyranny of regents and the miseries of civil war and dissention. The presbyterian principles developed in the Solemn League and Covenant crowned all the previous rebellions and revolutions, as having been the foundation of all the bloodshed of the Grand Rebellion and of their own subsequent rebellions; of the murder of king Charles; of the destruction of the church of England; of the utter extirpation of the church of Scotland; of the persecution of the clergy of both kingdoms; of the expatriation and extinction of the direct line of the oldest, the most illustrious, and the most extensively allied royal house in Europe, or perhaps in the world. And this Covenant, which has wrought so much mischief, and whose principles are still in active operation, we owe to the JESUITS, who were its authors, and who delight in the extirpation of the holy catholic and apostolic church, in order to advance popery.

THE REGAL supremacy, which never affected the presbyterians, but fell altogether upon the church, was one of their great complaints against king Charles. The only way in which they experienced it was in curbing and repressing their rebellions; but when William mounted the throne, he made them feel the royal authority by proroguing and dissolving their assemblies. He *dispensed* with the laws fully as often as James had done, yet they never murmured against him, or laid such unconstitutional conduct to his charge; which shows the truth of the old adage—that one man may steal a horse, whilst another will be hanged for looking over the hedge.

THE PRESBYTERIAN temple was daubed with the untempered mortar of extemporary worship, and their violent intolerance forced this unsatisfactory mode of adoration upon the church. The presbyterian ministers also were, for the most part, taken from amongst the meanest of the people; as if Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, who made Israel to sin, had been



their master-builder. These carried their vulgar ideas and manners into the pulpit, and thereby captivated the mob, but entirely disgusted and alienated the nobility and gentry. Considering the wisdom of the serpent, which generally guides their consultations, it would appear to have been a false step in their first establishment, to have shut the door of accommodation with the episcopal clergy, who were of a superior class, and were men of learning and good manners, and some of whom might perhaps have been induced to amalgamate with the new establishment, and thus have united both classes of the people with it. The upper class was disgusted with the vulgarity and ignorance of the presbyterian ministers, who were proud and overbearing, and were men of a scanty education—"of no letters, and less manners." It was unfortunate that in those days there was no middle class of society from whom to have taken the priesthood or the presbyterian ministers; they must all be either the high or the low. The following, taken from an anonymous author, is a correct account of the state of society when Jeroboam's system was carried out:—"You must know, the most part of the landlords in that country did no otherwise with their farmers than as with slaves, who impose upon them what they please: if the tenant die rich, the laird must be tutor [executor] to his children; or if he die in arrears to him, then the laird is executor, creditor, and seizes all. So that these farmers, like the Turks, are not sure if their children or relicts shall possess anything that belong to them after their death; for some way or other the laird monopolises all<sup>1</sup>."

ALTHOUGH the episcopal church, when it was established, had not the inestimable benefit of a public liturgy, yet the Word of God was regularly read, according to the order in the Book of Common Prayer. But no sooner was the Revolution effected, than the people were deprived of that *mark* of the true church; and the reading of the Scripture, except as a text for their sermons, was entirely laid aside. The Lord's Prayer, the Ten Commandments, and the Apostles' Creed, were immediately banished the public service, as superstitious Romish rags. Their opposition to episcopacy involved them in a separation from the whole church of Christ, from the very beginning. For bishops having succeeded, by hand to hand, from the apostles, the refusing to hold communion with them is a renunciation of communion with the apostles, from whom they have sprung, and with the noble army of martyrs

<sup>1</sup> Letter concerning the Sufferings of the Episcopal Clergy in Scotland, p. 7. 1691.



and confessors throughout the world, of whom their chief leaders were bishops, who cheerfully and intrepidly offered up their lives for the testimony of Jesus. If the presbyterians will not only not hold communion with these on earth, but are sworn to extirpate them by the sword, we much fear that they cannot be judged worthy to enjoy communion with them in heaven. This is a painful and a melancholy conclusion; but it is justified by the premises, and therefore we could earnestly and affectionately entreat the Scottish establishment to "remember from whence they are fallen; to repent, and do their first works"—of love and obedience, true holiness of heart, and universal morality of life, which is the chief end of all that belongs to public worship and external religion. As God told the Jews, that he hated their superstitious observances of their new moons and feasts of their *own* appointment, so the sacramental fasts and occasions of presbyterian appointment must, on the same principle, be an abomination to Him. They are done upon the principle of the pharisee in the temple—thanking Him for observances which His "soul hateth." The moral duties of putting away the evil; of learning to do well; of seeking judgment, relieving the oppressed, judging the fatherless, and of pleading for the widow, are the virtues which God values for their own intrinsical goodness. He has made their performance the condition of pardon and justification to us, as he did to faithful Abraham; and this condition being agreeable to His own holiness, its performance will conform our nature unto His, and make us holy as He is holy. But the kirk is in a state of revolt from the church, and not only so, but wages an exterminating war against the spouse of Christ; and the wilful and habitual breach of one of the commandments renders a man a transgressor of the whole table of the law, even although he were not guilty in other particulars.





## CHAPTER LVIII.

## THE PRIMACY OF ARCHBISHOP ROSS.

1700.—An Assembly.—A fast.—The covenant.—The cutty-stool.—Parliament.—Death of the duke of Gloucester.—Colony of Darien.—Two clergymen harassed—others deprived.—Archbishop of Glasgow.—Death of Mr. Mather.—Death of the bishop of Orkney.—Act of security.—1701.—General Assembly.—Mademoiselle Bourignon.—Convocation of the church of England—and parliament—offer made to king James.—Duchess of Savoy protests.—Princess Sophia's letter.—King James's death—his speeches—his son proclaimed—James's character.——1702.—General Assembly.—Accident to William.—The abjuration oath.—William's death.—Queen Anne's accession.—Parliament.—Duke of Hamilton's protest.—Proceedings of parliament—proposals for the Union—petition from the clergy.—1703.—A change of ministry.—Queen's letter.—Address of the clergy.—Collection.—Assembly—dissolved by the commissioner.—The supremacy.—Rev. Robert Calder.—Session of parliament.—Mr. Meldrum.—A toleration—petition against it.—The Confession of Faith.—Opposition to presbytery declared to be high treason.—Another Sanquhar declaration—hushed up.—A letter.—Assault on a chapel in Glasgow.—Petition to the queen.—1704.—Hurricane.—Archbishop of Glasgow.—Transactions.—Death of the primate—Remarks.

1700.—THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY was again permitted to meet on the 2d of February; the lord viscount Seafield was sent down as commissioner, and Dr. Blair was elected moderator. It is somewhat suspicious that neither the king's letter, which the Assembly calls "most gracious," nor their answer to it, are recorded in the printed acts. It gives reason to suppose that the king had exerted his supremacy and exercised his headship more energetically than it was prudent or agreeable to their self-love to shew to posterity.

THE ASSEMBLY appointed a fast to be held on Thursday, the 28th of March, for the national sins in general; but in particular for "our continued unfaithfulness to God, notwithstanding of our *solemn covenants* and engagements, and many professed resolutions to the contrary." Hetherington says, "this may fairly be regarded as proving that the church of Scotland had not abandoned the ground occupied by the



fathers of the second Reformation, but continued to acknowledge the binding and descending obligation of her national covenants<sup>1</sup>. It is most absurd to call the work of a faction a *national* engagement; for the presbyterian faction were no more *the people* of Scotland than the three tailors of Tooley Street were the people of England. At all events, William had seen enough of the working of the covenant in the reigns of his predecessors, to prevent his allowing any attempt at a *national* exhibition of it. The new establishment, therefore, quietly laid it on the shelf, only sending some sighing aspirations after it in the catalogues of the national sins; but it remains in the Westminster Confession as a monument of national iniquity to this day. Among the divine rebukes, for which this fast was instituted, they mention "a stupendous burning within these few days of a considerable part of Edinburgh," a circumstance that I do not remember ever having seen mentioned by any historian; but fires in that city are not wonderful, when we take into consideration the multitude of people that live under one roof. They go on to state—"the atheistical and execrable principles so much vented and spread amongst us—the gross immoralities of uncleanness of all sorts, drunkenness"—and as a consequence of their own tyranny, "the great contempt and despising of church discipline<sup>2</sup>." Their discipline was a godless and intolerable tyranny, and was the *cause* of many of those sins which they included in their pharisaical declamations; for when a young woman, who had forgot the guide of her youth, was once set on the cutty-stool in the sight of the congregation, she was marked out for working folly in Israel; modesty and self-respect after that were entirely effaced, and consequently she descended to the lowest depths of wickedness. "The truth is," says Dr. Monro, "there are no people upon earth that value government and sovereignty as the presbyterians do. It is the idol they bow to; there is nothing gratifies their highest passions so much as a power to tyrannise. If the whole world were once under their feet, they would look cheerful, their blood would circulate more briskly; until this be obtained there is no rest nor peace for mankind. The discipline, the sacred discipline of Geneva, *must wrestle* with all authority until the consummation of all authority<sup>3</sup>."

THE INSTRUCTIONS for the commission contained a clause—"that when any of the ministers that served under the late prelacy, whose lives and doctrines may render them useful to

<sup>1</sup> History, p. 189.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of the General Assembly, 289, 290.

<sup>3</sup> Apology for the Clergy of Scotland, 13.



this church, do apply for reception into the government, the General Assembly do empower and recommend to this commission that they receive them according" to the formulary already given in the Assembly of 1694<sup>1</sup>. The Assembly was still troubled with the existence of episcopacy in the north, and, as formerly, they appointed ministers and probationers to go to the unwilling churchmen, and offer them "supply of sermon;" but which was in most cases rejected. The commissioner put an end to the Assembly in the king's name on the 20th of February, and directed their next meeting to be on the 19th of February, 1701.

THE PARLIAMENT assembled on the 21st of May, and the duke of Queensberry was sent down as the commissioner; he is described by a respectable author as "one of the wisest and most insinuating ministers of that age," although from political animosity Lockhart gives him a very different character; and the earl of Marchmont was appointed lord chancellor. The king, in his letter, professes his sorrow for the unhappy affair of Darien, and his wish to contribute to the advancement of the national trade and commerce, and then said, "we give you full assurance that we will maintain your religion, laws, and liberties, and presbyterian government, as it is established. And it will be most acceptable to us, that you fall upon effectual methods for preventing the growth of popery, and discouraging vice and immorality." And the commissioner said, "His majesty's accession to the throne was the most seasonable and acceptable deliverance that ever happened to a nation, and the maintaining those blessings he then procured us has ever since been the chief design of his reign. You see his majesty is firmly resolved to preserve your religion, laws, and liberties, and the presbyterian government of this church as it is established; and is desirous not only that you fall upon the most effectual methods for preventing the growth of popery, and discouraging vice and immorality, but that you also provide what may be further needful for the increase of piety and learning<sup>2</sup>." The council of the Darien company presented "a sharp representation," containing a rehearsal of all their losses and disappointments, and the agitation was so great that the parliament was prorogued. Many of the members met privately that evening, and sent the lord Ross with an address to the king, praying that he would permit his parliament to meet on the day to which it was prorogued; to which the king answered, *he would consider of it*. In the

<sup>1</sup> Acts, &c., p. 298.

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parl. v. x.—Appendix, p. 34.





meantime he went over to Holland, and said, "as soon as God should bring him back, he was fully resolved his parliament should meet;" but not till then.

ON THE 29th of July the young and amiable duke of Gloucester died at Windsor Castle. He was the son of prince George of Denmark and the princess Anne. His death was occasioned by his over-heating himself at a juvenile party on occasion of his birth-day, the 24th of July, which produced fever, and a rash broke out on his skin. The greatest care and attention were bestowed upon him, but he died on the 29th, to the sorrow of the phlegmatic William, who loved him as his own child. He was a remarkably quick and forward boy in his understanding, and chiefly delighted in martial sports and hunting, and "his tender constitution bended under the weight of his manly soul;" yet, says bishop Kennett, "never was so great a loss *so little* lamented: which may be ascribed to the different parties that divided England; two of which, I mean the Jacobites and Republicans, looked upon that hopeful young prince as a future obstacle to their respective designs. Grief, upon this sad occasion, seemed to be confined within the palace of St. James's, and to centre in a more sensible manner in the royal breasts of the princess and prince of Denmark, who mourned not only for themselves, but for the whole nation<sup>2</sup>."

SOON AFTER the prorogation of parliament, the melancholy news arrived of the colony that had been sent out to Darien having abandoned it, with the entire loss of all the property that had been embarked in it. William was now advised to let parliament reassemble on the 18th of October, and he sent a letter from Loo, where he still remained, saying he was "heartily sorry for the [Darien] company's loss," and concluded with recommending "wisdom, calmness, and unanimity." The parliament sat nearly three months amidst heats and threatening feuds about the miscarriage of the Darien settlement, which seemed to threaten a new revolution; and at last concluded, with the resolution, that "in consideration of their great deliverance by his majesty, and in that next under God their safety and happiness depended wholly on the preservation of his majesty's person, and the security of his government, they would stand by and support both his majesty and his government, to the utmost of their power; and maintain such forces as should be requisite for those ends<sup>1</sup>."

A LETTER from the lord advocate to Mr. Carstares announces

<sup>1</sup> Campbell's History of England, v. iii. 786.

<sup>2</sup> Acta Parl. v. x.





that Mr. Forbes and Mr. Ross, two episcopal clergymen who enjoyed a legal protection, were harassed by malicious informations against them of "immoralities, errors, and supine negligence," before the presbyteries of Ross and Inverness, and by them deposed for the above sins, and for having refused to appear at their bar. These were some of the usual pleas of presbytery; but it is a new species of persecution to exercise discipline over men who were not only not within their jurisdiction, but who contemned it so far as not to answer to their summons. *If* they had been guilty of immoralities, they were amenable to the civil law; but errors in doctrine, and supine negligence, were faults for their bishop to inquire into, and not for a body that had no jurisdiction over them. This is a further evidence of the tyrannical disposition and grasping supremacy of presbytery, when left to its uncontrolled inclination. Upon this new persecution the whole of the clergy took alarm, and the above-named clergymen went to Edinburgh, where it was agreed to carry their complaint to the foot of the throne, as they could get no redress from the government at home; and lord Seafield says, "they are very much afraid of the violence of the presbyterian ministers, for they had turned out lately two intruders that had taken the oaths." This alarmed the lord advocate, and he wrote to the presbytery, "that, though it was not provided in the act of parliament that the protected men should be exempted, yet the parliament, on the other hand, did *expressly* waive the making them *subject* to presbyteries, and other church judicatories; but provided, that, upon their application, the church might assume them or not. And therefore it was his advice that the presbytery should look upon them as *persons without*, and pass from the judgment and censure they had pronounced, by letting it fall to the ground." The alarm of the clergy was increased by the council removing Mr. James Gordon, who had a small congregation of faithful men in Montrose, from his charge, and shutting up his chapel. The cause of this injustice was his administering the communion to his people, and admitting other deprived clergymen to officiate occasionally for him. In this manner the clergy and the faithful adherents of the church were persecuted by the presbyterians, and by the government, that ought to have protected them from the oppression and tyranny of the kirk courts<sup>1</sup>. About this time, Mr. Mather, formerly one of the clergy of St. Andrews, was deprived of

<sup>1</sup> Carstares' State Papers, 495-97.



his church, had his chapel or meeting-house shut up, and he was banished the city of St. Andrews, although he had *qualified* himself according to law in all points. He retired to Edinburgh, and there died of *starvation* about three months afterwards; his modesty being so great that he did not let his miserable condition be known till it was too late, and when the assistance of the benevolent was of no avail<sup>1</sup>."

HIS GRACE the archbishop of Glasgow still remained imprisoned in the Castle, and lord Seafield informs Mr. Carstares that his grace threatened to prosecute his lordship "before the parliament, because that he is continued under confinement, contrary to the right of the subject. It is true," he continues, "I did countersign the letter which put him under confinement; but yet I have enough to say for it; for you know he was under [sentence of] banishment; and it was at his own desire that he was confined in place of his sentence of banishment. However, I should be glad that I were allowed to acquaint the council, that his majesty leaves it to them to do in it what they think just; but I cannot at present desire a letter to the council taking off his confinement directly<sup>2</sup>." In a subsequent letter, in which he reiterates his assertion that the change from banishment to imprisonment was at his grace's own desire, his lordship adds, that he left the privy council to act in the case as they shall see fitting<sup>3</sup>. In the month of March, Dr. Bruce, lord bishop of Orkney, departed this life, after having suffered severely both from jesuitical and presbyterian persecution.

WHEN THE parliament met again, an act was passed on the 23d of November, "for securing the protestant religion and the presbyterian government;" and it contained this clause—"Our sovereign, &c. ratifies and approves, and perpetually confirms, all laws, statutes, and acts of parliament, maintaining and preserving of the true reformed protestant religion, and for the true church of Christ, as at present owned and settled within this kingdom; as likewise for establishing, ratifying, and confirming the presbyterian church government, that is to say, the discipline of the church by kirk sessions, presbyteries, provincial synods, and general assemblies, to be agreeable to the word of God, and the only government of Christ's church within this kingdom. . . . Bot [*i. e.* without] prejudice, nevertheless, to the 27th act of the fifth session of

<sup>1</sup> Case of the Episcopal Clergy of Scotland truly represented, folio, p. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Carstares' State Papers, 596.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.* p. 630.



this present parliament, entitled, "Act concerning the church, as to the allowance therein given to certain ministers not actually assumed by the ordinary church judicatories <sup>1</sup>."

1701.—AGREEABLE to the king's appointment, the General Assembly met at Edinburgh on the 10th of February. The earl of Annandale was sent down as the royal commissioner, and Thomas Wilkie was chosen moderator. There is nothing in the king's letter, or the answer to it, worthy of notice, only that he seems to have drilled the ministers into a satisfactory state of submission to his supremacy; for he acknowledges that their good conduct and management in the last and former assemblies had given him full confidence in their "good disposition" to obey the powers that be. The providing the north in preachers still occupied their most serious care; for the inclinations of the people beyond the Tay, in favour of episcopacy, seemed to be invincible. But a new source of trouble started up, a real heresy, that bred them much trouble, and is one, although now unknown, against which the ministers are still required to testify in their ordination formula, and to renounce it among other things.

IN THE YEAR 1696, a blasphemous book, written by a Mademoiselle Antonia Bourignon, was published with the sanction and assistance of M. Christian de Cort, a popish ecclesiastic, superior of the Oratory, and pastor of St. John, at Mechlin—a sure symptom that it was intended to propagate heresy and enthusiasm among the dissenting sects. It was translated into English the same year; and Dr. Garden, one of the ministers of Aberdeen, espoused her opinions, defended and attempted to propagate them; for which he was prosecuted before the Assembly. Mr. Leslie says of its heretical points—"there are in it great flights of devotion and abstraction from the world. But the cloven-foot does appear;—in superlative and blasphemous *pride*—in overturning all outward priesthood and ordinances of the gospel—in the height of uncharitableness and damning of all the world—in misrepresenting the design and import of our Saviour's doctrine—in heretical notions set up contrary to the gospel—in her contempt of the Holy Scriptures—and in other wild and barbarous notions<sup>2</sup>." The act of Assembly picked out some heretical points; one of them, which they at least considered such, assaulted the fundamental doctrine that runs through their whole Confession of Faith, viz., "the *denying* of the decrees of election and reprobation, and the loading of those acts of grace and sovereignty

<sup>1</sup> Acta Parl. v. x. p. 215.

<sup>2</sup> Snake in the Grass—Preface, iii. iv.





with a multitude of odious and blasphemous aspersions, particularly wickedness, cruelty, and respect of persons." But they also named several really heretical positions; and "therefore, being moved with love to the truth of God, and zeal for His glory, as also an earnest desire for purging the kirk of error and heresy, and every thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, did, and hereby do, ratify and confirm the sentence of suspension passed by the committee against the said Dr. George Garden: and further did, and hereby do, in the name, &c. . . . according to the power entrusted by Him to them, and His peremptory command, actually depose the said Dr. Garden from the office of the ministry<sup>1</sup>."

THE CLERGY of the church of England were exceedingly dissatisfied, that the convocation of their church had not been permitted to meet for ten years; and their dissatisfaction was increased by their observing that the presbyterian General Assembly frequently met, and were honoured with the king's particular notice and his letters. Dissenters of every denomination were at full liberty to meet when and where they pleased, and to discuss the affairs of their different sects; but although the clergy were part of the constitution of England, yet they were not permitted to meet to consider the state of religion, or to consult about the interests of their own body. Their discontent reaching the ears of government, a convocation was summoned, and met on the 10th of February; Dr. Hooper, dean of Canterbury, was chosen prolocutor. An address was agreed to, and presented to the king, giving him all possible assurances of their steady loyalty and affection to his person and government. The Lower House censured several injurious and blasphemous pages contained in Toland's book, entitled, "Christianity not Mysterious." They were next proceeding to censure Bishop Burnet's Exposition of the Thirty-nine Articles, but were stopped by the Upper House, which declared their censure was scandalous, and that they had no authority to examine the works of a bishop. The Lower House insisted that they had a right to adjourn themselves, and were not subject to the archbishop's prorogation; whilst the Upper House denied their right to adjourn themselves, maintaining there was no precedent for it, and that it was a manifest violation of the archbishop's authority: that the Lower House was not an independent body, that both houses were but one body, and originally met together in one place. In consequence of the disputes betwixt the two

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Assembly, xi. session 15, 307, 308.



houses, the convocation was dissolved without doing any business<sup>1</sup>.

THE ENGLISH parliament met on the 10th of February, and in the speech from the throne the king said that the duke of Gloucester's death had made it absolutely necessary that there should be a further provision made for the succession of the crown in the protestant line. On the 1st of March, the clause in the king's speech relating to the succession was taken into consideration by a committee of the whole House. On the 12th their resolutions were reported, and agreed to by the Commons, and were to this effect:—1. That all things properly cognisable in the privy council be transacted there; and all resolutions taken thereupon, signed by the privy council. 2. That no foreigner, though naturalized, should be capable of a grant from the crown, to himself or any in trust for him. 3. That England shall not be obliged to engage in war for the defence of the foreign dominions of any succeeding king. 4. That succeeding kings shall join in communion with the church of England. 5. That no pardon shall be pleadable to an impeachment in parliament. 6. That no succeeding king shall go out of the British dominions without consent of parliament. 7. That no pensioner or person in office under the crown shall be a member of the Commons. 8. That further provision be made for the security of religion and the rights of the subject. 9. That the judges' commissions be *quamdiu se bene gesserint*, and their salaries ascertained. 10. That after king William and the princess Anne, the crown be limited to the princess Sophia of Hanover, and the heirs of her body, being protestants. 11. That a bill be brought in upon the above resolutions.

IT HAS BEEN affirmed, that after the death of the duke of Gloucester, king William made proposals to the court of St. Germain's to take the prince of Wales into England, and to educate him in the reformed catholic faith, to succeed to the throne after the death of his sister, the princess Anne. This offer king James rejected with great indignation; he would have seen his son under a tombstone rather than to have regained the throne of his ancestors on such a condition. The resolutions above were passed into a law, commonly called the Act of Settlement. On this occasion the duchess of Savoy, daughter of the princess Henrietta, who was the youngest daughter of king Charles I., and who married the duke of Orleans, protested against the alteration of the succession, be-

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronological Historian, i. 303.



cause she was the nearest in blood to the crown of England after the prince of Wales.

A LETTER has been found amongst lord Somers's papers, written by the princess Sophia to Mr. Stepney, in answer to a private one of his to her intimating the death of the duke of Gloucester, and the intention to settle the succession upon her and her family after the death of the king and the princess of Denmark without issue. In this letter the princess says how highly she thought of this notice of her and her family, but wishes that it might be well considered of with regard to some improprieties she mentions, of her family having the crown of England, that they were strangers, and used in their own country to a form of government very different from that of ours, and that we were so fond of. She then recommends, in a style of compassion, the unhappy case of *le pauvre prince de Galles*, and wishes that he may rather be thought of than her family; saying, that he had learned and suffered so much from his father's errors, that he would certainly avoid all of them, and make a good king of England. This letter, speaker Onslow says, he saw and read, by favour of one of the sons of lord Hardwick, whose lady was a niece of lord Somers, and by her my lord Hardwick had many of his papers. They were mostly destroyed by a fire in Lincoln's Inn; but this letter was among the few papers that were saved. The princess, however, met William at Loo, where the affair of the succession in her house was finally settled by pensionary Heinsius and the earl of Portland, without the advice or knowledge of his English ministers, to whom it was only imparted when it became necessary to pass a commission under the great seal for its conclusion! Many who wished the succession to be in the house of Hanover were very apprehensive that many evils might arise to England from the two countries being under the same sovereign, and therefore wished it might be a condition in the new settlement of the crown, that whoever of the house of Hanover succeeded to it should not at the same time hold their German dominions. This proposal was made to the elector, who rejected it, declaring he would not accept of the British crown on the terms of renouncing his birthright, where he had sure possession. It was then proposed that the crown should go to some other protestant of his family; to which he answered, that if the crown of England was to come to his family, no one should wear it before himself except his mother<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronological Historian, i. 303, 304.—Burnet's Own Times, iv. 453, 501, 502; and editor's notes on the Places.





THE DEATH of king James opened up a new scene. On Friday, the 2d of September, his majesty fainted while on his knees at chapel, whence he was carried to his apartment. The fit lasted half an hour; afterwards he vomited clots of blood in great quantity, and after that a stream of pure blood. When that stopped, a slight fever seized him, and on Saturday a drowsiness which approached almost to a lethargy, from which neither blisters nor stimulants could rouse him till Tuesday, when he revived. He was sensible of his approaching end, and desired to have the sacrament, which was administered to him by the curate of the parish, as well as all the other rites of their religion. He then expressed himself as follows:—"I am now going to make my exit out of this miserable world—out of a tempestuous sea, to a port of eternal rest, as I firmly hope, through the merits and passion of my dear Saviour. My integrity and innocency have been oppressed by infinite lies and calumnies; I never entertained a thought which was not levelled at the good of my subjects. O, sweet Jesu! of thine infinite mercy forgive the authors and forgers of them; I offer up all my sufferings in Thee, holy Jesus; sanctify them to me, for the eternal salvation of my poor soul. O forgive, sweet Jesus! my own bowels who have risen up against me; forgive the chief contrivers of my dethroning, and give them grace to repent of their errors. Eternally praised be thy holy providence, who permitting me to be deprived of an earthly, has given me better means to gain an eternal crown. I thank thee, sweet Jesus! for giving me the spirit of resignation amongst so many calamities." The king of France came to visit him after he was speechless, and in comforting the queen he promised to acknowledge and proclaim the prince lawful heir and successor to the imperial crown of Great Britain. The king again rallied, and having heard of Lewis's declaration, he sent for the prince, and said,—"I am now leaving this world, which has been to me a sea of storms and tempests; it being God Almighty's will to wean me from it by many great afflictions. Serve him with all your power and strength, and never put the crown of England in competition with your eternal salvation; but if His holy providence shall think fit to set you upon the throne of our ancestors, govern your subjects with justice and clemency, and take pity on your misled subjects. Remember, kings are not made for themselves, but for the good of their people; set before their eyes, in your own actions, a pattern of all manner of virtues; consider them your children; aim at nothing but their good in correcting them. You are the child of rows and prayers;





behave yourself accordingly." He departed this life at three o'clock in the afternoon of Friday, the 16th of September, in the 69th year of his age, a day on which he always fasted, in memory of our blessed Lord's passion — a day on which he had always desired to die; and his death took place at the same hour as our Lord's. His body was deposited privately, in the monastery of the Benedictines at Paris, and his heart was sent to the nunnery of Chaillot. The French king immediately proclaimed his son, James Francis Edward, king of England, Scotland, and Ireland, by the name of James III. and VIII. On which event, William recalled his ambassador from the court of France, and ordered Mons. Poussin, the French secretary in England, to depart the kingdom<sup>1</sup>.

HAD IT not been for his *popery*, James would have been a great and a good prince. When he was a subject to his brother Charles, he was undoubtedly a valiant commander, a firm friend, and an immoveable observer of his word and promise, and a man of the greatest application to business. His judgment was good when it was not warped by his religion or guided by his jesuits; and he was naturally addicted to truth, fidelity, and justice. James was greatly inferior to Charles II. in talents and understanding, and both were immeasurably inferior to their father and grandfather in that virtue which entitle its owner to "see God,"—chastity; but he was infinitely superior to Charles in industry, application to business, and temperance. He was familiar and courteous; but choleric, and easily provoked. His government was conducted by his own will, without the advice either of parliament, councils, or responsible ministers; that is, he governed entirely by the suggestions of father Petre and other jesuits, who were in such a violent hurry to papalise the empire that they precipitated him into the most unconstitutional measures, and he fell a sacrifice to their villainy, their treachery, and their indiscreet zeal for the propagation of idolatry. Burnet says, "he had no personal vices but of one sort; he was still wandering from one amour to another; yet he had a real sense of sin, and was ashamed of it. But [popish] priests know how to engage princes more entirely into their own interests, by making them compound for their sins by a great zeal for the holy church, as they call it." And Ralph judiciously remarks, "How sig-

<sup>1</sup> Ellis's Letters; Letter cccxxxviii. vol. iii. p. 354.—Salmon's Chronological Historian, i. 309.—Burnet's Own Times, iv. 587.—Life of King James II. 419, 420.—The last Words of the late King James to his Son and Daughter and the French King. Pamphlet. London: published 1701.



nally soever his own frailties, prejudices, absurdities, and violences, contributed to his misfortunes, it ought to be acknowledged that the measure would never have overflowed in so astonishing a manner if it had not been for those fatal occurrences, treacherous councillors, ungrateful servants, &c.; all of whom, instead of warning him of the rocks that lay before him, according to the obligations which lay upon them, either sordidly connived at the ruinous course he held, or wickedly flattered the phrensy that impelled him, for the sake of their share in the wreck<sup>1</sup>. It is to be well noted, that all his popish counsellors and advisers fled, and hid their diminished heads, the moment that his real power vanished from him; and none of them, in the hour of need, assisted him either with their counsel or their sword. They well knew the grievous sins they had committed against both the religion and the liberty of the empire, and naturally enough dreaded the vengeance of an injured and indignant people.

1710.—IN OBEDIENCE to William's appointment, the General Assembly met at Edinburgh on March the 6th. The earl of Marchmont, the lord chancellor, was the commissioner, and the ministers chose the notorious David Williamson, minister of the West Kirk, moderator. The king again assured them of his protection, and recommended calmness and unanimity in their proceedings, and to eschew disputes. The commissioner communicated to the Assembly the intelligence of William's declining health, and the probability of his death; and he urged them to despatch all the most necessary business, lest that event might occur before their dissolution. In this gloomy state of their affairs very little business was done beyond the appointment of a new commission for planting the stubborn episcopalian north, and the general commission of the kirk. After sitting five sessions, the earl of Marchmont dissolved the Assembly on the 11th of March, and appointed the next to meet on the 10th of March, next year.

WILLIAM had been long in a declining state of health, but was still able to transact business and to take exercise. On the 21st of February, as he was riding out from Kensington to hunt, near Hampton Court, his horse stumbled upon level ground, as he was putting him to a gallop, and, being very feeble, the king fell off and broke his right clavicle. He was carried to Hampton Court, where his collar bone was set, and he returned to Kensington in the evening. Two days afterwards, he sent a message to the Commons, pressing upon

<sup>1</sup> Life of James II.—Burnet's Own Times, and the Editor's Notes



their consideration the necessity of a firm and entire union of the kingdoms of England and Scotland. In the Peers, the earl of Nottingham moved that an address should be made to the king to dissolve the Scottish parliament, and 'to call a new one, since it was only a prolonged convention, and the legality of its consent to an union might be questioned. This motion put an end to the projected union; for the state of public opinion in Scotland was such that the king durst not have ventured on dissolving his convention-parliament, and of calling a free and constitutional one. On the 4th of March an act passed both Houses, "for the further security of his majesty's person and the succession of the crown in the protestant line, and extinguishing the hopes of the pretended prince of Wales and all other pretenders, and their open and secret abettors;" and in this act was embodied the ABJURATION OATH, which was enjoined to be taken by all men on entering to any office under government. This oath was afterwards extended to Scotland:—"I ——— do solemnly and sincerely declare, that the person pretended to be the prince of Wales during the life of the late king James, and since his decease pretending to be, and taking upon himself the stile and title of, king of England, by the name of James the Third, or of Scotland, by the name of James the Eighth, or the stile and title of king of Great Britain, hath not any right or title whatsoever to the crown of this realm, or to any other the dominions thereunto belonging: and I do renounce, refuse, and abjure any allegiance or obedience to him, &c."

ON THE 4th of March the king took several turns in the gallery at Kensington, and, being tired, sat down on a sofa and fell asleep; on waking he had a shivering fit, which was followed by diarrhoea. He observed in French, to the earl of Albemarle, "I approach my end;" and he received the sacrament from archbishop Tennison, who, with bishop Burnet, remained with him to the last. He was too weak to sign the above-named act and oath of abjuration, but a stamp had been prepared, by which he affixed his name to it, in the presence of the great officers of state. And thus, in the article of death, he left a legacy of dispute and contention, and an oath, says Mr. Skinner, "of such a dubious contexture, and so hard to be digested in all its parts, that even the presbyterians boggled at it." On the other hand, bishop Kennett says, "Above all, and without which all others had been void, was his wise and effectual care for the protestant succession, provided for by two several acts of his last year; and one of them his *blessed dying legacy* of admirable, and we hope per-





petual, service to this church and nation, and indeed to the protestant interest and balance of all Europe." He died about eight o'clock on Sunday morning, the 8th of March. The immediate cause of his death was a mortification of the upper lobe on the left side of the lungs, and part of the pleura next to it. Immediately after death, lords Lexington and Scarborough directed a black ribbon to be untied from his left arm, by which there was tied next to his skin a gold ring, with some hair of the late queen Mary, which he had worn in this manner since her death. In their report, the physicians say, "It is very rare to find a body with so little blood as was seen in this; there being more found in his lungs than in all the parts put together." And bishop Burnet says, "there was scarce any blood in his body." He died in his fifty-second year, having reigned thirteen years and a few days<sup>1</sup>.

SMOLLETT sums up his character in few words:—"William was a fatalist in religion, indefatigable in war, enterprising in politics, dead to all the warm and generous emotions of the heart, a cold relation, an indifferent husband, a disagreeable man, an ungracious prince, and an imperious sovereign<sup>2</sup>." He was bred a Calvinist; but on his marriage he had a chapel fitted up for the princess Mary, where divine service was performed after the rites of the church of England. The writer of the history of his reign says, that, "whilst prince of Orange, he went either to the Dutch, French, or English churches indifferently! and whilst king of England, though he publicly professed the established religion, yet he still retained a great tenderness for the dissenters, and was ever averse to persecute people upon account of their belief. His piety and devotion were sincere, but unaffected. The only thing that looked like superstition in him was the avoiding to begin a journey or any great enterprise on a *Monday*<sup>3</sup>." William does not appear to have been a persecutor; his mind seems to have been intent on military affairs and ambitious projects; but *he suffered* those in authority under him, and the *rabble* in his name, to persecute the Church of Scotland in a more severe, cruel, and wanton manner, than perhaps was ever practised since the last pagan persecution of the church. Being a *fatalist*, he probably thought the rabbling of the

<sup>1</sup> Burnet's Own Times, iv. 560, 561.—Kennett's History of England, iii. 836, 837.—Salmon's Chronological Historian, i. 311.—History of King William III. vol. iii. 509-515.—Skinner's Eccl. History, ii. 598.

<sup>2</sup> Continuation of Hume's History, ix. 443.

<sup>3</sup> History of the Reign of William III. vol. iii. 517.



clergy of Scotland had been one of those things "predestinated and foreordained," and so "particularly and unchangeably designed," that it could not be "either increased or diminished" by his interference. Hetherington says, that by the presbyterian establishment "his memory will ever be much and justly revered, as having been under Providence the instrument by which she was delivered from prelatic tyranny and persecution. But it cannot be concealed, and ought not to be forgotten, that his systematic treatment of the presbyterian church was both unwise, ungrateful, and injurious. If he did not succeed in bringing her under the erastian yoke, it was not for want of inclination to have done so<sup>1</sup>."

THE PRINCESS ANNE, only surviving child of James II. and VII., by the lady Anne Hyde, eldest daughter of Edward, earl of Clarendon, was proclaimed at Whitehall on the 8th of March, with the usual solemnity. A council assembling the same day, her majesty made a speech, in which she declared how sensible she was of the unspeakable loss the nation had sustained by the death of the late king, and the burthen it brought upon herself; which nothing could encourage her to undergo but her great concern for the preservation of the religion, laws, and liberties of her native country: and that no pains should be wanting on her part to defend and support them, and to maintain the protestant succession<sup>2</sup>." The same day she caused a letter to be written to her privy council in Scotland, in which she said—"And on this occasion, at our first accession to the throne, we give them, and all our good people, full assurance of our firm resolution during the whole course of our reign, to protect them in their religion, laws, and liberties, and in the established government of the church<sup>3</sup>."

LOCKHART says, queen Anne was proclaimed, "to the great satisfaction of all those who were well-wishers to their country, and especially to the cavaliers, who expected mighty things from her; but, on the other hand, the presbyterians looked on themselves as undone; despair appeared in their countenances, which were more upon the melancholic and dejected air than usual, and most of their discourses from the pulpits were exhortations to stand by, support, and be ready to suffer for Christ's cause (the epithet they gave their own). They knew the queen was a strenuous assertor of the doctrine of the church of England. They were conscious how little respect the great men of their faction had paid her during the late

<sup>1</sup> Hetherington's History, 189.

<sup>2</sup> Salmon's Chron. Hist. i. 315.

<sup>3</sup> Boyer's History of Queen Anne, folio, p. 10. 1735.







reign. They saw the church party was preferred to places and favour in England. They knew the Scots nation, especially the nobility and gentry, were much disgusted at them, because of their promoting the court interest in the last reign against that of the country; and upon these and such-like accounts dreaded a storm impending over their heads<sup>1</sup>."

AT THE ACCESSION of queen Anne the ministers of the crown in Scotland were attached to what were called revolution principles, and they were all of anti-monarchical affections. Nevertheless, says an anonymous author, "upon the accession of queen Anne to the throne, and the charitable and gracious letter she wrote to her privy council, the condition of the suffering clergy was made somewhat more easy; the liturgy began to be set up in several families in the north, and the meeting-houses in the south and north were enlarged and better frequented; but this calm lasted not long, for the presbyterian tyranny, which was suppressed for some time, broke out with new violence a little after the union<sup>2</sup>."

THE LATE king had provided that the Scottish parliament should continue in being six months after his death; and it had been prorogued by the queen to the 9th of June, when it met, and the duke of Queensberry was sent down as her representative. At its meeting, the queen's letter was read, which contained the following clause:—"That it was her majesty's firm purpose and resolution to maintain the sovereignty and independency of that her ancient kingdom against all invasions or encroachments whatsoever; that she should be ever equally tender of the rights, prerogatives, and liberties of the crown and kingdom of Scotland, as of those of the crown and kingdom of England; and that she should make it the chief design of her reign to govern both according to their respective laws and liberties, and to avoid all occasion of misunderstandings and differences betwixt them. That for this end she should think it her happiness to establish an Union betwixt the two kingdoms, upon an equal and just foundation. . . . That her majesty gave them full assurance that she was firmly resolved to maintain and protect them in the full possession of their religion, laws, and liberties, and of the presbyterian government of the church as at present established." In their reply to the royal letter, they reminded her majesty that presbyterianism was established by law, and begged that in

<sup>1</sup> Memoirs concerning the Affairs of Scotland, from Queen Anne's accession to the commencement of the Union of the Two Kingdoms, 8vo. 6-7. 1714.

<sup>2</sup> Representation of the State of the Church in North Britain, p. 17.





the whole procedure of the treaty her majesty "will have a gracious and careful regard to the maintenance of the presbyterian government of the church as now established by act of parliament<sup>1</sup>."

As soon as the parliament met, and before the queen's commission had been read, the duke of Hamilton desired to be heard. In his own name, and in that of those who adhered to him, he expressed his satisfaction at the queen's accession, but protested against the legality of this parliament, which was originally only a convention of estates, that, by the exercise of the *dispensing* power and of the prerogative, had been converted into a parliament. Then his grace read a written declaration of his own and his party's reasons for their dissent. "Forasmuch as by the fundamental laws and constitution of this kingdom, all parliaments do dissolve by the death of the king or queen, except in so far as innovated by the 17th act, 6th session, of king William's parliament last in being, at his decease, to meet and act what should be needful for the defence of the true protestant religion, as now by law established, and maintaining the succession to the crown, as settled by the claim of right, and preserving and securing the peace and safety of the kingdom, and seeing that the said ends are fully satisfied by her majesty's succession to the throne, whereby the religion and peace of the kingdom are secured, we conceive ourselves not now warranted by the law to meet, sit, or act, and therefore do dissent from any thing that shall be done or acted<sup>2</sup>."

HIS GRACE immediately retired, and was followed by seventy-nine members "of the first quality and best estates in the kingdom." They withdrew to the Cross-keys Tavern, and resolved to send up lord Blantyre with an address to the queen, explaining the reasons which had induced them to take this step. Although her majesty admitted lord Blantyre to an audience, yet she not only peremptorily refused to receive the address, but she wrote to the parliament expressing her resentment at the duke of Hamilton and his adherents, for protesting against the legality of this session, and for withdrawing from it. Her majesty also assured the parliament of her resolution to maintain its authority and dignity against all opposition<sup>3</sup>. The parliament passed an act, or rather a resolution of the house, declaring this session to be a lawful and free meeting of parliament, and discharging any person to

<sup>1</sup> Acta Parliament. xi.

<sup>2</sup> Lockhart's Memoirs, 12, 13.

<sup>3</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 319.



disown, quarrel, or impugn the dignity and authority thereof, under the penalty of high treason. Many of the people, however, adhered to the protest of the dissenting members, and nearly one-half of the nation refused to pay the taxes which were imposed in this session<sup>1</sup>. An act was next passed to recognise her majesty's authority; and another for the security of the presbyterian kirk government, in which, says Burnet, "they proceeded with such violence, that Alexander Bruce, moving that all those acts might be read, for he believed some of them might be found inconsistent with monarchy, he was *for that* expelled the house<sup>2</sup>." This statement is confirmed by Mr. Lockhart, who says—"And Alexander Bruce, upon account of a speech made against the same, wherein, amongst other things, he affirmed that presbytery was inconsistent with monarchy, was expelled the house<sup>3</sup>." The faculty of advocates, also, were severely reprimanded at the bar of the house, for having declared their assent to the duke of Hamilton's protest, although no set of men could have been better judges of the law and usage in such a case.

THE SESSION went on quietly, till the earl of Marchmont the lord chancellor, suddenly presented an act for imposing an oath to abjure the prince of Wales, or the Pretender, "in the most horrid scurrilous terms imaginable." This overture was contrary to the advice of his friends, and even the commands of the lord commissioner; it divided the house, and excited considerable animosity among the members, and overtures were made to the duke's tail to return and assist them in defeating the motion, which they would have done, had it gone on. But the commissioner stopped its further progress by adjourning the parliament to the 18th of August. "And I can assure you," says one of Mr. Carstares' correspondents, "the adjournment was generally well received by the people, of all ranks and persuasions; for not one set of people were unanimous for pressing it. The presbyterian members of parliament, and the very ministers of this place, were divided upon that question<sup>4</sup>." And so, says Mr. Lockhart, "we take leave of this monstrous parliament, which, from a convention, was metamorphosed and transubstantiated into a parliament, and when dead revived again, and all this to support the interest, and continue the dominion, of a set of men that would, notwithstanding their pretended zeal for the liberties of their country, break in upon the same, by overturning and trampling

<sup>1</sup> Lockhart's Memoirs, 14.

<sup>3</sup> Memoirs, 15.

<sup>2</sup> Own Times, v. 24.

<sup>4</sup> Carstares' State Papers, 714, 1716.



upon the most nice and sacred part of our constitution, the greatest preservation and bulwark of all that is near and dear to a free people<sup>1</sup>."

THE PROJECT of an union of the kingdoms, which had baffled all the attempts of former sovereigns, was now prosecuted in earnest, and to a successful issue. Commissioners for both kingdoms were appointed; on the English side was the archbishop of Canterbury; but there was no presbyterian minister appointed by the other party. The commissioners met for the first time on the 22d of October, at the Cockpit, where, after reading both commissions, sir Nathan Wright, keeper of the great seal of England, spoke as follows:—"We do with great satisfaction meet your lordships on this occasion . . . that England and Scotland, already united in alliance under one head, the queen, may *for ever* hereafter *become one people*; one in heart and affections; one in interest; one in name and in deed; a work which, if it can be brought to pass, promiseth a lasting happiness to all." This was responded to by the duke of Queensberry with equal frankness and cordiality. There not being a quorum of the Scottish commissioners in London, the meeting was adjourned until the 10th of November, when they met, and the negotiations commenced. During all this time there had not a word been said on the difficult point of religion, on either side; but, like wise negotiators, the commissioners on both sides were willing to feel each other's pulses in the smaller matters, before they touched the more weighty and difficult subject, which had been the rock on which all former negotiations had split. The Scottish episcopal clergy, however, were not so cautious; for on the 10th of December, calculating on the queen's known attachment to the reformed catholic church, they petitioned her majesty to compassionate their poverty and distress, and to admit them to benefices.

"WE, YOUR majesty's most humble, dutiful, loyal, and most obedient subjects, look on it as no small blessing to have a queen of our ancient race of kings, who has always been a pattern of virtue, and a constant support and owner of the true reformed orthodox religion; and who, since her coming to the crown of her illustrious ancestors, has shewn such good and generous inclinations to make all her subjects live happily, that we have presumed most humbly to address your majesty, to take into your royal consideration, the condition of the

<sup>1</sup> Memoirs, 19, 20.





subjects of the episcopal persuasion in this kingdom. It is not unknown to your majesty, the hard measures and discouragements they met with of late years, particularly those of the clergy, though they have always behaved themselves (as their principles obliged them to do), peaceably and submissively to supreme authority. May it therefore please your sacred majesty, to take those into your royal protection, and give liberty to such parishes, where all or most of the heritors and inhabitants are of the episcopal persuasion, to call, place, and give benefices to ministers of their own principles, which the presbyterians themselves can have no reason to complain of; for, if the plurality they pretend to be true, by this act of grace neither their churches nor benefices are in hazard; which favour will oblige us more and more, out of gratitude as well as duty, to send up our prayers to Almighty God, that the same good Providence which placed your majesty upon the throne, and has blessed the beginning of your reign with such glorious success, may preserve your majesty for a blessing to these lands, and that we may never want a true protestant, of the same royal blood, to govern us, while sun and moon endure<sup>1</sup>.”

1703.—IT DOES not appear what answer had been given to this petition; but the episcopalians now conceived some hopes of relief to their miseries from a change of ministry in Scotland, for the new ministers were chiefly episcopalians and anti-revolutioners. This produced a gleam of hope in the clergy; but it proportionably alarmed the presbyterians. It was determined to dissolve the convention-*Long*-parliament, which had sat more than fourteen years, and to summon a new parliament, to be elected in the ancient constitutional manner. The earl of Seafield, principal secretary of state, who, Mr. Lockhart says, “was a blank sheet of paper, which the court might fill up with what they pleased,” came down to influence the elections, and it so happened “that a greater number of men of anti-revolution principles were chosen than had been known in any parliament since the Revolution.” The duke of Hamilton (who was the earl of Arran, formerly mentioned, and the son of Anne, duchess of Hamilton, in her own right, by James, earl of Selkirk, who was created duke of Hamilton by Charles II.) obtained from her majesty a letter to the privy council, which contained the following clause:—“We do, in the first place, recommend to your care, the church

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chronology, i. 323. — Boyer's History of Queen Anne, folio, pp. 25-27.



now established by law, &c. . . . We are informed that there are many dissenters within that kingdom, who, albeit they differ from the established church in opinion as to church government and form, yet are of the protestant reformed religion, some of which are in possession of benefices, and others exercise their worship in meeting-houses. It is our royal pleasure that they should be directed to live suitably to the reformed religion which they profess, submissively to our laws, decently and regularly with relation to the church established by law, as good christians and subjects; and in so doing, that they be protected in the peaceable exercise of their religion, and in their persons and estates, according to the laws of the kingdom: and we recommend to the clergy of the established discipline their living in brotherly love and communion with such dissenters."

ENCOURAGED by these expressions in her majesty's letter, and her repeated assurances that she would support the church of England, and even the least member of it, in all their just rights and privileges, the Scottish clergy framed another address to the queen. They sent up Dr. Skene and Dr. Scott to present it, and they were introduced to her majesty by the duke of Queensberry and viscount Tarbat. It is somewhat remarkable that the bishops seem at this time to have sunk into obscurity; for we never hear of their having taken any part in these addresses, nor of their having publicly executed any episcopal acts.

"DREAD SOVEREIGN,—We, your majesty's most dutiful and obedient subjects, and most humble supplicants, being deeply sensible that the divine goodness hath raised your majesty to the throne of your royal ancestors, as a nursing-mother to the true church of God, for the support and preservation of the religion, laws, and liberties of all your dominions, and now especially, that it is a remarkable blessing to this your majesty's ancient kingdom of Scotland, (in the present deplorable circumstances of this *national* church), do presume to offer our most humble and most sincere congratulations upon your majesty's accession to the crown.

"AND BEG liberty to lay before your majesty the sad condition of the afflicted episcopal clergy, who, in the years 1688 and 1689, and some years after, the truly ancient and apostolical government of the church by bishops, were deprived of, and put from, the exercise of their sacred offices and possessions of their livings, and thereby reduced to great extremity and want. During the continuance of which suffering state,



many worthy ministers of the gospel have been taken away by death; and we, whom it hath pleased God to continue in life, have laboured to sweeten the bitterness of our trials, by a christian and peaceable submission and resignation to His will. And in truth and gratitude we are obliged to acknowledge, that many of us in a great measure owe our lives to *the charity and beneficence* of such of your majesty's good subjects, as thought it *a disgrace* to christianity, that a society of men consecrated to the altar, in the service of Christ, *should perish* in a christian kingdom *for want of bread*. So now that it hath pleased Almighty God to place your majesty upon the imperial throne of these dominions, the relief and advantages which all your loyal subjects do enjoy, from the benign influence of your majesty's auspicious government, encourageth us, your majesty's most humble supplicants, under the present *distress, and miserable starving* condition of many of our numerous families, to implore that princely commiseration and matchless clemency, which have ever been congenial and peculiar to the blood royal, and are eminently lodged in your sacred person. Humbly beseeching that your royal bounty and indulgence may be extended to us in such manner, and by such methods, as your majesty in your princely wisdom shall think fit, that we may find ourselves more and more obliged devoutly to pray that your years may be many and your reign glorious."

THE DEPUTATION was graciously received, and the queen returned the following answer:—"I take the expressions of your duty and loyalty very kindly, and you may be assured of my protection, and of my endeavours to supply your necessities, as far as conveniently I can: and I doubt not but you will continue in your duty; and I commend you to live in peace and christian love with the clergy who are invested with the church government of that our ancient kingdom."

As MR. SKINNER justly observes, this answer was "of a softer nature than any speech which the episcopal clergy had for some time been accustomed to hear from the throne; it encouraged the whole of them to form higher hopes, and to concert such probable schemes for enlarging their subsistence as they thought might now be carried on with safety, under such a mild administration<sup>1</sup>." It has been mentioned that a fund had been established from subscriptions, and placed under the direction of the archbishops Ross and Patterson,

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical History, ii. 601.





and bishop Graham, of the Isles, with such of the clergy as resided in Edinburgh. These prelates gave a commission to the REV. MR. ARTHUR MILLAR, who was formerly the incumbent of the parish of Inveresk, in which the "honest town" of Musselburgh is situate, but who had been deprived of his benefice under one or other, or all, of the Four Pleas of presbytery, empowering him to go to Ireland, and "to collect money among the well-disposed there, for the relief of the suffering clergy of Scotland." On his arrival in Dublin, he obtained a brief from the duke of Ormond, who was then the lord-lieutenant, which enabled him to collect nearly a thousand pounds sterling. He was greatly assisted by Dr. King, archbishop of Dublin, with whom he maintained a correspondence, and who assisted him greatly in accomplishing the object of his journey, and in his letters expressed the most cordial goodwill to himself and to his cause<sup>1</sup>.

THE ASSEMBLY met at Edinburgh on the 10th of March; the earl of Seafield, lord chancellor, was nominated royal commissioner, and George Meldrum, formerly an episcopal clergyman, was chosen moderator. In the royal letter, the queen says, that they were now met "at the time *appointed by her proclamation*"—"we renew the assurance given by us for protection of the presbyterian government, as that which we find acceptable to the inclinations of our people, and established by the laws of our kingdom. We are confident that you will . . . carry so with others of the reformed protestant religion, albeit differing from you in forms of church policy, that by your meekness and charity they may be the more inclined to live peaceably and dutifully under us, and in brotherly love and respect towards you and the established church<sup>2</sup>." Now, although the "inclination of the people" be the fundamental principle on which they had based their claim to establishment in their Claim of Right, yet Hetherington ungratefully asserts that this clause in the royal message "might be regarded as equivalent to a *denial* of its claim to any higher and more sacred authority<sup>3</sup>." To be sure it was; but it was *the claim* which they themselves had asserted, and although they might have been ashamed to base their policy upon a more sacred foundation, yet they have no right now to complain when their *own terms* are employed. In their answer to the queen's letter they admit this to have been their foundation principle; but in their address in their ninth

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiastical Histories, ii. 603.

<sup>2</sup> Acts of Assembly, 316, 317.

<sup>3</sup> Hetherington's History, 189.





session, they assert the oft-refuted falsehood, that "the reformation from popery was by presbyters, and that prelacy was a great and insupportable grievance and trouble to the nation." Then they boldly state—"Though we acknowledge ourselves to be unquestionably bound as christians, and more especially as ministers of the gospel of peace, to maintain charity and forbearance towards those who peaceably differ from us, and contain themselves within the just limits of sobriety and reason, yet we cannot but complain of the disorders of some of the episcopal clergy, who, with a few of their abettors, that have given as little evidence of their affection to your majesty's government as to the established church, transgress your laws by preaching, though not qualified to your majesty's government—by despising sentences of deprivation by the privy council, and deposition by church judicatories—by invading settled churches—by intruding into vacant churches—and by irregular baptizings and clandestine marriages, and several other gross abuses; all which tend to the weakening and frustrating the good ends of discipline, the increase of licentiousness and irreligion, and the spreading of error and [catholic] doctrine contrary to our Confession of Faith, ratified in parliament<sup>1</sup>."

AN INVINCIBLE difficulty still retarded the spread of presbyterianism by the attachment of the people in the parts beyond the Tay to episcopacy and to their episcopal clergymen; and it was therefore necessary to make an act for planting the vacant churches in the north. The outrages on the episcopal meeting at Glasgow, to be afterwards narrated, became known in the Assembly; and David Williamson filled them with exaggerated apprehensions of the return of prelacy, and encouraged them to stand firm to their covenanted work of reformation, assuring the Assembly "that prelacy should never come in there *but by blood!*" Ministers from the better supplied districts of the south were sent to itinerate as missionaries, to be relieved every three months by others; a circumstance which, of itself alone, would confute their vain boast that presbytery was agreeable to the inclinations of the people, unless the people had been figuratively represented by the three tailors of Tooley-street. There is nothing recorded in the acts of this Assembly from which it would appear that it was dissolved otherways than in the usual way; but we learn from other sources that it was dissolved by an *exertion of the prerogative*, in the midst of preparation "for asserting

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Assembly, session 9, p. 321.



the *supremacy* of Christ." On this fact, Dr. Mc'Crie's evidence is indisputable, for he was too keen a partizan to have told more than the truth—i. e. if it were to hurt him. He says, "And in 1703, when the Assembly had prepared the draft of an act for asserting the supremacy of Christ, the intrinsic power of the church, and the divine right of the presbyterian government, *it was abruptly dissolved* [in its thirteenth session] *by her majesty's commissioner*, without any recorded protest<sup>1</sup>." Willison says they did remonstrate<sup>2</sup>; but no protest or remonstrance appears on the minutes of the Assembly; nay, Hetherington says that they *pretended* there "was no particular urgent business before it," and therefore they made a merit of necessity, and quietly separated, as if the dissolution had been their own act!<sup>3</sup>

WHEN THE presbyterians have so often succumbed to the royal supremacy, how absurd is it in them to taunt the anglo-catholic church with recognising the queen as her temporal head, whilst the church herself only recognises her as her *supreme civil ruler*. But whether the kirk will acknowledge it or not, she is obliged to submit to the queen as supreme, in just the same sense that the anglo-catholic church most cheerfully recognises her; and we have now seen several instances in which she has been *practically* convinced that the sovereign is her head in that sense. When the catholic church in Scotland was oppressed by the operation of the Asseritory act, during the reigns of the royal brothers, the presbyterians accused her of erastianism; although her bishops and clergy were then the noblest and the most intrepid asserters of the rights of the church that any later age can produce. But presbytery has ever been erastian, and it was established in 1689 by merely lay authority; for there was not one spiritual person in that convention-parliament which changed the church government. "If," says Leslie, "presbytery was conceived in the womb of erastianism, has sucked its milk, and is still nourished by it, how decently does it look to see the presbyterians rail at it and abjure it! Are they sworn to destroy that which first gave them birth?"

THE REV. ROBERT CALDER was imprisoned for some months in the common gaol of Edinburgh, and he was afterwards tried for what had been made high treason—that is, for speaking and writing against presbytery; but he was acquitted. He was the compiler of the "*Presbyterian Eloquence*," and was very obnoxious in consequence to the ministers. After escaping

<sup>1</sup> Testimony Assoc. Synod. p. 39.<sup>2</sup> Testimony, p. 31.<sup>3</sup> History, 199.



from the toils of the lord advocate, Mr. Calder went to Aberdeen, and officiated to a small congregation in his own house, for which he was summoned to appear before the privy council on Good Friday. They fixed on that day in order to prevent his administering the holy communion to his little flock on Easter day. The episcopalians of that city were so much more numerous than the presbyterians, that the latter dared not venture to rabble the clergy, but they obtained peremptory summonses from the privy council for each of the clergy to appear on Good Friday to answer for what was called their irregular proceedings. "So that now they are deprived both of baptism and the Lord's Supper, and can have them no otherwise than as in a heathen country, and as in the primitive church in times of persecution, under the peril of the lawless mob or of authority. In this great distress, they of the church in Aberdeen, much superior in number and substance to the kirk party, have humbly addressed her majesty, representing the deplorable condition of their condition, and imploring her majesty's protection at least for their consciences; but they must bear their chains." These Confessors had all intended to administer the Lord's Supper to their congregations which met in their own houses, for they had been driven from their churches; but by summoning them to Edinburgh on Good Friday, they thus put an interdict upon the sacraments. "It must be said of the Scots clergy in general, that they have stood noble Confessors to episcopacy through a long trial of bitter sufferings and reproaches. Perhaps the primitive times afford us not a greater example<sup>1</sup>."

ON THE 6th of May the parliament was ridden with the usual solemnity; the duke of Queensberry was the commissioner, and the earl of Seafield was the lord chancellor. All that was said in the royal letter about religion was, "We have upon several occasions given you and all our good subjects assurance of our firm resolution to maintain and protect them in their religion, rights, and liberties, as at present established by law."—The queen's title was recognised, and after that, the earl of Marchmont proposed an act, which passed the House, for the security of the presbyterian government; "ratifying, approving, and perpetually confirming all laws, &c. made for establishing and preserving the true reformed protestant religion and the true church of Christ, as at present owned and settled within this kingdom, and in its presbyterian

<sup>1</sup> *Leslies's Rehearsals*, vi. Appendix, 256.





government and discipline, as being agreeable to the word of God, *and the only church of Christ* within this kingdom."

THEY NOW took new ground; for in the claim of right they did not assert that presbytery was agreeable to the word of God, but only to the inclinations of the people. Sir David Cunningham argued, that it was uncharitable to unchurch all other churches, and to affirm that none were of the church of Christ except presbyterians. To whom the marquis of Lothian replied, that "the clause was right, since he was sure the presbyterian government was *the best part* of the christian religion!" The presbyterian party were very weak in this parliament, and Lockhart says, "if the queen had been as episcopal in Scotland as in England, she might easily have overturned presbytery; for at this time the House consisted of about two hundred and forty members, thirty whereof voted against that part of the act ratifying presbytery, and eighty-two were *non liquet* (which last were episcopals, but chose to be [shamefully] silent), because there was no formed design against presbytery at that time, or to please the court; so that there was not, properly speaking, a plurality of above sixteen voices, or thereby, for the act; amongst which [the majority] several, such as the duke of Hamilton and many others, were no ways presbyterians. Now had the queen designed to introduce episcopacy, it is obvious it would have been no hard task to have done it<sup>1</sup>."

A REPORT got abroad that it would be proposed in parliament to grant a toleration to the episcopalians, which so much alarmed the presbyterians that they published several pamphlets against allowing any toleration to the church. On the 16th of May, Meldrum, moderator of the last Assembly, preached before the commissioner and parliament, and very vehemently argued *against* toleration. His sermon was published, and is now before me; in which he says, "Is it not obvious to any, then, that the consequence of such a toleration would be so far from the quiet and peace of the nation, that it would be a mean to raise division where it is not, in congregations and families, and heighten and perpetuate it when raised. . . . I know no ministers of that way who judge communion with us in worship unlawful, unless there be any of them who assert such a necessity of episcopal ordination as nullifies the ministry and all the ordinances dispensed by such who want it; and that, I confess, is such an opinion that I

<sup>1</sup> Lockhart's Memoirs, 49-51.



think *should not be tolerated in any protestant church*, being destructive to the truth and being of the most of protestant churches<sup>1</sup>." This sermon was very severely criticised by bishop Sage after its publication. Mr. Meldrum was a fallen star, having been episcopally ordained; he held a living at Aberdeen, which he vacated in 1681, when the Test was imposed, because it bound him to renounce the covenant, to which he had been secretly attached. When king James granted the toleration in 1687, he was desirous of re-occupying the church that he had vacated, but it having been canonically filled, his desire could not be complied with; and meeting with another disappointment, "he grew piqued," and went to Kilwinning in Ayrshire, where he set up a presbyterian meeting-house, and continued this schismatical meeting till the Revolution, when, being greatly superior to the other ministers, he was presented to the Tron church in Edinburgh, and made professor of divinity in that university. He must have been an eyewitness of some of the atrocities that were committed on the episcopal clergy in Ayrshire, which had perhaps case-hardened him against granting any relief to their sufferings.

THE EARL OF STRATHMORE brought in an act on the 1st of June, "for a *toleration* to all protestants in the exercise of religious worship;" but it was more particularly intended for the relief of the episcopal church. It was read a first time, when a remonstrance from the commission of the kirk was presented against it, signed by George Meldrum, importing in substance "that there could not be a just ground to desire or grant a toleration to those of the episcopal persuasion, seeing there was never in any nation a toleration allowed where there was no pretence of conscience against joint communion. That in Scotland the people had no scruple in their consciences against communion and worship with the legal established church, till of late, in some places, they had been practised upon, and divided by, prelatie ministers. That difference in opinion about church government is not sufficient reason for separation in worship. That to grant a toleration to that party, in the present circumstances of church and state, must unavoidably shake the foundation of their present happy constitution; overthrow those laws upon which it was settled; needlessly disturb that peace and tranquillity which the nation had enjoyed since the Revolution [!]; disquiet the minds of her majesty's best subjects; increase animosities, confusions, dis-

<sup>1</sup> Sermon, p. 18, 19.



cord, and tumults; enervate discipline, open a door to vice, popery, and other errors, and bring the nation into the same or worse miseries and mischiefs from which it had been mercifully delivered [!]. We do, therefore, most humbly beseech, yea, we are bold in the Lord, and in the name of the church of God in this land, *earnestly to OBTEST* your grace and the most honourable estates, that *no such motion of any legal toleration* to those of the prelatical principles be entertained by the parliament. Being persuaded that in the present case and circumstances of this church and nation, *to enact a toleration* for those of that way (*which GOD of his infinite mercy AVERT*), *would be to establish INIQUITY by a law*, and would bring upon the promoters thereof, and upon their families, the dreadful guilt of all those sins and pernicious effects that may ensue thereupon. Edinburgh, January the 1st, 1703. Signed, in the name and at the appointment of the said commission of the General Assembly, by George Meldrum, moderator."

IN CONSEQUENCE of this very unchristian remonstrance from the commission, the motion for toleration was lost. It shews, however, that the atrocities committed by the rabble at the Revolution were approved and "homologated" by the whole presbyterian establishment; and therefore they cannot be laid solely on the shoulders of an enthusiastic and thoughtless mob, acting from the brutal instinct of their nature and the impulse of the moment. Mr. Meldrum says, "he knows no episcopal minister who judges communion with the presbyterians unlawful." His knowledge of them must have been very limited. It certainly is unlawful to hold communion with churches whose orders, though they may be really valid, yet which require sinful terms of communion; but particularly with so-called churches, who not only have no orders at all, but whose terms of communion are likewise sinful. Subscription to erroneous propositions, such as many of those in the Westminster Confession, is a *sinful* term of communion; so is subscription to doubtful propositions, "for whatsoever is not of faith is sin," and must incur damnation. Many of the propositions in the Confession have been opposed and confuted by holy and faithful men; and as subscription to the Westminster formulary does not merely import an obligation to preserve the peace of the communion, but signifies *an assent* to these sinful propositions, and that such subscription is a confession of *their own faith*; it cannot, therefore, be signed by faithful men without sin. Besides, the presbyterians required a subscription to more for admission to ministerial communion than is





contained in their Confession. They required a real *abrenunciation* of catholic principles, and of episcopacy itself<sup>1</sup>.

THE UNCONSTITUTIONAL manner of the election of king William's convention, and the turning of it into a parliament by the mere prerogative of the crown, was now liable to so many grave objections, and was occupying so much of public attention, that it became necessary to pass an act *to ratify and confirm* all its irregularities, and in particular the violent breach that had been made on the constitution by abolishing the first estate of parliament, and splitting the third estate into two. It was therefore declared to be *high treason* "to disown, quarrel, or impugn" its authority. Another clause of the act made it likewise *high treason* "to quarrel, impugn, or endeavour, by writing or malicious and advised speaking, or other open act or deed, to alter or innovate the Claim of Right, or any article thereof," particularly that famous one respecting the "intolerable grievance" of episcopacy. It shews a consciousness of having been in the wrong, when it was found necessary to stifle public opinion by acts of parliament. The last clause occasioned a warm debate, and Mr. James More, of Stoneywood, said—"That he was sure, and everybody knew, that the shire of Aberdeen, which he had the honour to represent, was of the episcopal persuasion; and if, after this act was passed, his countrymen should, in discharge of their own consciences, in a regular way address the sovereign or parliament (which, by the Claim of Right, is the privilege of every subject,) for a rectification of the present presbyterian establishment, which, in his opinion, was *neither infallible nor unalterable*, he desired to know whether or not such an address should import treason?" To this sir William Hamilton, of Whitelaw, answered—"That this act did not, indeed, preclude addressing for a *toleration*; but if, after it were passed into a law, any person should own that he thought presbyterian government was a *wrong* establishment, and that episcopacy ought to be restored, such a person ought to be *guilty of high treason*!" This act was "read, voted, and passed," and therefore it was *now high treason to oppose presbytery in any way*!<sup>2</sup> This act gave presbytery as firm a settlement, and as full a security, as the law could give it; for it was now declared high treason to attempt any alteration in it. King William had often been

<sup>1</sup> See this subject extensively and conclusively handled in Bishop Sage's *Reasonableness of a Toleration* inquired into, purely on Church Principles.

<sup>2</sup> Lockhart's *Memoirs*, 52, 53—Boyer's *Reign of Queen Anne*, 66.





importuned to pass an act similar to this, but he would never consent to it<sup>1</sup>.

ALTHOUGH the queen had graciously assured the presbyterians of her determination to support their establishment, it neither satisfied them nor shortened their desire to extirpate episcopacy in both kingdoms. On the 20th of May about 700 discontented presbyterians met in arms, during the sitting of parliament, at a country village, or perhaps farm-house, called Cairnstable, near to the royal burgh of Sanquhar. Here they spent some time in prayer, and in singing the 48th and 50th Psalms, concerning God's coming to judge the wicked. After that they marched into the burgh of Sanquhar, and affixed, with all the usual formalities, upon the cross, "the Apologetic Declaration, and Admonitory Vindication of a poor wasted and misrepresented remnant of the anti-popish, anti-prelatic, anti-erastian, anti-sectarian, true presbyterian church of Christ in Scotland, united together in a general correspondence." Previous to entering Sanquhar they renewed their covenant for the extirpation of episcopacy; and in the Declaration, which is a very long document, they renounced Anne, princess of Denmark, from being their queen, because she had promised to maintain episcopacy in England. "Therefore we, finding the like, esteem ourselves obliged also so to do; and to declare to the world, that we *cannot own* princess Anne as our lawful, chosen, covenanted princess, such as we ought to have, nor can have *no prince or princess* but a covenanted one; and such as will not accept of the qualifications of a covenanted subject with God, shall never (through grace) be chosen, owned, or subjected to as a prince by us<sup>2</sup>."

THEY ORDERED their emissaries to fix this Declaration on all the market-crosses in the kingdom; and they accomplished it in Dumfries and some other burghs. Their friends in the government, however, managed to hush up this act of high treason, and, like the massacre of Glencoe, all inquiries into it were stifled. But had a similar party of the oppressed episcopalians done such an act of treason, the government would have punished them with the most exemplary rigour, and their historians would have very faithfully recorded the seditious act; whereas it was *hushed up*, and has never been alluded to by any presbyterian writer whatsoever. It was now made high treason for any member of the church even to write or

<sup>1</sup> Burnet's Own Times, v. 94, 95.

<sup>2</sup> Appendix to Wolf Stript—Leslie's Theological Works, iv. 478. Oxford edit.



speaking against presbytery; but had the whole of the 700 armed men that met at Sanquhar, and committed that real act of treason, been episcopalians, they would have been decimated at least.

THE FOLLOWING letter gives such an excellent account of some persecuting transactions that occurred this year, that I shall give it entire. It is dated Glasgow, the 25th of October. The writer says,—“ I am sorry that I cannot confirm to you the satisfaction you express in yours of the 17th instant, that we, of the episcopal communion here, have enjoyed greater ease and liberty as to the exercise of our religion since her majesty's happy accession to the crown, than we did before, especially since her gracious letters to our privy council in our favour. You had reason to expect that they would have produced the desired effect. But alas! sir, you are not acquainted with the spirit of presbytery, which ever grows more insolent the more power it obtains, and will never be satisfied till it has crushed its opposers into an impossibility of attempting any thing against it. They thought they had gained this object, as in a great measure they had, after their establishment in the last reign, and seeing no enemy but what was perfectly under their feet, they began to abate of their former rigour; and we had, though not a toleration, yet such a sort of connivance, that we kept our private religious meetings without much disturbance, except now and then, just to shew us that we were in their power. But no sooner was her majesty upon the throne than they conceived new apprehensions and jealousies; and all her majesty's gracious assurances to them of preserving and continuing their presbyterian constitution made no impression at all upon them.

“ AT THE FIRST meetings of their provincial synods, after her majesty's accession, they framed new associations and covenants for the more complete extirpation of episcopacy, to which they engaged their lives and fortunes, and these were published by both the provincial synods of Edinburgh and Glasgow; and they persecuted some of the most temperate of their own ministers, who had neglected to subscribe these new covenants and associations, whereby they have now made that compulsory which at first they pretended was voluntary. Their new covenant is the same with the old one<sup>1</sup>, but more broad and comprehensive. I must tell you withal that by our statutes, yet unrepealed, it is high treason for any subjects to enter into such covenants or associations, without

<sup>1</sup> Vide *ante*, vol. ii. ch. xix. p. 123.



the allowance of the supreme authority; but they reckon little of these matters. Having laid this foundation they proceeded to put their resolutions in execution; and the instrument they made use of was, their steady allies the mob, as they gave birth to their former rebellion.

“THEY CHOSE to begin the rabbling on the 30th of January, that they might shew their detestation of the celebration of the memory of king Charles’s martyrdom; but it was much more detestable to them now that they saw his grand-daughter on his throne. In the reign of king William the church was allowed to commemorate the martyrdom of king Charles, without any other molestation than ‘their flouting at us,’ and sometimes calling us disaffected to the government for doing of it, and saying, ‘we intend to bring this man’s blood upon them.’ On the 30th of January, this year, they raised a hideous mob upon us, as we were at our devotions in sir John Bell’s house in Glasgow. Sir John had patriotically appropriated the largest room in his house as a chapel, or meeting, for some of the episcopalians of that city, in which as many as it would contain regularly assembled. The mob attacked the house, threw stones in at the windows upon the congregation, broke open the doors, and fell upon them with sticks, whereby many were dangerously hurt. They bullied the clergyman that officiated, although he was well affected towards the government, and was qualified according to law, and threatened to beat him severely if he ventured to officiate again. After this they durst no more meet for public worship till her majesty’s letter was received by the privy council, allowing the episcopalians liberty of conscience. In consequence of this grace, an episcopal clergyman, who had taken the oaths, and had qualified himself, was sent from Edinburgh to officiate in the meeting in sir John Bell’s house; and, besides, he was furnished with a letter from the lord chancellor to the magistrates of Glasgow, ordering them to protect him. The congregation met again on Sunday the 7th of March, but instead of protection, we were more furiously assaulted than before; many were wounded, among whom was a son of sir John Bell; his house was broken through, and his very garden and summer-house destroyed, even to the rooting up and breaking of the trees, &c.; the magistrates, who were *presbyterians*, looking on, and rather countenancing than suppressing the rabble, which were gathered together by the secret instigation (as we have good reason to believe) of these magistrates and the presbyterian ministers from several of the neighbouring parishes in the country, for this godly work! For though this





city is the nest and chief rendezvous of all the presbyterians in Scotland, yet the episcopal party, even here, are the *most considerable*, both for quality and estates, and in number sufficient to defend themselves, with the allowance of authority, against the insults of the mob of this place; therefore they called to their assistance the presbyterian rabble of the country adjoining<sup>1</sup>. The damage to property, and danger to the lives of the clergyman and congregation, would have been much greater, had not lord Kilmaurs dispersed the mob with a detachment of cavalry. There was also a combination of women engaged in this rabbling, headed by a virago called Maggy Steen, or Stephen, who were regularly marshalled, and under her command. She consulted with the presbyterian ministers the previous night, and obtained their instructions how to proceed. She was called colonel, and her party the *white* regiment; they assisted greatly at the first rabbling at the Revolution, and they had been kept embodied ever since, to let loose upon the episcopal clergy or their adherents. I have, says Mr. Leslie, "from eye-witnesses, several circumstances of these women's cruelty, that cannot be told for the filthy obscenity of them, which cost one of the clergy then preaching his life, who was thus treated by them in the church, if not in the pulpit<sup>2</sup>."

ON RECEIVING notice of this outrage and insult to their authority, the privy council ordered the magistrates of Glasgow to repair the damages sustained by sir John Bell, and to be careful to prevent similar tumults for the future. The magistrates, however, boldly answered, that they could not undertake to protect any episcopal clergyman or meeting-house; and they never made any reparation to sir John Bell for the damage done to his property. "And the further proceedings of the privy council against them were stopped by the general indemnity at that time granted by her majesty, wherein she was minded to except these rioters at Glasgow in such open contempt of her authority. But the council's hopes of overcoming them by condescensions and over-goodness did prevail; they were pardoned, and our episcopal meetings have ever since been *totally suppressed*<sup>3</sup>."

IN THE COURSE of the summer some of the episcopalians in

<sup>1</sup> Some account of the treatment which the episcopal clergy in Scotland have met with from the presbyterian government, since her majesty's accession to the crown. In a letter from a gentleman at Glasgow, in Scotland, to his friend in London; bearing date October 25, 1703. Cited in Appendix to *The Wolf Stript* of his Shepherd's Clothing, pp. 485-488.

<sup>2</sup> *Rehearsal*, vol. vi. 241—Appendix to *Cassandra*.

<sup>3</sup> Some account, &c.



Glasgow sent the following petition to the queen, subscribed by three hundred and twenty-two names of the chief and principal men of that city, "both for interest and substance:"—"The humble petition of the heritors and other inhabitants of the town of Glasgow, sheweth,—That your majesty's most loyal and dutiful subjects, being most sensibly afflicted, and still groaning under the heavy yoke and domination of presbytery, whereby we are deprived of the care and inspection of our pious episcopal pastors, and of their regular and holy administrations amongst us, do, in all humility, implore your majesty's compassion for ease and relief to our consciences, by allowing us to invite or call one or two episcopal ministers to officiate amongst us, and grant to them a right to the legal stipends in those parishes where they shall serve; that so they may enjoy the comfort of true pastors, duly and canonically ordained and authorised, according to the rules of the pure primitive and apostolical churches, to bless us in our Lord and Saviour's name; to offer up our prayers and devotions to God; to preach the gospel, and administer the sacraments unto us, of which we conceive ourselves now deprived, by the pretended ministry of such men, who (as we believe) have *no true mission or authority* for exercising the aforesaid sacred functions. King Charles II., of blessed memory, in the year 1669 and afterwards, did grant, even to presbyterians and their preachers, under the legal established episcopal government, as much, if not more, than we now humbly address for, although they were equally enemies to himself as to the monarchy: and therefore we humbly presume your majesty will prove no less favourable and gracious to us, your peaceable and loyal subjects in this city, who are true and hearty well-wishers to your majesty, to our ancient monarchical government, and to your most serene royal family. In granting this our humble and earnest desire and petition, your majesty will afford great ease to our consciences, and true comfort to our souls; and oblige us more and more to pray for your majesty's long life, and happy and glorious reign over us; and that God may preserve your most ancient and royal family in honour, greatness, and prosperity, so long as the sun and moon endureth."

THERE WAS no notice taken of this petition, for the presbyterian faction altogether misrepresented Scottish affairs to the queen, and suffered her only to know what they chose she should know. The author above cited, says—"And though we have had no redress, we do not in the least impute it to her majesty, being fully assured of her goodwill and favour to-



wards us, but to the necessity of her affairs, and the bold insolence of the presbyterian faction, in not only disobeying, but despising and acting in direct opposition to her royal authority, signified in her gracious letters on our behalf to her privy council here. And we know that one great end they propose to themselves in this is, that they may appear *more considerable* than really they are, especially to the court of England, where, we fear, they are not truly represented." The act in the last session of parliament, which made it high treason for any to speak, act, or write in defence of episcopacy, or against presbyterian government in the church, enabled them to represent their party as superior in the parliament, and consequently in the nation. That act was carried "by trick and surprise;" but the real superiority of the episcopal members was afterwards demonstrated by the great majorities, and "the great contempt," with which several bills were thrown out, though supported by the whole presbyterian strength, and by the ministers of state, "wherein it was designed to have entailed presbytery upon us to succeeding generations. And the mortification which the faction received by this does far exceed the triumph they made in the artifice of some (from whom we did not expect it), whereby they gained the other; and will now find it more difficult to impose upon us in the like manner."

THE WRITER adds: "however, this is no small article of our oppression, that we had utterly defeated, and even silenced, the writers of the presbyterians, particularly by the labours of the learned author of the Cyprianic age . . . our adversaries now take refuge in the *brachium seculare*, and bring the only remaining argument that they have left, which is, high treason against those that shall write or speak any more against them. This is some degrees beyond the Spanish Inquisition! set forward by the patrons of christian liberty and toleration! [and by men of tender consciences] as we are told they represent themselves to you in England. Since this act was passed, they have run on more violently to persecute us in all places. Where their numbers are superior, (which is in very few parts of Scotland), they mob us; and where the presbyterians are too weak in any parish, they call in their fellows of the neighbouring parishes to fall upon us. And where the episcopal party are so strong (as they are in most places), that even this will not do, then they bring processes from the privy council pursuant to the law, against our clergy who officiate for us, and as many of the laity as they can reach: wherein they are mightily encouraged and assisted by our present lord advocate





[Stewart of Coltness], whose office is tantamount to that of the attorney-general in England. We have been treated in this manner at Stirling (where our minister was imprisoned); at Dundee; in the parish of Kinnaird; in Old and New Aberdeen (where the tenth man is not presbyterian); in the town of Elgin; of Haddington; at Kilmadock, in the shire of Fife, where four of our eminent clergymen were turned out; and several other places I could name, but that you know them not; in all of which the episcopal people are far superior to the presbyterian. In some of these, the churches, now in possession of the presbyterians, were almost wholly deserted, and our episcopal meetings crowded; which has raised their spleen against us."

IN CONCLUSION, he says—"We were assured here, that her majesty had declared she would not transfer the revenues of the bishopricks here (which had been annexed to the crown since the abolition of episcopacy), to any other use than the support of the surviving bishops amongst, and of the deprived episcopal clergy, who have suffered great hardships, and now more than before; and that her majesty has given orders to this purpose. But if any such were given, *they have not been observed*: on the contrary, care has been taken that *all the bishops' rents* have been applied *to other uses*, in pensions to one and another, &c.; so that her royal bounty is *totally defeated*: and the common report of her gracious intentions towards the bishops and clergy *has withdrawn* the assistance of many [to a fund for the support of the clergy that had been commenced in June, 1690,] which they before afforded to the clergy, now in *a miserable condition*. I have told you the naked state of the case. We beg your prayers, and those of all good men, for us. And we beseech God, that you in England may never feel the *dreadful weight of presbytery, under which we now groan*<sup>1</sup>."

1704.—ON THE 19th of January a solemn fast was observed in England, on account of one of the most terrible storms of wind and lightning, that happened about midnight of the 26th of November last year, that ever was known, either in the memory of the living or on record. The wind blew from West-south-west, with such violence that it unroofed many houses and churches, threw down the spires of several steeples, stacks of chimneys, and tore up by the roots whole groves of trees. The leads of some churches and public buildings were rolled up like scrolls of parchment, and several vessels,

<sup>1</sup> Some Account of the Treatment, &c. App. Wolf Stript, 489-491.





boats, and barges, were sunk in the Thames. The royal navy sustained immense damage; nine line-of-battle ships were wrecked upon the coast, besides many smaller vessels of war and merchant ships, and upwards of two thousand seamen perished. Many people were killed in their beds by the falling of their houses, and among these were the bishop of Bath and Wells, Dr. Richard Kiddar and his lady; and many miraculous escapes were made. It pleased God that this dreadful hurricane was not universal; for the northern parts of the kingdom escaped its fury<sup>1</sup>.

I CANNOT discover when the lord archbishop of Glasgow was liberated from his imprisonment in the castle; but Lockhart introduces him about this time as having gone to London at the request of the duke of Queensberry, "to avouch to the tories and the church party in England, the duke's inclinations to serve and protect the tories and the church party in Scotland<sup>2</sup>." He says the archbishop lived privately after the Revolution; but he gives him a very bad private character, and even calls his grace a "renegade;" an account which seems too highly tinged with political venom to be true. His grace solicited queen Anne to bestow the bishops' rents, which had been sacrilegiously seized by the crown after the Revolution, upon the impoverished bishops and the starving clergy; and it would appear that he had been successful, if Lockhart may be believed. I am very doubtful of the truth of his allegation, because it is well known that the miseries of the clergy were not at all alleviated, as they would have been had they received so large a sum as he specifies. He alleges that the archbishop received a grant of £400 per annum; and we know from other sources that the lord bishop of Edinburgh received a pension from the queen. At this time, a plot, which Lockhart calls "a sham-plot," for the invasion of Scotland by a French force in favour of the Pretender, made a great noise, and attracted the attention of the English parliament<sup>3</sup>.

THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY met on the 16th of March; William, lord Ross, was appointed commissioner, and they chose Thomas Wilkie for their moderator. The queen's letter presents nothing particular, but her recommendation to plant vacant churches, to observe calmness and unanimity in their proceedings, and to avoid all *unseasonable* debates. The only transaction in this Assembly that concerns the object of this work was, "An Act approving the Actings and Proceedings

<sup>1</sup> Salmon's Chron. i. 328.—Boyer's Reign of Queen Anne, 100.

<sup>2</sup> Memoirs, p. 87.

<sup>3</sup> Lockhart's Memoirs, 87, 88.—Skinner's Ecclesiastical History, i. 602.



of the Commission of the General Assembly, anno 1703." In which they say, "the whole actings, proceedings, and conclusions . . . do evidence much wisdom, prudence, zeal, and diligence . . . and therefore this Assembly, by an unanimous vote, did, and hereby do, ratify and approve the *whole* actings, proceedings, and conclusions of the said commission . . . and the moderator gave them the thanks of this Assembly for their good service done to this church<sup>1</sup>." By this act they made Meldrum's remonstrance against toleration, which caused the defeat of the motion, the approved measure of the whole presbyterian body, and gave an indisputable proof of their intolerance in principle, and of their determination to suffer no other religious body to exist where they have the power and the opportunity to prevent them. Their answer to her majesty's letter was a mere echo of it; yet Hetherington exultingly picks out the following "significant passage," as he calls it—"we are now again, with your majesty's countenance and favour, met in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, in a national Assembly." Party spirit alone could have made any thing of this passage, which appears highly proper and decorous. There is no one will doubt that they met in Christ's name, else they had not been even professedly a christian meeting; but Christ's presence does not alter the fact of their meeting having been permitted by the queen's countenance and favour. But Hetherington meant to insinuate that this was an act of defiance to the crown, to which nothing in the letter gives the least countenance. There had, however, been some demur at court to permit the future meetings of assemblies; for in a letter from the earl of Seafield to Mr. Carstares, whose influence at court ceased with the life of king William, there is a clause that strongly indicates the queen's repugnance to their meeting. His lordship says, "I still hope and wish that this may be a calm and moderate assembly; and if needless questions be not brought in, I believe that assemblies, for the future, *may* meet with as great facility as they did in king William's time<sup>1</sup>."

MR. STIRLING presented a letter from Mr. Brown, minister of Glasgow, to this purpose. "Upon Sunday last, Mr. John Hepburn preached and baptized within four miles of this place; there was a great confluence of people from the neighbouring parishes, and he has appointed a meeting next Sabbath, within a mile of this town, his design being to raise a schism in this kirk, and, I fear, is set upon this way by the

<sup>1</sup> Acts of Assembly, session xi. p. 331.

<sup>2</sup> Carstares' State Papers, 725.



enemies of Christ's kingdom, though it is like he is so blind as not to see it. But I wish the reverend Assembly would take a speedy way to extinguish this flame, lest, as a fire kindled in one corner of a city consumes the whole, it may burn this poor church to ashes." This letter was considered an able production, and an overture was brought in to put their discipline in execution against this Mr. Hepburn, who was causing a schism, and also one Macmillan, whom the synod of Glasgow had found it necessary to depose<sup>1</sup>. After this transaction the Assembly nominated and instructed their commission, of which it was proposed that *fourteen* ministers and seven lay-elders should be a quorum. Mr. Foyers, minister of Stoneyhouse, Lanarkshire, hastily observed that fourteen was a very improper and unlucky number, for there had once been *fourteen bishops* in this kingdom. This observation was reckoned good logic, and therefore upon this grave and weighty consideration the number was made fifteen. In the evening meeting, a *malignant* observer, who was present, says they met at four o'clock, "and, after a good sturdy prayer, we fell to our synod books, and upon them had some very learned, and one very odd remark. 1. The synod of Argyle ordered one of their presbyteries to *separate* a man from his wife, because he was married by a husbandman in Lochabar, albeit they had cohabited as man and wife several years. 2. The synod of Moray had ordered a married woman, who judicially confessed adultery, to be proceeded against as a *slanderer of herself*. These two cases were earnestly pressed by some to be very well worth the consideration of the Assembly; but that was shifted. It was remarked by the visitors of the synod books of Aberdeen, that that synod, without any legal proof of his having been guilty of the crimes laid to his charge, had ordered the presbytery of Garrioch and Turrieff to excommunicate summarily Mr. Ross, of Rothiemay. In support of this decision, Mr. Hay, the minister of Byrse, said that the reason why the synod had proceeded against that person after that method, was, because he was a very debauched and profligate man, it being most certain that he had lain with five several women *at one and the same time*, and that all the five proved with child, and so the aforesaid presbyteries confessed their great sin with that abominable man<sup>2</sup>."

THE AGED primate, archbishop Ross, lived in Edinburgh in a private manner, and there are no accounts extant respecting

<sup>1</sup> Session xiii., March 30.

<sup>2</sup> Leslie's Rehearsals, vi.—Postscript to Cassandra, p. 273-74.





his latter years; he died at Edinburgh on the 13th of June, "and is supposed to have been buried at Restalrig." All that is now known of this distinguished prelate, who concluded the illustrious line of the archbishops of St. Andrews, has been obtained by the Rev. C. J. Lyen, the present episcopal incumbent of that city, and of whose source of information I thankfully avail myself. The primate's daughter Anne married lord Balmerino, whose son Arthur was executed for being *out* with prince Charles in 1745. I may be permitted to add, that I wrote to a venerable Jacobite lady, a descendant of the archbishop through another line, to inquire if she could direct me to any source where I could learn more concerning him. The following is an extract from her answer:—"Arthur, lord Balmerino, his grandson and nameson, had undertaken to be the biographer of his grace, and had collected all the best materials for the purpose, viz. letters from the prince of Orange, from the king of France, from prince James, the bishops of England and Ireland; in short, all the great names of the day; and was busied with a talented scholar at this work, when the ill-fated hero of Culloden cast himself into Scotland. Now, whether these documents are still in the depositories of his nearest kin, the following families—the earl of Moray, Balfour of Fernie, Robertson of Inches, John Crawford Aitkenson, sir John Malcolm of Grange,—I know not.—I am certain from circumstances they did not fall into the hands of the confiscators; and those with me, (who am the only other surviving branch of his only grand-daughter), are on secular subjects, wherein the archbishop acted as a trustee for properties once in our family. They testify to the rectitude of his mind, and his excellent private character; but if the above documents could be recovered, they would be at once interesting and creditable to the church; for neither threats nor favours could tempt those good men to cede a principle, or teach others to make light of oaths once taken. So very deeply was the loss of Arthur of Balmerino felt by the whole connection—for he was truly amiable—that the half-finished work was hushed up in the awful and almost unjust catastrophe which severed his warm heart from our widely lamenting family; and thus his very purpose was quenched in his blood, and was a subject never touched on, unless mentioned as one of his last employments by those now passed from this life themselves, but whom I remember to have seen drink to his memory on the anniversary of his birth-day with much affectionate respect. I would not have troubled you with these by-gone griefs, but to account for the non-appearance of those papers, more the property of



the church than of any individual, and to point out where they may be sought<sup>1</sup>."

THE OFFICE and jurisdiction of archbishops have been in the church since the days of the apostles: they are not, however, superior in order, but only in jurisdiction, to other bishops. St. Paul invested Timothy in the Lesser Asia, and Titus in the island of Crete, with metropolitical or archiepiscopal powers, as it has been very distinctly shewn by archbishop Sancroft, in one of his sermons. From the time that the bishoprick was translated from Abernethy to St. Andrews, after the conquest of the Picts, by Kenneth II. till the episcopate of Patrick Graham, the bishops of St. Andrews had precedence, and exercised metropolitical jurisdiction over the other bishops. When the churches of England and Scotland were under the dominion of the see of Rome, the archbishop of York made pretensions to jurisdiction over the Scottish church. To relieve the church of Scotland from this unjust claim, bishop Graham "earnestly entreated the pope that the metropolitan authority might be fixed in the see of St. Andrews; 'because it was unjust that the Scots should be obliged to look to the archbishop of York as their primate, when, on account of the frequent wars between England and Scotland, there must be a corresponding interruption between their churches.'" The pope Sixtus IV. yielded to Graham's entreaty, and erected the bishoprick of St. Andrews into the archiepiscopal and metropolitan dignity on Sunday, 6th Kal. Sept. 1472. "But not only did the pope make Graham archbishop and primate; he farther bestowed upon him, and his successors for ever, the dignity of *legatus natus*, and upon himself, personally, the still higher office of *legatus a latere* for a period of three years, with full power to correct all abuses in the church." The rank of the archbishop of St. Andrews in the state corresponded to that of the archbishop of Canterbury in England; and the revenues of the see were very considerable before the Reformation, at which time it was stripped of its property by those rapacious nobles whose ancestors had formerly delighted to honour and enrich it<sup>2</sup>.

ARTHUR ROSS was the last of the illustrious line of archbishops who bore that title, among whom may be found the sons of kings and of nobles; indeed, Patrick Graham, who was the first archbishop of St. Andrews, was the grandson of king Robert III., his mother being the lady Mary Stewart,

<sup>1</sup> History of St. Andrews, ii. 113, 114.

<sup>2</sup> Lyon's History of St. Andrews, i. pp. 230-233.



who married first the earl of Angus; second, sir James Kennedy, of Dunmore; third, the lord Graham, to each of whom she bore two sons. James Kennedy, her eldest son by her second marriage, was bishop of St. Andrews immediately before his uterine brother, Patrick Graham, the first archbishop. The lady Mary married a fourth husband, to whom she does not appear to have had any children<sup>1</sup>. His successors in the primacy of the church have never assumed this title, which is much to be regretted, as there are many associations attached to it that are dear to the hearts of the faithful among their subjects. Part of the ancient diocese of St. Andrews is now called the diocese of Fife; but why the title of that diocese alone should be changed, which is amongst the oldest in the kingdom, is not so easy to account for, whilst all the other dioceses retain their original designations. The office of *Primus* is now elective, and may be held by any of the bishops, without respect to seniority of consecration or priority of see: within the writer's memory it has been held by the bishops respectively of Aberdeen, Brechin, Edinburgh, and again of Aberdeen. At present, however, the *Primus* has no metropolitan jurisdiction, but is only a *primus inter pares*. The following is the canon "regulating the election and office of the Primus:—

"BEFORE the distinction of archbishop was introduced into Scotland, one of the bishops had a precedency under the title of *Primus Scotorum episcopus*; and the episcopal college having for a century past adopted the old form, it is hereby decreed that the bishops shall, without respect either to seniority of consecration or precedency of diocese, choose a Primus, by a majority of voices, who shall have no other privilege among the bishops but the right of convocating and presiding; and that expressly under the following restrictions:—1st, that he shall be obliged to notify to the other bishops the reasons of his calling a meeting, as well as the time and place for holding it; and if the majority shall dissent, as judging either the reasons insufficient, or the time or place improper, the proposal of such meeting shall be either wholly set aside, or the time or place altered, as shall seem to them most expedient. 2dly, that if the Primus shall at any time refuse to call a meeting when desired by a majority of the other bishops to do so for some specified purpose, or if he shall refuse to consecrate or sanction the consecration of a priest, canonically elected to a vacant diocese, when that election shall have been confirmed by a majority of the bishops, they

<sup>1</sup> Lyon's History of St. Andrews, i. 219.





shall, in such cases, have authority to meet and act without him. 3dly, that the Primus thus chosen by the majority is to continue in that office only during their pleasure. That the church may suffer as little inconvenience as possible, by the death or resignation of the Primus, the senior bishop shall instantly succeed to his powers, until a majority of the bishops shall appoint one to the office by a formal deed of election<sup>1</sup>."

THE SUBJECT of sacrilege has been frequently alluded to in these pages, and this volume cannot be better concluded than in citing the words of Mr. Lyon, in his article shewing the "punishment of sacrilege" within the bounds of one single diocese. "The following examples," he says, "selected from the diocese of St. Andrews, according to its boundaries before the Reformation [which comprehended the modern diocese of Edinburgh], will corroborate the general doctrine contended for throughout this work, that sacrilege has ever been *punished in the present life*, and *chiefly* by the failure of male issue. It is, however, not easy to ascertain the numerous families and individuals to whom the church lands, or portions of them, were granted at and after the Reformation. . . . I know that in this sceptical age, or 'enlightened,' as some consider it, many will refuse to subscribe to the doctrine I contend for. They will allege that failures in male issue have happened, and do constantly happen, to families who have not been contaminated with sacrilege. No doubt this is true, but I believe that a very great difference will be found in this respect; and that what is the *rule* in the one case, is the *exception* in the other. But not to enter on this inquiry here, I will content myself with quoting sir Henry Spelman on Sacrilege, who tells us that in the year 1616 he described a circle on the map of Norfolk which comprehended a given number of gentlemen's seats and the lands of as many dissolved religious houses. The succession in the former had continued uninterrupted for many generations, whereas the latter had changed owners 'four, five, or six times, not only by fall of issue or ordinary sale, but very often by grievous accidents and misfortunes.' . . . Even they who first obtained the church lands had seldom much enjoyment from them. Their revenue generally arose from various detached properties remote from each other, which it was both difficult and expen-

<sup>1</sup> The Code of Canons of the Episcopal Church of Scotland, as revised, amended, and enacted by an Ecclesiastical Synod, holden for that purpose at Edinburgh, on the 29th day of August, and continued by adjournment till the 6th of September inclusive, in the year of our Lord MDCCLXXXVIII. Canon ii. pages 10-11.





sive to collect. Many of the smaller rents they could not collect at all, owing to the disorder of the times, or the unwillingness of the lessee to pay to an unknown and perhaps rigid layman what he had been always accustomed to pay to a liberal and indulgent monastery. And out of this reduced revenue, pensions had often to be paid to certain court favourites, who had had interest previously to secure them. Thus it happened that what was thought at first to be a valuable prize, turned out in the end to be rather a source of disquietude and disappointment than a substantial benefit. This was the first punishment of sacrilege. I would remark farther, that the inference I deduce by no means involves a defence of papal abuses, but merely that what has been solemnly granted to God cannot be taken away from Him without sin and punishment."

MR. LYON then proceeds to establish this general doctrine by a multitude of instances of the visitation of heaven in this world on their impiety. He then continues:—"These are only a few out of the many examples that might be given, even in Scotland, of the 'visitation' of heaven 'unto the third and fourth generation' of those that have committed the crime of sacrilege. I have looked into the history of the other commendators of abbey lands in Scotland, and I find that, with hardly an exception, a similar or worse fate befel them. And with respect to the sovereigns of the house of Stuart, who, by diverting these lands from their legitimate purpose, were *participes criminis*, and of William III., who annexed the Scottish bishops' revenues to the crown, it is needless to point out the disasters of all kinds, and extinction of issue which marked their final destiny. I will now finish this article with quoting the words which the marquis of Strafford addressed to his eldest son, immediately before his execution:—"I charge you never to meddle with the revenues of the church; for the curse of God will follow all who do!"<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Lyon's Hist. of St. Andrews, App. ii. pp. 400-406.

END OF VOL. III.

D 2413.8













SEPT 75

